

Bangor University

## DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

### Toward a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Ackland, Randal

*Award date:*  
2020

*Awarding institution:*  
Bangor University

[Link to publication](#)

#### General rights

Copyright and moral rights for the publications made accessible in the public portal are retained by the authors and/or other copyright owners and it is a condition of accessing publications that users recognise and abide by the legal requirements associated with these rights.

- Users may download and print one copy of any publication from the public portal for the purpose of private study or research.
- You may not further distribute the material or use it for any profit-making activity or commercial gain
- You may freely distribute the URL identifying the publication in the public portal ?

#### Take down policy

If you believe that this document breaches copyright please contact us providing details, and we will remove access to the work immediately and investigate your claim.

Toward a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

By

Randal H. Ackland

A Thesis Submitted for the Degree of

Doctor of Philosophy

School of History, Philosophy and Social Sciences

College of Arts, Education, and Humanities

Bangor University

2019

## **DECLARATION**

Yr wyf drwy hyn yn datgan mai canlyniad fy ymchwil fy hun yw'r thesis hwn, ac eithrio lle nodir yn wahanol. Caiff ffynonellau eraill eu cydnabod gan droednodiadau yn rhoi cyfeiriadau eglur. Nid yw sylwedd y gwaith hwn wedi cael ei dderbyn o'r blaen ar gyfer unrhyw radd, ac nid yw'n cael ei gyflwyno ar yr un pryd mewn ymgeisiaeth am unrhyw radd oni bai ei fod, fel y cytunwyd gan y Brifysgol, am gymwysterau deuol cymeradwy.

I hereby declare that this thesis is the results of my own investigations, except where otherwise stated. All other sources are acknowledged by bibliographic references. This work has not previously been accepted in substance for any degree and is not being concurrently submitted in candidature for any degree unless, as agreed by the University, for approved dual awards.

Randal H. Ackland, 03/01/2020

## ABSTRACT

The distinctive Pentecostal experience is glossolalia. Since the advent of the Pentecostal revival in 1906, research into glossolalia has erupted into a flood of literature. This thesis does three things. First, it provides a bibliographical review of the most important literature on tongues from 1888 to 2019. The ‘must read’ books and journal articles for today’s scholars are surveyed. It is discovered that very few academics examined the early Pentecostal periodicals, which were the primary sources for theological developments and communications of the day.

First, using reception history as a method, this thesis explores fourteen different periodicals across the Pentecostal spectrum in the United States: Wesleyan-holiness Pentecostalism, Finished-work Pentecostalism and Oneness Pentecostalism. The voices of these pioneers’ testimonies and articles are contained in over 15,000 pages from 1906 to roughly 1920. It is a broad spectrum reading of the early Pentecostals on their theology of glossolalia.

Second, these voices are appraised and blended into theological categories that arise naturally from the readings rather than from imposing a theological structure upon the texts. During this period, early Pentecostalism weathers three different crises surrounding tongues: 1) the distinction between Spirit Baptism as sanctification and Spirit Baptism for power with the sign of tongues, 2) the ‘New Issue’ (Oneness) and 3) evidentiary tongues. The summaries of this thesis are the best understanding of these Pentecostal pioneer’s theology of glossolalia to date. This thesis reveals that while there is no significant difference between the Wesleyan-holiness and finished work positions on glossolalia, there is a significant difference between these two streams and Oneness Pentecostalism. Oneness appears to take Evangelical’s conversion-initiation theory of Spirit Baptism to its logical conclusion.

Finally, the experience of speaking in tongues is waning in post-modern North American Pentecostalism, and yet Pentecostalism is growing rapidly in other parts of the world, proving itself to be adaptable globally. Weak Modernistic explanations of glossolalia are likely the cause of this disconnect in North America. Pentecostalism arose at the height of Modernism and its theology of evidentiary tongues naturally took root in that soil. However, this thesis reveals that, from the beginning, Pentecostalism is an uncomfortable fit with Modernism. For example, though the pioneers used evidentiary terms to describe their experience, the preferred term was ‘bible evidence’ or ‘bible sign’. In fact, the term ‘initial evidence’, is a later classification of the experience. Pragmatically, the pioneers use Modernism as a tool, but their experience and doctrine of glossolalia exceeds its boundaries. This thesis discovers that these trailblazers use theological and biblical metaphors to delineate their theology beyond the limits of the theological categories and terminology of their day. Therefore, this thesis provides a suggested restatement of Pentecostal glossolalia through metaphors and their correspondence with the Pentecostal experience and understanding.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

A research project like this is not done without sacrifice and collaboration.

Connie, Annie and Jolynn, thank you for your sacrifice of a husband and dad over these years – you are deeply loved. This work is dedicated to you. John and Linda Baldino thank you for your close friendship and for the many respites and laughs. John, your editing skills are amazing, thanks. David and Anna Hymes thank you for your friendship and trailblazing. Joseph Lear, Ed Lambright, Andrew Colón, and Andrew Sargent – I cannot imagine many churches having staffs capable of such great theological conversations. Thank you for your constructive input.

Chris Thomas, from inception to through its completion, your supervision has been remarkable. Thank you for all those hours of supervision, friendship, mentoring, and prayer. The study of the early Pentecostal literature has given me a greater passion for life in the Spirit. To the other doctoral supervisors, Chris Green, Frank Macchia, Lee Roy Martin, and Robby Waddell: thank you for your insights and encouragement.

To my fellow PhD students, it has been a delight to interact with you and your materials. It is hoped that this contribution lives up to the standard you have set or are presently pursuing: Jonathan Alvarado, Melissa Archer, Becky Basdeo-Hill, Odell Bryant, Justin Dennis, Clayton Endecott, Edward George, Stetson Glass, Chris Green, Edwin Gungor, Jeff and Karen Holley, Daniel Isgrigg, David Johnson, David Kentie, Tom Kurt, Michelle Marshall, Philip Johnson, Larry McQueen, Ray Robles, Chris Rouse, Jared Runck, Steffen Schumacher, Rick Waldholm, Lisa Ward, Ben Wiles, and Andrew Williams.

Many thanks to three great personal assistants: Ann MacFadden, Melissa Milley, and Sally Scanlon. Sheila Lafferty of the University of Connecticut Library system and Maggie Holmes of Richards Memorial Library of North Attleborough, MA – you did an awesome job finding even the most obscure materials. The following libraries assisted with the research: the Divinity School Library of Yale Divinity School, New Haven, CT, the William G. Squires Library of Lee University, Cleveland, TN, the Bangor University Library, Bangor, Wales, U.K., and Phillips Memorial Library, Providence College,

Randal Ackland – Toward a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Providence, RI. And, a special thanks go to The Consortium of Pentecostal Archives who made most of the early Pentecostal Periodicals reviewed available online.

Thank you Cornerstone Assembly of God, Oxford, CT for being there when God created a hunger in my heart that sparked this academic and spiritual journey. To Crossroads International Church, South Attleboro, MA, it is a delight to be your pastor.

Randal H. Ackland, 2019

## Contents

Declaration .....	ii
Abstract .....	iii
Acknowledgements .....	iv
Contents .....	vi
Abbreviations .....	viii
Charts of Early Pentecostal Periodicals .....	x
Chapter 1: Introduction .....	1
Definition of Pentecostalism .....	3
Time-Frame .....	4
Methodology and Primary Sources .....	5
Chapter 2: Bibliographic Review of Literature on Glossolalia .....	16
I. Early Literature, 1888 to 1929 .....	17
II. Mid-Century Literature, 1930 to 1969 .....	34
III. Contemporary Scholarship, 1970 to 2019 .....	49
IV. Dialog Partners with an Eastern Perspective .....	94
V. Literature Utilizing the Early Pentecostal Periodicals .....	101
Chapter 3: The Wesleyan-Holiness Pentecostal Periodicals .....	108
I. The Azusa Street Mission Revival – <i>The Apostolic Faith</i> .....	108
II. Early Southern Pentecostalism – <i>The Bridegroom's Messenger</i> .....	142
III. The Church of God in Christ – <i>The Whole Truth</i> .....	171
IV. The Church of God (Cleveland, TN) – <i>The Church of God Evangel</i> .....	175
V. International Pentecostal Holiness Church – <i>The Pentecostal Holiness Advocate</i> ..	202
Chapter 4: The Finished Work Pentecostal Periodicals .....	228
I. Advocate and Bridge Builder – <i>Triumphs of Faith</i> .....	229
II. Pre-Assemblies of God – <i>The Pentecost</i> .....	251
III. Rise of the Finished Work – <i>The Pentecostal Testimony</i> .....	259
IV. Pre-Assemblies of God – <i>Word and Witness</i> .....	267
V. The Assemblies of God – <i>The Pentecostal Evangel</i> .....	277
Chapter 5: Oneness Pentecostal Periodicals .....	313

Randal Ackland – Toward a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

I. Pre-Oneness Theology – <i>The Good Report</i> .....	313
II. Oneness Periodicals – <i>Meat in Due Season</i> and <i>The Blessed Truth</i> .....	319
Categories That Emerged from the Periodicals .....	329
Chapter 6: Revisioning a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia .....	331
I. Metaphor as a Means of Revisioning a Theology of Glossolalia .....	331
II. Encounter Metaphors .....	335
III. Public Metaphors .....	357
IV. Personal Metaphors .....	366
V. Two Final Metaphors .....	373
Chapter 7: Conclusion .....	379
Appendix: Walter J. Hollenweger’s Black-Oral-Inclusive Root .....	384
Bibliography .....	389

## ABBREVIATIONS

### Early Pentecostal Periodicals

AF	<i>The Apostolic Faith, Los Angeles</i>
CE	<i>Christian Evangel</i>
COGE	<i>The Church of God Evangel</i>
MDS	<i>Meat in Due Season</i>
PE	<i>The Pentecostal Evangel</i>
PT	<i>The Pentecostal Testimony</i>
PHA	<i>The Pentecostal Holiness Advocate</i>
TBM	<i>The Bridegroom's Messenger</i>
TBT	<i>The Blessed Truth</i>
TGR	<i>The Good Report</i>
THA	<i>The Holiness Advocate</i>
TP	<i>The Pentecost</i>
TWT	<i>The Whole Truth</i>
TOF	<i>Triumphs of Faith</i>
WE	<i>Weekly Evangel</i>
WW	<i>Word and Witness</i>

### Other

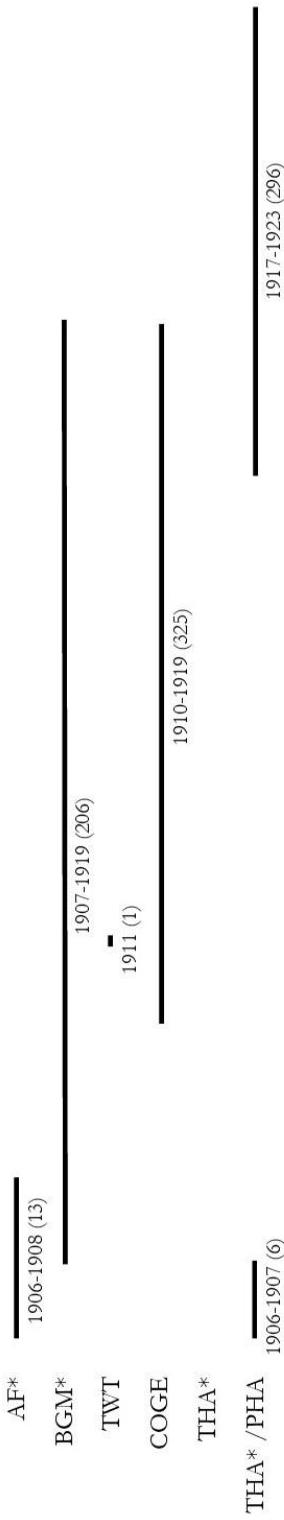
AASS	<i>Acta Sanctorum</i>
AG	Assemblies of God
AJPS	<i>Asian Journal of Pentecostal Studies</i>
ANF	<i>Ante-Nicene Fathers</i>
ASM	Azusa Street Mission
BibSac	<i>Bibliotheca Sacra</i>
CG	The Church of God (Cleveland, TN)
CI	Conversion-initiation
COGIC	The Church of God in Christ

	Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia
CU	Christian Union
ExpT	<i>The Expository Times</i>
FW	Finished Work
HA	Heavenly Anthem / singing in the Spirit
HCCC	The Holiness Church at Camp Creek
IE	Initial Evidence
IPCC	International Pentecostal Church of Christ
LXX	Septuagint
JBL	<i>Journal of Biblical Literature</i>
JEPTA	<i>Journal of the European Pentecostal Theological Association</i>
JETS	<i>Journal of Evangelical Theological Society</i>
JPT	<i>Journal of Pentecostal Theology</i>
JPTSup	<i>Journal of Pentecostal Theology, Supplement Series</i>
JTS	<i>Journal Theological Studies</i>
MT	Missionary Tongues
NIDPCM	<i>New International Dictionary of Pentecostal and Charismatic Movements (revised)</i>
NPF	<i>Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers</i>
NT	New Testament
OT	Old Testament
RCC	Roman Catholic Church
RQ	<i>Restoration Quarterly</i>
SB	Spirit Baptism
WH	Wesleyan-holiness

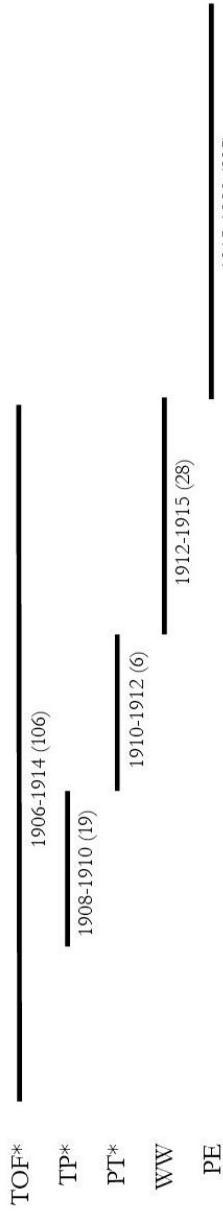
# Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

## Timeline of Pentecostal Periodicals Read

### Wesleyan-Holiness Periodicals



### Finished Work Periodicals



### Oneness Periodicals



\* = Independent Periodical

**Relevant Information on the Wesleyan-Holiness Periodicals**

Pub.	Editor	Denomination	Context	Time Frame?	Other
AF	Clara Lum & Florence Crawford	Independent	Los Angeles, CA.	1906-1908 (13), all extant.	The most prominent paper and considered to be the start of the Pentecostal movement.
BGM	Gaston Cashwell & Elizabeth Sexton	Independent	Atlanta, GA.	1907-1919 (206), though the IE crisis of 1918.	Though independent, it was the informal voice of what would become the PHC.
TWT	Justus Bowe	COGIC	Argenta, AR.	Oct. 1911 (1), all extant.	Regrettably, there is the only one extant issue of this important and influential, largely African American denomination.
COGE	Ambrose Tomlinson	COG	Cleveland, TN.	1910-1919 (325), through the IE crisis of 1918.	With pre-ASM glossolalic experiences in its history, the COG was the largest, predominantly white WH denomination.
THA	Ambrose Crumpler	Independent	Clinton, NC.	1906-1907 (6), all extant.	These 6 issues coincide with the ASM revival and reveal the introduction of the revival to their WH readers.
PHA	George Taylor	PHC	Falcon, NC.	1917-1923 (296), 5 years after the IE crisis of were read to ensure no major theological issues were overlooked.	Formed later than other Pentecostal denominations, their people read the BGM & the HA before the formation of the PHC in 1917.

**Relevant Information on the Finished Work Periodicals**

Pub.	Editor	Denomination	Context	Time Frame?	Other
<i>TOF</i>	Carrie Montgomery	Independent	Oakland, CA.	1906-1914 (106), to the formation of the AG.	Montgomery's ministry bridged the WH & FW traditions with a large network of friends. She was a founding member of the AG.
<i>TP</i>	Joseph Flower	Independent	Indianapolis, IN.	1908-1910 (19), all extant.	The stated mission of <i>TP</i> was to promote the Pentecostal message.
<i>PT</i>	William Durham	Independent	Chicago, IL & Los Angeles, CA.	1910-1912 (6), all extant.	Durham originated the FW doctrine and was very influential on Oneness Pentecostalism.
<i>WW</i>	Eudorus Bell	Independent / AG	Malvern, AR St. Louis, MO.	1912-1915 (28), All extant.	This paper originated with Parham's group in TX. It became the official voice of the AG after its formation. It was succeeded by the more popular weekly <i>PE</i> .
<i>PE</i>	Eudorus Bell / Joseph Flower	AG	Findlay, OH, St. Louis, MO, Springfield, MO.	1915-1920 (235), all extant through the window of this study.	The official voice of the AG, the largest FW group. It had several names before settling on <i>the PE</i> .

**Relevant Information on the Oneness Periodicals**

<b>Pub.</b>	<b>Editor</b>	<b>Denomination</b>	<b>Context</b>	<b>Time Frame?</b>	<b>Other</b>
TGR	Robert McAllister	Independent	Ottawa, Canada / Los Angeles, CA.	1911-1914 (9), all extant.	This paper reveals the emergence of Oneness theology from FW theology.
MDS	Frank Ewart	Independent / Oneness.	Los Angeles, CA.	1915-1917 (3), all extant.	The earliest Oneness periodical.
TBT	Daniel Opperman	Independent / Oneness.	Eureka Springs, AR.	1918-1919 (3), all extant.	Another early Oneness periodical. It would take some time before the Oneness denominations stabilized.

## Chapter 1

### Introduction.

'Pentecost has surely come and with it the Bible evidences are following, many being converted and sanctified and filled with the Holy Ghost, speaking in tongues as they did on the day of Pentecost', states the opening lines of the *Apostolic Faith* (*AF*), the periodical of the Azusa Street mission (ASM) revival.<sup>1</sup> Though much has been written about speaking in tongues, few have taken the time to research what these pioneers of Pentecostalism meant by those words. There are many excellent histories by scholars<sup>2</sup> and eye-witness accounts.<sup>3</sup> Most Pentecostal denominations have official or semi-official histories that include a carefully parsed examination of tongues.<sup>4</sup> However,

---

<sup>1</sup> William Seymour, 'Pentecost Has Come', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Walter J. Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishing, 1972); Robert Mapes Anderson, *Vision of the Disinherited: The Making of American Pentecostalism* (New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 1979); Donald W. Dayton, *Theological Roots of Pentecostalism* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishing, 1987); James R Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest: Charles F. Parham and the Missionary Origins of Pentecostalism* (Fayetteville: University of Arkansas Press, 1988); Harvey Cox, *Fire From Heaven* (Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley Publishing Co., 1995); Walter J. Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism: Origins and Development Worldwide* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishing, 1997); Vinson Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition: Charismatic Movements in the Twentieth Century*, 2<sup>nd</sup> edn, (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co, 1997); Vinson Synan, *The Century of the Holy Spirit: 100 Years of Pentecostal and Charismatic Renewal* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2001); Grant Wacker, *Heaven Below: Early Pentecostals and American Culture* (Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 2001); Alan Anderson, *An Introduction to Pentecostalism* (Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 2004); Cecil M. Robeck Jr., *The Azusa Street Mission and Revival: The Birth of the Global Pentecostal Movement* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 2006); Randall J. Stephens, *The Fire Spreads: Holiness and Pentecostalism in the American South* (Cambridge, MA; London: Harvard University Press, 2008); Estrelda Y. Alexander, *Black Fire: One Hundred Years of African American Pentecostalism* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2011).

<sup>3</sup> Ethel E. Goss, *The Winds of God: The Story of the Early Pentecostal Movement (1901-1914) in the Life of Howard A. Goss* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame Press, 1977); Frank Bartleman, *Azusa Street: An Eyewitness Account, The Centennial Edition, 1906-2006* (Gainesville, FL: Bridge-Logos, 2006); Tom Welchel, *Azusa Street: They Told Me Their Stories* (Mustang, OK: Dare2Dream Books, 2008).

<sup>4</sup> Stanley H. Frodsham, *With Signs Following* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1946); Carl Brumback, *Suddenly ... From Heaven: A History of the Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1961); Carl Brumback, *A Sound from Heaven: The Dramatic Beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century Pentecostal Revival* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1961); Charles W. Conn, *Like a Mighty Army* (Cleveland, TN: Pathway Press, 1977); Gary B. McGee, *People of the Spirit: The Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 2004); H. Vinson Synan, *Old Time Power: A Centennial History of the International Pentecostal Holiness Church* (Franklin Springs, GA: LifeSpring Resources, 1998); David

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

there has not been a careful and comprehensive analysis of the preferred method of communication for these early Pentecostals – their periodicals. This thesis fills that gap.

Chapter 1 lays out the methodology for this thesis. Chapter 2 surveys the theological literature of glossolalia. Then, following the *Wirkungsgeschichte*<sup>5</sup> methodology of Kimberly Alexander,<sup>6</sup> fourteen periodicals are examined. These periodicals fall generally into three groups: those from Wesleyan-Holiness (WH) roots (Chapter 3) and those with Reformed or independent roots (Chapter 4), the latter identifying with William H. Durham's Finished work (FW) theology. The third group, Oneness Pentecostalism, emerges out of the FW tradition. Together, these periodicals represent the development of an oral tradition that arises largely from the people rather than a doctrine hammered out in ecclesiastical conference.<sup>7</sup> Harvey G. Cox writes that,

while the beliefs of the fundamentalists, and of many other religious groups, are enshrined in formal theological systems, those of Pentecostalism are embedded in testimonies, ecstatic speech, and bodily movement. But it is a theology ... (only) Pentecostals have felt more at home singing their theology, or putting it in pamphlets.<sup>8</sup>

This *voca populi* converged with a respect for the printed word, a move towards common sense reading of the bible, an economical means of printing, and an

---

A. Reed, *'In Jesus Name': The History and Beliefs of Oneness Pentecostals* (JPTSup 31; Dorset, UK: Deo Publishing).

<sup>5</sup> Also called, reception history or history of effects. In 1888, Hermann Gunkel wrote, 'we find in our (biblical) sources absolutely no doctrinal statements regarding the Spirit, though we find a host of descriptions of the Spirit's activities', Hermann Gunkel, *The Influence Of The Holy Spirit: The Popular View of the Apostolic Age and the Teaching of the Apostle Paul* (Roy A. Harrisville and Philip A Quanbeck II, [trans.]; Philadelphia, PA: Fortress Press, 1979), p. 14. He is likely the first to highlight that the Spirit is known by 'effects', 'symptoms', or signs, pp. 31, 39.

<sup>6</sup> Kimberly Ervin Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing: Models in Theology and Practice* (JPTSup 29; Dorset, UK: Deo Publishing, 2006). Others who used the same methodology include, Chris E.W. Green, *Toward a Pentecostal Theology of the Lord's Supper: Foretasting the Kingdom* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012); Larry R. McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology: Discerning the Way Forward* (JPTSup 39; Dorset, UK: Deo Publishing, 2012); Melissa L. Archer, *'I Was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day': A Pentecostal Engagement with Worship in the Apocalypse* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2015); David R. Johnson, *Pneumatic Discernment In the Apocalypse: An Intertextual and Pentecostal Exploration* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2018).

<sup>7</sup> 'Authority flowed not from the learned elite but from those stalwart leaders whose personality and rhetoric grab the attention of the common folk', Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 102.

<sup>8</sup> Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 15.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia established literature distribution network through the WH movement.<sup>9</sup> Finished Work (FW) E.N. Bell considers these Pentecostal periodicals to be a ‘mighty factor’ in spreading the revival.<sup>10</sup> Therefore, the periodicals of the early Pentecostals are considered representative of their theology and practices surrounding glossolalia.

The review of literature reveals that contemporary definitions of Pentecostal glossolalia have been constrained by Modernistic categories of theology. The dogmatic statements that arose after the advent of Pentecostalism utilized what was at hand theologically, but ultimately these Modernistic categories were ill-fitting. Chapter 5 seeks to revision a contemporary theology of glossolalia that is truer to both the theology and experience of the yesterday’s pioneers and today’s Pentecostals. In other words, this thesis’ goal is to arrive at a thoroughly Pentecostal theology of glossolalia.

## **Definition of Pentecostalism.**

Because Pentecostalism is a movement that can ‘embrace and transform almost anything it meets’, any thorough definition of North American Pentecostalism one hundred years after its beginning would be imperfect.<sup>11</sup> However, Donald W. Dayton’s definition of Pentecostalism by its doctrinal distinctives;<sup>12</sup> Steven J. Land’s definition of a vibrant ‘five-fold’ spiritually,<sup>13</sup> and Walter J. Hollenweger’s black-oral-inclusive

---

<sup>9</sup> Stephens believes that most converts heard of tongues through ‘a substantial print culture’ initially created by the WH movement, Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 198. Cf. Malcolm John Taylor, ‘Publish and Be Blessed: A Case Study in Early Pentecostal Publishing History’ (PhD thesis, Birmingham, UK: University of Birmingham, 1994); W.E. Warner, ‘Periodicals’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 974-82; Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 70-72; Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, pp. 100-102, 110-27, 191-93, 199-200.

<sup>10</sup> ‘Early in this modern outpouring of the Holy Ghost the printed page began at once to be a mighty factor. When the outpouring reached Los Angeles, it was spread over the earth from that place by the printed page. In hundreds of places were men filled with the Spirit through this outpouring had not yet gone, the fire was kindled through these papers’, E.N. Bell, ‘Removal To St. Louis’, WE 83 (Mar 27, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>11</sup> Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 147.

<sup>12</sup> Dayton highlights the doctrinal statement from the Pentecostal Fellowship of North America, Dayton, *Theological Roots*, pp. 17-18.

<sup>13</sup> The five-fold gospel is: ‘1. Justification by faith in Christ. 2. Sanctification by faith a second definite work of grace. 3. Healing of body as provided for in the atonement. 4. Pre-millennial return of Christ. 5. The baptism in the Holy Spirit evidenced by speaking in tongues’, Steven Jack Land, *Pentecostal*

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia spirituality<sup>14</sup> come as close as possible.<sup>15</sup> Though Pentecostalism ‘cannot be simply defined in terms of glossolalia’,<sup>16</sup> it is a large part of any definition. If one were to remove glossolalia from either the practice or doctrinal statements, it would cease to be Pentecostal.<sup>17</sup> Tongues are called the ‘root and stem’ of Pentecostalism’s *gestalt*.<sup>18</sup> Therefore, for the purposes of this thesis, Pentecostalism will first and broadly constitute all people who claim an encounter with the Holy Spirit, an experience not expressible in any other way than glossolalia.<sup>19</sup> Second, and more narrowly, it will constitute those who hold to either the five-fold or four-fold doctrinal beliefs as outlined by Dayton, practice a spirituality as outlined by Land, and have their roots in a Black-oral-inclusive spirituality as noted by Hollenweger.<sup>20</sup>

### Time-Frame.

The ideal time-frame for this study would be April, 1906 to April, 1916, based on Hollenweger’s thesis that the first ‘five to ten years of its history … (was) the heart of pentecostal spirituality’.<sup>21</sup> He notes that the further one moves from this time-frame, the

---

*Spirituality: A Passion for the Kingdom* (JPTSup 1; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993), p. 18. Land would include those of the ‘four-fold’ gospel as Pentecostals as well, pp. 185-88.

<sup>14</sup> For a fuller treatment of Hollenweger’s black, oral, and inclusive root, see Appendix.

<sup>15</sup> Two works offer single faceted definitions and do not fully encapsulate the dynamic of Pentecostalism: 1) Pentecostalism first arose as ‘a protest against “man-made creeds” and the “coldness” of traditional worship’, Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 14. 2) ‘Pentecostalism may be viewed as … long-term protest against the whole thrust of modern urban-industrial capitalist society’, Anderson, *Vision of the Disinherited*, p. 223; cf. pp. 223-40.

<sup>16</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 65; cf. Dayton, *Theological Roots*, p. 15.

<sup>17</sup> ‘The present movement, which is called by some the “Pentecostal movement,” and is called by others by way of ridicule, the “Tongues” movement’, ‘Manifestations of the Spirit’, COGE 1.17 (Nov 1, 1910), p. 4; cf. Vinson Synan, ‘The Role of Tongues as Initial Evidence’, in *Spirit and Renewal* (JPTSup 5; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1994), p. 68; Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 23.

<sup>18</sup> ‘Edward Irving, said in 1832 that tongues ‘is the root and stem of them all [the gifts] out of which they all grow, and by which they are all nourished’, Synan, ‘The Role of Tongues’, p. 75; cf. Frank D. Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign: Towards a Sacramental Understanding of Pentecostal Experience’, *Pneuma* 15.1 (March 1, 1993), pp. 61-76 (69).

<sup>19</sup> Cecil M. Robeck, Jr., ‘Azusa Street Revival’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 344-50 (349).

<sup>20</sup> See Appendix.

<sup>21</sup> Walter J. Hollenweger, ‘Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement’, in Cheslyn Jones, Geoffrey Wainwright, and Edward Yarnold (eds.) *The Study of Spirituality* (London: SPCK, 1986), pp. 549-54 (551).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

characteristics of Pentecostal spirituality become restrained by bureaucracy, diminished by segregation<sup>22</sup> and harder to define.<sup>23</sup> However, due to the availability of these early issues, along with the consideration of world events and significant events within the Pentecostal denominations, the years of issues read will vary from periodical to periodical. Please note the periodical timeline chart above. The rationale for each periodical's timeframe is explained below.

### Methodology and Primary Sources.

The methodology of this investigation is to allow these early primary texts to speak for themselves, to permit the *voca populi* to speak their beliefs and practices clearly without the noise of theological structures being imposed upon them.<sup>24</sup> Alexander writes that 'rather than imposing a scheme or grid on the texts, an attempt has been made to allow the beliefs and practices of each group to emerge'.<sup>25</sup> Called the 'grounded theory', this method reviews the collected data and then 'repeated ideas, concepts or elements become apparent ... (finally, they) are grouped into concepts, and then into categories'.<sup>26</sup>

In this case, the periodicals were carefully read and relevant texts about glossolalia were orally read into a working document using speech recognition software. This, in a limited way, allowed the researcher to hear the voice of the people. Then, this working document was read and re-read looking for themes to emerge. Some ideas were overt and had support from numerous voices; for example, the emphasis on evidential tongues. Others were subtle and had fewer references, such as the liminal worldview or sacramental nature of glossolalia. Then, the data in this working document was

---

<sup>22</sup> Hollenweger, 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', p. 551.

<sup>23</sup> 'It will become harder and harder to make a clear-cut distinction between American Pentecostals and American non-Pentecostals in the future, now that the experience and message of the baptism of the Spirit have found a way into all the American denominations', Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 15.

<sup>24</sup> In contrast to works that trace the theology of Pentecostal leaders, such as Douglas Jacobsen, *Thinking in the Spirit: Theologies of the Early Pentecostal Movement* (Indianapolis, IN: Indiana University Press, 2003).

<sup>25</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 73.

<sup>26</sup> [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Grounded\\_theory](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Grounded_theory) (14-11-2019).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia rearranged into theological themes and categories. Finally, theologies of glossolalia were extracted from this working document, summaries were written and conclusions were drawn for this thesis. This was done for each periodical.

There are limitations with this method. First, these periodicals are all from North America. However, the voices of global Pentecostalism are occasionally heard through the testimonies and articles of missionaries and others who submitted letters, reports, and articles. Second, and regrettably, there is just a single issue of *The Whole Truth*, the official periodical of the Church of God in Christ. Given Hollenweger's observation that Pentecostalism has a decidedly black-oral-inclusive root, the absence of the largest African American Pentecostal denomination's voice is huge. Nevertheless, the methodology of this study attempted to hear all voices equally and there are a significant number of contributions from African American Pentecostals in the form of testimonies, articles, and even songs. Third, the same is true for women's voices: no attempt was made to distinguish gender; however, the female perspective is exceedingly well represented in the periodicals. Finally, this research was limited by the periodicals that survived.

Nearly all of the periodicals listed below were accessed online from the Consortium of Pentecostal Archives.<sup>27</sup>

In the Wesleyan-Pentecostal stream, the *AF* will be the first to be reviewed. It was published by the Apostolic Faith Movement of Los Angeles, California<sup>28</sup> and was the 'most prominent paper in the early months of the Azusa Street outpouring'.<sup>29</sup> Thirteen issues published between September, 1906 and May, 1908 claimed a press run of 40,000 copies by the end of 1907.<sup>30</sup> Its four pages were published sporadically as funds were

---

<sup>27</sup> <https://pentecostalarchives.org/index.cfm?> (9-21-2014).

<sup>28</sup> For issues 1.3, 1.4, and 1.5 the title of the mission in the subscription was changed to *The Pacific Apostolic Faith Mission*.

<sup>29</sup> Warner, 'Periodicals', p. 978.

<sup>30</sup> Warner, 'Periodicals', p. 976.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

available.<sup>31</sup> It was comprised of testimonies and articles, most of which were unsigned, with a good number probably written by the editorial staff.<sup>32</sup> William J. Seymour, the leader of the mission, signed 20 articles.<sup>33</sup> Clara Lum carried most of the editorial responsibility, though it was a labor of love and mission for a larger volunteer staff.<sup>34</sup> A statement of faith appears in six issues.<sup>35</sup> To maintain the integrity of the newspaper, the editors printed three official corrections and generally allowed people's testimonies to be printed even if their theology was not precise.<sup>36</sup> After these 13 issues, the periodical came under Florence Crawford's leadership in Portland, Oregon.<sup>37</sup> How this transfer came about remains a question, but it was a severe blow to Seymour and the mission.<sup>38</sup> All thirteen extant issues published of *AF* were read.

Second, Gaston B. Cashwell's inaugural issue of *The Bridegroom's Messenger (TBM)* appeared on October 1<sup>st</sup>, 1907, and was intended to promote the Pentecostal message and edify believers in the southern portion of the United States.<sup>39</sup> In addition to articles and testimonies similar to the *AF*, it contained reports from missionaries, ads for camp

---

<sup>31</sup> One eight page issue contains both February & March 1907. Cf. 'The Apostolic Faith Movement', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2; 'To Our Correspondents', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4; 'Published Free by Faith', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2.

<sup>32</sup> 'We wish no human writer to receive any honor but that it might be all to the glory of God', 'The Lord Leads', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 4. 'Most of these messages have been taken down in shorthand in meetings of great power, messages that are inspired by the Holy Ghost', 'To Our Correspondents', p. 4.

<sup>33</sup> This includes one transcribed sermon and meeting notes that was published in the 7<sup>th</sup> number of the 1<sup>st</sup> issue, *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 2.

<sup>34</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 99. 'The power of God comes down on the workers as they fold the paper', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 2.

<sup>35</sup> The standard statement of faith appears on p. 2 in issues 1.1; 1.3; 1.9 and 1.13; an abbreviated statement appears on p. 4 of issue 1.2; and a question and answer statement of faith appears on p. 2 of issue 1.11; cf. 'Questions Answered', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2; Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 119; Rena Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics: William J. Seymour and the "Bible Evidence": A Response to Cecil M. Robeck, Jr.', *Pneuma* 32.2 (2010), pp. 203-22 (213).

<sup>36</sup> The first correction is that the prophesied earthquake in Los Angeles would not occur on a Sunday, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1. The second corrects a confusion between hades and gehenna, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 4. The final confesses that a revival report at a CMA meeting in Portland was exaggerated and that the CMA did not officially come under the ASM organization, *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1.

<sup>37</sup> There is one indication of trouble in what became the final ASM issue: 'for the next issues of this paper address The Apostolic Faith Campmeeting, Portland, Ore.', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2.

<sup>38</sup> Cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 284-7, 301-10; Warner, 'Periodicals', p. 976.

<sup>39</sup> G.B. Cashwell, 'Editorials, An Explanation', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia meetings and conferences, bible schools and publications. Cashwell vetted these to exclude ‘any tricks or schemes of any backslidden preacher’.<sup>40</sup> Many prominent former WH preachers served as corresponding editors.<sup>41</sup> The paper received encouragement from Seymour and the revival in Los Angeles after just two issues.<sup>42</sup> Cashwell elevated Mrs. Elizabeth A. Sexton to ‘Editor and Proprietor’ with the 15<sup>th</sup> number of the 1<sup>st</sup> issue (June 1, 1908) so that he would have time to promote Pentecostal interests.<sup>43</sup> Though generally bimonthly, during WWI the publication nearly ran out of money and became irregular, regular printing resumed after the war.<sup>44</sup> *TBM* was published under the same name until 1942,<sup>45</sup> and served the International Pentecostal Church of Christ denomination (IPCC)<sup>46</sup> under various other monikers.<sup>47</sup> Between October 1, 1907 and September, 1919, a twelve year window of all extant issues<sup>48</sup> were read (206 issues). September, 1919 was chosen as an end date to the readings primarily to see if there was any significant theology in response to the initial evidence (IE) discussion of 1918.

---

<sup>40</sup> Cashwell, ‘Editorials, An Explanation’, p. 1.

<sup>41</sup> The list includes: Holmes of the Holmes Bible and Missionary Institute; H.H. Goff and Taylor of the Pentecostal Holiness Church; A.J. Tomlinson of the Church of God (Cleveland, TN); and others like Pinson, J.A. Culbreth, R.B. Hayes, T.J. McIntosh, A.H. Butler.

<sup>42</sup> ‘So we praise God for the new paper and ask God’s blessing on you’, Clara Lum, ‘From Los Angeles’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 1; cf. William Seymour, ‘Letter From Bro. Seymour’, *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>43</sup> ‘Notice of Change’, *TBM* 1.15 (June 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>44</sup> *TBM* 10.202 signals its troubles: ‘in the event that the Messenger is no longer published’ they wanted to meet their ‘obligation to subscribers’, ‘Our Obligation To Subscribers’, *TBM* 10.202 (Sep 1, 1917), p. 1. They offered to reimburse the subscriber with extra copies of back issues or extra gospel tracts they had on hand. Regular publishing returned with issue 11.206 (Oct 1, 1918).

<sup>45</sup> <https://ifphc.org/index.cfm?fuseaction=publicationsguide.thebridegroomsmessenger> (9-19-2014).

<sup>46</sup> The IPCC’s history is best seen through a series of mergers among smaller Wesleyan Pentecostal organizations. It began with the early Pentecostal churches who organized because of the influence of Paul and Hattie Barth and was called the Association of Pentecostal Assemblies (APA) in 1921. Then in 1936, the International Pentecostal Church merged with the APA and it was renamed the International Pentecostal Assembly. Finally, the Pentecostal Church of Christ officially joined in 1976, resulting in its current name – IPCC, W.E. Warner, ‘International Pentecostal Church of Christ’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 797-98.

<sup>47</sup> It was named *I.P.A. Messenger* (1942-46), *Bridegroom’s Messenger* (1946-74), *Bridegroom’s Messenger and Pentecostal Witness* (1974-76), *Bridegroom’s Messenger* (1976-96), <https://ifphc.org/index.cfm?fuseaction=publicationsguide.thebridegroomsmessenger> (9-20-14).

<sup>48</sup> The missing issues are: 1.10; 1.20; 1.21; 2.24; 11.203; 12.208 through 12.211; 12.213; cf. Warner, ‘Periodicals’, p. 976.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Third, *The Whole Truth* (TWT) began publication 'in the late 1890's'<sup>49</sup> as the official mouthpiece of the predominantly African-American<sup>50</sup> WH denomination Church of God in Christ (COGIC). When the founders of COGIC, C.P. Jones and Charles H. Mason, split in 1907 over Mason's Spirit Baptism (SB) at the ASM, TWT and the denomination's name came with Mason into a reformulated Pentecostal COGIC.<sup>51</sup> D.J. Young, Mason's lifelong friend and 'constant companion', became the editor after the split.<sup>52</sup> There is only one extant edition of TWT during the early years and it was edited by Justus Bowe.<sup>53</sup> The single extant issue, October, 1911, of TWT was read.

Fourth, the *Church of God Evangel* (COGE) began in 1910 and has been the official publication of the Church of God (Cleveland, TN) ever since.<sup>54</sup> Similar to other Pentecostal periodicals of the day, it provided teachings, testimonies, and kept the GC's constituents up to date on church business. It was 'a great contributor to the success of the Church',<sup>55</sup> where,

in its columns the poorest and most illiterate may tell their joys and sorrows and ask prayers of the Evangel Family ... it stands for Pentecost and all that Pentecost includes, the baptism of the Holy Ghost, speaking in other tongues and the spiritual gifts and signs following.<sup>56</sup>

More noticeable than in other periodicals was a strong push for new subscribers.<sup>57</sup> A.J. Tomlinson was the publisher and editor until December, 1922, when J.S. Llewellyn

---

<sup>49</sup> 'Its first publication is not really known', <http://www.cogic.org/thewholetruth/twt-history/> (Sep 18, 2014).

<sup>50</sup> Despite the racial environment of the day, Stevens notes that 'periodicals edited by African-Americans, including *The Whole Truth* and *Voice in the Wilderness*, showed remarkable inattention to matters of racial justice', Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 210.

<sup>51</sup> J.C. Clemons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 865-67 (866).

<sup>52</sup> Clemons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 866.

<sup>53</sup> TWT 4.4 (Oct, 1911), p. 2.

<sup>54</sup> Originally titled, *The Evening Light and Church of God Evangel*, it was shortened to COGE in 1911, Conn, *Like A Mighty Army*, p. 117.

<sup>55</sup> Conn, *Like A Mighty Army*, p. 117.

<sup>56</sup> 'The Evangel's Mission', COGE 5.37 (Sep 12, 1914), p. 3.

<sup>57</sup> For example, 'let every subscriber secure at least one more yearly subscription and send it in at once', A.J. Tomlinson, 'To Our Subscribers and Friends', COGE 1.8 (Jun 15, 1910), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

assumed the post.<sup>58</sup> All extant copies<sup>59</sup> between March 1, 1910 and December 27, 1919 were read (325 issues). Again, 1919 was chosen as an end to the reading due to the IE controversy of 1918.

Fifth, and final in the Wesleyan-Pentecostal stream, the *Pentecostal Holiness Advocate* (*PHA*), began in May, 1917 as the official voice of the Pentecostal Holiness Church. However, many of its readers were familiar with its forerunner, *The Holiness Advocate* (*THA*) which was the ‘sine qua non of instantaneous sanctification as a second work of grace’, but went out of business due to a lack of funds.<sup>60</sup> Many of the regular features of the *PHA* continued those in the *THA*.<sup>61</sup> The *PHA*’s rather late start<sup>62</sup> was due to the fact the *Apostolic Evangel* and the *Bridegrooms Messenger* were informal voices of the church.<sup>63</sup> George F. Taylor, a former general superintendent, was chosen as the editor.<sup>64</sup> There are six extant issues of the *THA* that were published after the start of the ASM revival, these six were examined.<sup>65</sup> Between May 3, 1917 and April 26, 1923, a six year window, all

---

<sup>58</sup> Llewellyn’s first issue is 13.47 (Dec 9, 1922); cf. Conn, *Like A Mighty Army*, p. 173.

<sup>59</sup> There are only 22 extant issues between 1910 – 1913 (21 from 1910 and 1 from 1912). During this period it was published bi-monthly. A full collection of weekly publications begin with the January 3, 1914 issue. There were 51 issues a year as the COGE was not published the week of the annual General Assembly in November.

<sup>60</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 82. From Lumberton, NC, Ambrose B. Crumpler started the paper in April, 1901, and bi-monthly published articles relevant to the WH movement. After many of his subscribers experienced SB and tongues, they pulled their subscriptions due to Crumpler’s ‘bitter anti-Pentecostal attacks’, p. 107; cf. Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 125. The once popular paper ceased publication in 1908. Synan notes that this periodical added to the holiness conflict with the Methodist church and may have facilitated the ‘come-outism’ of the day, Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 63. For a thoughtful look at the impact of periodicals and publishing on the WH movement, see Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, pp. 99-135.

<sup>61</sup> These include a sermon, testimonies, reports from the mission field, a ‘Children’s Corner’, and ‘Our Dead’.

<sup>62</sup> After publication began in 1917, it was said that ‘The Advocate was a part of the church that had “long been lacking”, as it would help with the centralization and growing activities of the denomination, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 154.

<sup>63</sup> Synan notes that ‘the privately-printed *Apostolic Evangel* of Falcon, North Carolina, had served as the informal, but officially approved, voice of the church’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 152. Also, ‘Cashwell’s paper, *The Bridegrooms Messenger*, was adopted as the “organ of this church until further arrangements”’, Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 119; cf. pp. 118-19.

<sup>64</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 153.

<sup>65</sup> They are: *HA* 6.3 (May 15, 1906); *HA* (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), pp. 3-8; *HA* 6.5 (Jun 15, 1906); *HA* 6.6 (Jul 1, 1906); *HA* 7.3 (May 15, 1907); *HA* 7.4 (Jun 1, 1907).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia extant issues of *PHA* were read (296).<sup>66</sup> This periodical was read beyond the 1920 window of this study because 1) the late start of the *PHA*, and 2) because it was chosen as representative of all the Pentecostal periodicals to see if any significant theology of glossolalia emerged or changed after 1920.

In the FW stream, the significance of *Triumphs of Faith* (*TOF*) is that it ‘bridged the Holiness and Pentecostal movements, and ... provided a non-sectarian forum for a variety of denominations’ and independent people who connected with the founder and publisher, Carrie Judd Montgomery.<sup>67</sup> It was 24 pages of devotional writings, biblical and theological articles, along with personal testimonies and revival reports. Though Montgomery published *TOF* for 65 years, only a nine year window between January, 1906 and December 1914, was read (106 issues).<sup>68</sup> This reading of the independent *TOF* ceases in 1914 because that is when Montgomery joins the AG.

The second FW periodical, *The Pentecost* (*TP*), was begun by J. Roswell Flower in August, 1908 in Indianapolis, IN.<sup>69</sup> He served as the founder / editor and then passed the publication onto his assistant editor, A.S. Copley in 1910.<sup>70</sup> At first the publication charged fifty cents annually, but soon made it ‘free to all who desire it’ by means of

---

<sup>66</sup> Volume-wise, this equalled 312 volumes because 16 volumes were considered double issues [2.28 & 29 (Nov 7 & 14, 1918); 2.30 & 31 (Nov 21 & 28, 1918); 2.33 & 34 (Dec 19 & 25, 1918); 2.36 & 37 (Jan 2 & 9, 1919); 2.44 & 45 (Mar 6 & 13, 1919); 3.1 & 2 (May 1 & 8, 1919); 3.4 & 5 (May 22 & 29, 1919); 3.7 & 8 Jun 12 & 19, 1919); 3.12 & 13 (Jul 17 & 24, 1919); 3.16 & 17 (Aug 14 & 21, 1919); 3.19& 20 (Sep 4 & 11, 1919); 3.23 & 24 (Oct 2 & 9, 1919); 3.25 & 26 (Oct 16 & 23, 1919); 3.31 & 32 (Nov 27 & Dec 4, 1919); 4.44 & 45 (Mar 3 & 10, 1921); 4.50 & 51 (Apr 14 & 21, 1921)].

<sup>67</sup> W.E. Warner, ‘Carrie Judd Montgomery’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 904-06 (905).

<sup>68</sup> Two issues are not extant, 26.5 (May 1906) and 30.8 (Aug 1910). This window was chosen because it covers the material prior to the ASM revival and goes through the founding of the AG.

<sup>69</sup> The publication moved to Kansas City, MO in March, 1909, *TP* 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 6.

<sup>70</sup> Of the extant copies, Flower was listed as the ‘Foreign and City Editor’, 1.1 (Aug 1908) and 1.2 (Sep 1908); ‘Foreign Editor’, 1.3 (Nov 1908); ‘Editor’, 1.4 (Dec 1908) to 1.12 (Nov 1909); and then, ‘Associate Editor’, 2.2 (Feb 1910) to 2. 9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910). Copley was listed as ‘Associate Editor’ between 1.4 (Dec 1908) to 2.9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910) and is listed as ‘Editor’ 2.2 (Jan 1910) and 2.11&12 (Nov / Dec 1910). They had a good working relationship: ‘it is about two years since I first met Brother Copley and since that time our hearts have slowly been joined together in a peculiar and wonderful manner’, *TP* 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 6.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

'free-will offerings'.<sup>71</sup> It was usually twelve pages of revival reports, articles, testimonies and the last page listed an 'Apostolic Faith Directory' to promote the Pentecostal message.<sup>72</sup> Little is known of its circulation or print-runs. All nineteen extant issues between 1908 -1910 were read.

The third FW periodical, *Pentecostal Testimony* (PT), was published between 1910-1912 'as the Lord leads, and gives time and strength to prepare the materials'.<sup>73</sup> PT's purpose was to 'stand for the real truths of Pentecost'.<sup>74</sup> Its significance is that its editor and primary contributor, Durham, defined the FW stream. There are six extant issues that had print runs between 25,000 and 51,900.<sup>75</sup> However, due to Durham's untimely death, the final issue was a memorial issue that largely reprinted articles from other editions.<sup>76</sup> All six extant issues were read.

The fourth FW publication is *Word and Witness* (WW). Editor E.N. Bell traced WW's root to be 'the earliest Pentecostal paper'.<sup>77</sup> Under Bell, it was a primarily a clearing

---

<sup>71</sup> TP 1.8 (Jul 1909), p. 6.

<sup>72</sup> Warner, 'Periodicals', pp. 975-76.

<sup>73</sup> William Durham, 'Editorial', PT 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 1. He noted that God 'will provide the funds for printing and mailing' the paper as well. At times PT was 'under great disadvantages and difficulties ... we have been in the midst of a real revival which took practically all our strength', William Durham, 'Editorial Note', PT 2.2 (May 1912), p. 1.

<sup>74</sup> William Durham, 'Editorial', PT 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 1.

<sup>75</sup> PT 1.1 (Mar 27, 1909) had a press run of 25,000 copies, William Durham, 'Criticisms Answered', PT 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 11. Non-extant issues (1.2; 1.3; 1.4) had a press run either of 25,000 or 51,900. The most controversial issues, 1.6 and 1.7 (Jan 1911), are not extant. Durham wrote that 1.6 'stirred up considerable opposition' but with 1.7 'the intensity of the heat of battle increased', William Durham, 'The Great Battle Of Nineteen Eleven', PT 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 6-8 (7). Other extant issues are: 1.8 (Aug 1911); 2.1 (Jan 1912); 2.2 (May 1912); and 2.3 (Jul or Aug 1912).

<sup>76</sup> The memorial edition is PT 2.3 (Jul or Aug 1912).

<sup>77</sup> Others predated WW but morphed into Pentecostal periodicals. Bell's claim is that Parham's paper was the first periodical birthed of Pentecostalism. Bell wrote, 'the earliest Pentecostal paper to be issued was the "Apostolic Faith" of Texas ... after seven or eight years ... (it) began to come forth monthly from Malvern, Ark. ... the same became Word and Witness', E.N. Bell, 'Great Enterprise For God', CE 78 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 1. Brumback wrote, 'the Apostolic Faith contingent which in 1909 rejected the leadership of Charles Parham had maintained fairly close fellowship among themselves ... (and) selected (Bell) to edit the publication *Apostolic Faith*', Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 152; cf. p. 155. William W. Menzies notes the editorial change in 1910, William W. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1971), p. 89. Parham continued to publish his own *Apostolic Faith* at 'Baxter Springs, KS 1910-17, 1925-29', James R. Goff, 'Charles Fox Parham', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 955-57 (956).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

house for revival announcements, missionary reports, testimonies, devotional writings and updates on the new AG fellowship after the Dec. 20, 1913 issue. This periodical became the monthly ‘official organ’ of the new formed AG, while ‘those who desire a weekly paper (could) avail themselves of *The Christian Evangel*'.<sup>78</sup> Bell noted that the circulation of the WW ‘reached nearly 25,000 monthly’ with one edition reaching 60,000.<sup>79</sup> However, soon Bell wrote that ‘the Weekly paper has grown ... (and) our good old monthly, the Word and Witness ... has been crowded into the background. **A whole month** is now too long'.<sup>80</sup> The final issue of WW was December, 1915 when all subscriptions were ‘transferred to the Weekly Evangel'.<sup>81</sup> All twenty-eight extant issues from 1912 through 1915 were examined.

The fifth FW periodical was the official publication of the AG and went through several names – *Christian Evangel* (CE),<sup>82</sup> the *Weekly Evangel* (WE),<sup>83</sup> and back again to the *Christian Evangel*<sup>84</sup> – before settling on the *Pentecostal Evangel* (PE).<sup>85</sup> PE was chosen because of the ‘initial evidence controversy’ and the desire to ‘speak out with conviction for the distinctiveness of the Pentecostal positon'.<sup>86</sup> For a brief period Bell was the

---

<sup>78</sup> Joseph R. Flower, ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, PE 4132 (Jul 18, 1993), pp. 7, 22 (22); cf. Edith L. Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God: A Chapter In The Story Of American Pentecostalism* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1989), p. 204.

<sup>79</sup> Bell, ‘Great Enterprise For God’, p. 1. The Oct. 1912 issue noted that 12,000 copies were printed, Editor, ‘Blessings In Bundles’ WW 8.8 (Oct 1912), p. 2. Menzies believed that there was a combined circulation of 25,000 between the two periodicals at the time of the AG’s formation, Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 132.

<sup>80</sup> Advertisement, WW 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 3. Bold original. Cf. Flower, ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, p. 22. Further, WW was running many of the same articles and testimonies in both the WW and CE.

<sup>81</sup> Advertisement, WW 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 3.

<sup>82</sup> The *Christian Evangel* was published at Plainfield, IN from Jul 19, 1913 to Jul 4, 1914, at Findlay, OH from Jul 11, 1914 to Jan 30, 1915, and at St. Louis, MO from Feb 13, 1915 to Mar 6, 1915.

<sup>83</sup> The *Weekly Evangel* was published at St. Louis from Mar 13, 1915 to May 18, 1918. This name change was at the request of the Post Office which had another publication with a similar name being published from St. Louis, Flower, ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, p. 22.

<sup>84</sup> The *Christian Evangel* was published at Springfield, MO from Jun 1, 1918 to Oct 4, 1919, and on Jul 1, 1918 it became bi-weekly for the duration of this study’s window. ‘Due to paper shortage and high production cost brought on by World War I, the *Weekly Evangel* went bi-weekly’ and returned to weekly in March 1923, Flower, ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, p. 22.

<sup>85</sup>The *Pentecostal Evangel* was published at Springfield, MO from Oct 18, 1919 to Jun 9, 2002.

<sup>86</sup> Flower, ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, p. 22.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia managing editor of both periodicals.<sup>87</sup> All 235 extant copies from Jan 9, 1915 through Dec 25, 1920 were read. 1920 was chosen as the ideal end of the readings due to the finalization of the major controversies about glossolalia.

The third major stream is Oneness Pentecostalism which emerges out of the FW stream. The independent periodical, *The Good Report* (TGR), was published between May, 1911 and at least March, 1914 reveals these two streams in the same periodical. Significantly, one can see an emerging Oneness theology in the final seven extant issues.<sup>88</sup> Two earlier extant issues were published by Robert E. McAlister in Canada to further the Pentecostal message.<sup>89</sup> Probably in June or July, 1913 McAlister amalgamated TGR with 'The Apostolic Faith' of Los Angeles, CA for unknown reasons.<sup>90</sup> At that time, Frank J. Ewart, Durham's assistant pastor in Los Angeles, became co-editor with McAlister. Print-runs were more successful in Canada.<sup>91</sup> All nine extant issues were read and incorporated into this thesis.

The final material to be reviewed represents the official Oneness branch of Pentecostalism. Its significance is a unique theology of glossolalia that differs from both WH and FW Pentecostalism.<sup>92</sup> There are two extant Oneness periodicals.<sup>93</sup> First, the

---

<sup>87</sup> This was 'during the interval from July 1914 to March 1915 when the national headquarters was located in Findlay, Ohio', Flower, 'The Evangel's Roots', p. 22.

<sup>88</sup> TGR 2.1 (Jun 1, 1913); TGR 2.3 (Aug 1, 1913); TGR 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913); TGR 1.6 (Nov 1, 1913); TGR 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913); TGR 1.8 (Jan 1914); TGR 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914).

<sup>89</sup> TGR 1 (May, 1911); TGR 1.3 (1912).

<sup>90</sup> 'It is now six months since the "Good Report and The Apostolic Faith" were amalgamated and sent forth under the first name', Ewart & McAlister, 'Letter To Our Readers and Correspondents', TGR 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>91</sup> In Canada: 'so we are enlarging this issue ... from 8 to 16 pages, and publishing 50,000 copies', Editor, 'Our Publication', TGR 1.3 (1912), p. 16. In Los Angeles: 'we are dropping the subscription price for the time being ... we expect to print 20,000 copies of this issue', TGR 1.3 (1912), p. 2. 'We have on our subscription list about 1000 names ... but we will need 5000 regular subscribers to make the paper pay for itself', Ewart & McAlister, 'Letter To Our Readers And Correspondents', TGR 2.3 (Aug 1, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>92</sup> Specifically, initial tongues are a sign of a completed or 'full salvation', 'Fundamental Doctrine', *Articles of Faith of the United Pentecostal Church International* (UPCI Manual, 2018 edition), p. 31.

<sup>93</sup> Many thanks to the *Flower Pentecostal Heritage Center*, Cecil M. Robeck, Jr. and John Christopher Thomas for their help in locating these largely heretofore unexamined periodicals. Even the editor of *MDS*, Ewart, commented 'that we cannot hang on too many back numbers. We find ourselves with only a few of No. 18, and we don't expect to have these on hand long', 'Editorial Note', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug 1917), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

TGR's name was changed to *Meat In Due Season* (MDS) and became fully Oneness in belief.<sup>94</sup> Two of the three issues of MDS were published between the 3<sup>rd</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> General Councils of the AG and provide a fascinating snapshot of theology just prior to the formal schism.<sup>95</sup> Second, three copies of *The Blessed Truth* (TBT),<sup>96</sup> published by Daniel C.O. Opperman are extant.<sup>97</sup> Finally, seven tracts by three prominent preachers<sup>98</sup> as well as a songbook by Mattie Crawford, *The Pentecostal Flame*, were reviewed.<sup>99</sup>

---

<sup>94</sup> MDS was published in Los Angeles, CA, by Ewart. Extant issues are: 1.9 (Dec, 1915); 1.13 (Jun, 1916); 1.21 (Aug, 1917). Talmadge L. French, *Our God Is One* (Indianapolis, IN: Voice & Vision Publications, 1999), p. 63.

<sup>95</sup> For example Oneness' evolving Christology can be seen in, Ewart, 'The Record Of The Son', MDS 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 1. Or consider the developing Oneness view of the godhead: 'we saw from this premise (baptism in Jesus' name) that the old trinity theory was unscriptural. That there was not three Gods in the sense of individual embodiment ... so we had to abandon the old essential tenet of all Orthodox theology as absolutely unscriptural, and we denounced the so-called trinity as such ... *The very fact that universal Christendom had accepted this tenet of Christian theology constitutes a strong proof that it is incorrect*', F.J. Ewart, 'The Unity Of God', MDS 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 1. Italics mine. Cf. F.J. Ewart, 'Editorial', MDS 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 2. Emotions among friends were raw because of the conflict. Cf. Homer Faulkner, 'From Brother Faulkner', MDS 1.9 (Dec 1915), p. 2; Ewart, 'Editorial', p. 2; F.J. Ewart, 'To Our Friends', MDS 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 4.

<sup>96</sup> *The Blessed Truth* was published semi-monthly in Eureka Springs, AR, by Daniel C.O. Opperman. Extant issues are: 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918); 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919); and 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919).

<sup>97</sup> Daniel Charles Owen Opperman studied at several colleges and was recognized as an educator. He was a founding member of the AG but 'withdrew in 1916 to become chairman of a fledgling Oneness association', Edith L. Blumhofer, 'Daniel Charles Owen Opperman', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 946-47.

<sup>98</sup> Donald W. Dayton, *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985). The preachers are Ewart, Haywood, and Urshan.

<sup>99</sup> Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angles, CA, 1923).

## Chapter 2

### Bibliographic Review of Literature on Glossolalia.

#### Introduction.

The purpose of this chapter is to review the scholarly literature concerning Pentecostal glossolalia. Because ‘the literature on glossolalia … is immense’, this survey will limit itself to significant or pioneering monographs from 1888 to the present.<sup>1</sup> Overall, approaches to the topic could be categorized broadly as having an historical, psychological, sociological, linguistic, exegetical, or an interdisciplinary approach.<sup>2</sup> Many pieces of literature about glossolalia were read but could not fit within word the limitations of this thesis. For example, the entire method of looking at tongues through psychology is not included due to space, except where it is deemed essential as background to subsequent readings. The first section, 1888 to 1929, looks at the earliest works among non-Pentecostals and Pentecostals. The second period, between 1930 and 1969, reveals these two streams of literature largely flowing independently of the other. The third section, 1970 to present, marks an engagement between these two streams of literature and a veritable flood of publications. This third period suffered the greatest omission of many fine pieces due to space. The fourth section examines works on glossolalia that import valuable concepts from an Eastern Orthodox perspective. The final section reviews literature that utilizes the early Pentecostal periodicals. The goal of this survey is threefold. 1) To lay a foundation for reading of the early Pentecostal periodicals and their theological discussions. 2) To acquaint the reader with the theological issues and terminology surrounding glossolalia. 3) To show the rich

---

<sup>1</sup> Wacker, *Heaven Below*, p. 283 n. 1.

<sup>2</sup> See for example, Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. xiv-xxiv, his introduction cites even a ‘health’ approach; for an excellent summary of the wide variety of approaches within the exegetical category, see, Mark J. Cartledge, ‘The Nature and Function of New Testament Glossolalia’, *Evangelical Quarterly* 72:2 (2000), pp. 135-50.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
theological discussions that have been largely overlooked until recently and the need  
for this thesis.

## I. Early Literature, 1888 to 1929.

While it is true that many of the first generation Pentecostals wrote ‘books, pamphlets, and newspapers … at a popular level’ largely due to an ‘anti-intellectualism which plagued much of the movement’,<sup>3</sup> the following literature reveals a theological depth that has been largely ignored by scholars. Chronologically, the pieces from 1906 onward reveal the initial response of Pentecostal and non-Pentecostal scholars to the ASM revival.

### Works That Predate The Azusa Street Mission Revival

These three pieces of literature written before the ASM revival provide a background for this study on glossolalia, and demonstrate the great interest in the glossolalia. Charles F. Parham’s pioneering pamphlet, is the first formal declaration of SB having an evidence.

### Hermann Gunkel, 1888.

Though Pentecostals could embrace some of what Herman Gunkel’s writes about glossolalia, that is not his main contribution.<sup>4</sup> This work’s significance is the observation that the Holy Spirit is known by his ‘effects’.<sup>5</sup> This thesis is a product of Gunkel’s pioneering ‘reception history’ or *Wirkungsgeschichte*.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup> Robby Waddell, ‘Whence Pentecostal Scholarship? The Coming of Age of the Pentecostal Critical Tradition and a Forecast for its Future’, in Steven M. Fettke and Robby Waddell (eds.) *Pentecostals in the Academy: Testimonies of Call* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012), pp. 243-59 (244).

<sup>4</sup> He noted that: 1) tongues are ecstatic, Gunkel, *The Influence Of The Holy Spirit*, p. 32; cf. pp. ix, 18, 31-32, 80-81, 116. 2) All Christians have the Spirit, but there are varying degrees of ‘fullness’, pp. 17, 42. 3) Paul was a ‘pneumatic’ and spoke in tongues which guided his correction of Corinth’s overemphasis on glossolalia, p. 77; cf. also, pp. 25, 30-31, 81, 85-86, 88. 4) There is counterfeit and genuine glossolalia, p. 57. Overall, he presents a ‘lively picture’ of the Spirit compatible with the NT worldview, pp. 96, 127.

<sup>5</sup> Gunkel, *The Influence Of The Holy Spirit*, pp. 25-26, 31, 39.

<sup>6</sup> ‘Gunkel founded a “school,” fathered form critical research’, introduction, Gunkel, *The Influence Of The Holy Spirit*, p. vii.

### Carl Clemen, 1899.

Carl Clemen's historical-critical method concludes that the languages of Acts 2 is a later addition to the text from a vague memory.<sup>7</sup> This theory would come to be called 'exalted memory' or 'cryptomnesia'.<sup>8</sup> He writes that genuine glossolalic 'phenomenon (is) conceivable only in the earliest period of the Christian Church' and then 'spontaneously disappeared'.<sup>9</sup> Further, Mk 16.17 is not original and its author had 'no definite conception of the speaking with tongues'.<sup>10</sup> Subsequent attempts to revitalize tongues are 'very artificial' and should not be considered a same experience as the first Christians.<sup>11</sup>

### Charles F. Parham, 1902.

*The Baptism With The Holy Ghost and Speaking In Tongues*, is a short pamphlet authored by Pentecostal pioneer Charles F. Parham.<sup>12</sup> He is largely seen as the father of Pentecostalism's theology of glossolalia.<sup>13</sup> This brief summary will also include writings

---

<sup>7</sup> Carl Clemen, "The Speaking with Tongues" of the Early Christians', *The Expository Times*, 10.344 (1899), pp. 344-52 (345-46, 352).

<sup>8</sup> Charles Shumway, provides an explanation of the fully developed theory, Charles Shumway, 'A Study of "The Gift of Tongues"' (AB Thesis, University of Southern California, 1914), pp. 23-30; cf. Frederick G. Henke, 'The Gift of Tongues and Related Phenomena at the Present Day', *The American Journal of Theology*, 13.2 (April 1909), pp. 193-206 (205); Alexander Mackie, *The Gift of Tongues: A Study in Pathological Aspects of Christianity* (New York: George H. Doran Company, 1921), pp. 253-54; George Barton Cutten, *Speaking with Tongues, Historically and Psychologically Considered* (New Haven, London: Yale University Press; Humphrey Milford, Oxford University Press, 1927), pp. 176-81. James D.G. Dunn notes that cryptomnesia is not a panacea because it would have to be 'communal ecstasy' on the Day of Pentecost, James D.G. Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit* (Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1975), p. 151. For a positive assessment of cryptomnesia, see Cyril Glyndwr Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit: A Study of Pentecostal Glossolalia and Related Phenomena* (Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1981), pp. 34, 54, 184, 188-89.

<sup>9</sup> Clemen, 'The Speaking with Tongues', pp. 346, 351.

<sup>10</sup> Clemen, 'The Speaking with Tongues', p. 352; cf. pp. 345-56.

<sup>11</sup> Clemen, 'The Speaking with Tongues', p. 346; cf. pp. 349-50.

<sup>12</sup> Charles F. Parham, 'The Baptism With The Holy Ghost' in W.F. Carothers, *The Baptism With The Holy Ghost and The Speaking In Tongues* (Zion City, IL: Carothers, 1906 reprint; January, 1902), pp. 5-18. Parham's section was previously published in January, 1902, in Charles F. Parham, *Kol Kare Bomidbar: A Voice Crying in the Wilderness* (Reprint, Joplin, MO: The Joplin Printing Co., 1944), pp. 25-38.

<sup>13</sup> Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 16. There is a debate among historians as to just who is the founder of Pentecostalism. Other notable candidates are: Seymour, p. 10; no human founder, 'the Holy Spirit alone had prompted this movement', p. 14; and both Parham and Seymour together, p. 15.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
from *The Everlasting Gospel*.<sup>14</sup> Parham's theological significance is threefold: evidential glossolalia, missionary tongues (MT), and a biblical hermeneutic.

Parham believes that rooted in scripture is a third experience, a SB that has an evidence: 'speaking in tongues is an inseparable part of the Baptism of the Holy Spirit distinguishing it from all previous works; and that no one has received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit who has not a *Bible evidence* to show for it'.<sup>15</sup> The evidence or 'Bible sign', is distinct from the 'anointing' which occurs at salvation and the WH second work view of sanctification.<sup>16</sup> Sanctification could not be SB because 'the Bible evidence is lacking in their lives'.<sup>17</sup> Wesleyan-holiness' sanctification is open to 'private interpretations as to His visible manifestation', but SB 'is a gift not a grace, (and) is not obtained in justification or sanctification'.<sup>18</sup>

Parham believes that all glossolalia is a specific human language given to tell the gospel in that language. These are new tongues are for missionaries:<sup>19</sup> 'in the close of the age, God proposes to send forth men and women preaching in languages they know not a word of, which when interpreted the hearers will know is truly a message from God'.<sup>20</sup> This belief solidified into a litmus test for missionaries: 'if the Holy Spirit had sent out these workers, they would have been endowed with real tongues'.<sup>21</sup> These MT are the same as the 'gift of tongues' that Paul notes in 1 Corinthians 12. Glossolalia's

---

<sup>14</sup> Charles F. Parham, *The Everlasting Gospel* (n.p., 1919).

<sup>15</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 15. Italics mine.

<sup>16</sup> Parham, *The Everlasting Gospel*, p. 70. He writes, 'the anointing is within you a well of water (artesian); the baptism lends the pressure to compel that well to flow from your inwards parts in "streams of living water"', p. 70.

<sup>17</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 7.

<sup>18</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', pp. 7, 10.

<sup>19</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', pp. 8, 11, 15.

<sup>20</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 11.

<sup>21</sup> Parham, *The Everlasting Gospel*, p. 70. After most of Pentecostalism moved away from MT, he wrote that the 'gift of tongues may develop into a real gift of language', apparently moving from supernatural ability to use of foreign languages 'intelligently', p. 68. This position is held so tightly that even after a lot of proof otherwise, the denomination he founded still holds this position, Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 163.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
restoration is an integral sign of God's activity within history for a last day's revival.<sup>22</sup>  
Cessationists are wrong in saying 'those things were only meant for the apostles and  
only to be spiritually interpreted for us', because 'the same evidence would follow  
today as at that time'.<sup>23</sup>

Finally, these early pioneers were biblical literalists<sup>24</sup> and Parham lays out what will  
be a standard Pentecostal interpretation of the Holy Spirit having an evidence. On the  
Day of Pentecost, Peter identifies Joel's prophecy with glossolalia: 'this is that which  
was spoken by Joel, the prophet'.<sup>25</sup> Pentecost is so pivotal and paradigmatic that Acts 2  
would 'be sufficient (by itself), but it is found repeatedly, yea every time the Holy Ghost  
fell and the evidence was noted, it proved to be this same one of speaking in tongues'.<sup>26</sup>  
Parham sees a 'pattern' in the book of Acts (2, 10 & 19), and Paul's writings are  
complimentary to Luke's.<sup>27</sup>

## **Post Azusa Street Mission Revival (1906) Works**

### **Warren F. Carothers, 1906.**

In the early years, Warren F. Carothers worked closely with Parham, serving as his  
'Field Director'.<sup>28</sup> Nonetheless, Carother's theology of tongues diverged from Parham's

---

<sup>22</sup> Parham's eschatology is an imminent premillennial eschatology, with emphasis on 'sealing of the Bride', which occurs with SB. This sealing will help those who are genuine 'escape the plagues and wraths of the last days' and imparts to them special powers for the end-time harvest, Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 6. Only the elect 'Man-child' (the 144,000) will be raptured, all the remaining Christians will go through tribulation until the millennial kingdom is established, McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, pp. 12-13. This special sealing is evidenced by tongues as a sign, Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 7; cf. Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, pp. 78-79.

<sup>23</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', pp. 8, 13.

<sup>24</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 110; cf. Russell P. Spittler, 'Are Pentecostals and Charismatics Fundamentalists? A Review of American Uses of These Categories', in Karla Poewe (ed.) *Charismatic Christianity as a Global Culture* (Colombia, SC: University of South Carolina Press, 1994), pp. 103-18 (111).

<sup>25</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 16.

<sup>26</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', p. 16.

<sup>27</sup> Parham, 'Baptism with the Holy Ghost', pp. 16-17. In this tract Parham sees a pattern only in Acts 2, 10 and 19. He believes that Paul's testimony of speaking in tongues and command to 'forbid not' supports his position, p. 18.

<sup>28</sup> Warren F. Carothers, 'Notes and Paragraphs' in *The Baptism With The Holy Ghost and The Speaking In Tongues* (Zion City, IL: Carothers, 1906). At the time of his SB, Carothers was a lawyer and pastor of Christian Witness Tabernacle in Houston, TX, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 45. He would become an Executive

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
in its nature and purpose. At first, he doubted the linguistic nature of glossolalia until ‘I heard a sister sing an entire hymn in German, which I readily understood in its entirety ... I came to believe them to be of God’.<sup>29</sup> Yet he expressed doubt about Parham’s theory of MT:

just what part of tongues is to fill in the evangelization of heathen countries is (sic) matter for faith as yet. *It scarcely seems from the evidence at hand to have had much to do with foreign mission work in New Testament times*, and yet, in view of the apparent utility of the gift in that sphere and of the wonderful missionary spirit that comes with Pentecost, we are expecting the gift to be copiously used in the foreign field. *We shall soon know.*<sup>30</sup>

This doubt about MT enabled Carothers to see three additional purposes for glossolalia. First, ‘tongues now are praises to God in language peculiarly acceptable to Him’.<sup>31</sup> Second, personal edification: some pray for hours ‘just for the joy and edification they receive from the heavenly exercise’.<sup>32</sup> His third reason is that it is a sign for unbelievers.<sup>33</sup> As for the bible sign, Carothers clarified that one ‘may have the Holy Spirit ... and not yet have the baptism’, for example, John the Baptist.<sup>34</sup>

### **Minnie Abrams, 1906.**

Minnie Abrams’ book (1906) about a revival at the Mukti Mission in India reveals the worldwide nature of Pentecostalism’s origin and is among the earliest Pentecostal publications.<sup>35</sup> She states, ‘young men and women are receiving the GIFTS of the Holy

---

Presbyter in the AG, was a segregationist, and did not believe Seymour should go to Los Angeles until he had been Spirit baptized, pp. 46-50.

<sup>29</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, pp. 19-20.

<sup>30</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, p. 21. Italics mine.

<sup>31</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, p. 21.

<sup>32</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, p. 21. He notes 1 Cor. 14.14 for biblical support.

<sup>33</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, p. 21. He notes 1 Cor. 14.22 for biblical support.

<sup>34</sup> Carothers, ‘Notes and Paragraphs’, p. 23; cf. pp. 23-24.

<sup>35</sup> Minnie Abrams, *The Baptism of the Holy Ghost & Fire* (Kedgaon, India: Mukti Mission Press, 1906, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed.). The first edition was published in April, 1906 and makes no mention of glossolalia. The second edition was published in December, 1906 and is identical to the first, except for the inclusion of tongues. It may have been revised due to its popularity, or because of Abrams awareness of the ASM revival, or that ‘the indigenous Indians ... were already speaking in tongues’, cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 253-54 (254). Of note is: 1) the report of tongues at the ASM revival, pp. 69-70. 2) Abrams countered cessationism by noting: that Acts 2.39 is a promise for ‘all who are afar off’; that Acts 2.17-20 notes that signs are to

Spirit, speaking with tongues, interpreting tongues previously unknown to them; the sick are being healed, and unclean spirits cast out to prayer'.<sup>36</sup> After sanctification it is 'the fullness of the Holy Ghost, the fire that empowers us to preach the word in the fullness of love and with signs following'.<sup>37</sup> Glossolalia is a sign of empowerment: 'it was not until this manifestation of the Holy Spirit was received that they (the disciples) were empowered to preach the death and resurrection of Jesus'.<sup>38</sup>

### Dawson A. Walker, 1906.

Aware of the Welsh revival,<sup>39</sup> Dawson A. Walker's work is an attempt to prove that Luke was a credible historian precisely because he does not harmonize with Paul.<sup>40</sup> Walker disagrees with attempts to 'elevate St. Paul at the expense of St. Luke'<sup>41</sup> because there are many 'forms' of glossolalia,<sup>42</sup> and Luke stresses God as the source rather than the 'precise mode of the phenomenon'.<sup>43</sup> Following Clemen, glossolalia on the Day of Pentecost was an ecstatic form of speech in which the speaker recalled foreign words overheard in Jerusalem.<sup>44</sup> Walker believes that 'the two different accounts are not mutually exclusive' and that a better understanding of psychology and exegesis will clarify the gap between Paul and Luke.<sup>45</sup>

---

continue until 'that great and notable day'; and that 'there are many proofs that the fire of the Holy Ghost has been given to the people of God all down through the centuries', pp. 19, 38, 68.

<sup>36</sup> Abrams, *Holy Ghost & Fire*, p. 3.

<sup>37</sup> Abrams, *Holy Ghost & Fire*, pp. 71, cf. pp. 46-47.

<sup>38</sup> Abrams, *Holy Ghost & Fire*, p. 38. Abrams believes the disciples received the Spirit when Jesus breathed on them (Jn 20.22); however, 'when we have come to Christ for the forgiveness of our sins we have received only the tiniest beginning of what Christ purchased for us on the cross', p. 25. She advises that 'no one should seek to have manifestations ... because others have had them', p. 85. Also, 'we do not need to worry over these manifestations, nor seek to suppress them', p. 79. Finally, 'every time she put her hands upon the work at Mukti to suppress joy or strong conviction ... the work of revival stopped', pp. 74-75, 80.

<sup>39</sup> Dawson A. Walker, *The Gift of Tongues and Other Essays* (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1906), p. 58, n.

<sup>40</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, pp. 27, 35, 49.

<sup>41</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, p. 4; cf. pp. 30-31.

<sup>42</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, pp. 40-41.

<sup>43</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, p. 46.

<sup>44</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, p. 61.

<sup>45</sup> Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, p. 35. And yet, at one point Walker falls back on discrediting the text of First Corinthians to make his supposition about an influential 'Christ party' at Corinth fit, p. 78.

## George Floyd Taylor, 1907.

*The Spirit and the Bride*<sup>46</sup> is significant as the ‘first sustained text of pentecostal theology’.<sup>47</sup> Taylor, addresses a wide range of topics relevant to Pentecostal glossolalia, including its distinction from sanctification, the nature of tongues, and the gifts of the Spirit, but he takes ‘special pains to answer the question, “do all who receive the Baptism of the Spirit speak with other tongues”’?<sup>48</sup>

In order for the Pentecostal perspective of evidential tongues to make sense, SB has to be separated from the WH perspective that SB is a distinct work of sanctification.<sup>49</sup> Taylor writes that ‘sanctification is the eradication of the carnal mind; while the Baptism of the Holy Ghost is a filling: the one takes place at Calvary; while the other occurs at Pentecost’.<sup>50</sup> He concludes that, ‘the Baptism of the Spirit has nothing to do with the sin question, but is an enduement of power for service’.<sup>51</sup>

---

<sup>46</sup> George F. Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride* (Dunn, NC, 1907). Taylor was among the first to speak in tongues at the revival in Dunn, NC, in January 1907. He became the General Superintendent of the Pentecostal Holiness Church, H. Vinson Synan, ‘George Floyd Taylor’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 1115-116; cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 216-19.

<sup>47</sup> Wacker, *Heaven Below*, p. 74. Gary B. McGee notes that ‘it represents the first book-length treatise on Pentecostal theology,’ Gary B. McGee, ‘“Brought into the Sphere of the Supernatural”: How Speaking in Tongues Empowered Early Pentecostals,’ *Encounter: Journal for Pentecostal Ministry*, 4.1 (Fall 2007), pp. 1–17 (13 n. 16). Taylor himself claimed that this is the first book by someone filled with the Spirit seeking to ‘place the Baptism of the Holy Spirit in its scriptural setting, and to show forth its peculiar accompaniment, the speaking in other tongues as evidencing its unmistakable reception’, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 9.

<sup>48</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 5. Italics original.

<sup>49</sup> A WH understanding only, ‘brings its adherents into the vestibule of Pentecostal power and fulness’, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 8; cf. p. 88.

<sup>50</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 75. He notes that one is an ‘emptying’ and the other a ‘filling’, p. 39: ‘sanctification is a dedication; the Baptism of the Holy Spirit is an empowerment. The one is entirely ... a subtraction; the other is wholly an addition. Sanctification has to do with sin; the baptism of the Holy Spirit has to do only with the saint’, p. 89. He believes that ‘if the baptism of the Holy Spirit sanctifies, no one was ever sanctified until Pentecost ... (and) we know (this) to be untrue’, p. 88. He also points out that the disciples were sanctified when Jesus blessed them (Lk. 24.50). Taylor’s reasoning is that the disciples received their justification in Jn 20.22, pp. 75-77.

<sup>51</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 87.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Regarding the nature of glossolalia, the individual is a mere vessel being used: ‘the Holy Ghost, having come into them … (that) was giving the utterance’.<sup>52</sup> Tongues ‘are real languages spoken by branches of the human family’.<sup>53</sup> Missionary tongues bridges Babel’s linguistic gap:<sup>54</sup>

while the ‘confusion of language’ will never be completely done away until the ‘restoration of all things,’ yet this chasm was bridged at Pentecost … God is now augmenting the spread of the gospel by bridging and enabling his children to cross at once the chasms which they hitherto have had to cross by years of study and practice.<sup>55</sup>

And, ‘a person who has the gift of tongues can speak other languages at will, and, no doubt, several different languages’.<sup>56</sup>

Even though Taylor was not taught about the evidence, he personally experienced it upon his SB.<sup>57</sup> He writes that the bible evidence ‘stands out … as a lofty mountain above the plain’,<sup>58</sup> but because Satan can imitate it, it is ‘an unmistakable evidence’.<sup>59</sup> Taylor’s defence of the evidence is thoroughly Scriptural: 1) he begins with the promise in John’s gospel that the Comforter would testify of Jesus.<sup>60</sup> 2) Although Paul’s epistles

---

<sup>52</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 33, 34. It is the ‘Holy Ghost taking the tongue’ and using ‘a person’s tongue to speak a language’, p. 36.

<sup>53</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 51. Taylor believes that Peter, Stephen, Philip and even Jesus preached in other languages: Peter preached to the Italian band at Cornelius’ home; Stephen preached to the Libertines, the Cyrenians, Alexandrians, Cilicians, and the Asians (Acts 6.9); and Philip preached to the Ethiopian (Acts 8.26-39), p. 35. ‘Jesus talked to the ignorant fallen Samaritan woman at the well, doubtless in her own dialect. So, too, of the Syrophoenician woman and the Gadarenes. True, the Scriptures do not have the word “tongues” in these incidents’, p. 48.

<sup>54</sup> The ASM missionaries will be ‘able to speak in any language to whom God sends, using the language thus given of God with absolute perfection’, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 94.

<sup>55</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 33, 34.

<sup>56</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 62-63.

<sup>57</sup> He writes that within five minutes of ‘meeting the first person who had his Pentecost the Holy Ghost was talking with my tongue. Three days later a certain brother said to me that he believed all who received the Baptism of the Holy Ghost would speak in tongues. This was a surprise to me, as it was the first time that I had thought on this line’, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 39-40.

<sup>58</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 68.

<sup>59</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 57.

<sup>60</sup> ‘Any of these nine (spiritual) gifts in their normal bestowment is an evidence of Pentecost; yet no one (sic) of them is to be taken as *the testimony of the Comforter* and hence is *not the first evidence* to be expected’, Jn 15.26-27, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 24; cf. pp. 25-33; 38-39. Italics mine.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

do not overtly teach the evidence,<sup>61</sup> it could be argued that gifts of the Spirit always follow SB.<sup>62</sup> 3) ‘We have an abundance of other Scriptures to prove our position’, such as Mk 16.17, 18<sup>63</sup>, the book of Acts,<sup>64</sup> Isa. 28.11, 12.<sup>65</sup> Taylor challenges critics to find any other evidence for SB in scripture.<sup>66</sup>

Finally, in response to critics,<sup>67</sup> Taylor’s retorts to the theory of cessation are noteworthy: 1) ‘God never withdrew Pentecost or any of its power from the Church; but the Church withdrew from Pentecost and lost its power’,<sup>68</sup> 2) a careful exegesis of 1 Cor. 13.8-10 reveals that its prophecy is not yet fulfilled,<sup>69</sup> and 3) the latter rain concept explains historical gaps and occurrences.<sup>70</sup>

---

<sup>61</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 48. However, he believed much could be learned about glossolalia from First Corinthians. For example: 1) a case could be made against the WH view of SB as sanctification because Paul called them holy when ‘he had just as much proof that they were not even converted’, p. 54. 2) Paul was a tongue speaker and IE can be ‘implied’, p. 56. 3) Tongues builds up the church, p. 72.

<sup>62</sup> Initial evidence is the gateway to the spiritual gifts, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 63. ‘I have yet to hear the first one interpreting a message spoken by the Holy Ghost who had not himself had a manifestation of tongues’, p. 64. The spiritual gifts are to be sought, to be tempered by divine love, and are to build up the church or individual, pp. 63, 66-67, 70.

<sup>63</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 51.

<sup>64</sup> While he examines Acts, he does not refer to a pattern per se, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 35-36, 55, 87-88.

<sup>65</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 135.

<sup>66</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 46. He directly responds to why laughter and wisdom are not evidential, pp. 46-47.

<sup>67</sup> Taylor responds to many other criticisms of Pentecostalism. They reveal the severe social opposition of the day and are not germane to this study. For example, he responded to the charge that Pentecostals are stubborn, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 42; that all WH leaders are oppositional, p. 43; that Pentecostals are the type of people who ‘have never been settled in their religious experience’, p. 43; and that glossolalia is not swearing, p. 51. Taylor answered the argument of ‘it’s not for me’, with the stinging retort: ‘they (WH leaders) count their works greater than the testimony of the Holy Spirit’, p. 50.

<sup>68</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 41.

<sup>69</sup> Prophecy will pass away for there are ‘no lost souls to be saved’; tongues will pass away because there will be ‘one language, hence no need of the gift of languages’, and knowledge will pass away because we will no longer need to interpret the Bible, Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p. 69.

<sup>70</sup> Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, pp. 90-99.

### Thomas Ball Barratt, 1909.

Thomas Ball Barratt is credited with bringing the Pentecostal message to Norway and much of Europe.<sup>71</sup> In this work he attempts to 'meet some of the criticisms of the day concerning the Pentecostal Movement'.<sup>72</sup> He articulates reasoned arguments for critics of glossolalia: 1) he argues against cessationism a full nine years before Benjamin B. Warfield even wrote, *Counterfeit Miracles!*<sup>73</sup> 2) He believes, 'the Holy Spirit does not break or disregard the individuality of the prophet, but sanctifies it, and uses it as a channel for the message to be given'.<sup>74</sup> 3) Barratt believes all glossolalia is a real language, and that while MT is theoretically possible, 'tongues does not seem to have been intended to usurp the ordinary study of languages'.<sup>75</sup> 4) The function of tongues is broader than just 'power for ministry':<sup>76</sup> glossolalia is for praise and worship;<sup>77</sup> it is a miracle God uses to attract people to the gospel;<sup>78</sup> it is a sign,<sup>79</sup> and somehow helps the believer grow.<sup>80</sup> 5) Barratt is less clear regarding the bible evidence: demonstrations of a

---

<sup>71</sup> D.D. Bundy, 'Thomas Ball Barratt', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 365. Though Barrett is not a part of North American Pentecostalism per se, his writings are significant due to its early publication date and content.

<sup>72</sup> Thomas Ball Barratt, *The Works of T.B. Barratt* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985 reprint; London: Elim Publishing Company, Ltd., 1928). This work is a compilation of two books 'In the Days of the Latter Rain', and 'When the Fire Fell and an Outline of My Life'.

<sup>73</sup> Benjamin B. Warfield, *Counterfeit Miracles* (Carlisle, PA: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1976), first published in 1918. Barratt notes that the early church fathers acknowledged that the spiritual gifts have appeared throughout history, 'in almost every great revival, also the gift of tongues', Barratt, *Works*, p. 62, cf. pp 56-65. Also, the gifts disappeared due to neglect and institutionalism in the 3<sup>rd</sup> or 4<sup>th</sup> century, p. 62. Finally, the interpretation of τὸ τέλειον in 1 Cor. 13.10 is resolved by realizing that 'perfection ... is never attained by mortals on earth. The tongues were, therefore to last continuously in the Church', p. 159.

<sup>74</sup> Barratt, *Works*, p. 109. Barratt is comfortable with the term 'ecstatic worship' because there was something on the Day of Pentecost to merit the charge of drunkenness, but disagrees that the tongues-speaker ever loses his or her volition. He believes that there is a mixture of human and divine, pp. 90-93.

<sup>75</sup> Barratt, *Works*, pp. 170-71, cf. pp. 21, 46, 83. A reason for studying foreign language, according to Barratt, is so that the interpretation of tongues during a service can be verified, p. 171. He notes that some mistakes were made with MT, p. 87.

<sup>76</sup> Barratt links SB to power for ministry, but sees it only as one part of two. Sanctification, the second part, rounds out the mature believer, cf. pp. 39, 44, 196, 198.

<sup>77</sup> Barratt, *Works*, pp. 6, 45, 82, 149.

<sup>78</sup> Barratt, *Works*, pp. 5, 84, 114.

<sup>79</sup> Barratt, *Works*, pp. 1, 20, 190.

<sup>80</sup> 'When the Holy Ghost floods and fills you through and through, as He filled the disciples on Pentecost, you will begin to praise and magnify God in tongues, as the Spirit giveth utterance. It may not

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

'full Pentecost...are not always similar in their outward demonstrations',<sup>81</sup> because 'there are other evidences of the indwelling Spirit ... I believe that many have had ... mighty baptisms *without this sign*'.<sup>82</sup> Another evidence is love because, 'it is possible for Satan to counterfeit the gifts, but *not the love of God poured forth in the soul.*'<sup>83</sup>

### D. Wesley Myland, 1910.

D. Wesley Myland's book, *The Latter Rain Covenant*, is the definitive work on the latter rain metaphor which Pentecostals use to explain the reappearance of glossolalia after a gap of several centuries.<sup>84</sup> Myland draws a parallel from the rainfall in Palestine. The early spring rains are compared to the Day of Pentecost and accompany the planting of the crops; the latter fall rains are compared to the Pentecostal revival and help to ripen the crop for harvest.<sup>85</sup> For Myland, glossolalia is 'the advance agent, the tell-tale of Pentecost', but he does not want to 'magnify tongues out of its legitimate place'.<sup>86</sup> Myland sees three purposes for glossolalia: 1) to 'subdue things and make us mind our business and look to God',<sup>87</sup> this is to humble and subdue oneself. 2) 'To make you

---

be the "gift of tongues" you receive, spoken of in I Cor. xii., but snatches of various languages, or some celestial language that the angels and God will understand ... It may not mean that you are to become a missionary ... it was a proof and sure evidence that they had received their Pentecost... You become lifted to a higher plane ... makes your heart a hot-bed for all the fruits of the Spirit', Barratt, *Works*, p. 21.

<sup>81</sup> Barratt, *Works*, p. 35.

<sup>82</sup> Barratt, *Works*, p. 152. Again, 'many have, we expect, received the Baptism without the outward sign', p. 209. Barratt does see this as an aberration, admitting that the human spirit can hinder through unbelief, ignorance, or unwillingness. For example, 'speaking in tongues, *when it is not prevented*, comes as a matter of course', Barratt, *Works*, p. 70. These exceptions merely prove the rule, p. 219, cf. pp. 35, 67, 70, 152-54, 190, 219.

<sup>83</sup> Barratt, *Works*, p. 69, cf. pp. 40, 77, 106.

<sup>84</sup> D. Wesley Myland, 'The Latter Rain Covenant and Pentecostal Power,' in *Three Early Pentecostal Tracts* (New York: Garland Pub., 1985).

<sup>85</sup> 'Spiritually, the latter rain is coming to the church of God at the same time it is coming literally upon the land and it will never be taken away from her but it will be upon her to unite and empower her, to cause her to aid in God's last work for this dispensation, to bring unity to the body, the consummation of the age, and the catching away of spiritual Israel, the Bride of Christ', Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 94.

<sup>86</sup> Myland, 'The Latter Rain', pp. 108, 112.

<sup>87</sup> Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 113.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
witnesses'.<sup>88</sup> 3) To worship: 'God gives you another tongue. Indeed, the ordinary tongue could never bring the highest glory to God'.<sup>89</sup>

### Dormeus A. Hayes, 1914.

The first major monograph on glossolalia by a non-Pentecostal after the ASM revival is by Dormeus A. Hayes. His goal is to 'be thoroughly sympathetic, reasonable, and irenic'.<sup>90</sup> Hayes affirms the 'gift of tongues',<sup>91</sup> but sees Corinthian glossolalia as a sign of immaturity and preconditioning because, 'they naturally expected ... the same ecstatic ejaculations they had seen in the heathen worshipers in their similar state'.<sup>92</sup> He parses NT glossolalia thus: 1) Paul's understanding and his restraints should be the norm,<sup>93</sup> 2) Mk 16.17 reveals little,<sup>94</sup> 3) tongues in the book of Acts is similar in nature to Corinth,<sup>95</sup> and 4) the Day of Pentecost account an outlier. It is likely that ecstasy flowed out from 'memories phrases and sentences they had heard ... unconsciously ... and their memories (which) were abnormally quickened'.<sup>96</sup> Hayes engages the reasons given for glossolalia by Edward Irving to affirm glossolalia and clarify his position: 1) they could be a sign to the unbeliever, but 'it might be difficult to determine whether more were helped or hindered'.<sup>97</sup> 2) They could be an evidence, but reason alone should be sufficient and at the very least 'the sign is of infinitely less importance than the thing signified'.<sup>98</sup> 3) It could be for personal edification, but then it ought 'to be banished from a public service'.<sup>99</sup>

---

<sup>88</sup> Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 115.

<sup>89</sup> Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 148.

<sup>90</sup> D.A. Hayes, *The Gift of Tongues* (New York: The Methodist Book Concern, 1914), p. 8. He attended a few meetings in Chicago, pp. 84-93.

<sup>91</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 112.

<sup>92</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 17.

<sup>93</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 112.

<sup>94</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, pp. 19-20.

<sup>95</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, pp. 119-22.

<sup>96</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, pp. 54-55. Occasionally 'convulsions of the soul have ... a volcanic upheaval ... (which brings) to the surface hidden strata of the subconscious life', pp. 107-15.

<sup>97</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 94.

<sup>98</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 96.

<sup>99</sup> Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 97. Simply put, 'it will be sane and serviceable, or it will be silent in the Churches', p. 116. Italics original.

### Charles W. Shumway, 1914.

Charles W. Shumway wrote two papers on glossolalia, a thesis entitled *A Study of 'The Gift of Tongues'*<sup>100</sup> and a doctoral dissertation entitled, *A Critical History of Glossolalia*.<sup>101</sup> Of the two, his thesis is the more important work because in it, he claims to interact extensively with Pentecostals and is closer geographically and chronologically to the ASM.<sup>102</sup> These works reveal Shumway as a sympathetic critic<sup>103</sup> who seeks to support the historical authenticity of the glossolalia in Acts 2.1-13 by use of psychology and history.<sup>104</sup> Though this thesis does not have the space to unpack the psychological and historical approaches to tongues, Shumway's work is presented here for its overlooked value and to represent these two methods of examining glossolalia.

Exegetically, Shumway dismisses Pentecostalism's biblical defence as being 'built upon distorted interpretations of the Bible ... (and) certain minor passages of Scripture'.<sup>105</sup> Yet, at the same time Shumway does a credible job defending a conservative reading of both Luke and Acts 2.<sup>106</sup> Not only are Luke's qualifications and

---

<sup>100</sup> The 'The Gift of Tongues' is an examination of glossolalia from biblical, historical, and psychological standpoints.

<sup>101</sup> Charles Shumway, 'A Critical History of Glossolalia', (PhD Dissertation, Boston University, 1919). Shumway tries to 'determine the exact character of' tongues and 'how the essential characteristics of glossolalia are traceable in all the manifestations of the phenomenon from the establishment of Christianity to the present day', p. 1.

<sup>102</sup> He claims extensive correspondence with 'most of the world leaders of the movement', Shumway, 'The Gift of Tongues', preface. He also claims to have attended many Pentecostal gatherings. His dissertation is less significant in that one can see a secondary agenda overlapped onto the work.

<sup>103</sup> He predicted that 'the meridian of its (Pentecostalism's) strength and influence has been passed ... we feel safe in saying that after a few decades, possibly longer, this movement will be practically forgotten', Shumway, 'The Gift of Tongues', p. 192.

<sup>104</sup> For example, 'after the two following chapters are read, it will appear that both from the psychological phenomenon of subconsciousness, and from the phenomenon of hypermnesia, we have added evidence for accepting Acts 2:1-13 as history', Shumway, 'A Critical History', p. 36. See also, pp. 30, 117.

<sup>105</sup> Shumway, 'The Gift of Tongues', p. 192. He argues that Jesus' singular comment about tongues in Mk 16.17, is not in the original and therefore 'there is no good reason whatever for insisting – as do our "Pentecostal" brethren – that is (sic) is a universal promise and applicable today', p. 2; cf. Shumway, 'A Critical History', p. 3.

<sup>106</sup> 'Luke carefully considered the sources'; was 'old enough to converse thoughtfully with ... the eye witnesses'; was 'familiar with the nature of the tongues manifested in the home of Cornelius and at

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

sources credible, but his intent can be trusted.<sup>107</sup> In his thesis, he not only trusts the Lucan account of tongues but openly gives it priority.<sup>108</sup> However, Shumway seems to limit authentic tongues to the outpouring on the Day of Pentecost.<sup>109</sup> ‘The Corinthian glossolalia was more or less a discreditable degeneration of the gift of tongues’ on the Day of Pentecost,<sup>110</sup> and Paul was desperately trying to stop the glossolalia at Corinth but was hindered.<sup>111</sup> In his dissertation, written on the east coast far from the ASM revival, he reverses his early work and gives priority to Paul’s glossolalia, stating that all glossolalia must meet the four tests laid out in 1Corinthians by Paul.<sup>112</sup>

Shumway uses contemporary psychology to argue the genuineness of glossolalia on the Day of Pentecost.<sup>113</sup> After all, ‘the Holy Spirit … use (s) every possible power latent in the human being to magnify and exalt Christ’.<sup>114</sup> Exalted memory or cryptomnesia is the theory of a ‘memory deposit’ from a forgotten childhood language or causally overheard sounds or foreign words that can be recalled in an ‘up-rush’ of

---

Ephesus’; and could write without getting tripped up by ‘Hebrew impedimenta’, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 10-11; cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, pp. 30-36.

<sup>107</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 5; cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 34.

<sup>108</sup> He writes, ‘we must avoid the error of testing the Acts section by Paul’s practically non-committal description in 1 Cor. 14 … the Acts description is the standard by which to judge the discreditable events in the Corinthian society’, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 4. He backtracks on this position in his dissertation, stating, ‘it seems best to take up the Corinthian account first because it is older and first-hand, while that in Acts … is later and second-hand’, Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 4.

<sup>109</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 59. For example, he notes that in Corinth there may have been ‘a very small amount of the genuine speaking in tongues by a very few’, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 64. He notes that ‘several Jewish traditions respecting forms of glossolalia are found’, but all of these are metaphors for the voice of God, p. 7; cf. ‘A Critical History’, pp. 28-35.

<sup>110</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 59. He also observes that at best the Corinthian tongues ‘required the services of an interpreter’, Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 24.

<sup>111</sup> ‘In his own heart, Paul wished ardently that speaking in tongues as it was carried on at Corinth might utterly cease’, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 65.

<sup>112</sup> Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 12. The four tests are: usefulness, relative importance, order and propriety in public worship and control in individual cases.

<sup>113</sup> Two additional theories are: 1) the ‘miracle of hearing’, which is the psychic transfer of an impression, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 50-58. A handwritten note by the author states that his position regarding this theory has modified, excluding it as a viable option, p. 50. This additional theory is not mentioned in his dissertation. 2) The theory of ‘contagious influences in crowds’, pp. 160-165.

<sup>114</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 58.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

emotions:<sup>115</sup> ‘we ... suppose that their utterances in tongues were mere snatches from the prayers of the hymnology of the Temple worship’<sup>116</sup> and it was these ‘foreign languages which were instantly recognized by visitors from many lands’.<sup>117</sup> Shumway prefers xenolalia<sup>118</sup> because it is verifiable, whereas ecstatic glossolalia is suspect.<sup>119</sup> Ecstatic tongues ‘readily lends itself to counterfeiting and ... has special attraction for those who are immature spiritually’.<sup>120</sup> Shumway is critical of Pentecostals ‘who went to foreign fields expecting to be able to preach by miraculous power in the native languages of the people ... (because there is) not one well attested instance where the success was met can be located’.<sup>121</sup> He even followed up on Parham’s claims of xenolalia and found a local pastor in Topeka who said that, ‘there were no convincing proofs produced that the “speaking in tongues” was nearly all that was claimed for it’.<sup>122</sup>

---

<sup>115</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 23-30; cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, pp. 51-68. Following the psychology of William James, he believes that it is possible to become so obsessed with a thought that a trigger, or an ‘up-rush,’ will cause the thought to become reality – which for those seeking a personal Pentecost is ecstatic tongues, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 12-18; cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, pp. 37-50.

<sup>116</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 30, 58. In his dissertation he is somewhat open to ecstatic glossolalia, because in a polyglottal city like Jerusalem ‘no amount of ... foreign language in the public worship would produce the impression that the worshippers were mad’, Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 8.

<sup>117</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 2.

<sup>118</sup> He gives four reasons why the early church fathers thought of glossolalia as foreign languages: 1) gloss can mean word of foreign speech. 2) The theory of exalted memory supports foreign language. 3) Sometimes the tongues at Corinth were interpreted. 4) Paul’s ‘tongues of men and angels (1 Cor. 13.1)’, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 62-63.

<sup>119</sup> At times, Shumway is open to ecstatic glossolalia, but he is largely critical of it, Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 19. For example, Miss Hall’s testimony, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 137-38. Miss Hall, later renounced her experience as being of ‘Satanic in origin’, p. 137 n. He adds, ‘the theory is current among the greater part of the “Pentecostal” following that the less control they have over their actions and speech, the more it shows the Holy Spirit to be in control of them’, Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 14.

<sup>120</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 62.

<sup>121</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 181.

<sup>122</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 168. At times he reports ‘dead ends’ on his research. For example, the newspaper reporter who wrote of xenolalia in Parham’s Houston crusade ‘cannot now be identified’, because the staff had changed, p. 171, n. He confirms a news report of xenolalia in an Indian orphanage that has ‘been corroborated by other visitors’, but he quickly dismisses it as a case of ‘exalted memory’, where the girls merely recalled sounds and prayers from the other girls who spoke different native languages, p. 185. When contacted, this reporter stood by what he wrote.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Historically, Shumway seeks to affirm a conservative reading of Acts 2 and its xenolalia by reviewing a continuous thread of historical occurrences culminating in Pentecostalism. The bulk of his thesis traces ecstatic movements through history to the ASM revival.<sup>123</sup> Pentecostal tongues are ‘simply a recrudescence of others … that have budded, blossomed, faded, and disappeared’.<sup>124</sup>

Though not a work of theology, Shumway makes two theological observations. First, he doubts that tongues have any evidentiary value. He writes, these signs ‘may have served as credentials for the Gospel in the minds of those primitive believers, but other recommendations are needed, and are much more justly required, today.’<sup>125</sup> Second, he notes a connection between ecstatic glossolalia and ‘second advent premillennialism’:

all throughout Christian history those who have come to ‘speak in tongues’ have been ardent believers that they were living in the last days. They have believed that Christ was very soon to appear … I have never found the least trace of a person who claimed to speak in tongues who was not a premillennial second Adventist *through and through*.<sup>126</sup>

The rallying cry of the ASM revival, ‘Jesus is coming’, arose from a literal interpretation of scripture<sup>127</sup> which was coupled with an eschatological expectation: ‘the return of the gifts of the Spirit … (is) *a sign that the day of Advent*’ is at hand.<sup>128</sup>

### Bennett F. Lawrence, 1916.

Bennett F. Lawrence’s monograph<sup>129</sup> is the first official history from within an established Pentecostal denomination. Lawrence begins with the statement, it ‘was the

---

<sup>123</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 74-193; cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, pp. 75-111.

<sup>124</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 117; cf. p. 192.

<sup>125</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 2.

<sup>126</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 21. There is one exception: an ecstatic group in Kentucky in the 1800’s which had ‘ecstatic song,’ but did not speak in tongues. He explains that an ‘apparent absence of the strong millennial note… (is) quite probably the explanation of the absence of the “tongues,” as well as of “prophecy”,’ cf. Shumway, ‘A Critical History’, p. 48.

<sup>127</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 20, 173 n.

<sup>128</sup> Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 129.

<sup>129</sup> B.F. Lawrence, *The Apostolic Faith Restored: A History of the Present Latter Rain Outpouring of the Holy Spirit Known as the Apostolic Pentecostal Movement* (St. Louis, MO: The Gospel Publishing House, 1916).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

doctrine of the primitive church that there was a definite experience (of the Spirit) subsequent to regeneration'.<sup>130</sup> His defence is made by an analogous pattern<sup>131</sup> of Nicodemus, Peter, and the disciples all having salvific faith before they were Spirit baptized like the Samaritan's in Acts eight.<sup>132</sup> The result of SB is the sign of tongues,<sup>133</sup> guidance of the Spirit, deeper revelation and the presence of God;<sup>134</sup> the outward effect from the believer is a more effective witness.<sup>135</sup> His position on the bible evidence is to 'observe that we do not say that the speaking in other tongues is the only evidence of the baptism, it is the initial one'.<sup>136</sup> Besides being an evidence, the ongoing purpose of tongues is to 'edify and bless the speaker' and, only when it is interpreted in the assembly will it bless the church.<sup>137</sup> As for the nature of glossolalia, xenolalia occurred on the Day of Pentecost, but it '*is never reported as happening again*' in the bible.<sup>138</sup> Lawrence affirms glossolalia as an eschatological sign.<sup>139</sup>

### **Conclusion to the Early Literature, 1888 to 1929.**

Broadly speaking, in this early literature, one can see: 1) the nascent theology of Pentecostal glossolalia and 2), anti-Pentecostal exegetical literature. However the bulk of literature from non-Pentecostals during this time period examines tongues in history,

---

<sup>130</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 17.

<sup>131</sup> '[L]et us stop our quibbling and follow the example of our predecessors in the faith', Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 20.

<sup>132</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 20. Here he notes the timing of SB of Paul and the disciples at Ephesus in Acts 19.

<sup>133</sup> He works from the gift of tongues to the 'sign of tongues,' meaning that the gifts are for edifying the church when interpreted, but 'several manifestations ... do not seem to fit the above (gift pattern) perfectly; and we have called such manifestations "the sign of tongues"', Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 27. Singing in the Spirit holds an honourable place and at times is even considered the IE in lieu of spoken glossolalia, cf. pp. 7, 93, 108.

<sup>134</sup> Yet, he writes 'we know that tongues are not the evidence of a mature Christian character', Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 36.

<sup>135</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, pp. 22-24.

<sup>136</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 28.

<sup>137</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, pp. 26-27.

<sup>138</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 26. He reports that xenolalia occasionally occurs, pp. 82-83, 103, 108.

<sup>139</sup> Lawrence, *Apostolic Faith Restored*, p. 31.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia and various psychological theories. Due to space limitations Shumway's works are presented here as representative of most of the non-Pentecostal writings.

## II. Mid-Century Literature, 1930 to 1969.

There are relatively few theological works on glossolalia during this period. The non-Pentecostal works are largely exegetical and support cessationism or are psychological and give pathological definitions of glossolalia. The exceptions are notable. Meanwhile, most of the Pentecostal literature during this time was written for an informed reader rather than for scholarly pursuits. Pentecostal authors either continued to refine and develop their theology of glossolalia largely independent of non-Pentecostal influence<sup>140</sup> or simply wrote histories of Pentecostalism.<sup>141</sup>

### Filled with the Fullness of God, 1930.

*Filled with the Fullness of God* is a compilation of various authors.<sup>142</sup> Donald Gee notes that glossolalia is the 'utterance of those carried beyond the reach of ordinary expression by the fullness of the glory of this divine baptism in the blessed Spirit'.<sup>143</sup> He encourages readers to seek a 'flooding of the soul with the glory of His presence'.<sup>144</sup> Arthur Frodsham defines glossolalia as 'speaking sacred secrets with an absent lover

---

<sup>140</sup> For example, Charles Conn's *Pillars of Pentecost*, is a collection of sermons that counters two pressure points upon Pentecostal glossolalia, cessationism and psychology: to counter cessationism, he appeals to the latter rain metaphor, Charles W. Conn, *Pillars of Pentecost* (Cleveland, TN: Pathway Press, 1956), pp. 57, 66; cf. pp. 67-77. To counter the idea of tongues as a psychological pathology, he appeals to Pentecost as reversing Babel: their speech was 'in clear, precise, understandable languages ... not in unintelligible gibberish', which has no psychological explanation because they were 'supernatural' languages, pp. 53, 57. Also, Robert C. Dalton's book counters three main criticisms against Pentecostal glossolalia: 1) cessationism, Robert Chandler Dalton, *Tongues Like as of Fire : A Critical Study of Modern Tongue Movements in the Light of Apostolic and Patristic Times* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1945), pp. 15-51; 2) exegetical issues, pp. 99-106, 107-113; and 3) emotionalism, pp. 59, 121; cf. pp. 52-60.

<sup>141</sup> Frodsham states his work is 'a fuller and more accurate account' than Lawrence's, Frodsham, *With Signs Following, Forward*.

<sup>142</sup> There are testimonies by two popular preachers: Smith Wigglesworth, 'A Transformation' in *Filled with the Fullness of God* (Springfield, MO: 1930), pp. 3-14; P.C. Nelson, 'My Baptism In The Holy Spirit' in *Filled with the Fullness of God* (Springfield, MO: 1930), pp. 47-55.

<sup>143</sup> Donald Gee, 'Immersed in the Fullness of God', in *Filled with the Fullness of God* (Springfield, MO: 1930), pp. 35-44 (41).

<sup>144</sup> Gee, 'Immersed', p. 40.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
that our natural mind or understanding is not allowed to enter into or grasp ... (it is) a language used in initiation into a secret society, a spiritual language for a spiritual purpose'.<sup>145</sup> We are to consider the difference between the incompleteness of a written letter from a faraway son or daughter as compared to a face to face conversation.<sup>146</sup> B.C. Miller holds that biblically there 'was some immediate evidence by which those present could determine whether the baptism of the Spirit was given' and 'that it is clear that all who receive the baptism did speak in tongues'.<sup>147</sup> He encourages his readers to experience SB for themselves to really understand.<sup>148</sup>

### **John Mauchline, 1938.**

In this article, John Mauchline believes individual ecstasy can be a rich experience that surrounds 'a revelation of truth' that may or not be translatable after the experience.<sup>149</sup> The seeker alone can evaluate the experience.<sup>150</sup> He reminds his readers that the mystic Paul discouraged the practice in Corinth and Mauchline tells his readers that not many will come into God's presence and experience the '*mysterium tremendum*'.<sup>151</sup>

---

<sup>145</sup> Arthur W. Frodsham, 'What is the Use of Speaking in Tongues', in *Filled with the Fullness of God* (Springfield, MO: 1930), pp. 56-62 (59).

<sup>146</sup> Frodsham, 'What is the Use', p. 56.

<sup>147</sup> B.C. Miller, 'The Baptism in the Holy Spirit. What? When? Where?', in *Filled with the Fullness of God* (Springfield, MO: 1930), pp. 15-34 (28-29).

<sup>148</sup> Miller, 'The Baptism', pp. 15, 33, 34.

<sup>149</sup> John Mauchline, 'Ecstasy', *The Expository Times*, 49 (1938), pp. 295-96 (298). He defines ecstasy as being 'temporarily alienated from the physical and sensible world, and enters into rapport with a whole field of consciousness which is denied him in his normal state', p. 295.

<sup>150</sup> Mauchline, 'Ecstasy', p. 297. Or are 'self-centred', p. 298.

<sup>151</sup> Mauchline, 'Ecstasy', p. 299.

**W.H. Turner, 1939.**

Writing from China, W.H. Turner sets out to show that glossolalia was both scriptural<sup>152</sup> and historical.<sup>153</sup> His biblical polemics follow the pattern from the book of Acts<sup>154</sup> and Jesus' promises in John and Mk 16.17.<sup>155</sup> In Jn 16.13, 'Jesus declares twice that the Holy Spirit, when He shall have come, will SPEAK'.<sup>156</sup> And Mk 16:17, clearly states that the disciples were 'given a sign whereby they would know when the Holy Spirit had come, namely, He would SPEAK FOR HIMSELF'.<sup>157</sup>

**Ira Jay Martin, III, 1944.**

In this short exegetical survey entitled, *Glossolalia in the Apostolic Church*, Ira J. Martin seeks to 'trace the stages and development of glossolalia and its place and significance in the life of the first generation of Christians'.<sup>158</sup> At Pentecost, 'possession of the Spirit became the highest standard of Christian experience, and ecstatic speech became the chief evidence of this possession'.<sup>159</sup> The remaining passages from Acts shows that tongues 'seems to have been the final proof of the presence of the Spirit'.<sup>160</sup> Though Paul

---

<sup>152</sup> He notes that opponents of Pentecost use 'the most unorthodox method of Bible interpretation and exegesis', and 'have succeeded in convincing themselves that it is entirely unnecessary to speak in tongues', W.H. Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues: The Doctrine and History* (Shanghai Modern Publishing House, 1939), p. 50.

<sup>153</sup> Spirit Baptism with tongues is 'not a new doctrine, or religious manifestation, but has always reoccurred in the church, when people have earnestly sought for the infilling of the Holy Spirit, and is therefore a normal Christian experience', Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, preface. He devotes three chapters to citing historical occurrences throughout church history and of the spread of the present Pentecostal revival, pp. 99-154.

<sup>154</sup> He cites the pattern in the book of Acts three times, Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, pp. 39-46; 57-71; 81-98.

<sup>155</sup> Turner gives as much weight to Jesus' promises in John and Mk 16.17 as he does Luke, including: 1) Jesus' command to seek the infilling and that up to Pentecost 'the Holy Ghost was not yet given', Jn 7.37-39; 2) Jesus' promise that the Holy Spirit will 'testify' that is speak on his own behalf, Jn 15.26-27; 3) The promise of power, Lk. 24.49, Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, pp. 31-36; 54-56.

<sup>156</sup> Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, p. 55. Capitols original.

<sup>157</sup> Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, p. 56. Capitols original.

<sup>158</sup> Ira Jay Martin, III, 'Glossolalia in the Apostolic Church', *Journal of Biblical Literature* 63.2 (June 1944), pp. 123-30 (124).

<sup>159</sup> Martin, 'Apostolic Church', p. 124. Following A. Harnack, he believes that Acts 4.31 is an 'abbreviated "doublet"' and therefore assumes that some of the speaking was ecstatic, pp. 124-25.

<sup>160</sup> Martin, 'Apostolic Church', p. 125.

### Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

still practiced it twenty-five years after Pentecost and recognized it as one of the gifts of the Spirit, it is the least significant<sup>161</sup> and ‘should have no place in the public worship’.<sup>162</sup> Other NT passages ‘indicate a widespread persistence of this phenomenon in the early days of the Christian Church’, and even if Mk 16.17 is taken as a latter addition, it still attests to glossolalia’s popularity.<sup>163</sup> Martin makes six conclusions: 1) at the beginning, glossolalia functions as ‘proof or manifestation of possession by the Spirit’;<sup>164</sup> 2) the nature is ecstatic with occasional ‘intelligible ejaculations’;<sup>165</sup> 3) ‘its value was ... not in its message, but in its demonstrative quality’;<sup>166</sup> 4) tongues became proof ‘of having received the Spirit ... (a) *sine qua non* ... for all the followers of Jesus’;<sup>167</sup> 5) Paul ‘regarded it as quite inferior to the others ... his regulations and restrictions almost eliminated it from the public worship’;<sup>168</sup> 6) because of the pride that comes with the experience, love and the fruit of the Spirit are the standard of the Christian life, and that ‘history has vindicated the wisdom of Paul’s attitude’.<sup>169</sup>

### C.S. Lewis, 1949.

Literary giant C.S. Lewis sought an answer to the question of tongues. The problem is that glossolalia was ‘an intermittent “variety of religious experience”’ in history<sup>170</sup> and ‘the very same phenomenon which is sometimes not only natural but even pathological is at other times ... the organ of the Holy Ghost’.<sup>171</sup> He proposes that everything supernatural is limited by our ‘lower natures’ ability to comprehend and receive things

---

<sup>161</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 125.

<sup>162</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 126.

<sup>163</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 126.

<sup>164</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, pp. 126-27.

<sup>165</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 128.

<sup>166</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 128.

<sup>167</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, pp. 128-29.

<sup>168</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 129. It was something to be practiced in private devotions.

<sup>169</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 130.

<sup>170</sup> Clives Staples Lewis, ‘Transposition’ in *The Weight of Glory and Other Addresses* (San Francisco: HarperCollins Publishers, 2001), pp. 91-115 (91).

<sup>171</sup> Lewis, ‘Transposition’, p. 93.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia of a ‘higher nature’:<sup>172</sup> ‘the lower medium can only be understood if we know the higher medium’; therefore, ‘those who spoke with tongues … can well understand (how) that holy phenomenon differed from the hysterical phenomenon – although be it remembered, they were in a sense exactly the same phenomena’.<sup>173</sup> He illustrates this principle of ‘transposition’ with how common bread and wine are ‘transposed’ into something supernatural in the Eucharist,<sup>174</sup> giving ‘an appropriate correspondence on the sensory level’.<sup>175</sup>

### Carl Brumbaugh, 1947.

Carl Brumbaugh’s work sought to be a comprehensive account of tongues and was an important Pentecostal text for many years.<sup>176</sup> The first half of the book addresses the criticisms of Pentecostalism, what tongues are not.<sup>177</sup> Brumbaugh then defends five theses on glossolalia:<sup>178</sup> 1) the pattern of tongues found in the book of Acts<sup>179</sup> is ‘the standard

---

<sup>172</sup> ‘The critique of every experience from below, the voluntary ignoring of meaning and concentration on fact, will always have the same plausibility. There will always be evidence … to show that religion is only psychological, justice only self-protection, politics only economics, love only lust, and thought itself only cerebral biochemistry’, Lewis, ‘Transposition’, pp. 114, 115. Said another way, ‘tongues represent “a lower structure … penetrated with higher meaning”’, Matthew Wolf in Randall Holm, Matthew Wolf and James K.A. Smith, ‘New Frontiers in Tongues Research: A Symposium’, *JPT* 20 (2011), pp. 122-54 (134).

<sup>173</sup> Lewis, ‘Transposition’, pp. 110, 105; cf. p. 104.

<sup>174</sup> Lewis, ‘Transposition’, p. 94. There are many analogies in this essay, but the two primary ones are: 1) the emotion of a sublime piece of music (higher) having the same effect in our physical being as being woozy on a roller-coaster (lower), pp. 95-98, and 2) a two-dimensional pencil drawing which attempts to represent three-dimensional reality, pp. 99-100, 109-10.

<sup>175</sup> Lewis, ‘Transposition’, p. 115. Specifically, ‘if you are to translate from a language which has a large vocabulary into a language that has a small vocabulary, then you must be allowed to use several words in more than one sense’, p. 99.

<sup>176</sup> Carl Brumbaugh, ‘What Meaneth This?’ *A Pentecostal Answer to a Pentecostal Question* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1947), pp. 8, 10.

<sup>177</sup> 1) Glossolalia is not always xenolalia, Brumbaugh, ‘What Meaneth This?’, pp. 35-38; 2) tongues does not erupt from humankind’s subconscious or forgotten memories, pp. 39-51; 3) they did not cease upon completion of the NT canon, pp. 59-87; 4) they are not absent from church history, pp. 89-96; 5) there is a difference between having emotions and fanaticism, pp. 97-114; 6) Pentecostals are not filled with the devil, pp. 117-46; and 7), glossolalia was not ‘disparaged’ by Paul, pp. 147-79.

<sup>178</sup> Simply stated, glossolalia reveals the presence of the Spirit of God, Brumbaugh, ‘What Meaneth This?’, p. 231, cf. p. 225.

<sup>179</sup> Pentecost is the pattern, Brumbaugh, ‘What Meaneth This?’, p. 198. Because Simon saw something at Samaria (Acts 8), ‘the Pentecostal “evidence doctrine” can be sustained despite the absence of mention of

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

for believers today ... the pattern for every similar baptism or charismatic enduement' that is, the reception of power.<sup>180</sup> 2) God chose tongues because it is an external evidence.<sup>181</sup> 3) His defence of IE is: a) even though God is creative, 'there was also a uniformity in that every recipient spoke with tongues';<sup>182</sup> b) other gifts of the Spirit are not the initial infilling according to the pattern from Acts, especially with Peter's ironclad declaration, 'they heard them speak with tongues';<sup>183</sup> c) love is an evidence of the Spirit, but can only be seen over time, and 'the New Testament believers ... could tell immediately';<sup>184</sup> d) scriptures calls the need for a sign a weakness in faith, but at other times it is 'a mark of genuineness in the experience of others'.<sup>185</sup> 4) Initial evidence and the gift of tongues are distinct in purpose and operation: a) in the book of Acts, tongues was to 'make manifest to the recipient and onlooker that the Holy Ghost had

---

tongues', p. 206. At Damascus (Acts 9), Paul's filling with the Holy Spirit does not mention tongues, but his testimony in 1 Cor. 14.18 infers that 'speaking with tongues was the accepted evidence of the filling of the Spirit among the apostles and the other brethren in Jerusalem', p. 217, cf. pp. 215-7. At Caesarea (Acts 10, 11), tongues are the evidence of the Spirit's presence. He notes that non-Pentecostals 'are so absorbed by the racial and dispensational aspects of this occasion that they overlook the evidential character of the tongues', p. 220. Because there was no racial significance at Ephesus (Acts 19), it is clear that 'glossolalia was not given to authenticate Christian baptism but to ... establish the supernatural fact of the infilling of the Ephesians with the Holy Ghost, p. 225.

<sup>180</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', pp. 186, 197-98. He notes that in all the five cases in the book of Acts, 'it is evident that all spoke with tongues at some time during their Spirit-filled life'. The Pentecostal doctrine is 'almost certain' in four of the five cases, and 'is absolutely certain' in three of the five cases, pp. 229-30. In chapter 18 of *Suddenly ... From Heaven* he gives the history of Fred Bosworth and the early conflict of IE. He concludes: 'it would appear that ... unless one is Pentecostal in his belief concerning speaking in tongues as the evidence ... he does not believe in tongues at all', because, many who take the position that tongues is only one of the evidences 'feared to commit to any form of tongues at all', Brumback, *Suddenly ... From Heaven*, pp. 223-24, 223.

<sup>181</sup> He gives three reasons: 1) 'as long as man is subject to earthly frailties, he is in need of at least a few outward symbols of truth', such as the Lord's Supper and water baptism, Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 236. 2) Tongues are a uniform evidence that reveals the personality of the Spirit, and the yieldedness of the speaker to the Spirit, pp. 239-40. 3) They are a promise of the eschatological 'completion of our redemption ... (when) all shall speak one pure and mighty human language', pp. 245-46.

<sup>182</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 249, cf. pp. 247-49.

<sup>183</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', pp. 249-52. Tongues were 'distinctly associated with the filling with the Holy Spirit at Jerusalem, Caesarea, and Ephesus', p. 251. Prophecy played a role on one or two occasions but 'was never given as the only evidence', p. 251.

<sup>184</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 252.

<sup>185</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', pp. 252-55.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
been given'; and in Corinth, it was for 'the personal edification of the speaker, and, when coupled with interpretation, the edification of the hearers';<sup>186</sup> b) not all have the gift of tongues, but all have the potential;<sup>187</sup> c) without this distinction, 'we find the apostles in Acts in conflict with these (Paul's) instructions'.<sup>188</sup> 5) There is a distinction between personal and public glossolalia.<sup>189</sup>

In conclusion, Brumback believes that 'divine confirmation of the message with miraculous signs' such as glossolalia will awaken the nations to the gospel.<sup>190</sup> At the same time, it is a warning that without a passion for an apostolic spirituality, this great truth could be 'sealed up' for a period.<sup>191</sup>

### **J.G. Davies, 1952 & Robert H. Gundry, 1966.**

These two short articles are treated together because Robert Gundry claims his piece is a 'restatement' of J.D. Davies.<sup>192</sup>

Davies attempts to define the nature of glossolalia solely as the foreign speech of Acts 2 and not the ecstatic speech as in 'revivalist meetings'.<sup>193</sup> He believes the result of

---

<sup>186</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', pp. 265-66.

<sup>187</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.30's implied negative, 'no, not everyone speaks with tongues', must be harmonized with Mk 16.17's 'impression that all may speak in tongues, if they will only believe', Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 267.

<sup>188</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 268. 'There was no demand for interpretation in Caesarea by Peter, or at Ephesus by Paul' because tongues announced 'the arrival of the Spirit', p. 269. Other discrepancies with Corinth arise without this distinction: The 120 were 'out of order' on the Day of Pentecost because more than 3 were speaking at one time; and the exultation of tongues in Acts did not make for an orderly worship service, pp. 268-70.

<sup>189</sup> Tongues for personal devotions is prayer at a deeper level that unlocks 'our own nature to us' and accesses spiritual power, Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', pp. 291, cf. pp. 292-98. For the public gift of tongues, see pp. 299-317.

<sup>190</sup> Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 323, cf. pp. 321-45.

<sup>191</sup> He is addressing the restoration of the miraculous here and notes the loss of even the doctrine of justification by faith for a period of time, Brumback, '*What Meaneth This?*', p. 278.

<sup>192</sup> Robert H. Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance (NEB)', *Journal of Theological Studies* 17.2 (1966), pp. 299-307 (299).

<sup>193</sup> John G. Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', *Journal of Theological Studies* 3.2 (1952), pp. 228-31 (228). He writes, 'it may be contended that the evidence of 1 Cor. 14 ... does suggest the undeniable phenomena of revivalist meetings. But why confine oneself to the (ecstatic glossolalia of) revivalist meetings?', p. 231.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

defining tongues as ecstatic speech has been to elevate Paul at the expense of Luke.<sup>194</sup>

His primary argument is the parallel in the Septuagint (LXX) between Luke's account of the Day of Pentecost and the scattering of humankind at Babel in Gen. 11.1-9. He argues: 1) it is 'quite evident' that the Day of Pentecost is 'the reunification of mankind ... (because) the account of Pentecost is dependent upon the account of Babel';<sup>195</sup> 2) the Septuagint's use of parallel terms makes an obvious connection to Babel; 3) if one were to remove verses 6b-11 from Acts 2, 'the remaining narrative would still involve the identification of glossolalia with speaking in foreign tongues'.<sup>196</sup> Further, it is plausible that Paul understood glossolalia as foreign languages because: 1) 'interpretation' could simply mean it 'is unintelligible to the majority of people';<sup>197</sup> and 2) of the twenty-one instances 'interpretation' (*ἐρμηνευειν*) and its cognates are used, eighteen strongly suggest the translating of foreign languages.<sup>198</sup> He writes, 'there seems, therefore, to be no adequate reason for denying that St. Paul understood glossolalia to be speaking in foreign languages ... (and) there is no conflict between his description and the accounts in Acts 2'.<sup>199</sup>

---

<sup>194</sup> Davies argues: 1) one has to assume that the author of Acts was 'not a close companion of St. Paul and unacquainted with the phenomenon' or 2) that a 'hypothetical editor is responsible for interpolating the whole section, verses 6b-11', Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', p. 228.

<sup>195</sup> Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', p. 228. The Babel story involves the fragmentation of a single language into multiple because it was 'man-centered'; whereas at Pentecost 'there are many spoken which, nevertheless, are understood in unison by the hearers' because they spoke of 'the mighty works of God', p. 229.

<sup>196</sup> Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', p. 229.

<sup>197</sup> Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', pp. 229-31. Paul's discussion of musical instruments and the need for notes to be distinct from other notes is moot because Paul is making an analogy that the human voice also must produce sounds that can be understood: 'indeed, from verse 19 it is quite apparent that St. Paul considered it possible to enunciate words in a tongue, although the majority would not understand them', p. 231. Gundry says that this point is well made, Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 300.

<sup>198</sup> Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', p. 230. Including Paul's use of Isa. 28.11-12, where 'the invading Assyrians whose unintelligible language will be heard by the Israelites as judgment on them' and Paul argues that in the same way glossolalia is a sign of judgment upon unbelievers, p. 230. This theme of an unfamiliar language as a sign of judgment is found a total of four times (Isa. 28.11-12; 33.19; Deut. 28.49; Jer. 5.15).

<sup>199</sup> Davies, 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', p. 231.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Robert H. Gundry takes umbrage with the New English Bible's use of the phrase 'ecstatic utterance' instead of speaking in tongues (languages) for 1 Corinthians 12-14, and seeks to limit glossolalia solely to xenolalia.<sup>200</sup> Gundry believes that 'the Apostle Paul does not look upon or describe the phenomenon as ecstatic utterance, but as the miraculously given ability to speak a human language foreign to the speaker.'<sup>201</sup> He adds to Davies' thesis: 1) throughout the NT and Greek literature generally, tongue 'refers to meaningful human speech' and that to say that it is a technical word for obscure speech is an overstatement;<sup>202</sup> and 2) Luke intends to convey foreign languages in Acts 2.6-11, and 'the association of Luke with Paul makes it very likely that Luke's presentation of glossolalia reflects Paul's own understanding of the phenomenon'.<sup>203</sup>

From supporting Luke's account of languages at Pentecost, Gundry turns to debunk the arguments for ecstatic speech in Corinth: 1) Paul's tongues of men and of angels<sup>204</sup> 'corresponds to the unreal "all's" in the succeeding statements' and 'indicates that he does not here claim to do so'.<sup>205</sup> 2) Paul's 'mysteries'<sup>206</sup> are unintelligible only because 'neither the speaker nor anyone else in the congregation happens to have the gift of interpretation'.<sup>207</sup> 3) As an 'authenticating sign' the amazement factor 'depended upon its *difference* from the ecstatic gobbledegook (sic) in Hellenistic religion'!<sup>208</sup> 4) To

---

<sup>200</sup> Gundry notes in a footnote that Davies 'put too much weight on the argument that Luke makes Pentecost reverse Babel', Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 299.

<sup>201</sup> Gundry says this regardless of whether or not the phenomenon is similar to either Hellenistic religions or OT Prophetism, Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 299.

<sup>202</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 300. He writes, 'only very strong evidence...can overthrow the natural understanding'.

<sup>203</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 300.

<sup>204</sup> 1 Corinthians 13.1.

<sup>205</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 301. Such as, if I have 'all faith', or 'give away all I have', or 'deliver my body to be burned', 1 Cor. 13.2-3.

<sup>206</sup> Cf. 1 Cor. 14.2. 'The term "mystery" certainly does not indicate ecstasy', Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 303.

<sup>207</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 302. 'Personal edification' for Gundry is speaking to oneself in a known language for the 'private emotions of the speaker', see also, 1 Cor. 14.9, 14-19. Corinth would not contain 'numbers of people with varied linguistic backgrounds...therefore the need for someone with the miraculous ability to translate', p. 303.

<sup>208</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 303. Gundry somewhat undercuts his own argument when he writes that neither in Acts nor in First Corinthians are tongues '*presented as the overcoming of a*

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

λαλ- does not always refer to incoherent babbling in Hellenistic times.<sup>209</sup> 5) The charges of drunkenness and madness along with the call to orderliness<sup>210</sup> are not ‘tell-tale indications of ecstasy’.<sup>211</sup> 6) Paul talks about the world having many languages and if the language is unknown, the speaker is foreign to him; therefore, ‘it should be clear that he thinks of the gift of tongues as miraculous speaking in unlearned human languages’.<sup>212</sup>

### William G. Bellshaw, 1963.

This exegetical article seeks to give reasons for the confusion surrounding tongues.<sup>213</sup> William G. Bellshaw holds a cessationist view of glossolalia: tongues were necessary to accredit the first believers as a sign to unbelieving Jews, and were no longer necessary ‘after the canon of the Bible was completed’.<sup>214</sup> He believes the fact that glossolalia is

---

*communications barrier*', rather, glossolalia is presented primarily as a '*convincing miracle, only secondarily as the communication of a message; for communication alone could be accomplished more easily without "other tongues"*', Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', pp. 303-304.

<sup>209</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 304. Even Paul uses this root referring to speaking 'with the mind (1 Cor. 14.19)' over against an uninterpreted tongue; as prophetic speech that is understood (1 Cor. 14.29); and even uses this root in his prohibition of women speaking in the assembly (1 Cor. 14.34f).

<sup>210</sup> Acts 2.13; 1 Cor. 14.23; 14.27.

<sup>211</sup> He parses both Luke and Paul here. Luke: on the Day of Pentecost in Jerusalem, there were 'Palestinian Jews who did not understand the foreign languages being spoken ... mistook those languages for drunken babbling. By contrast the non-Palestinian Jews recognized the languages with astonishment', Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 304. This is specifically contrary to Beare's opinion that they were permanent residents of Jerusalem. Gundry believes that Luke's phrases in Acts 2: 'residents of Mesopotamia (v.9)', 'visitors from Rome (v. 10)' along with 'proselytes (v. 10)', 'men of Judah' and 'all who dwell in Jerusalem (v. 14)' suggest that Luke means only pilgrims who had come from elsewhere for the Festival of Pentecost and were therefore residents of Jerusalem in a temporary sense', p. 300, n. 2. Paul: 1) 'if the normative practice were ecstatic, Paul's concern to avoid the charge of madness would have caused him to ban the practice outright', p. 305. 2) There was 'confusion as a result of simultaneous speaking'. 3) The ability to control oneself, to wait and keep quiet 'confirms the understanding of normative Christian glossolalia as unecstatic', p. 306.

<sup>212</sup> Gundry, 'Ecstatic Utterance', p. 306; cf. 1 Cor. 14.10-11.

<sup>213</sup> William G. Bellshaw, 'The Confusion of Tongues', *BibSac* 120.478 (April 1963), pp. 145-53. For example, 'a recognition of the true nature of the gift of tongues will do much to demonstrate the spuriousness of so-called exhibitions of this gift today', p. 148.

<sup>214</sup> Bellshaw, 'Confusion', p. 151; cf. pp. 148-52. He reasons: 1) the 'perfect one' referred to in 1 Cor. 13.9 is not Christ but the NT because the adjective's gender is neuter rather than masculine; 2) partial knowing and prophesying points directly to the 'incomplete nature of the revealed Word of God', p. 151;

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

only mentioned in two books of the Bible, should give Pentecostals pause, especially since it is considered the least of the gifts.<sup>215</sup> The nature of glossolalia has to be xenolalia because the gift of the Holy Spirit must be something ‘which could not be duplicated by human means’.<sup>216</sup> As a sign, glossolalia was to gain the attention of the unbelieving Jews and authenticate that the message came from God.<sup>217</sup> Bellshaw encourages Pentecostals to return from the excesses and accompanying ‘pride and presumption’.<sup>218</sup>

### Frank W. Beare, 1964.

Frank W. Beare concludes his article that glossolalia is

not regarded by any NT writer as a normal or invariable accompaniment of the life in grace, and there is no justification in the classical documents of the Christian faith for holding it to be a necessary element in the fullest spiritual development of the individual Christian or in the corporate life of the church.<sup>219</sup>

He arrives at this conclusion through a survey of glossolalia in the NT: 1) ‘there is no reference in any of the canonical gospels to “speaking with tongues.” It is never attributed to Jesus and is never promised by him’.<sup>220</sup> 2) There are so many problems with the book of Acts that any literal interpretation is ‘patently absurd’.<sup>221</sup> 3) ‘There can

---

3) ‘With the completion of the New Testament there no longer was a need for men to be used as instrumentalities to give forth God’s authoritative message’, p. 151.

<sup>215</sup> Bellshaw, ‘Confusion’, p. 146.

<sup>216</sup> Bellshaw, ‘Confusion’, pp. 147-8.

<sup>217</sup> Bellshaw never addresses how the unbeliever is supposed to know that the person speaking is speaking a language that is unknown to the speaker, Bellshaw, ‘Confusion’, p. 148. It is also curious that he would limit the audience for the sign, especially in the Greek city of Corinth, Bellshaw, ‘Confusion’, p. 149.

<sup>218</sup> Bellshaw, ‘Confusion’, p. 153.

<sup>219</sup> Frank W. Beare, ‘Speaking With Tongues: A Critical Survey of the New Testament Evidence,’ *JBL* 83 (September 1964), pp. 229-46 (246).

<sup>220</sup> Beare, ‘A Critical Survey’, p. 229. Beare believes that: 1) Jesus deprecates any kind of unintelligible prayer when he says ‘do not keep on babbling like the pagans (Mat. 6.7)’; 2) the longer ending in Mark is not authentic; 3) though Jesus receives the Spirit in baptism ‘it does not move him to speak in tongues’; 4) Luke’s Gospel is anticipatory of ‘power from on high’, but that power enables the speakers to ‘bring conviction by their testimony’; and 5) John’s rich pneumatological texts are unrelated to glossolalia, pp. 229-33.

<sup>221</sup> Beare, ‘A Critical Survey’, p. 237. For example: were there 12 or 120 present, p. 236? The tongues of fire must be ‘poetic imagery’, p. 236. Did they rush outside when they began to speak in tongues or did the crowd hear what was going on inside, pp. 236, 237? The multitude is symbolic as well because the entire episode of representative nations ‘appears to be drawn from an astrological grouping ... according

be no doubt that the main purpose of Paul is to discourage the practice of speaking with tongues among (the Corinthian) Christians'.<sup>222</sup> Therefore, though Paul recognizes tongues as a continuing gift, it is not to be regarded as 'common to all Christians'.<sup>223</sup>

### Hendrikus Berkhof, 1964.

Hendrikus Berkhof wrote that

for Luke, the speaking in tongues, i.e., in unknown languages, is the central gift. For Paul, on the contrary, it is a phenomenon on the fringe ... We can assume, however, that Luke would not have given the descriptions in this way unless he knew that parallel phenomena belong to the life of the Christian congregations for which he wrote.<sup>224</sup>

Surprisingly, he adds, 'Pentecostals are basically right when they speak of a working of the Holy Spirit beyond that which is acknowledged in the major denominations'.<sup>225</sup>

---

to the signs of the Zodiac', p. 237. How can one distinguish clearly a particular language when so many people were speaking at the same time, p. 237? How can Peter explain the drunken appearance as something desirable, p. 238? Additionally, following A. Harnack's theory (238), Beare believes the Acts 3 & 4 story to be more accurate than the mythical Acts 2 story which is a 'reworking under the influence of later experiences and fancy' pp. 236-37, 39. Finally, Acts 10 and 19 have different emphases from Pentecost, p. 239.

<sup>222</sup> Beare, 'A Critical Survey', pp. 240, 244. Three reasons for his statement: 1) 'men may be inspired by other spirits than the Spirit of God' even though they speak with tongues, so the 'test lies in the intelligible content of the utterance', p. 241. 2) The implied immaturity in 1 Corinthians 13, pp. 242, 244. 3) Paul always notes the inferior value of tongues and points to something better, pp. 243-44.

<sup>223</sup> Beare, 'A Critical Survey', p. 246.

<sup>224</sup> Hendrikus Berkhof, *The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit* (Richmond, VA: John Knox Press, 1964), pp. 87-88. He adds, 'being filled with the Spirit means to equip the individual in such a way that he becomes an instrument for the ongoing process of the Spirit in the church and the world ... the justified and sanctified are now turned, so to speak, inside out. In Acts they are turned primarily to the world; in Paul primarily to the total body of Christ', p. 89.

<sup>225</sup> Berkhof, *The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit*, p. 87. 'The "non-Pentecostal" churches have to hear in the Pentecostal movement God summoning us, not to quench the Spirit and earnestly to desire spiritual gifts ... the Pentecostal movement is God's judgment upon a church which lost its inner growth in its outward extension ... We have to rediscover the meaning of the variety of spiritual gifts', p. 93. However, ecstasy cannot be a sign of the Spirit, 'because people in such ecstasy even can say: "Jesus is cursed"', p. 91!

**William G. MacDonald, 1964.**<sup>226</sup>

This short booklet was originally presented as a paper for the Evangelical Theological Society's meeting in 1963. It is a seminal work as Pentecostals and non-Pentecostals begin to dialog theologically about glossolalia.<sup>227</sup> MacDonald's main contribution is an informed Pentecostal reading of the four main passages in Acts<sup>228</sup> and a summary of passages in 1 Corinthians.<sup>229</sup> He argues that the biblical encounters of the spirit, when carefully examined in light of the *ordo salutis*, point to ongoing glossolalic fillings rather than a singular act at salvation on the Day of Pentecost, and it is therefore the same for today's believers.<sup>230</sup> MacDonald believes that there are external and internal manifestations. The external manifestation of tongues point to the internal dwelling of the Spirit; it is an 'attestation that the Holy Spirit was dominant *within them*', that the 'filling was prior to the speaking ... (and) was consequent upon the Spirit's full possession of their faculties'.<sup>231</sup> He reasons further that if Pentecost is the fulfilment of the 'Father's promise and Peter's message about "the gift of the Holy Spirit" as the

---

<sup>226</sup> William G. MacDonald's bio in *Paraclete* reads: 'William Graham MacDonald, ThD. Front Royal, Virginia, taught a combined 22 years at Southeastern College, Central Bible College, and Gordon College, before engaging in a full-time writing ministry', William G. MacDonald, 'Biblical Glossolalia: Theses One and Two', *Paraclete* 27.1 (Winter 1993), pp. 1-7 (2).

<sup>227</sup> William G. MacDonald, *Glossolalia in the New Testament* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1964). There has been several subsequent reprints: *The Bulletin of the Evangelical Theological Society* 7 (Spring, 1964), pp. 59-68; Watson E. Mills (ed.) *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia*, Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing, 1986, pp. 127-40.

<sup>228</sup> MacDonald's exegesis of Acts 2 reveals two Lucan metaphors, being 'filled' and speaking γλώσσαι, MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 3. He notes that four things were filled in Acts 2.1-6: the time for the Spirit to be revealed, the wind that filled the place, the multitude that filled Jerusalem, and the 120 that were filled with the Holy Spirit. γλώσσαι is used 3 times: 1) phenomenologically of what was seen, 'fiery projections (v. 3)'; 2) the Spirit-inspired languages they spoke (v. 4), and 3) as a synonym for dialects (v. 11).

<sup>229</sup> For example, it contains numerous references in Greek and Latin, and an extensive chart showing how Paul carefully distinguishes between tongues for personal and public edification, MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 12-13.

<sup>230</sup> Specifically, Jesus breathing on the disciples (Jn 20.22) was their regeneration, Pentecost was their filling (Acts 2.4), but 'in a crisis, they *again* were "all filled with the Holy Spirit." With the result that "they spoke the word of God with boldness"', MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 2-3. Italics MacDonalds.

<sup>231</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 4, 5.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
promise for all whom God calls is valid, then there must be something *normative* about  
Pentecost'.<sup>232</sup>

Regarding the nature of Pauline tongues, he notes that ‘there is no cogent exegetical ground for making any difference in the essential character of glossolalia in Corinthians from that in Acts’.<sup>233</sup> However, their purposes are different: one is a sign and the other is to edify the church or individual.<sup>234</sup> Paul’s regulation of tongues at Corinth is straightforward; nevertheless MacDonald spells it out clearly.<sup>235</sup>

Lastly, he counters three ‘problem passages’ from 1 Corinthians:<sup>236</sup> 1) ‘where there are tongues, they will be stilled’.<sup>237</sup> He agrees that tongues have only a temporal existence, but, ‘there is no hint here that tongues will cease *before* prophecies ... or before “knowledge” passes away, or that any of these should pass off the scene *before* the time “when that which is perfect is come”’.<sup>238</sup> 2) ‘Do all speak in tongues’?<sup>239</sup> This does not refer to individuals, he writes, but regards the corporate setting and is a parallel statement to Paul’s other questions: ‘do all teach’ or ‘do all govern’.<sup>240</sup> 3) ‘How will anyone know what you are saying’<sup>241</sup> is resolved by the fact that Paul insisted on an interpretation in a public setting.<sup>242</sup> Finally, MacDonald reminds his readers that Paul’s command, ‘do not forbid glossolalia ... has never been revoked’!<sup>243</sup>

### **Stuart D. Currie, 1965.**

Stuart D. Currie seeks to discern the source and nature of biblical tongues from the early church fathers in order to determine if the present ‘speaking in tongues’ is the

---

<sup>232</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 5.

<sup>233</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 14.

<sup>234</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 11-4.

<sup>235</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 14-6.

<sup>236</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 16-19.

<sup>237</sup> 1 Corinthians 13.8.

<sup>238</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 16. Italics MacDonald.

<sup>239</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.30.

<sup>240</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.14-30. MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 17-18.

<sup>241</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.9.

<sup>242</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.5, 13; cf. MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, pp. 19-20.

<sup>243</sup> MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 20; cf. 1 Cor. 14.39.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia same as biblical *glossais lalein*.<sup>244</sup> Though he works through four possibilities,<sup>245</sup> he dismisses all of them and concludes that there is no way to know if contemporary speaking in tongues is the same as biblical *glossais lalein*.<sup>246</sup>

### **Conclusion to the Mid-Century Literature, 1930 to 1969.**

The defining element of this period is that the two streams of literature largely do not influence or engage each other, at least at a scholarly level:

for more than half of the century, because of near-universal ostracism by the larger church world, Pentecostalism developed in virtual isolation. Some Evangelicals classified Pentecostalism among the cults as late as 1950.<sup>247</sup>

It could also be argued that it took a few generations for scholars to be raised up from within Pentecostalism.<sup>248</sup> Nevertheless, just before 1970 scholars began engaging with Pentecostals and began to address subjects integral to Pentecostalism like tongues. For example, in addition to MacDonald's presentation at ETS in 1964 (above), Walter Jacob Hollenweger completed his 10-volume doctoral dissertation in 1965,<sup>249</sup> and Watson E. Mills wrote his dissertation: 'A Theological Interpretation of Tongues in Acts and 1 Corinthians' in 1968.<sup>250</sup> In 1972, it was published at a popular-level and is reviewed below.

---

<sup>244</sup> Stuart D. Currie, 'Speaking in Tongues, Early Evidence Outside the New Testament Bearing on "Glossais Lalein"', *Interpretation* 19 (1965), pp. 274-94.

<sup>245</sup> 1) Xenolalia, pp. 276-81; 2) non-human or angelic languages, pp. 281-84; 3) 'enigmatic' words or 'dark sayings', pp. 284-88; 4) ecstasy, pp. 288-93. Currie believes there were those who 'claimed to be Christians who did in fact utter nonsense syllables under pretended inspiration'; however, this could be confused with charlatany, sorcery, and magic and was a 'potential source of embarrassment to the church', pp. 292, 293-4.

<sup>246</sup> Currie, 'Speaking in Tongues', p. 294.

<sup>247</sup> William Menzies, 'The Initial Evidence Issue: A Pentecostal Response', *AJPS* 2/2 (1999), pp. 261-78 (261).

<sup>248</sup> 'Editorial', *JPT* 1.1 (Jan 1992), pp. 3-5; cf. Waddell, 'Whence Pentecostal Scholarship?' p. 246.

<sup>249</sup> Walter Jacob Hollengweger, 'Handbuch der Pfingstbewegung' (PhD dissertation, University of Zurich, 1965).

<sup>250</sup> Watson E. Mills, 'A Theological Interpretation of Tongues in Acts and 1 Corinthians' (PhD dissertation, Southern Baptist Seminary, 1968).

### III. Contemporary Scholarship, 1970 to 2019.

After 1970, there is a veritable explosion of literature on glossolalia. Four items near 1970 mark the dawn of the present era of scholarship on the subject: 1) the founding of the Society for Pentecostal Studies.<sup>251</sup> 2) ‘A growing number of Pentecostal scholars (who) ... strengthened Pentecostal scholarship and inspired non-Pentecostal theologians to pay more attention to the doctrine and experience of the Holy Spirit’.<sup>252</sup> 3) The publication of *Baptism in the Holy Spirit* by James D.G. Dunn and *A Theology of the Holy Spirit* by Frederick Dale Bruner. And 4) the rise of the Charismatic Movement.<sup>253</sup> Due to limited space, only the most significant monographs in the area of theology will be reviewed during this period. Many important works in the area of exegesis, linguistics, psychology, and history will be engaged in the constructive section but must be omitted from this survey of literature. Eleven authors and one work with multiple authors will be reviewed.

---

<sup>251</sup> The Society for Pentecostal Studies (SPS) was founded in 1970 in Dallas, TX, William Menzies, ‘Editorial’, *Pneuma* 1.1 (Spring 1979), pp. 3-5 (4).

<sup>252</sup> F. LeRon Shults & Andrea Hollingsworth, *Guides to Theology: The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2008), p. 70. Consider that ‘Pentecostal scholars were given the opportunity to integrate the distinctives of Pentecostal faith with their critical research. A well-documented hallmark ... is the debate that arose in biblical studies around whether the metaphor of Spirit baptism represented initiation into the Christian community (e.g. Dunn and Max Turner) or a subsequent experience of empowerment for vocation (e.g. Roger Stronstad and Robert Menzies)’, Waddell, ‘Whence Pentecostal Scholarship?’ p. 246.

<sup>253</sup> It is recognized that the Charismatic Renewal movement predates 1970; however, by the late 1960’s and early 1970’s many branches of Christianity were preparing official responses to the Charismatic Renewal. For example, *Report of the Special Committee on the Work of the Holy Spirit to the 182<sup>nd</sup> General Assembly* (Philadelphia, PA: The United Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, 1970); Peter D. Hocken, ‘Charismatic Movement’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 477-519 (481).

**Watson E. Mills, 1972, 1985.**

Watson E. Mills is a major contributor to the subject of glossolalia.<sup>254</sup> He is 'not a practitioner ... (but has) become part of a movement toward greater tolerance'.<sup>255</sup> His perspective is that 'both the New Testament narrative and church history make it impossible to deny the phenomenon',<sup>256</sup> so his goal is to 'set forth the theological relevance of glossolalia...and relate the experience of tongues to the larger context of biblical theology'.<sup>257</sup> After examining antecedents of ecstasy,<sup>258</sup> the Acts accounts,<sup>259</sup> and

---

<sup>254</sup> Mills, 'A Theological Interpretation of Tongues in Acts and 1 Corinthians'; Watson E. Mills, *Understanding Speaking in Tongues* (Grand Rapids: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1972); Watson Mills, 'Glossolalia: Christianity's "Counterculture" Amidst a Silent Majority', *The Christian Century* (Sep 27, 1972), pp. 949-51; Watson E. Mills, *A Theological / Exegetical Approach to Glossolalia* (Lanham: University Press of America, 1985); Watson E. Mills, *The Holy Spirit: A Bibliography* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1988).

<sup>255</sup> Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. ix.

<sup>256</sup> Mills, 'Counterculture', p. 950.

<sup>257</sup> Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 3.

<sup>258</sup> Mills believes that 'frenzied speech did exist prior to the Christian era, but it is too hypothetical to postulate that this speech was the same as that in Acts and 1 Corinthians', Mills, *Understanding*, p. 24; cf. Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 80-88. Antecedents include: 1) ancient religions, pp. 9-12. 2) OT prophets, pp. 20-23; cf. Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 12-19. 3) Intertestamental / Hellenistic period, Mills, *Understanding*, pp. 19-21.

<sup>259</sup> Mills notes that: 1) symbols were important to Luke (giving of the Law on Mt. Sinai, the tower of Babel, the birth of the Messiah, and the empowering Spirit in Rabbinic Judaism), Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 51-53. 2) The nature of speech on the Day of Pentecost is not as important as the fact that 'this force was none other than the Spirit of God', Mills, *Understanding*, p. 36; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 66. 3) Caesarea and Ephesus were examples of 'the gospel breaking through the gentile barrier' where it was important to have the same experience as the disciples did on the Day of Pentecost to break down 'Jewish particularism', Mills, *Understanding*, p. 39; cf. Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 71-73.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the issues with Corinthian tongues,<sup>260</sup> Mills states that ‘Luke redacted’<sup>261</sup> his accounts and wrote with theological intentions.<sup>262</sup> Further, Luke’s accounts should be used ‘to interpret glossolalia biblically for the church today … (and) should be considered primary’ because ‘Corinthians deals with a particular historical situation where the concept of the *Spirit of God as power* is absent’.<sup>263</sup> Theologically, Mills defines glossolalia as

the effort to express the inexpressible: the indwelling of the Spirit of God within the lives of men … ordinary human language could not express the emotions that were aroused; therefore the believer broke forth in ecstatic speech. These may have been intelligible words or phrases … (or) were inward groanings and sighs too deep for words.<sup>264</sup>

He would like to say that this indwelling occurs at salvation,<sup>265</sup> but at times, he recognizes, that for Luke, the ‘Holy Spirit is that power which enables the church to carry out her mission’.<sup>266</sup> Therefore, tongues ‘validated the presence of the Spirit of

---

<sup>260</sup> He believes that: 1) First Corinthians is not a ‘thorough, descriptive analysis of the nature and value of glossolalia’ because Paul is dealing with a specific problem, Mills, *Understanding*, p. 43; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 80. 2) In the end, a theological understanding is necessary for the charismata, especially for the gift of interpretation to have any significance, Mills, *Understanding*, p. 51; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 94. 3) Glossolalia ‘bears witness to the truth of the kerygma’, but it is a sign that grew to be overemphasized at Corinth, Mills, *Understanding*, p. 54. However, tongues are not the only sign, ‘or even the normal sign of the presence of God’, p. 56. 4) The absence of tongues in the Romans 12 list of spiritual gifts is a ‘conspicuous absence’ pointing to a cleaner contextual opinion by Paul that glossolalia is not ‘a necessary part of the Christian life’.

<sup>261</sup> Luke redacted his accounts: 1) to show the parallel with the receiving of the Law at Mt. Sinai and the reversal of tongues at Babel, Mills, *Understanding*, p. 57. 2) To fit with the Pauline expectation of order and intelligibility, p. 57. 3) Because ecstasy still is a form of communication psychologically, pp. 58, 60.

<sup>262</sup> Luke wanted to show ‘a series of great advances for the young gospel’ and that ‘the gospel is dependent … upon superhuman power’, Mills, *Understanding*, pp. 28, 35.

<sup>263</sup> Mills, *Understanding*, pp. 60, 59. Italics mine.

<sup>264</sup> Mills, *Understanding*, p. 38; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 69-70.

<sup>265</sup> For example, ‘the Holy Spirit is the ultimate validation… of salvation’, Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 44. Italics mine. Despite his reservations about glossolalia at Corinth, for Paul tongues ‘may well have become an essential requirement – a standard for conversion … (and) must also demonstrate their possession of it’, Mills, *Understanding*, p. 70. Italics mine.

<sup>266</sup> Mills, *Understanding*, p. 70; cf. pp. 59-60. For example, Mills would like to say there is a ‘parallel between the birth of the Messiah’ and the birth of the church in Acts’, Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 52. However, he knows that the better parallel is Jesus’ baptism at the Jordan River: ‘the disciples did not become the church at Pentecost any more than Jesus became the Son of God at his baptism’.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

God', but they are not intended to become a formal, a superior manifestation, or a 'kind of religious panacea'.<sup>267</sup> Finally, glossolalia is only one of many symbols of the Holy Spirit's presence, one that 'is relatively unimportant'.<sup>268</sup>

### Malines Document, 1974.

This 1974 document was a collaborative work by Roman Catholic scholars from around the world to address the 'Charismatic Renewal' in the RCC.<sup>269</sup> It outlines theological and pastoral concerns with the charismatic renewal and specifically addresses glossolalia. There are three areas relevant to current discussions of tongues-speech. First, in contrast to Pentecostal's theology of SB, it states, 'there are no special classes of Spirit-bearers, no separate groups of Spirit-filled believers', one receives the Spirit upon baptism.<sup>270</sup> While agreeing that 'the power of the Spirit would come to visibility along the full spectrum of his charisms ... the early Church would surely make no claim to a special endowment'.<sup>271</sup> However, it also states that there are different 'levels' of 'awareness, expectation, and openness' within communities and individuals.<sup>272</sup> There should be little time between baptism and reception of the Spirit.

Second, and in agreement with Pentecostalism, 'a charism ... looks outward and ministry to the church and world rather than inward to the perfection of the individual'.<sup>273</sup> Regardless, 'these acts are performed in the power the Spirit, glorify Christian, (sic) and are directed in some manner toward the building up of the

---

<sup>267</sup> Mills, Theological / Exegetical, p. 73.

<sup>268</sup> Mills, *Understanding*, pp. 67, 68.

<sup>269</sup> Leo Joseph Suenens, 'Malines Document 1, Theological and Pastoral Orientations on the Catholic Charismatic Renewal', in *The Holy Spirit, Life-Breath of the Church Book II*, 1st part (Belgium: FIAT Association, 1974), pp. 3-35.

<sup>270</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 9; cf. pp. 5, 10, *passim*.

<sup>271</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 11.

<sup>272</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', pp. 11-12. Openness to the charismata 'is in no way a sign of spiritual maturity', p. 23.

<sup>273</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 9. Left open to debate was whether charisms are a new 'capacity, a new faculty which was not present before the Spirit gave the gift', or the stirring up of 'a capacity which belongs to the fullness of humanity', p. 29.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia Christian community'.<sup>274</sup> In other words, charisms are empowering and missional in nature.

Third, glossolalic prayer was 'very common in the early church' and denying the possibility of its existence today 'cannot be defended exegetically or theologically'.<sup>275</sup> For Luke, 'Pentecost with its baptismal and charismatic elements serves as a prototype or model in Luke for the subsequent baptismal elements'.<sup>276</sup> Further,

the most central function of the charism of tongues is prayer ... It is essentially a prayer gift, enabling many using it to pray at a deeper level ... Its principal function is to be found in private prayer. There is considerable spiritual value in having a preconceptual, nonobjective way of praying ... The believer prays freely without conceptual forms.<sup>277</sup>

'This authentic but humble and humbling gift does not belong to the centre of the Gospel proclamation' – but praying in tongues can be 'a catalyst or trigger which opens the soul up to new dimensions of life in Christ'.<sup>278</sup> SB 'for Catholics and for classical Pentecostals ... functions as a common bond at the experiential level', providing an ecumenical 'similar experience'.<sup>279</sup>

### **Walter J. Hollenweger, 1986, 1988, 1989, and 1997.**

Walter J. Hollenweger's legendary contribution to the field of Pentecostal studies emphasizes the black-oral-inclusive root of Pentecostalism and highlights glossolalia as a form of oral communication.<sup>280</sup> He envisions glossolalia, on the one hand, as freeing people from the limits of race, culture, education, and language:

---

<sup>274</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 29.

<sup>275</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 24.

<sup>276</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 20. Reference is made to Acts 1.15; 2; 10.47; 11.15; 19.6, p. 20. Mark 16.17 is also referenced, p. 30.

<sup>277</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 30.

<sup>278</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', pp. 30, 25.

<sup>279</sup> Suenens, 'Malines Document', pp. 20, 28.

<sup>280</sup> The nature of glossolalia according to Hollenweger is: 1) non-pathological. 'There are nowadays no scientific grounds for explaining away speaking in tongues as a pathological form of expression', Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 343. 2) It is 'a non-verbal archetypal form of communication' that is not always ecstatic (hot), but can at times be called 'cool' tongues, p. 344. 3. Tongues are at times connected to Christian spirituality. Here he follows Samarian and Williams: 'speaking in tongues is a human ability

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

speaking in tongues, dreams and visions help in the conscientization of the people of God ... *they liberate the people of God and free them from dehumanizing cultural, economic and social forces.* They create room for an oral theological and social debate. They unfreeze liturgical, theological and socio-political formulae and replace ... by the political literacy of the whole people of God.<sup>281</sup>

On the other hand, glossolalia, allows for God's people to speak with one voice.

Tongues are

a means of communicating without numerical sentences, a kind of atmospheric communication. When a whole congregation sings in tongues and many harmonies (without following a set piece of music), Pentecostals are building a 'cathedral of sounds,' a 'socio-acoustic sanctuary,' which is particularly important for Pentecostals who do not have cathedrals. By speaking in tongues the individual can pray without being forced to express himself or herself in semantic sentences ... It has a psycho-hygienic and spiritual function.<sup>282</sup>

Pentecostal's distinctive contribution<sup>283</sup> of glossolalia as 'nonverbal communication should not be taken lightly.'<sup>284</sup> In other words, the glossolalic phenomenon may bridge the gap between "the logic of the guts" and the "logic of the brain".<sup>285</sup>

### **Robert P. Menzies, 2007 (1991, 1998, 2000), 2016 (2000, 2013, 2014).**

Robert P. Menzies has several contributions towards a Pentecostal understanding of glossolalia. His work will be reviewed in its most recent editions.<sup>286</sup>

The thesis of his first piece is that an Evangelical hermeneutic presents 'a very real challenge' to Pentecostal theology and especially IE.<sup>287</sup> He calls for Pentecostals to

---

that may or may not be used in Christian spirituality', Walter J. Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years' Research on Pentecostalism', *International Review of Mission* 75.297 (1986), pp. 3-12 (7).

<sup>281</sup> Hollenweger, 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', p. 553. Italics mine.

<sup>282</sup> Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 7.

<sup>283</sup> He believes like Spittler, that 'glossolalia is a human phenomenon, not limited to Christianity nor even to religious behavior ... The belief that *distinguishes* the movement can only wrongly be thought of as describing the *essence* of Pentecostalism', Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 22. Italics original.

<sup>284</sup> Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 344.

<sup>285</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 38.

<sup>286</sup> There is one exception: Robert P. Menzies, 'The Role of Glossolalia in Luke-Acts', *AJPT* 15:1 (2012), pp. 47-72. This article is not reviewed because the important material is fully expanded in: Robert P. Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues: Jesus and the Apostolic Church as Models for the Church Today* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2016).

<sup>287</sup> Footnotes are from most recent publication: Robert P. Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues: An Essay on Theological Method', in Gary B. McGee (ed.) *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the*

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

rearticulate their theology<sup>288</sup> to overcome the three largest hermeneutical challenges: 1) a two stage SB. Spirit Baptism is seen by Evangelicals as conversion-initiation (CI) into Christ and not as Pentecostal's power for witness.<sup>289</sup> Menzies argues that to keep Luke's distinctive pneumatology from being subsumed into a CI category, works of the Spirit should be seen in charismatic or prophetic terms.<sup>290</sup> The uniqueness of glossolalia is seen in its function to provide power for witness.<sup>291</sup> 2) The historical precedent in the book of Acts is weak. Pentecostals are 'unable to demonstrate that Luke intended to present in the key narratives of Acts a normative model for Christian experience'.<sup>292</sup> Yet Menzies argues that Luke's empowering prophetic glossolalia and Paul's personal edifying glossolalia are compatible. When 'one receives the Pentecostal gift, one should expect to manifest tongues ... (it) is a demonstrative sign' that the church is 'a prophetic community empowered for a missionary task'.<sup>293</sup> 3) What is the author's intention? When one examines the pneumatology of each biblical author, the discussion usually ends up with the question of trying to discern the author's original intent. Menzies believes that the issue of SB is a question of biblical theology while that of IE is for systematic theology.<sup>294</sup> Overall, 'the doctrine of tongues as the initial evidence of the

---

*Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007), p. 220. Also published in: 1) Robert P. Menzies, *Empowered for Witness: The Spirit in Luke-Acts* (JPTSup, 6; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1991), pp. 244-55; 2) Robert P. Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues: An Essay on Theological Method', *AJPT* 1 (1998), pp. 111-23; 3) William W. Menzies and Robert P. Menzies, *Spirit and Power: Foundations of Pentecostal Experience* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishing House, 2000), pp. 121-32.

<sup>288</sup> Specifically, 1) Pentecostals should emphasize that Luke's SB is a missiological enabling and not allow our contribution to be reduced to tongues alone. 2) Pentecostals should recognize that the phrase 'initial evidence' has severe limitations, at times confusing the gift with the sign. 3) Pentecostal pastors need to stress the relevance of an expectation of missionary empowerment, Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 231-33.

<sup>289</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', pp. 221-22.

<sup>290</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 228.

<sup>291</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 229.

<sup>292</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 223.

<sup>293</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 230. Menzies logic is: Paul affirms the private manifestation for all; Luke affirms the gift is connected to speech; therefore one should speak in tongues when one receives this gift.

<sup>294</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 226. That Luke did not deliberately set out to demonstrate IE does not render the concept invalid.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia baptism in the Holy Spirit flowed from a synthesis of theological insights offered by (both) Luke and Paul'.<sup>295</sup>

Menzies calls his next contribution 'a kind of spiritual diary' of his growing understanding of glossolalia.<sup>296</sup> It is a compilation and reworking of many prior articles and book chapters into three main divisions: Luke and tongues, Jesus and tongues, and Paul and tongues.<sup>297</sup>

In part one, Luke and tongues, Menzies believes 'Luke desired to ... establish Acts 2 as a model ... of a special type of prophetic speech':<sup>298</sup> there is a 'connection between speaking in tongues and prophecy (that) is crucial for Luke's narrative'.<sup>299</sup> Further, Spirit-inspired speech is not limited to the founding of the church.<sup>300</sup> Significantly, in addition to an argument solely from the book of Acts, Menzies builds a Pentecostal

---

<sup>295</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. xiii.

<sup>296</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. xiv. He calls Pentecostals to be brave and to confront their fears of disagreement, embarrassment, and excess, pp. 5-6; cf. pp. 2-12.

<sup>297</sup> Chapters 1 & 2 are reworked from Robert P. Menzies, *Pentecost: This Story is Our Story* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 2013), cf. pp. 67-85, 85-98 respectfully. Chapter 3 is reworked from Robert P. Menzies, 'Jesus, Tongues, and the Messianic Reading of Psalm 16', *JPT* 23.1 (2014), pp. 29-49. Chapter 5 is reworked from Menzies, *Spirit and Power*, pp. 133-144.

<sup>298</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 18-19. The difference between the known languages of Acts 2 and subsequent ecstatic passages (10.46, 19.6) is not an issue, because even though these three contain 'different activities' Luke: 1) uses 'the same Greek terms' and 2) there is a 'literary connection', pp. 17-18. This is an evolution from Menzies' earlier position that Jenny Everts has made a 'compelling' case for the glossolalia of Acts 2 glossolalia as ecstatic, Menzies, *This Story is Our Story*, p. 74; cf. pp. 69-74; Jenny Everts, 'Tongues or Languages? Contextual Consistency in the Translation of Acts 2', *JPT* 4 (1994), pp. 71-80.

<sup>299</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 20. The Spirit of prophecy is the 'exclusive privilege of "the servants" of God' that 'typically results in miraculous and audible speech'. 'Of the eight instances where Luke describes the initial reception of the Spirit ... five specifically allude to some form of inspired speech as the immediate result (Lk. 1.41-42; 1.67; Acts 2.4; 10.46; 19.6) and one implies the occurrence of such activity (Acts 8.15, 18). In the remaining two instances, although inspired speech is absent from Luke's account (Lk. 3.22; Acts 9.17), it is a prominent feature in the pericopes that follow (Lk. 4.14, 18-19; Acts 9.20)', n. 2.

<sup>300</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 20. To think it was a special gift to help the fledgling church would be to 'misread Luke's narrative', p. 21. Menzies points to how Luke modified Joel's prophecy from the LXX: 1) giving visions a prominent place, p. 22. 2) The insertion of 'and they will prophesy' into v. 18, pp. 21-22. 3) The insertion of 'signs on earth below' indicates a new 'epoch marked by "signs and wonders"', according to Luke, p. 23.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

polemic from three passages in Luke's gospel: 1) Luke 19.39-40<sup>301</sup> reveals 'a motif' close to Luke's heart: 'in these last days ... the Spirit will inspire His end-time prophets to declare God's mighty deeds ... Praise and bold witness go hand in hand, they are both the necessary and (an) inevitable consequence of being filled with the Holy Spirit'.<sup>302</sup> 2) Luke 10.1-16 is the account of the seventy being sent out, springs from Moses' wish that 'all the Lords' people were prophets':<sup>303</sup>

Luke views every believer as (at least potentially) an end-time prophet, and that he will issue forth in Spirit-inspired ecstatic speech ... the Pentecostal gift, as a fulfillment of Moses' wish (Num. 11.29) and Joel's prophecy (Joel 2.28-32), is a prophetic anointing that enables its recipients to bear bold witness for Jesus, and this being the case, it is marked by ecstatic speech characteristic of prophets.<sup>304</sup>

3) Jesus' teaching on prayer in Lk. 11.9-13 'encourages post-Pentecostal (sic) disciples to pray for a prophetic anointing ... expect(ing) glossolalia to be a normal, frequent, and expected part of this experience'.<sup>305</sup> Luke envisioned a wide range of prophetic responses accompanying the Spirit, such as 'joyful praise, glossolalia, visions and bold witness in the face of persecution'<sup>306</sup> but glossolalia was perhaps top in his

---

<sup>301</sup> Though this episode is found in all four Gospels, these verses are unique to Luke: 'some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to Jesus, "Teacher, rebuke your disciples!" "I tell you," he replied, "if they keep quiet, the stones *will cry out* (Lk. 19.39-30 NIV)', Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 30. Italics mine.

<sup>302</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp 30-31. He notes: Elizabeth's blessing, Lk. 1.42-45; Mary's Magnificat, Lk. 1.46-55; Zechariah's Song, Lk. 1.67-79; Simeon's prophecy, Lk. 2.29-32; the angels, Lk. 2.13-14; Jesus' joyful praise, Lk. 10.21-24; the triumphal entry, Lk. 19.39-40; Pentecost, Acts 2.1-13; Cornelius and his household, Acts 10.46; the believers at Ephesus, Acts 19.6. p. 30.

<sup>303</sup> Numbers 11.29. For an explanation of the textual disparity between 70 or 72, see Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 30-31.

<sup>304</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 33-34. Luke has no concern about false tongues, because the community of prophets will discern true prophecy, pp. 34-35.

<sup>305</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 38. Menzies comes to this conclusion because Luke amends the Matthean (Q) source of 'good gifts' given to those who ask, to read the 'Holy Spirit' is given to those who ask, pp. 35-36. He sees three implications: 1) this is for the church today because 'there is no neat line of separation dividing the apostolic church from his church or ours', p. 36. 2) This promise is clearly for members of the Christian community and not an initiatory or soteriological gift. He notes the 'repetitive character' of prayer in v. 9 to show that 'this pneumatic gift is ... to be experienced on an ongoing basis (cf. Acts 2:4; 4:8, 31; 9:17; 13:9), p. 36. 3) This is viewed by Luke as a prophetic enabling, pp. 36-37.

<sup>306</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 37.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

expectation.<sup>307</sup> All Christians are therefore encouraged to pray for a prophetic anointing which will include glossolalia, because tongues remind us of our need for a ‘divine enabling’ and is a sign that apostolic power is available today.<sup>308</sup>

The most pioneering section is part two: Jesus and tongues. Here, Menzies connects glossolalia directly with Jesus. The lynchpin of his argument is a messianic reading of Psalm 16 in Acts 2.25-28: the ‘early church viewed Jesus’ experience of glossolalia … as a fulfilment of Ps. 16.9’.<sup>309</sup> Luke anticipates this in Lk. 10.21, where he uses a unique phrase ‘he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit’ to denote not only praise but prophetic inspiration and activity<sup>310</sup> and ‘thanksgiving in terms reminiscent of speaking in tongues’.<sup>311</sup> ‘Peter declares that this Psalm (16) must be interpreted as a prophecy … concerning the Messiah … (because) it is Jesus’ tongue that rejoices and his body that is not abandoned to the grave’.<sup>312</sup> This suggests a ‘significant (Lucan) literary and

---

<sup>307</sup> His support is: 1) glossolalia in Luke’s narrative ‘typically accompanies the initial reception of the Spirit’, Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 37. 2) The emphasis on asking would prompt the natural question of ‘when have we received this gift’ and Luke’s narrative indicates that there normally is an accompanying sign, p. 94. Menzies reminds those opposed to visible signs of the long history of sacraments that emphasize visible signs in the liturgical forms of Christianity, pp. 37-38. 3) A possible reason for there being fear of the Father’s good gift (vv. 11, 12) is that unlike a quiet gift, ‘the gift includes glossolalia, which is noisy, unintelligible, and has many pagan counterparts’, p. 38.

<sup>308</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 40. In an interesting excursus in *This Story is Our Story*, Menzies notes it might be possible to be full of the Holy Spirit and not speak in tongues; however, he encourages all believers to be hungry for the full biblical experience, Menzies, *This Story is Our Story*, pp. 98-101.

<sup>309</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 63. The best we can say is ‘Luke merely implies Jesus’ experience of tongues’, p. 62. He suggests two reasons for the lack of explicit accounts of Jesus speaking in tongues: 1) ‘there were not any traditions or stories that explicitly describe Jesus speaking in tongues’, and 2) ‘the early church did not view this matter with total unanimity’. Even though glossolalia was widely practiced, ‘some groups were less open to this manifestation’.

<sup>310</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 48. ‘Here Luke utilizes the verb ἀγαλλιάω (rejoice) … and denotes spiritual exultation … in praise to God for his mighty acts … a particularly appropriate way of describing prophetic activity’; cf. Lk. 1.47; 10.21; Acts 2.26.

<sup>311</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 49. ‘The coupling of ἀγαλλιάω with γλωσσὰ in Luke-Acts describe experiences of spiritual exultation that results in praise’. There are six occurrences: Lk. 1.64; Acts 2.4, 11, 26; 10.46; 19.6.

<sup>312</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 50-51.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

theological purpose'.<sup>313</sup> Menzies argues that Jesus' tongue rejoiced during his earthly ministry and not just upon his resurrection.<sup>314</sup> Overall in Luke-Acts,

a messianic reading of Ps. 16.9 that understands Jesus' own experience of glossolalia, implied in Lk. 10.21, as a fulfilment of the prophecy that the Messiah's tongue would rejoice ... serve(s) as a sign for those who are a part of the end-time community of prophets, so also tongues mark the ultimate prophet and source of this prophetic community.<sup>315</sup>

Glossolalia identifies 'the true people of God ... and confirms their status as members of Joel's end-times prophetic band'.<sup>316</sup> Regarding Mk 16.17, Jesus' singular reference to tongues, Menzies argues for its originality by noting that it shares the same source that Luke used.<sup>317</sup> Further, he argues for its originality along with the cryptic handling of snakes and the drinking of poison. Jesus refers to Job 20.16<sup>318</sup> using a Hebrew literary device called *gezerah shavah*.<sup>319</sup> This implies a Hebrew textual tradition that is older than the Greek tradition of today's text.<sup>320</sup> In short, 'the LE (long ending) passes on this saying of Jesus'.<sup>321</sup>

---

<sup>313</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 51.

<sup>314</sup> Because Luke cited non-resurrection portions of Psalm 19 in his LXX quote, Menzies argues further: 1) two people cannot be at each other's right hand, Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 53; cf. p. 52. 2) Luke redacts into Lk. 10.21 the phrase 'he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit', pp. 53-54. 3) The conceptual link of the revelation of Jesus' status as the Son, p. 54. 4) The references to fill ( $\pi\lambda\eta\rho\omega$ ) in Luke-Acts 'encourage the reader to interpret the phrase "you fill me with joy in your presence" as referring to Jesus' ecstatic experience of the Spirit during Jesus' earthly ministry'. 5) The future verb tense 'suggest that the Messiah speaks these words prior to his resurrection', pp. 54-55. 6) OT prophecy 'anticipates an ongoing fulfillment' of miracles by Jesus and his followers', p. 55. 7) 'The reason for citing the extended quotation appears to be the focus in vv. 8-9a and v. 11b on joyful, ecstatic experience, which anticipates the disciples' experience of inspired tongues-speech cited in Acts 2.33', p. 55. 8) 'Luke carefully crafted his summary of Peter's sermon with an eye to presenting Jesus' ecstatic exultation ... as both a fulfilment of prophecy ... and as anticipating the experience of the disciples', pp. 56-57.

<sup>315</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 59.

<sup>316</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 58; cf. pp. 57-61.

<sup>317</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 69; cf. pp. 67-72.

<sup>318</sup> His argument rests on Job 20.13-16, where 'we have a single text from the Old Testament that offers in a concise and vivid manner parallels to both' the poison and snakes, Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 74.

<sup>319</sup> Also called a 'stichwort connection', Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 77.

<sup>320</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 77-79. He suggests that the Hebrew literary device was lost on the Greeks who 'might well have rendered in a less specific way', p. 79.

<sup>321</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 80.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

In part three, Paul and tongues, Menzies begins with a response to critics who believe that tongues are not for everyone, but were limited to a select group in Corinth.<sup>322</sup> He argues that Paul envisions that glossolalia is for everyone because of ‘the force of the rhetorical question in 12:30b, “do all speak in tongues?” and ... the significance of Paul’s wishful declaration in 14:5, “I would like every one of you to speak in tongues”’.<sup>323</sup> For Menzies, the thrust of Paul’s distinction is public verses private glossolalia as opposed to a select group who speak in tongues in contrast to others who do not. Paul employs a similar analogy about celibacy in 7.7, according to those who want to limit glossolalia; however, Menzies reveals that there are ‘three couplets, which consist of parallel statements concerning tongues and prophecy’ that point to a public / private distinction, in the context of chapter 14.<sup>324</sup> Menzies is confident that it was Paul’s genuine wish that all were glossolalists.<sup>325</sup> He writes, ‘once we recognize the polemical nature of Paul’s words in 1 Corinthians 12-14’, we see that ‘Paul’s attitude towards tongues as a sign might not be so different from that of Luke’s after all’.<sup>326</sup> For support of his position, Menzies believes that Paul used a literary device called a ‘diatribe’ in 1 Cor. 14.22,<sup>327</sup> and at the very least, ‘there was a group at Corinth that viewed tongues as a positive sign’.<sup>328</sup> Regarding the gift of tongues, and beyond devotional-glossolalia,<sup>329</sup> Menzies believes that communal glossolalia can be useful for

---

<sup>322</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 90-94; cf. Menzies, *Spirit and Power*, pp. 133-144.

<sup>323</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 90.

<sup>324</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 99; cf. pp. 98-101. ‘The parallelism ... suggests that both prophecy and tongues are open to all within the community of believers’, p. 100. And further, ‘if the gift of tongues has merit in its private expression, why would God withhold it’, p. 101?

<sup>325</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 101.

<sup>326</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 118.

<sup>327</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 111-15; cf. pp. 109-18. Menzies admits this is a very difficult passage to interpret, but that this theory ‘offers a coherent explanation for the relationship between the paraphrase from Isa. 28.11-12 and the opponents’ inference’, pp. 111, 113. Diatribe means that Paul uses the voice of an ‘imaginary opponent’: ‘thus, in Paul’s version, the hearers refuse to listen to the unintelligible speech from “foreigners” ... (therefore) the people of v. 21 refers to believers and the point of the quotation (as understood by Paul’s opponents) is to say that tongues, although ineffective for instructing Christians, serve as an authenticating, apologetic sign for unbelievers’, p. 113.

<sup>328</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 115. He also briefly appeals to Mk 16.17 and Acts 2.19 as having a positive sign-value for glossolalia.

<sup>329</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 126-27, 130-31.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

praise,<sup>330</sup> intercession<sup>331</sup> and even proclamation: ‘when exercised in concert with the gift of interpretation, (they) can be the vehicle through which the Holy Spirit speaks to the larger church body’.<sup>332</sup> He reasons that while ‘tongues generally takes the form of inspired praise or thanksgiving, I am reluctant to limit it … in a rigid fashion … (because) there are other expressions of speaking in tongues that appear to fall outside’, such as singing and praying in the Spirit corporately.<sup>333</sup>

### **Initial Evidence, 1991 (2007).**<sup>334</sup>

This compilation has several great pieces, most of which are treated elsewhere in this survey. The following three works are the sole contribution from each author.

The first contributor, Larry Hurtado, approaches glossolalia from what he calls a ‘post-Pentecostal’ viewpoint. He believes that a ‘separate level of Spirit empowerment subsequent to regeneration, with a required “evidence” of it, seems not to be reflected at all in the New Testament’.<sup>335</sup> Though sympathetic to his Pentecostal roots, he believes that IE resulted from ‘eisegesis’. The best case exegetically that can be made for tongues speech is that it is normal, but not the norm for all people.<sup>336</sup>

He believes his work shows that nowhere in the book of Acts is IE explicitly taught, nor is there any indication that Luke intended to teach how the Spirit is received, ‘but rather it seems to have been to show that the Spirit prompted and accompanied the progress of the gospel at every significant juncture and was the power enabling the work’.<sup>337</sup> Luke is inconsistent or unconcerned about teaching SB because even the

---

<sup>330</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 130-39.

<sup>331</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 139-46.

<sup>332</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 146.

<sup>333</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 150-51.

<sup>334</sup> Originally published in 1991, this review is of the 2007 edition.

<sup>335</sup> Larry W. Hurtado, ‘Normal, But Not A Norm: “Initial Evidence” and the New Testament’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 189-201 (192).

<sup>336</sup> Hurtado, ‘Normal, But Not A Norm’, pp. 189-92.

<sup>337</sup> Hurtado, ‘Normal, But Not A Norm’, p. 194, cf. p. 195.

pattern in Acts occurs only 3 of 5 times.<sup>338</sup> Hurtado notes that Peter's argument of the 'same gift' in Acts 11.1-18 'can only indicate ... the same eschatological *salvation* as the Jerusalem church'.<sup>339</sup>

Not only is IE not explicitly taught in Acts, but 'one would think that ... Paul would have included a reference to its supposed significance as "initial evidence" of Spirit Baptism if such an understanding of tongues were current at the time'.<sup>340</sup> Overall, Hurtado's work in First Corinthians covers little new ground and he finds the Pentecostal arguments 'unpersuasive'.<sup>341</sup> He concludes that tongues are "'normal,'" within the range of Christian spirituality' but disagrees that there is a 'special gift or spiritual state' that accompanies tongues. Simply put, IE is a 'sincere but misguided understanding of Scripture'.<sup>342</sup>

The second contributor, Donald Johns, seeks to explain why past approaches to the doctrine of IE have failed and he hopes that some fresh approaches and exegetical tools will resolve the hermeneutical issue.<sup>343</sup> First, the failings of past approaches are Pentecostal's inadequate response to the CI paradigm in Paul's pneumatology.<sup>344</sup> Second, Pentecostalism's pattern from Acts needs more than three solid cases and the

---

<sup>338</sup> The pattern is only seen in Acts 2.1-4; 10.44-47; 19.1-7, while the parallel passage in Acts 4.31 (which has the disciples only speaking boldly, without mention of tongues) is ignored by Pentecostals, Hurtado, 'Normal, But Not A Norm', p. 195.

<sup>339</sup> Hurtado, 'Normal, But Not A Norm', p. 195. Italics mine.

<sup>340</sup> Hurtado, 'Normal, But Not A Norm', p. 196.

<sup>341</sup> Hurtado, 'Normal, But Not A Norm', p. 196. He notes: 1) that Paul emphasizes tongues here only because the Corinthians were bent on it; 2) Paul limits the congregational gift; 3) it is not for everyone; 4) there might be some personal benefit as a distinctive form of prayer and praise; 5) Paul seeks to restrict tongues; and 6) Paul prefers the mind and intelligent speech to tongues corporately, pp. 196-99.

<sup>342</sup> Hurtado, 'Normal, But Not A Norm', p. 200.

<sup>343</sup> Donald A. Johns, 'Some New Directions in the Hermeneutics of Classic Pentecostalism's Doctrine of Initial Evidence', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 145-67 (145-46). He believes that the early Pentecostals 'intuitively adopted techniques that are present in contemporary biblical scholarship in a more developed and polished form', p. 148.

<sup>344</sup> Johns notes that Paul's pneumatology is more clearly associated with conversion-initiation whereas Luke's is that of empowerment. Pentecostals on this front need to address the 'Pauline statements about every believer having received the Spirit' and the Lucan passages 'that describe the post-Easter disciples as people who needed to receive the Spirit', Johns, 'New Directions in Hermeneutics', p. 147.

two questionable ones for this inductive reasoning method to move beyond being labelled ‘inconsistent’.<sup>345</sup> Third is the viability and ownership of the term ‘baptized in the Spirit’ in light of the Luke / Paul issue.

Regarding the Luke / Paul issue, Johns observes that Luke should be read as a theologian in his own right and not through Paul’s pneumatology; that Paul actually says the Spirit is received at conversion, but Pentecostal critics go beyond that to add ‘and only at conversion (which Paul does not say)’; that Acts 2 ‘must be interpreted primarily within Luke’s theological structures’; and that we should trust Luke in Acts 8 when he says the Samaritans ‘believed’ and in Acts 19 when he says they were already ‘disciples’.<sup>346</sup>

Johns has two noteworthy ideas to resolve the past failing of the IE doctrine. First, he believes that redaction criticism will be helpful in exegeting the main Pentecostal texts. After all, redaction criticism is ‘similar to what classical Pentecostals have been doing all along, drawing out the theology expressed by narrative texts’.<sup>347</sup> Both the arrangement and omission in the narrative do reveal a theological perspective.

The second idea is narrative theology. Johns writes,

Luke maintained the story form in Acts because the significance of what he wanted to communicate is more directly perceived through story than through expository prose, and probably because he wanted to affect the reader in ways that could not be done by any other form than story.<sup>348</sup>

A story will build a group identity, structure one’s world, and imaginatively draw the reader into ‘a simplified understanding’ of reality.<sup>349</sup> Stories have ‘rules or principles’ by which the story-world operates; in the same way, the biblical world should be paradigmatic for our world today.<sup>350</sup>

---

<sup>345</sup> The three cases are: Acts 2.1-12; 10.44-8; and 19.1-7 have a close connection between reception of the Spirit and tongues; however, Acts 8.14-9 and 9.17 (along with 1 Cor. 14.18) do not fit the pattern.

<sup>346</sup> Johns, ‘New Directions in Hermeneutics’, pp. 148-51.

<sup>347</sup> Johns, ‘New Directions in Hermeneutics’, p. 153.

<sup>348</sup> Johns, ‘New Directions in Hermeneutics’, p. 156.

<sup>349</sup> Johns, ‘New Directions in Hermeneutics’, pp. 153-5.

<sup>350</sup> Johns, ‘New Directions in Hermeneutics’, p. 156.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The third and final contributor, Henry I. Lederle, seeks to define the Charismatic position on IE from an objective or ecumenical perspective.<sup>351</sup> While most charismatics give tongues a prominent position, few accept it as the '*sine qua non* for Spirit baptism'.<sup>352</sup> Their reasons, according to Lederle, are that tongues cannot be proved as the 'first effect' of SB and that its occurrence in secular and non-Christian context makes it a non-conclusive sign rather than a definitive one.<sup>353</sup> More to this chapter's point is that contrary to other Pentecostal historians, he does not believe that it was the concept of IE that caused Pentecostalism to spread like wildfire, but rather the experience of an encounter with the Holy Spirit.<sup>354</sup> He compares such encounter with a pearl and the concept of IE as an oyster. Pearl-like encounters are possible without the shell of the oyster.<sup>355</sup>

The oyster of IE is a child of the Enlightenment where there is a desire for 'empirical verification, intellectual guarantees, and linear causality'; however, 'no formal structure can contain' the richness of the Spirit.<sup>356</sup> Looked at another way, 'an encounter with God should serve as the *gateway* to life in the Spirit rather than as the *goal* which can always be formally verified *once* it has been reached'<sup>357</sup>! For charismatics, Lederle notes doctrinal statements are attempts to 'domesticate' the Spirit.<sup>358</sup> The Charismatics' experience presents a challenge to classical Pentecostals in that 'this ongoing experience of Christ's power and presence cannot be guaranteed by the external requirement that all need to speak in tongues'.<sup>359</sup> He ends with a call for a fresh

---

<sup>351</sup> Henry I. Lederle, 'Initial Evidence and the Charismatic Movement: An Ecumenical Appraisal', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 131-41 (133).

<sup>352</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 132.

<sup>353</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 132.

<sup>354</sup> He has two supports for this point: First, the doctrine was surrounded by controversy from the beginning. Second, the Pentecostal communities in some countries resemble charismatics more than Pentecostals in their doctrine, Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 132.

<sup>355</sup> Pearl-like encounters are possible without the shell of the oyster as seen in testimonies like John G. Lakes, Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', pp. 133-4.

<sup>356</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 134.

<sup>357</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 136.

<sup>358</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 136.

<sup>359</sup> Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 138.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
dialog between classic Pentecostals and charismatics where Pentecostals consider giving up ‘outdated concepts – influenced by philosophical categories no longer adhered to’ – and embracing ‘many new ways of looking at old insights discovered’.<sup>360</sup>

### **Frank D. Macchia, 1992, 1993, 1998, and 2006.**

The collective writings of Pentecostal theologian Frank D. Macchia have added significantly to the discussion on glossolalia.<sup>361</sup> These writings reveal a careful construction of a theology of glossolalia with four theses: 1) glossolalia is broader and more varied than what doctrinal categories can hold. 2) Glossolalia is best thought of as a sacrament. 3) Pentecostalism’s doctrine of IE, though not defined well, is not easily dismissed. 4) Tongues symbolize unity and mission.

Macchia’s first thesis is that glossolalia is broader than any theological category.<sup>362</sup> Tongues ‘will contain varying nuances of meaning among those who experience it’, he writes.<sup>363</sup> Most early Pentecostals approached tongues through a worldview of ‘revivalism on “signs and wonders” and from the experiences of God in the book of Acts as pattern’; therefore, most early reflections are clustered around evidentiary tongues.<sup>364</sup> Despite this handicap, underlying all discussion ‘was the assumption that

---

<sup>360</sup> Lederle, ‘An Ecumenical Appraisal’, p. 139, cf. pp. 138-40.

<sup>361</sup> Frank D. Macchia, ‘Sighs Too Deep for Words: Toward a Theology of Glossolalia’, *JPT* 1 (October 1992), pp. 47-73; Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’; Frank D. Macchia, ‘The Question of Tongues as Initial Evidence: A Review of Initial Evidence, Edited by Gary B. McGee’, *JPT* 2 (1993), pp. 117-27; Frank D. Macchia, ‘Groans Too Deep For Words: Towards a Theology of Tongues as Initial Evidence’, *AJPS* 1/2 (1998), pp. 149-73; Frank D. Macchia, ‘Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost: Reversal or Fulfillment? – A Theological Perspective’, in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 34-51.

<sup>362</sup> Macchia states that ‘a spiritual phenomenon was changed into a shibboleth of orthodoxy ... We cannot lock Spirit baptism into a glossolalic straight-jacket so that the former becomes inconceivable apart from the latter. But ... Spirit baptism is fundamentally and integrally about what tongues symbolize’, Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 165. Cf. Frank D. Macchia, *Baptized in the Spirit: A Global Pentecostal Theology* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2006), pp. 37, 281.

<sup>363</sup> Macchia, ‘Sighs Too Deep for Words’, p. 72, cf. Frank D. Macchia, ‘Blessed Beyond Measure: An Autobiographical Reflection’, in Steven M. Fettke and Robby Waddell (eds.) *Pentecostals in the Academy: Testimonies of Call*, pp. 129-47 (147).

<sup>364</sup> Macchia, ‘Sighs Too Deep for Words’, p. 48. He believes that the nature of tongues is ecstatic, though he qualifies it as not being ecstatic like the ancient Greeks who lost control of themselves. He

tongues symbolized an encounter with God ... spontaneous, free and wondrous'.<sup>365</sup>

Tongues are a physical response to God, who freely chooses to reveal Himself through spontaneous tongues or a structured rite such as communion.<sup>366</sup> These encounters point to an eschatological reality: 'Pentecost may be termed an eschatological theophany of God ... (in which tongues are) the transformation of language into a channel of the divine self-disclosure'.<sup>367</sup> Tongues are a response to God's self-disclosure, divine down not human up: 'the closer one draws to the divine mystery, the more urgent it becomes to express oneself and, concomitantly, the less able one is to find adequate expression'.<sup>368</sup> The human response is 'unclassifiable, free speech in response to an unclassifiable, free God. It is the language of the *imago Dei*' that mysteriously and creatively seeks to express the experience with God.<sup>369</sup> An encounter with God renews the individual and tongues do not distinguish a greater spirituality as much as 'a new creation taking place in our midst and through us among others'. Through such encounters we 'participate in the renewal of society and creation.'<sup>370</sup> 'Glossolalia, even practiced alone, must have implications for one's ability to reach out to others in koinonia', Macchia writes.<sup>371</sup> Tongues, then, is a language that has koinonia in the 'mystery of human freedom before God'<sup>372</sup> overflowing traditional cultural, gender, or

---

reasons for a 'meaningful way of transcending one's situation without losing conscious control of oneself', p. 64. However, the interest in the precise nature of tongues is a modern quest and would not have been a concern for the ancients, pp. 63-64.

<sup>365</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 48. 'The experience and praxis-orientation of Pentecostalism' is as important as the historical or exegetical, Macchia, 'Initial Evidence', pp. 126-27.

<sup>366</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 67.

<sup>367</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 57.

<sup>368</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 62.

<sup>369</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 62.

<sup>370</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 72.

<sup>371</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 67. For support he notes; 'there is a basic connection between spiritual fullness and koinonia in the New Testament that cannot be denied', p. 65. Macchia recalls Bonhoeffer's statement that a person is only known as a person within society. Finally, Paul's insistence that without love great giftedness is useless, p. 67.

<sup>372</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 66.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

class boundaries.<sup>373</sup> Tongues should ‘call us out of our self- and church-centered piety to serve in the world’.<sup>374</sup> Macchia agrees with Murray Dempster that ‘tongues in Acts always accompanies the elimination of economic, racial, and religious barriers’; glossolalia ‘shocks’ the institutional life of the church in such a way that there is a resulting ‘love and holiness in life’, a counterculture to the institution’s formalization.<sup>375</sup>

Macchia’s second thesis is the observation of a sacramental aspect to glossolalia that can be a ‘door for fruitful ecumenical dialogue with other Church traditions’.<sup>376</sup> Even though Pentecostals are afraid of ‘institutionalization of formalizing the Spirit of God’ tongues fit well with the contemporary understanding of sacrament as ‘occasions for personal encounter between God and the believer’.<sup>377</sup> Glossolalia as a sacrament bridges the gap between the extremes of Roman Catholicism’s ‘visible means of grace and the Reformed accent on the sovereignty and freedom of the Spirit’.<sup>378</sup> On the one hand, glossolalia ‘includes a visible/audible human response that signifies the divine presence’; therefore it retains the Divine sovereignty and freedom side as well as ‘humanity’s need for the visible and tangible’.<sup>379</sup> Yet tongues are a different kind of sacrament, one that ‘accents the free, dramatic, and unpredictable move of the Spirit of

---

<sup>373</sup> ‘It is indeed interesting that inter-racial fellowship and female ordination to the ministry in early Pentecostalism were both justified as results of the latter-day experiences of Spirit baptism and glossolalia’, p. 66.

<sup>374</sup> Macchia, ‘Sighs Too Deep for Words’, p. 68.

<sup>375</sup> Macchia, ‘Initial Evidence’, pp. 120-21, 124 (Org. cite: M. Dempster, ‘The Church’s Moral Witness: A Study of Glossolalia in Luke’s Theology of Acts’, *Paraclete* 23.1 [Winter 1989], pp. 1-7).

<sup>376</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 76.

<sup>377</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 62. Also, ‘the sacraments are not understood in this newer Catholic sacramental thought as objects containing the divine presence as a static substance ... (but) as contexts for a dynamic and personal divine / human encounter’, p. 71. Macchia wishes to replace sacramental substances with liminal, Spirit-invoked ritual performances: Tom Driver finds ‘that ritual is a kind of performance that suggests “alternative worlds” and nourishes “imaginative visions” of God’s goals for the world ... (rituals) move in a kind of liminal space, at the edge of, or in the cracks between, the mapped regions of what we like to call “the real world”’, Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 248; cf. p. 255.

<sup>378</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 70. His approach here is through Paul Tillich’s dialectic and its gap is resolved by defining tongues as very similar to Tillich’s ‘kairos’ event, pp. 68-69.

<sup>379</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 70. There is a ‘tangible self-disclosure of the Sprit’, it is a ‘physical / acoustic reality used as a visible sign of this experience’, Macchia, ‘Initial Evidence’, pp. 122, 125.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

God'.<sup>380</sup> Therefore, it avoids the stereotype against the Catholic sacraments as being idolatrous by placing the emphasis on God's sovereignty.<sup>381</sup> For example, 'there is an element of spontaneity and patient waiting for the unexpected in charismatic signs such as evidential tongues that is absent from ecclesiastically manipulated links to apostolic experience'.<sup>382</sup>

On the other hand, tongues avoid the Protestant stereotype of 'radical subjectivism' by its linking to Christ and the church.<sup>383</sup> Macchia favours a broad definition of the term sacrament because it relies on God taking the initiative, and calls the Pentecostal sacrament 'more "theophanic" than incarnational', like at Mt. Sinai.<sup>384</sup> Sacramental tongues are 'encounters with God in worship, in which we participate actively but which exceed the capacities of human thought or language'.<sup>385</sup> Additionally, tongues as a sacrament links the individual with Christ and is rooted in Christ's purpose for the church: 'by stressing that Spirit baptism ... is for the empowerment of the church in its witness ... Pentecostals have parted significantly from the conservative Evangelical preoccupation with subjective conversion'.<sup>386</sup>

His third thesis is that the initial sign (IE)<sup>387</sup> has significance despite the criticisms. Again, a sacramental definition will assist the doctrine. There is something special about that first encounter with God, that 'overwhelming immersion of baptism of the

---

<sup>380</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 63.

<sup>381</sup> He contrasts Catholic and protestant views as: orchestrated and institutional versus free, unplanned, countercultural, and charism, pp. 72-73. Also, '*Spiritus Creator* working from within our structured responses to God ... sacramentality as from "below", versus the 'free move of the *Spiritus Redemptor* ... a sacramentality from "above"', p. 75.

<sup>382</sup> Macchia, 'Initial Evidence', pp. 118-19. Macchia's contrast here is with Catholic's apostolic succession and Evangelical's scriptural inerrancy.

<sup>383</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 70.

<sup>384</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 73.

<sup>385</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 72.

<sup>386</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 70.

<sup>387</sup> Macchia also prefers the term 'sign' to 'evidence' noting that an 'evidence' merely provides data for a hypothesis; whereas 'sign' has a rich theological potential and a long history of use within the church, Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 153. 'Initial' should be reworked to mean the initiating of the language miracle and not SB itself, pp. 172-73.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
human psyche by the person and power of the Spirit’<sup>388</sup> A sacramental connection honours the ‘depth and breadth of the Spirit baptismal experience and the symbolic expression of tongues, but without the rigid, scientific, glossocentric connections’.<sup>389</sup> He compares it to Irving’s “‘root and stem’ out of which all other spiritual gifts grow”.<sup>390</sup> From the beginning, early Pentecostals wrestled with how to give tongues a special place without limiting SB to a glossolalic experience.<sup>391</sup> In fact, there has been a natural progression from MT to an ‘in-depth prayer language or a congregational gift’.<sup>392</sup>

To address exegetical and theological concerns about IE, Macchia makes the following points: first, the connection of tongues to SB is ‘not simply a strange teaching ... without any provocation from the narrative of Acts’:<sup>393</sup>

Luke followed the Jewish tendency to associate the reception of the Spirit with inspired or prophetic speech ... Luke seems to focus on tongues because of their role in miraculously uniting a diversity of people together in a common witness and praise.<sup>394</sup>

Analogous connections of tongues to Christ can be made in the book of Acts, such as Peter’s speech where Jesus had a glad tongue in Acts 2.26.<sup>395</sup> These analogous connections, or links, are sufficient. He muses, ‘how many questions could be raised if representatives from mainline churches were to defend their understanding of the Eucharist on the basis of the New Testament witness alone’.<sup>396</sup>

---

<sup>388</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, pp. 67-68.

<sup>389</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 156. ‘I have suggested shifting to the language of “sign” (rather than “evidence,” which is not a biblical term) concerning tongues and focusing on the theological rather than a legalistic connection between them’, Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 36.

<sup>390</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 69.

<sup>391</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 156. He notes specifically Carothers emphasis on praise and a reference of overcoming racial barriers in the *AF* that states, ‘tell me ... can you have a better understanding of the two works of grace and baptism in the Holy Ghost?’, Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 157.

<sup>392</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, pp. 156-57, 162. He believes that the missionary tongues must be ‘demythologized’ if the doctrine is to be developed, pp. 162, cf. 159, 164.

<sup>393</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 161.

<sup>394</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 158.

<sup>395</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 65; cf. Macchia, ‘Initial Evidence’, pp. 119-20. Other examples are anointing, proclamation, persecution, miracles, breaking bread, and healing, pp. 65-66. For further development of this concept see, Menzies, *This Story is Our Story*, pp. 81-85.

<sup>396</sup> Macchia, ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 67; cf. Macchia, ‘Initial Evidence’, pp. 126-27.

Second, both Luke's and Paul's view of tongues are complimentary in that,

Luke reminds us that not all public expressions of tongues require interpreters to be enlightening or to motivate greater commitment to God. On the other hand, Paul reminds us that restriction may be necessary if unintelligible tongues begin to dominate a service.<sup>397</sup>

He believes that Paul was writing to correct a situation in Corinth and that one cannot 'stretch Paul's correction ... to mean that no glossolalic utterance is of any value to others without an intelligent interpretation'.<sup>398</sup> Tongues have value by themselves publicaly and this is where Luke compliments Paul.<sup>399</sup> For Luke tongues 'provide a powerful witness in public of both promise and judgment, without any explanation whatever on how such clarity is granted'.<sup>400</sup> Gordon Fee has proven to Macchia's satisfaction that Paul's 'least' of the gifts is not what most commentators believe it to mean, but that the best gift is what the context and Spirit desire.<sup>401</sup>

Third, the pathway to revision the doctrine of IE for Pentecostals has already been prepared by an early Pentecostal leader J.R. Flower. Flower's testimony of being baptized six months before he spoke in tongues was, that while he was baptized in the Spirit, he did not have the 'full manifestation' as seen in the 'biblical pattern'.<sup>402</sup> This, Macchia believes, shifts 'the focus from tongues as the necessary accompaniment ... to tongues as the fullness of expression toward which the experience leads'.<sup>403</sup>

---

<sup>397</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 170.

<sup>398</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 169. As support he offers Rom. 8.26, where there is a positive, public use for 'groans too deep for words' that does 'not lead to a quest for self-aggrandizement for glory', Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', pp. 170-71.

<sup>399</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', pp. 169-71.

<sup>400</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 169.

<sup>401</sup> The view that spiritual gifts can be ranked from the least to the greatest 'is based on faulty conclusions drawn from assumptions which are read into the text', Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 170. See Gordon Fee, 'Tongues – Least of the Gifts? Some Exegetical Observations on 1 Corinthians 12-14', *Pneuma* 2 (1980), pp. 3-14.

<sup>402</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 172. He calls Flower 'the most significant general superintendent and leader of the American Assemblies of God', p. 172; cf. Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 36.

<sup>403</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 171.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Fourth, there is a place for IE and SB that is eschatologically missional without retreating solely to the Pauline categories of praise and edification.<sup>404</sup> On the one hand, as a symbol of an encounter with God, glossolalia expresses both human weakness and divine strength in a way that cannot be codified because of its mystery, spontaneity, and artistic expression initiated by God.<sup>405</sup> On the other hand, doctrines function as a grammar that is helpful for explaining truths. In this case, there is an implied relationship between experiencing the presence of God and tongues right from the first Pentecostals.<sup>406</sup> Not only can a case be made from Acts connecting tongues with SB,<sup>407</sup> but the significance of glossolalia in Acts is the bringing ‘together all the peoples of the earth in common praise and witness’.<sup>408</sup> He believes that tongues represents a uniting of the people of God as ‘oracles’ for vocal praise and witness.<sup>409</sup>

The fourth thesis in Macchia’s construction of a Pentecostal theology of glossolalia is unity and mission. He affirms tongues as empowerment,<sup>410</sup> but contends that there is a deeper significance to tongues on the Day of Pentecost when contrasted with the tower of Babel story in Genesis 11. Pentecost is more than a reversal of the scattering of

---

<sup>404</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 167. Ultimately that is because ‘it is God and not humanity who bears miraculous witness to the gospel’ while with sanctification it is the individual who bears witness, p. 166; cf. Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 271.

<sup>405</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, pp. 167-68. We have moved glossolalia ‘away from the proper place … as an experience by formalizing it’, p. 168. He reminds Pentecostals that the early Pentecostals tarrying to receive SB implies a sovereignty of God that defies a scientific cause and effect law, p. 155.

<sup>406</sup> Macchia says that it was ‘not imported from the outside and imposed upon Pentecostal piety’ but it ‘was already implied from the beginning of Pentecostal experience and testimony’, Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 168.

<sup>407</sup> For support he notes, Gunkel, Pesch, Montague, McDonnell, and Williams, Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, pp. 159-62.

<sup>408</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 159.

<sup>409</sup> Macchia, ‘Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence’, p. 162, cf. 165. Becoming an oracle of God in these last days does not imply ability or worthiness as ‘tongues reveal the limits of human speech to capture and express the mystery of God’s redemptive presence’; glossolalia is ‘trying to put into words what is deeper than words’, p. 163. Even misguided missionary tongues pointed in the right direction, reaching beyond one’s self to ‘share the goodness of God across cultural and national boundaries’, p. 164.

<sup>410</sup> Macchia, ‘Initial Evidence’, p. 121. He notes that this required a narrowing of its connection to sanctification, Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 83.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

languages.<sup>411</sup> To view Babel simply as punishment<sup>412</sup> is myopic because there is a rich 'positive reading' that is possible.<sup>413</sup> It can be argued that the scattering was God's grace upon them 'as a way of breaking the spell of idolatry and disobedience ... and filling the earth with the proliferation of life'.<sup>414</sup> One could say the dispersion was God's gracious way of getting humankind to spread out over the world and live freely and creatively, developing various cultures and languages as he intended from the beginning.

Tongues at the Pentecost event are really a fulfilment or a resolution of the Babel metaphor in two ways: first, the coming together at Pentecost of the Diaspora Jews is a reversal of the scattering, but there immediately follows another scattering after Pentecost, one, 'not in fragmentation, but unified by the Spirit'.<sup>415</sup> Second, it is important that 'the languages of Pentecost are not reversed into a single tongue.'<sup>416</sup> Macchia says that the Day of Pentecost glossolalia is 'not incomprehensible but *overcomprehensible*' meaning that there is 'a common understanding that floods over cultural boundaries to include everyone'.<sup>417</sup> There is a universal experience in the midst of diversity.

This view has several implications for glossolalia: first, it affirms an 'ecumenical significance' to tongues in Acts 10 that 'requires the actual presence of Gentile participants and not just their representation by Diaspora Jews'.<sup>418</sup> Tongues are 'the first

---

<sup>411</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 51.

<sup>412</sup> Macchia acknowledges the concept of judgment in the story as well as God's grace, Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 43.

<sup>413</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 44.

<sup>414</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 42.

<sup>415</sup> Key to this point is Paul's speech at the Aeropagus in Acts 17.27, in which the peoples of the world were dispersed in a way that would help them recognize God as the gift of life, breath, and being in the midst of their migrations and unique geographical and cultural settings, Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 44; cf. Macchia, *Baptized*, pp. 211-18.

<sup>416</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 44. He notes that the early Pentecostals 'turned to a notion of what may be termed the sanctification of human speech. The unruly tongue is said to be tamed and transformed into a source of telling truth, praising God, or bearing witness to Christ, Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 83.

<sup>417</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 44.

<sup>418</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 46; cf. Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 218.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia ecumenical language of the church' because 'no single language or voice in the dialogue can unambiguously hold the truth'.<sup>419</sup> Second, the early Pentecostals started with a global theology of tongues that brought together people of various cultures and races,<sup>420</sup> but they were 'saddled with the mistaken assumption that tongues were used in the New Testament to preach the gospel to the nations'.<sup>421</sup> When MT proved to be folly, Pentecostals sought out a meaning for their glossolalic experience and 'drifted towards an ecstatic experience that marked certain Christians as being filled' with the implication that others were partially or not filled. In other words, tongues become exactly the opposite of what God intended, a point of division instead of unity.<sup>422</sup> Third, while giving high marks to both Pauline and Lucan nuances for tongues,<sup>423</sup> he opts for a rich and liberating, unfettered definition of tongues.<sup>424</sup>

### **Heidi G. Baker, 1995.**

Heidi G. Baker's PhD thesis reconstructs Pentecostalism's theology of glossolalia by emphasizing it as a prayer language that is a 'liberating, democratizing and unifying experience, a trans-rational devotional language of the heart' that is 'sacramental in significance'.<sup>425</sup> She believes that Pentecostal SB has parallels in the broader church experience. For example, the RCC has confirmation 'that takes place after personal profession of faith and after appropriate instruction';<sup>426</sup> and the 'early Eastern Orthodox Christians saw chrismation as an extension of Pentecost ... the Holy Spirit descends on

---

<sup>419</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 49; cf. Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 213.

<sup>420</sup> E.g. AF 1.5 (Jan. 1907), p. 3.

<sup>421</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 48.

<sup>422</sup> Macchia, *Baptized*, p. 36. 'This is the great value of the Pentecostal emphasis on speaking in tongues. Tongues are the language of love, not reason ... the outpouring of divine love upon us is the ultimate description of Pentecost', p. 257.

<sup>423</sup> Macchia writes, 'Luke may give tongues a public sign value not found in Paul and Paul may grant tongues a personal / individual value not discussed in Luke. But this difference adds variety and richness to a theology of tongues', Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 50.

<sup>424</sup> Macchia comes pretty close to saying that dogmatic statements are exclusive and idolatrous rather than liberating, diverse and heavenly when he writes 'ideas become dogma and any diversity of tongues, heresy', Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 49.

<sup>425</sup> Heidi G. Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience: Towards A Reconstructive Theology Of Glossolalia', (PhD thesis, King's College, London, England, 1995), pp. ii; cf. pp. 208-233.

<sup>426</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 156.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the person baptized and seals on him the grace of baptism';<sup>427</sup> however, 'the Reformed tradition allows for only one beginning event of Christian life'.<sup>428</sup>

Baker notes that 'glossolalia may not be considered a fail-proof sign of Spirit baptism for several reasons':<sup>429</sup> 1) 'there is no declaration in the New Testament stating it as the only evidence', 2) 'formalization in essence denies the complete freedom and sovereignty of the Holy Spirit',<sup>430</sup> and 3) it 'tends to detract from the broader theological significance of glossolalic prayer'.<sup>431</sup> She concludes that 'Pentecostals would do well to recognize tongues (IE) not as normative, but only as a normal and legitimate symbol'.<sup>432</sup>

Baker's constructive work supports her thesis that glossolalic prayer is a 'liberating',<sup>433</sup> democratizing<sup>434</sup> and unifying experience,<sup>435</sup> and a trans-rational devotional language of the heart<sup>436</sup> which is sacramental in nature'.<sup>437</sup> However, and perhaps more important, is her work on kenosis and theosis. She writes that the 'practice of glossolalic prayer may be understood as emptying out of the self before God

---

<sup>427</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 161.

<sup>428</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 168.

<sup>429</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 152-82, 200, 227.

<sup>430</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 180.

<sup>431</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 182.

<sup>432</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 182. Baker's position is 'that the infilling ... need not be attested to by glossolalia', and one's 'personal Pentecost is only an expectation and a commencement of the conclusive theophany of God that will come in the Parousia for all believers', pp. 234, 292. Cf. Jack W. Hayford, *The Beauty of Spiritual Language* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1966), pp. 93, 98.

<sup>433</sup> As for liberating, here quoting Macchia, 'glossolalia is an unclassifiable, free speech response to an unclassifiable, free God. It is a language of the *Imago Dei*"', Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 180. 'Those who pray in tongues believe they are capable of more in life because of the availability of the spirit', p. 212.

<sup>434</sup> 'Glossolalic prayer may also be theologically reconstructed as an essentially democratizing practice, enabling even the least likely to proclaim the gospel ... to express themselves without learning religious phraseology that may be required of priests and pastors', Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 213-14.

<sup>435</sup> 'Glossolalia may be understood as a reversal of the tower of Babel, a type of reestablishing of international church unity ... a symbol of universal oneness and an expansion of the gospel to all peoples' Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 216.

<sup>436</sup> 'Glossolalic prayer transcends one's own knowledge and language abilities and arises from the depth of the human spirit illuminated by the Holy Spirit', Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 219.

<sup>437</sup> 'In glossolalic prayer the participant focuses on God as the object of adoration, and therefore the focus moves away from language as the means of adoration ... (and becomes) a "linguistic symbol of the sacred" ... (that) says "God is here"', Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 228.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
(kenosis) so that one might become full of the Holy Spirit and thereby participate in Christ's nature (theosis').<sup>438</sup>

Her definition of theosis is taken from Eastern Orthodox theologians:<sup>439</sup> 'the experience and practice of glossolalic prayer symbolize the indwelling presence of God ... we may see glossolalic prayer as a symbol which becomes the language of divine mystery'.<sup>440</sup> 'While we may not know the essence of God, it is still possible to encounter God'.<sup>441</sup> Glossolalia itself is the "utterance of sounds from the depths of one's being (and) can symbolize an encounter with the divine reality" ... these mystical sounds are "as sonorous forms of the divinity, as icons composed as sounds".<sup>442</sup> This encounter opens one up to greater illumination by the Holy Spirit, 'a path to a vivid awareness of things divine as well is a symbol of participation in things divine'.<sup>443</sup> Therefore, the true significance of glossolalia is in what it symbolizes theologically ... a response of the total self to the prior and ineffable self-disclosure of God ... The purpose of this form of prayer is not to inform, but to participate in the divine nature.<sup>444</sup>

In so doing, it is 'an expression of mystery'; it is 'holy speech authored by and addressed to God'.<sup>445</sup>

---

<sup>438</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 253.

<sup>439</sup> Baker addresses Evagrius, Macarius, and Diadocus as intellectual figures of Orthodox Byzantium, Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 269-75; Symeon The New Theologian's contribution of experience, pp. 275-80; and Gregory Palamas as representative of Hesychasm, pp. 280-84.

<sup>440</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 260-61. This 'subject could only be approached by means of the language of metaphor – the use of symbolism – and the context of prayer and wonder' because 'it is clear that the God of Orthodoxy and Pentecostalism is a living God, both transcendent and willingly immanent. He will not, therefore, fit into pre-possessed philosophical categories. The apophatic characteristic of the theological tradition of the East may also help us to perceive in some way the ongoing experience and practice of glossolalic prayer', pp. 260-61.

<sup>441</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 267.

<sup>442</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 274.

<sup>443</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 277. Theosis is also a process, p. 285.

<sup>444</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 279-80.

<sup>445</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 282, 286. 'In the end language alone is not adequate to express the depth of one's encounter with God to others. (But) Mystical and symbolic imagery advances from the incapacity of rational language to express experience', p. 292.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
**Simon Chan, 1997, 1999, and 2000.**

The collective works of theologian Simon Chan have shaped the recent discussion on glossolalia.<sup>446</sup> He believes that the theology of IE appears to be ‘in tatters’ for two reasons:<sup>447</sup> 1) the problem of using the overly scientific term ‘evidence’ and 2) the gap between Luke’s and Paul’s pneumatology.<sup>448</sup> Luke’s understanding is phenomenological whereas Paul’s is soteriological, and Chan senses that the two views must be harmonized under some larger category.<sup>449</sup>

Chan proposes as a solution the broad category of relationship, noting that the ‘initial evidence doctrine makes the best sense only in the context of such intimacy’.<sup>450</sup> He writes, ‘relationship is a more basic category for understanding the nature of the work of the Spirit than mission. We can understand mission in terms of relationship but not vice versa’.<sup>451</sup> Tongues occur within a relationship of intimacy with God and when the individual’s mind and will are not overpowered by the Spirit.<sup>452</sup> Tongues are the

---

<sup>446</sup> Simon Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia, or Making Sense of the “Initial Evidence”’, in Wonsuk Ma and Robert P Menzies (eds.), *Pentecostalism in Context: Essays in Honor of William W. Menzies* (JPTSup 11; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997), pp. 80-95; Simon Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence’, *AJPS* 2.2 (1999), pp. 195–211; Simon Chan, *Pentecostal Theology and the Christian Spiritual Tradition* (JPTSup 21; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000).

<sup>447</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 80.

<sup>448</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 81.

<sup>449</sup> He notes three insufficient solutions to bridge this gap: 1) Robert Menzies ‘power for ministry’ paradigm which he notes ‘entails methodological difficulties’ and is too narrow a category, Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 83 n. 12, cf. p. 85. 2) Turner’s non-sacramental CI view ends theologically being subsumed into the evangelical view of salvation, Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence’, pp. 197, cf. pp. 202, 208. 3) Peter Hocken’s relatively overlooked category of ‘revelation’ fits well with the testimonies of the early Pentecostals, Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 85; cf. Peter D. Hocken, ‘The Meaning and Purpose of “Baptism in the Spirit”’, *Pneuma* 7:2 (1985), pp. 125-33. However, revelation was an insufficient category for the early Pentecostals because they ‘testified, among other things, to the nearness of Jesus and the “revelation of the triune God in me”’, Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 85.

<sup>450</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 85. He gives the analogy of two lovers who develop their own “‘idiolect’ known only to themselves”; or to a parent who has such a close relationship with their child that they can understand their babblings. Pentecostals ‘may not always be the most spiritually mature, yet within their limited knowledge they are able to enter into a deeply meaningful level of personal engagement with their heavenly Father’, Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 86.

<sup>451</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, pp. 45-46.

<sup>452</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 88.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
natural result of being overwhelmed with God's presence, just as it is the natural to cry  
when one is sad, so too,

if the *initial* baptism in the Spirit is understood as essentially denoting an experience of deep personal intimacy with the triune God in which the Spirit exercises full control, then it would be in fact quite accurate to see tongues as its natural concomitance or evidence.<sup>453</sup>

Chan supports his solution in four ways.

First, SB falls theologically into one of two camps, either a CI one or a sacramental one. The evangelical CI view, at its closest point of Pentecostal understanding, tends to see SB merely as an 'intensification of a pre-existing reality' which occurred at salvation.<sup>454</sup> Chan prefers a sacramental view that is close to Macchia's.<sup>455</sup> He proposes that

a sacramental view of Spirit-baptism has the advantage of preserving the distinctiveness of the Pentecostal experience (which the two-stage theory tries to do) and at the same time grounding the experience in the doctrine of conversion-initiation.<sup>456</sup>

Without a sacramental view, evidential tongues become 'normal' but not the 'norm'; it loses its 'distinctive qualities' in the evangelical view where the Christian life is 'one big, indistinct blob'; and Pentecostals appear to be 'spiritual elites', because the 'power for ministry' definition states only the result of Spirit-baptism and not its theological essence.<sup>457</sup> Chan believes in connecting evidential glossolalia sacramentally into the CI *ordo salutis*, similar to water baptism and confirmation.<sup>458</sup> He suggests that Pentecostals 'locate Spirit-baptism in the sacrament of holy communion' which would dovetail nicely with 'repeatable infillings'.<sup>459</sup>

---

<sup>453</sup> Chan, 'The Language Game of Glossolalia', p. 90.

<sup>454</sup> Chan, Pentecostal Theology, p. 56.

<sup>455</sup> Chan, 'The Language Game of Glossolalia', p. 87.

<sup>456</sup> Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 210.

<sup>457</sup> 'Normal' not the 'norm' is the theological terminus for Menzies' Lucan theology of empowered speech. Subsuming into the evangelical view of salvation is the theological terminus for Turner's non-sacramental CI view. 'Spiritual elitism' is the result of our two-stage experience. Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', pp. 197, cf. pp. 202, 208.

<sup>458</sup> Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 206.

<sup>459</sup> Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 211.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Chan clarifies his sacramental view in three ways: 1) there is an emphasis on the divine initiative in the encounter, making it a ‘symbol of a spiritual reality and not just an arbitrary sign’.<sup>460</sup> Indeed, it ‘must always be interpreted in the context of the presence of God’.<sup>461</sup> However, he believes, this encounter aspect does not fit well with sacramentalism.<sup>462</sup> Therefore, 2) the tongues of SB are a passive or infused grace; whereas, tongues as a prayer language is a ‘means of grace’.<sup>463</sup> Tongues were not the means of grace but the *fruit* of grace, the spontaneous response to the *prior* action of God ... It is this aspect of Pentecostal experience that tongues functions as ‘evidence’ rather than as sacramental sign.<sup>464</sup>

Initially tongues is a signal ‘of the in-breaking of divine revelation’ and subsequently ‘a “prayer language” that can be exercised throughout one’s life’.<sup>465</sup> This ascetical component is a human-seeking God side in addition to the divine initiative side.<sup>466</sup> 3) Physical items can convey the spiritual, and glossolalia is no exception:

tongues will always sound gibberish from the human perspective. Yet, out of ordinary bread and wine, out of ordinary gibberish, something happens to us: God has graced the bread and wine; God has graced the gibberish!<sup>467</sup>

The second way that Chan supports his category of relationship is through a Pauline CI view rather than a Lucan power view because: ‘these two, while distinctly experientially, are one theological reality, one great work of Christian initiation’.<sup>468</sup> Paul’s soteriological dimension includes Luke’s charismatic dimension, but not the

---

<sup>460</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 53.

<sup>461</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 55.

<sup>462</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 87. Here the sacramental model will have to be expanded to include what he calls an ‘enthusiastic concept’, where ‘in such an overwhelming way ... the only appropriate response is open receptivity’.

<sup>463</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 78. ‘Pentecostal ascetics’ he writes, ‘will sometimes speak in tongues quite deliberately as a means of cultivating intimacy with God through an act of *anamnesis* ... they simply pray and in the course of praying they will find themselves moving from activity to passivity’, p. 81.

<sup>464</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 87.

<sup>465</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, pp. 77-78.

<sup>466</sup> Chan writes, ‘there is a basic ascetical structure in the Pentecostal understanding of spiritual progress ... the habit of tarrying ... praying, fasting, seeking the Lord are all necessary conditions’, Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 76.

<sup>467</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 79.

<sup>468</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, p. 91.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia reverse, and therefore Paul’s theology of glossolalia is central to the discussion of SB. The distinct Pentecostal experience is not subsumed into Paul’s soteriological category when each biblical author is allowed to speak for himself.<sup>469</sup> He notes, ‘glossolalia bears a *necessary* relation to Spirit-baptism within the larger pattern of canonical meaning’.<sup>470</sup>

His third support for relationship is that ‘glossolalia must be brought into a meaningful relationship to other significant theological symbols’ in order to reformulate the doctrine without violating the ‘integrity of the Pentecostal experience’.<sup>471</sup> For example, he sees a parallel in the mystical tradition and notes Teresa of Avila’s reception of ‘spiritual delight’ from God as an illustration.<sup>472</sup> Following George Lindbeck’s cultural-linguistic theory, both a mystic like Teresa of Avila and the Pentecostal ‘is operating according to its own cultural-linguistic grammar’ and the sign and the thing signified have an ‘integral connection’.<sup>473</sup> For a Pentecostal, the sign is tongues and for a mystic like Teresa of Avila, it is silence.<sup>474</sup> Initial evidence is ‘a sub-cultural-linguistic system within the larger Christian community’,<sup>475</sup> a ‘regulative

---

<sup>469</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 47. Chan believes that Matthew nuances believers as empowered through the abiding presence of Jesus (SB); Mark’s nuance is SB as empowerment ‘as well as anointing to be a servant and the sacrifice for sin’; Luke’s focus is on the charismatic work in his gospel and empowerment in the book of Acts and he ‘shows relatively little interest in the Spirit as the power of the spiritual, ethical and religious renewal of individual’; John sees it as ‘the power to reveal God, especially in the word of Jesus’ teaching and preaching’; and Paul’s writings has the Spirit ‘indwelling the believers who creates the character of Christ in them’ in what Turner calls the ‘executive power’ of Christ.

<sup>470</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 45. Historical occurrences alone fail to ‘show from history that it had the same significance that modern Pentecostals have given it’, p. 40. The Dunn and Menzies debate confirms to Chan that ‘the Pentecostal doctrine can be vindicated if we can establish it within the larger pattern of meaning derived from the whole canon of Scripture’, p. 43. Chan is careful to note that this does not undercut biblical authority in a post-modern way, but ‘the church as the canonically shaped community recognizes the truth as it embodies or ‘indwells’ the Scripture’, p. 44.

<sup>471</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, pp. 83, cf. p. 81. He has an ecumenical passion to connect with the broader Christian traditions, Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence’, pp. 198, 201.

<sup>472</sup> Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence’, p. 199.

<sup>473</sup> Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence’, pp. 197, 200; cf. Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 43.

<sup>474</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 61.

<sup>475</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 62, n. 89.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia grammar' for the Pentecostal community that parallels grammars in other Christian communities such as the 'Jesus Prayer' and silence.<sup>476</sup> Glossolalia, he writes,

makes even better sense when evidential tongues are interpreted within the broader context of the Christian mysticism tradition where silence signals a certain level of intimacy with God ... But ultimately, glossolalia, makes the best sense when it is understood as signifying a reality which configures gracious and powerful affection in a distinctively Pentecostal way.<sup>477</sup>

Fourth, Chan contends that relationships need both order and spontaneity. Chan's illustrations of spontaneity and order highlight relationship and glossolalia: just as children live in reality, yet can also experience times of play when they 'step out of the ordinary world into a different world', so Pentecostals have insisted on a second experience or reality separate from the normal reality.<sup>478</sup> Pentecostal tongues present us with a normal Christian life having both order and an unpredictable playfulness in a genuine relationship with the living God.<sup>479</sup>

### **Mark Cartledge, 1998, 2000, 2006.**

Mark Cartledge writes on a wide variety of aspects of glossolalia, usually from a multidisciplinary perspective.

Cartledge's first article, is in response to Cox's assessment of glossolalia in the twenty-first century. Cox believes that postmodernism's 'ecstasy deficit' will be filled by glossolalia as 'primal speech'.<sup>480</sup> Through a case study, Cartledge affirms the cultural

---

<sup>476</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, pp. 10, 61-62. For example, he believes that glossolalia 'represents the lower levels of passive prayer, or the transition from active to passive prayer' in the mystical tradition. Chan likens tongues to Teresa of Avila's prayer mansions, specifically the transition from the third mansion to the fourth mansion when, 'the soul becomes increasingly receptive ... (and) the soul receives 'spiritual delight' from God', pp. 59-60.

<sup>477</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 41.

<sup>478</sup> Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 208.

<sup>479</sup> Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 80. Chan likens the human divine relationship to a child and play. For example, children play in the real world but can create make-believe scenarios, in the same way Pentecostals have breakthroughs into a different / higher reality, p. 80, cf. p. 56. See also, Chan, 'The Language Game of Glossolalia', p. 86; Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 208.

<sup>480</sup> Mark J. Cartledge, 'The Future of Glossolalia: Fundamentalist or Experientialist?', *Religion*, 28 (1998), pp. 233-44, cf. p. 234.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia shift from a fundamentalist's static form of worship to one that is open to experimentation, one that downplays hierarchy, and one that holds in tension scriptural literalism and individual experiences.<sup>481</sup> He believes that twenty-first century use of glossolalia will rest upon the Pentecostal's system of experientialism.

Cartledge's second article is valuable for its bibliographic and theological overview of the main scholarly positions on the nature and function of NT glossolalia.<sup>482</sup> Regarding the linguistic nature of tongues, all the opinions can be summarized into two broad ones: 'either (1) both Luke and Paul considered glossolalia to be unlearned human language (with perhaps angelic speech as well); or (2) they both considered the phenomenon to be inarticulate speech'.<sup>483</sup> Cartledge opts for the former because, while Luke's Pentecost narrative is clearly xenolalia and Paul's 'tongues of men' could be similar, the reverse – that the tongues on the Day of Pentecost could be understood as 'inarticulate speech' – does not fit with the text:<sup>484</sup>

Luke considered glossolalia to be real unlearned human languages (xenolalia), while Paul understood glossolalia to be either a real unlearned human language (xenolalia) or a mysterious kind of heavenly language which he called 'the language of angels'.<sup>485</sup>

However, Paul was not interested in the 'precise linguistic nature of glossolalia' as much as he was in affirming the gift and its proper use.<sup>486</sup> Paul gives priority to the

---

<sup>481</sup> Cartledge, 'Future of Glossolalia', pp. 237-38. He breaks from Cox in two ways: 1) his case study revealed that glossolalia may have already changed from 'an evidence of Baptism in the Spirit', to private use for prayer and edification; a reversal from public to private glossolalia, p. 239. 2) Cartledge believes that 'glossolalia will become one symbol among many used in religious practice'.

<sup>482</sup> Cartledge, 'The Nature and Function', pp. 135–50.

<sup>483</sup> Cartledge, 'The Nature and Function', p. 139. The majority of scholars see 'Corinthian glossolalia as emerging out of ecstatic unintelligible speech of Hellenistic antiquity', p. 141. This would make the ecstatic utterances of the Delphic priestess and the frenzied speech of the Mystery Religions direct forerunners of Corinthian glossolalia. Christopher Forbes disagrees, he says that tongues were original to the early church, a '*religious novum*', p. 142. Cartledge notes that the definition of ecstatic is important. He believes that to read back an altered state or trance-like state ignores Paul's directive of control in 1 Cor. 14.28. The Corinthian problem was 'the exaltation of glossolalia above other works of the Spirit', p. 143. Paul's correction then is that tongues are not a sign of an elite status and are at best 'a negative sign to unbelievers'.

<sup>484</sup> Cartledge, 'The Nature and Function', pp. 139-40.

<sup>485</sup> Cartledge, 'The Nature and Function', pp. 149-50.

<sup>486</sup> Cartledge, 'The Nature and Function', p. 139.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia spiritual community over inspired individuals and objects to glossolalia without interpretation in this context.<sup>487</sup>

The function of tongues, in the end, is determined by whether one gives priority to Luke or Paul.<sup>488</sup> Luke emphasizes tongues as a sign of the end-times, the ‘Spirit of Prophecy’, and for Paul, it is a sign of God’s blessing or curse and can be used in prayer and praise.<sup>489</sup> Parsing his final thoughts on Paul and tongues, Cartledge writes,

in order to balance the extremes of the spiritual elite, Paul advocates either a more communal use of the gift (with interpretation) or a more privatized use. I would suggest that had it been used and controlled in the public context, the private context may not have been emphasized quite so much as by Paul.<sup>490</sup>

Cartledge’s third contribution is an examination of Charismatic spirituality. Glossolalia is one of the expressions in a spiritual process; a process of ‘*searching* for God, who once *encountered* effects change within the life of the searcher, who is then *transformed* or renewed in order to continue the journey’.<sup>491</sup> Tongues as ‘inspired speech is a constant thread that runs right through its (Charismatic spirituality’s) process and is seen at various points in the framework’; though primarily at the encounter phase, it also occurs at search or transformation phases.<sup>492</sup>

In his chapter on inspired speech Cartledge briefly reviews inspired speech in the Old and New Testaments to show its connection with encountering God, noting that Jesus is called the very Word of God himself, who is then the ‘prophet par excellence’.<sup>493</sup> The glossolalia on the Day of Pentecost is linked to a dramatic reception of God’s Spirit, which is Jesus’ promise of power for witnessing.<sup>494</sup> Experiences of encountering God are central to understanding glossolalia and are ‘given expression by means of biblical

---

<sup>487</sup> Cartledge, ‘The Nature and Function’, pp. 144, 149.

<sup>488</sup> Cartledge, ‘The Nature and Function’, p. 148.

<sup>489</sup> Cartledge, ‘The Nature and Function’, pp. 149-50.

<sup>490</sup> Cartledge, ‘The Nature and Function’, p. 150.

<sup>491</sup> Mark J. Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit: The Charismatic Tradition* (Maryknoll, N.Y: Orbis Books, 2007), p. 25. Italics mine. This process occurs within a framework, of narrative, symbol, and praxis, pp. 25-32.

<sup>492</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 69.

<sup>493</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 72.

<sup>494</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, pp. 73-4.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia categories'; in fact, these experiences cannot be described without a conceptual category.

Cartledge holds to a broad category of inspired speech, including prophecy, wisdom, knowledge, discernment, prayer, preaching and even testimonies.<sup>495</sup> The common aspect here is the divine prompting one to speak, occurring usually at the encounter phase. For example, 'most prophetic speech ... is based upon a prior (though not always) revelatory experience as well as a prompting to speak'.<sup>496</sup> Another category for glossolalia is that of a sign.<sup>497</sup> In fact, initially, one may have an 'overwhelming sense of God's presence and an inescapable urge to articulate the speech that is beginning to be formed in their minds'.<sup>498</sup>

For Cartledge, the process of transformation has an outflow in kingdom witness. Often, tongues are seen as a post-conversion empowerment for ministry by Pentecostals, but Charismatics usually differ from Pentecostals on IE.<sup>499</sup> They prefer a sacramental theology.<sup>500</sup> Regardless, tongues are considered a gateway to power.<sup>501</sup> This power can be called upon for spiritual warfare: 'as a key tool in the armory, speaking in tongues is used as a means of personal and corporate prayer and empowerment, enabling committed and self-sacrificial service to the community for the sake of the gospel'.<sup>502</sup> Finally, Cartledge notes that a glossolalic encounter 'only makes sense within ... (an) eschatological framework'.<sup>503</sup> This means that tongues symbolize a restoration of

---

<sup>495</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, pp. 78-85.

<sup>496</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 75.

<sup>497</sup> Cartledge believes glossolalia is a key symbol for Charismatics. He follows Hollenweger and Cox noting that glossolalia is a 'cathedral of the poor', and represent a 'liturgy (that) is continually in the making' where 'there is room for improvisation', Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, pp. 29, 60, 61. Along this line, it functions to help the person identify with a particular group, p. 29.

<sup>498</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 78.

<sup>499</sup> Prophecy or dance can also be initiatory evidence, Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 108.

<sup>500</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, pp. 108-109.

<sup>501</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 108.

<sup>502</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 111.

<sup>503</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 114.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
the gifts of Pentecost that ‘prepares for the imminent harvest and the return of Christ  
the King’.<sup>504</sup>

### Gerald Hovenden, 2002.

In this monograph, Gerald Hovenden’s goals are to ‘study the phenomenon of “inspired speech” in the ancient world, in order to determine (1) whether “tongues” were a feature of the ancient world’s religious experience’ and 2), if such a context affected the first Christians understanding of tongues.<sup>505</sup> Hovenden’s study not only examines the contextual backgrounds of glossolalia, he also applies the results of his findings to a fresh examination of the Lucan and Pauline texts on glossolalia. Four noteworthy items evolve: 1) glossolalia is unique to the Christian church and originated on the Day of Pentecost. 2) The ‘spiritual ones’ in Corinth was not just a faction within the church, but was the entire church in contrast to other lesser churches.<sup>506</sup> 3) Paul’s restrictions on public glossolalia were to ensure orderly worship and to not hinder evangelistic efforts. Tongues were being used insensitively and may have been confused with ‘cultic worship’.<sup>507</sup> 4) ‘There are apologetic implications of the sacramentality of tongues’, which should be explored further.<sup>508</sup>

The most significant finding is that that there was no glossolalia-like phenomenon in the ancient world until the Day of Pentecost. Until then, ‘it appears likely that the phenomenon of “speaking in tongues” was unknown’.<sup>509</sup> This finding is in direct conflict with Mills thesis that ‘the early Christians may well have known of a religious phenomenon not wholly different from what Luke described in the Pentecost narrative’.<sup>510</sup> Hovenden examined possible parallel occurrences of ‘inspired speech’ in

---

<sup>504</sup> Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 113.

<sup>505</sup> Gerald Hovenden *Speaking in Tongues: The New Testament Evidence in Context* (JPTSup 22; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002), p. 3.

<sup>506</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 166-67.

<sup>507</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 167. Hovenden believes contemporary tongues-speakers should ask ‘what connotations the non-Christian would associate with speaking in tongues’ today, p. 167.

<sup>508</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 167-68.

<sup>509</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 164.

<sup>510</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 29, n. 122.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the ancient pagan world right up through the NT era.<sup>511</sup> In all of the cases examined, the speech was either not glossolalic, was intelligible, or was produced by natural talent or an induced means.<sup>512</sup> Hovenden also examined inspired speech in the OT and inter-Testamental periods, which revealed that though prophecy was at times involuntary and other times contagious, the fact God spoke to his people through prophets / prophecy does not lead automatically to glossolalia or xenolalia because the prophecy was always intelligible.<sup>513</sup> However, Hovenden agrees with Mills and Cyril Williams that there is a discernible move within the OT prophets away from ecstatic to intelligible speech and that the psychological features associated with the glossolalists are similar to the prophets.<sup>514</sup> He writes, ‘the Spirit motifs in Luke’s writings are predominantly Jewish in origin, and owe little if anything to specifically Greek mysticism or Manic prophecy’.<sup>515</sup> Both Menzies and Max Turner agree that there was a Hebrew origin for a ‘Spirit of prophecy’ motif from which the NT understanding of glossolalia would develop.<sup>516</sup> Specifically, it was the expectation that God communicates to men through intermediaries and that ‘such communication could be

---

<sup>511</sup> He surveyed the following ancient documents: the Mari documents, the story of Cassandra daughter of King Priam of Troy, the encounter of Mys the Carian and Ptoan Apollo by three ancient writers, the literature of the Dionysus Cult especially Euripides’ Bacchae and Lycophron’s Alexandra, and the famous Oracle at Delphi was given extensive attention, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 6-26. He also surveyed the records of Alexander of Abunoteichos and the evidence from Livy from the Hellenistic mystery religions, pp. 26-30.

<sup>512</sup> In fact, the singular possible account of parallel phenomena may have been an imitation of the Day of Pentecost phenomena, in other words having the exact opposite influence. Alexander of Abunoteichos may have been ‘deliberately imitating, in order to gain credibility, the Christian phenomenon of tongues’, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 28.

<sup>513</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 31-37. Hovenden examines 1 Sam. 10.5-13; 19.20-4; and Isa. 28.9-13 extensively while many others are referenced.

<sup>514</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 36-37. He finds, for example, that there was no ‘prophetic silence’ during the intertestamental period, it merely changed its form into what Aune categorizes as: 1) apocalyptic, 2) eschatological, 3) clerical, and 4) sapiential, cf. pp. 42-43.

<sup>515</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 53-54.

<sup>516</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 44-47. Menzies believes this ‘Spirit of prophecy’ is the traditional Jewish understanding of the Spirit, where ‘the Spirit acting as the organ of communication between God and a person’, p. 44. Turner is more nuanced and broader than just speech. For Turner, the Spirit of prophecy is: 1) charismatic revelation and guidance to an individual, 2) charismatic wisdom, 3) invasively inspired prophetic speech, 4) invasively inspired charismatic praise, pp. 44-45.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

spontaneous and directed towards God'.<sup>517</sup> In fact, Hovenden implies that, rather than being influenced by its context, Christianity may have been the source of glossolalic-like phenomena world-wide.<sup>518</sup>

Although Hovenden's examination of Lucan tongues is thorough,<sup>519</sup> he believes the next significant item regards the Corinthian context. Largely flowing out of an impasse over 1 Cor. 12:29-30 (do all speak in tongues?) between Turner and Menzies,<sup>520</sup> Hovenden theorizes that contextually, Paul is not referring to a faction of over-zealous tongues-speakers within the church, but that the conflict was between the Corinthians and other churches that they viewed as less spiritual.<sup>521</sup> The question at Corinth was not how can 'divine and demonic ecstasy be distinguished from each other',<sup>522</sup> viz a viz, the influence of a Hellenistic religion;<sup>523</sup> but rather Paul's goal was 'to remind them that (an) "inspired utterance" as such is not evidence of being "led by the Spirit" ... *all* the χαρίσματα are, therefore, indications of the Spirit's presence'.<sup>524</sup>

---

<sup>517</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 53.

<sup>518</sup> He quotes Samarian for support: glossolalia is 'rarely found in societies that have had no contact with Christianity', Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 166.

<sup>519</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 56-104. He concludes that Luke *did not* have a theological motive and the Day of Pentecost event was a real occurrence, pp. 93-94. As theological motifs, Mt. Sinai, the tower of Babel, the birth of the Messiah and the birth of the church, and the Acts thesis sentence (Acts 1.8) of receiving power for mission are merely 'backcloths' that Luke uses to explain what was intrinsic to the event itself, pp. 80, 86-88, 91 cf. pp. 89-93. Tongues, according to Luke 'represent the coming of the Spirit of prophecy' as an ecstatic experience that includes 'invasive charismatic praise' and it becomes a 'normal and possibly widespread, part of the early church's experience', pp. 102, 104. Tongues breaks down religious and social barriers, signals the end-times, and is an IE, though Hovenden would not as narrowly define IE as narrowly as Menzies, pp. 99-102.

<sup>520</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 152-59. Menzies believes Paul is referring to the public manifestation and not the private use, but Turner believes this leads to the public use being superior to the private use, p. 154. Turner does not believe Paul saw tongues as available to all believers.

<sup>521</sup> Hovenden cites the source of this thought from Gordon Fee (Gordon D. Fee, *The First Epistle to the Corinthians* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1987), p. 6), but Fee believes that the conflict is between the Corinthian church and Paul, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 156-57, cf. pp. 156-59.

<sup>522</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 108.

<sup>523</sup> There is no 'hard evidence' that the Cephas party was connected to Peter or had anything to do with tongues; and neither are there any undisputed parallels to tongues in Hellenistic religions, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 106-108.

<sup>524</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 110-11.

Hovenden's third finding is that Paul's restrictions on tongues at Corinth was so that the people could be instructed and to ensure that tongues were not confused with the 'anomalous speech with cultic worship' of the Hellenistic culture.<sup>525</sup> Paul clearly desires intelligent speech in the public assembly and tongues is 'a means of address to and praise of God'; however, the lack of order in the lists of spiritual gifts reveals Paul bringing balance to the public use of the gift, 'while at the same time affirming its value as a genuine gift of God'.<sup>526</sup> Paul believed tongues to be a non-ecstatic<sup>527</sup> 'language in the broadest sense (on occasion human, and on occasion possibly angelic)'.<sup>528</sup> His stress on intelligibility, especially coming from a tongue-speaking ally, enables him to imply that 'tongues have no evangelistic potential'.<sup>529</sup> Uninterpreted tongues are a sign to unbelievers; they are a sign of 'God's displeasure and impending judgment' because of their rejection.<sup>530</sup>

Hovenden's fourth item is the affirmation of a sacramental element to tongues,<sup>531</sup> though it is rather undeveloped in his book. Also noteworthy is his work on devotional tongues<sup>532</sup> and his conclusion that Pauline and Lucan tongues are complimentary

---

<sup>525</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 167, cf. pp. 130-32.

<sup>526</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 111, 114.

<sup>527</sup> Which means it was subject to regulation, Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 150. This is contrary to Dunn and Bruce who believe in a state of ecstasy, pp. 148-49, n. 202.

<sup>528</sup> This is contrary to Dunn and Fee who believe it was primarily angelic in nature and in agreement with Poythress and Forbes who believes it to be 'the miraculous ability to speak unlearned human and (possibly) divine or angelic languages', Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 126, cf. pp. 124-30.

<sup>529</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 131. For example, quoting Fee: 'Paul's urgency is for the Corinthians to cease thinking like children, to stop the public use of tongues, since it only drives the unbeliever away rather than leading him or her to faith'. p. 146.

<sup>530</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 147.

<sup>531</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 138-40.

<sup>532</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, cf. pp. 132-41. Hovenden notes that Paul does not explain how tongues edifies the individual other than as speaking to God in prayer, praise, blessing, thanksgiving, and mysteries. Hovenden finds common ground among Dunn, Fee, Sweet, Turner, Macchia, and even Poythress and Käsemann.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia because they are written from two different contexts.<sup>533</sup> He holds to a broad interpretation of IE.<sup>534</sup>

### **William K. Kay, 2006.**

While this thesis does not directly address the psychological aspects of glossolalia nor psychology as an approach to the study of tongues, this significant piece by William K. Kay is presented as background and a resource to the subject.<sup>535</sup> Kay provides an historical overview of all the major works that examine glossolalia from a psychological perspective. It is fascinating that Pentecostalism

came into being at almost the same time as psychology and psychiatry. So while these new humanistic academic disciplines started to explore the inner space of the psyche, a fresh supernaturalistic wave of spiritual life began to break on the shores of North America and Europe, and to bring with it a revived conception of the normal Christian.<sup>536</sup>

The earliest Pentecostals ‘attracted the research interest of leading psychologists and psychiatrists’, which ‘was almost uniformly hostile’.<sup>537</sup> This survey reveals that as psychology advanced in its research methods and listened to other ‘human and social sciences’, its assessment of glossolalia and glossolalics has

overturned most of the findings of earlier research: glossolalics are not in trace-like states when they are speaking in tongues; they do not show signs of psychopathology; they are not especially susceptible to hypnosis; they are not neurotic; evidence for social learning of glossolalia is weak; glossolalics are not especially dependent upon authority figures; glossolalia may be, but need not be, a

---

<sup>533</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 159-61.

<sup>534</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 151. Paul would agree that all believers have the potential to speak in tongues, though ‘there is no reason to believe that Paul thought tongues a necessary sign of the presence of the Spirit. Clearly he considers a whole range of manifestations to be proofs of the Spirit’s indwelling’. Potentially all may, but to press this to all ‘should’ speak in tongues is ‘claiming too much’, p. 161.

<sup>535</sup> William K. Kay, ‘The Mind, Behaviour and Glossolalia: A Psychological Perspective’, in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 174-205.

<sup>536</sup> Kay, ‘A Psychological Perspective’, p. 178.

<sup>537</sup> Kay, ‘A Psychological Perspective’, pp. 179, 204. There were notable exceptions such as Carl Jung, pp. 177, 181-82.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

sign of commitment to a charismatic group; the meaning of glossolalia may indeed be theologically derived, but this need not be to its detriment.<sup>538</sup>

Kay's research has revealed that there is still interest in research of glossolalia by a wide range of academic disciplines, and that as research methods improve, the psychological perspective is increasingly kind to a Pentecostal understanding of glossolalia. Future research might continue to reveal both theology and psychology as mutually informative.<sup>539</sup>

### **Delbert H. Tarr, 2010.**

Pentecostal missionary and linguist Delbert (Del) H. Tarr, Jr. collects, and restates some important theological ideas so that an informed reader can understand.<sup>540</sup> Tarr adds to the theological conversation of glossolalia in four ways.

First, his overall thesis of the book is that

God has hidden His empowerment from those who insist on their own power ... (but) He gives it freely to those who take the risk of simple obedience and full submission ... God has hidden the precious gift of the fullness of the Holy Spirit baptism behind what seems foolish and even ridiculous (tongues) *so the wrong ones won't find it.*<sup>541</sup>

Just as Jesus' parables were meant to hide as well as illuminate<sup>542</sup> 'so He (God) has hidden the power of the Holy Spirit for the most effective witness behind the symbol of total submission and the foolishness of glossolalia'.<sup>543</sup> Tongues speech '*requires a sort of "emptying" of self, of relinquishing the godlike power of speech and meaning making*'.<sup>544</sup>

---

<sup>538</sup> Kay, 'A Psychological Perspective', pp. 204-205.

<sup>539</sup> Kay, 'A Psychological Perspective', p. 205.

<sup>540</sup> Del Tarr, *The Foolishness of God* (The Access Group, 2010). This overlooked work earns its place in this review for its rich and philosophical / linguistic depth from a widely travelled anthropologist and linguist.

<sup>541</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 224. Italics original.

<sup>542</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 221. Tarr also compares it to Paul's 'power in weakness' theology (284) and the incarnation itself, pp. 259-67.

<sup>543</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 167. Further, 'He chose the foolishness of tongues as the symbol, the required "getting lost" enough, to empower us for witness so we'd be motivated to "lose our lives to find them" (Matt. 10:39)'.

<sup>544</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 265. Italics original.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Second, Tarr's theology of glossolalia is apophasic.<sup>545</sup> 'I propose the phenomenon of glossolalia is *irrational by design* ... It's not logical, was not meant to be and only suffers damage to its essence in trying to force it through Aristotelian linear Euclidian constructs'.<sup>546</sup> Further, 'the closer one draws to the divine mystery, the more urgent it becomes to express oneself and, concomitantly, the less able one is to find adequate expression'.<sup>547</sup> Ultimately,

the person who has found meaning in the symbolic exercise of tongues speech does not need to, probably cannot, articulate this overwhelming perception of God's presence in everyday language. When forced to explain it, somehow, it rather ruins or diminishes the wonder of it all ... they seek a guide who only has at heart they're getting lost.<sup>548</sup>

Third, 'the "oralness" of tongues speech is a form of "tolerance for ambiguity" the hyper-literalist fundamentalist cannot, nor will not accept'.<sup>549</sup> Christianity began as an oral religion and was only later codified, with leadership changing from a Spirit-inspired prophet to a Bible-teaching priest.<sup>550</sup> Real communication is far richer than words, and includes '*facial expressions, gestures, tone of voice, body posture, the distance between people, use of time* ... we are communicating feelings, values ... and more'.<sup>551</sup>

---

<sup>545</sup> For example, 'conceptual models, diagrams, and verbal expressions of how God may wish to communicate with man and through man can probably never capture the totality of this process, even though they are helpful to our understanding. God is infinite and languages finite. One cannot contain him in words, Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 121. Italics original. Here Tarr acknowledges Rybarczyk's work, cf. pp. 72, 146-47, 136-37; 165; 220, 310-11, 318, 426.

<sup>546</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 5, 6, 165. Italics and bold highlights original. 'The Holy Spirit is less understood from the rationalized, intellectualized Western world of our times than in the Eastern concrete-relational or psychical world of the 2/3rd World today', p. 118.

<sup>547</sup> Here quoting Macchia, Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 356.

<sup>548</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 285.

<sup>549</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 293.

<sup>550</sup> Here quoting Smith: 'early Christianity was not a religion of the book ... It was community centred, not around scribes but prophets ... A shift occurred whereby text received a privileged status and the original oral/aural and charismatic way of being was suppressed and all pressed and gradually declared to be defunct ... The emphasis on the letter – planted the seeds which killed and quenched the ongoing revelatory ministry of the Spirit by silencing the prophets with the Canon ... (and was fully) realized nearly 2000 years later in Protestant fundamentalism and conservative evangelicalism – textual communities *par excellence*', Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 146. Italics original. Also following Ash, 'the bishops, not the Canon expelled prophecy', p. 86.

<sup>551</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 124. Tarr claims 65% of communication is nonverbal, p. 138.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Tongues are like ‘a tiny infant (who) attempts to reach out with its cry and nonverbal gestures’.<sup>552</sup> She is clearly understood even though traditional words are not used. One of the more interesting linguistic illustrations was Tarr’s learning to understand the ‘drum talk’ of West Africa:

African peoples can use the drums to talk to each other, send messages over long distances ... understandable to the average citizen, yet when desired, (they can) drum out a more secret code understood only by the chief and the members of his court ... I could not understand ‘drum talk’ until I could shift my mind away from the literal, linear, print organized orientation of my European languages ... I chafed at the drummer’s inability to drum according to my rules... The message is more a general impression whose essence ... must be filled in by the receiver.<sup>553</sup>

Finally, glossolalia is a significant symbol for the Christian community. Tarr believes that tongues empowers the believer as ‘a deliverance from the iron cage of grammar and (is) a graceful provision to those who did not have the strength or the fluency to pray with their own words’.<sup>554</sup> Tongues opens ‘space for verbal, extemporaneous expression of ordinary believers’.<sup>555</sup> However, like Seymour, Tarr believes that ““tongues as initial evidence” was not true “evidence” until it was *also evidenced by* divine love and unity.<sup>556</sup> Glossolalia is a symbol of

the need for justice and reconciliation within the body of Christ. Tongues thus represents ‘a broken speech for the broken body of Christ until perfection arrives’ ... glossolalia is a sign that cuts through differences of gender, class, culture and language to reveal the new community of the Spirit ... it is also a sign that the eschatological community of the Spirit is a present reality and that God is at work in the world.<sup>557</sup>

---

<sup>552</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 104, cf. p. 138.

<sup>553</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 158; cf. Del Tarr, *Double Image: Biblical Insights from African Parables* (New York: Paulist Press, 1994), pp. 151-55.

<sup>554</sup> Quoting Cox, Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 228.

<sup>555</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 235.

<sup>556</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 380.

<sup>557</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 381, 383.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
**Kenneth Richard Walters, Jr., 2010.**

In 1983, Russell P. Spittler asked the question, ‘who taught those honored forbears that the Holy Spirit needed an “evidence”?’<sup>558</sup> Kenneth Walter’s PhD thesis answers that question.<sup>559</sup> In what he calls a ‘detailed historiographical’ study of the forces that led to nearly universal acceptance of IE among most Pentecostals, he charts five major forces: Scottish common sense realism, Christian evidence literature, camp meeting revivalism, dispensational premillennialism, and restorationism.<sup>560</sup>

First, Thomas Reid and Scottish common sense realism were a reaction to David Hume’s philosophy that led to scepticism about the world in which we live, since ‘one could never be sure that one’s experience had any real connection to the world outside of one’s mind’.<sup>561</sup> Simply put, common sense realism says that one can trust their senses and experiences as a basis for truth. Common sense realism became the foundation for modern science and was so pervasive that it stood behind all theology both conservative and liberal; it was the ‘lingua franca’ of the time period.<sup>562</sup> An important outflow of common sense realism for Fundamentalism and subsequently for Pentecostalism is the inductive bible reading method, which was seen as ‘science’ over the ““esoteric” interpretations of the Germans and other “liberals””.<sup>563</sup> Walters claims that common sense realism provided the philosophical foundation for Pentecostal’s IE doctrine.<sup>564</sup>

Another reaction to scepticism and Darwinism produced a body of Christian writings called ‘Christian evidences literature’, which purposed to ‘provide “proof” of

---

<sup>558</sup> Russell P. Spittler, ‘Suggested Areas For Further Research in Pentecostal Studies’, *Pneuma* 5.2 (Fall 1983), pp. 39-57 (48).

<sup>559</sup> Kenneth Walters, ‘Why tongues? The History and Philosophy Behind the Initial Evidence Doctrine in North American Pentecostal Churches’. (PhD Dissertation, Fuller Theological Seminary, 2010). Subsequently published as: Kenneth J. Walters, Jr., *Why Tongues? The Initial Evidence Doctrine in North American Pentecostal Churches* (JPTSup 42; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2016). Footnotes follow the dissertation.

<sup>560</sup> Walter, ‘Why Tongues’?, p. 16.

<sup>561</sup> Walter, ‘Why Tongues’?, p. 20.

<sup>562</sup> Walter, ‘Why Tongues’?, pp. 28, 33.

<sup>563</sup> Walter, ‘Why Tongues’?, p. 40.

<sup>564</sup> Walter, ‘Why Tongues’?, p. 231.

the reliability of the Bible and the divinity of Jesus Christ'.<sup>565</sup> This body of literature was apologetic in nature and 'provided both the logic and vocabulary for the Pentecostal doctrine of initial evidence'.<sup>566</sup> In reaction to Hume, these writers established that evidences are known by their effect, that eyewitnesses can make a strong case, and that miracles authenticated the person and mission of Jesus.<sup>567</sup> This made inner experiences, prophecy and miracles extremely important as supporting evidence alongside inductive method of reading scripture. Most of the earliest Pentecostals used the terminology of Christian evidences to show that miracles authenticated new works of God.<sup>568</sup>

Walters writes 'it was at the camp meetings that people expected and experienced physical manifestations which they associated with God's gracious movement in their lives'.<sup>569</sup> He believes that it was out of revivalism that people expected an experience, specifically a second work of grace for sanctification called 'baptism of the Holy Spirit'.<sup>570</sup> In these early camp meetings, tongues was just one of several manifestations, and outsiders saw little difference between the Pentecostal manifestation of tongues and the manifestations in a WH camp meeting.<sup>571</sup>

Regarding premillennialism, Walters believes that it also played a strong role in the formulation of IE.<sup>572</sup> Even beyond empowerment for mission, he sees that tongues were a sign of the end times.<sup>573</sup> The restoration of tongues meant that the Lord was about to return because there was an expectation of a new Pentecost for the great end times harvest. A new Pentecost would be like the first Pentecost, '*The same causes and same conditions produce the same effects*'.<sup>574</sup>

---

<sup>565</sup> Walter, 'Why Tongues?', p. 56.

<sup>566</sup> Walter, 'Why Tongues?', p. 57.

<sup>567</sup> Walter, 'Why Tongues?', pp. 61-68.

<sup>568</sup> Walters, specifically quotes Parham, Tomlinson, and Kerr as examples. Walters, 'Why tongues?', pp. 79, 85-86.

<sup>569</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 102.

<sup>570</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 92.

<sup>571</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 100, cf. pp. 94-99.

<sup>572</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 103.

<sup>573</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 126.

<sup>574</sup> Walters, 'Why Tongues?', p. 140. Italics original.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The final component in the development of the doctrine of IE is restorationism, which basically leaps back in history to the pristine original. Walters claims that restorationism is a ubiquitous paradigm within American society.<sup>575</sup> ‘It is restorationism which explains the choice of tongues as the initial physical evidence of the baptism in the Holy Spirit’,<sup>576</sup> he writes. WH leaders ‘were beginning to wonder if their restorationist reading of the scriptures might mean that they could expect a return of the experience of speaking in tongues’.<sup>577</sup> Among these were A.B. Simpson, R.A. Torrey, and D. Warner who helped train Seymour.<sup>578</sup> For example, Walters quotes Simpson: ‘if you expect the healing of the sick, you must also include the gift of tongues – and if the gift of tongues has ceased, so in the same way has the power over diseases’.<sup>579</sup> Adding to this is the concept of the latter rain, which helped give biblical support for restorationism.<sup>580</sup>

In his penultimate chapter, Walters charts the doctrine on IE from these five philosophical foundations, including the rise of language and vocabulary, and the resulting expectation through to the experience of the early Pentecostals.<sup>581</sup> Then, he chronicles the growth and acceptance of the theory of IE and its solidification into the established doctrine of nearly all Pentecostals.<sup>582</sup>

## IV. Dialog Partners with an Eastern Perspective.

In addition to Baker, Chan, and Tarr (above), the following authors make contributions from an Eastern perspective to the theological conversation about glossolalia.

---

<sup>575</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 146.

<sup>576</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 142.

<sup>577</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 156.

<sup>578</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 155-60.

<sup>579</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 159.

<sup>580</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, p. 162.

<sup>581</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, pp. 180-95.

<sup>582</sup> Walters, ‘Why Tongues?’, pp. 195-212.

**Edmund J. Rybarczyk, 2005.**

Pentecostals utilized Modernism well to explain tongues, but such explanations are now dated; therefore, Edmund Rybarczyk calls for a reformulation of Pentecostal glossolalia:<sup>583</sup>

Evangelicals, and now North American Pentecostals like them, have sought for so long to *explain* Christianity to the world it seems they have forgotten the depths and realities of Christianity are sometimes better simply beheld, simply encountered ... (because) words sometimes damage the mystery.<sup>584</sup>

In this article, he suggests that Orthodoxy's apophatic theology and postmodern philosophical constructs could help Pentecostals explain glossolalia to the world.

First, apophatic theology 'is a category that is both latent within and implicitly familiar to Pentecostals' but it has been denigrated by modernity.<sup>585</sup> Therefore, a re-examination of apophaticism might be useful in restating Pentecostal glossolalia as praise and prayer. Apophatic theology is knowing by 'the way of unknowing, or the *via negativa*', that is, even though our human minds are limited to known categories, there is an understanding beyond what we know.<sup>586</sup>

Human beings were created with the capacity to be mystically encountered by God ... an 'organ of vision' in our souls ... something in us that experientially-ontologically corresponds to God himself. This something is not simply our moral capacity, our rationale, or our aesthetic sense ... there is a spiritual *something* constitutive of mankind that was created in order to apprehend God.<sup>587</sup>

Apophaticism is 'knowing' this mystery of God, which is inexpressible.<sup>588</sup> 'Paul makes evident a kind of nascent apophatic theology ... (in) his teaching on tongues as Spirit-

---

<sup>583</sup> Edmund J. Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues: Apophaticism and Postmodernism', *Pneuma* 27:1 (Spring, 2005), pp. 83-104. Using reasoned arguments from Scriptures, Pentecostals concluded logically that tongues were an evidence – a 'proof', p. 83. He believes that 'Pentecostals might do better to simply embrace the paradoxical nature of tongues speech ... (as) non-rational and non-linear', pp. 95-96.

<sup>584</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 103. All italics original.

<sup>585</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 84.

<sup>586</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 84. The Orthodox position holds both apophatic (unknown, yet known) and cataphatic (positive and assertive knowledge) knowledge in tension, p. 89.

<sup>587</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 89.

<sup>588</sup> God, 'manifests himself in his simplicity, formed out of the formless, incomprehensible, and ineffable light. I can say nothing more. Nonetheless, *he manifests himself very clearly*. He is perfectly recognizable. He speaks and listens in a manner that cannot be expressed ... But *what can I say about what*

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

given and Spirit-motivated unintelligible praise and prayer, together with his teaching that the Spirit prays through believers'.<sup>589</sup> Put another way, 'man is capable of *transcending his own nature*',<sup>590</sup> that is, despite the fallen nature of humankind, 'God, for his own loving and mysterious reasons, re-creates us to be vehicles for unintelligible and non-rational modes of communication'.<sup>591</sup> For example, Paul's writings supports that one can communicate with God,<sup>592</sup> that the Spirit helps one to pray and that there is great value even in non-rational tongues.<sup>593</sup> In addition, there is an inexpressible response to a divine encounter articulated by glossolalia, note 'how difficult it was to describe the encounters with the resurrected Christ, his Spirit, and the transcendent – divine'.<sup>594</sup> He reminds his readers that Orthodoxy's theological goals differ from Pentecostal usage of apophaticism.<sup>595</sup>

---

*cannot be spoken about?* What the eye has not seen, with the ear has not heard, what the heart of man has never imagined: *how can any of this be expressed by words*', Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 88.

<sup>589</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 93.

<sup>590</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 90.

<sup>591</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 92.

<sup>592</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.2. Rybarczyk does not develop this thought much, but states that more than mere communication, the Spirit actually works through the actions of people. The 'insistence that God's Spirit yearns to work in and through the believers Spirit – characterizes the history of their movement and bears similarities to apophatic theology', Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 95.

<sup>593</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.14-15, 18-19; Rom. 8.26-27; cf. Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', pp. 90-93. Fee believes that 'Paul and the early church had not been tampered with by the mind-set of rationalism, and he found great value in prayer that was from the heart, from within, but which did not necessarily need approval from the mind to be uttered before God', p. 91.

<sup>594</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 90. He notes that the 'apostolic writers were not concerned to reduce every spiritual experience, miracle, vision or theophany to a plainly cause-and-effect, or rational, level'.

<sup>595</sup> Specific differences are: 1) Orthodoxy regularly incorporates silence in prayer, Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 95. 2) Orthodoxy's goal via apophaticism is 'the transformation of the human person. By beholding God with the eyes of the soul one becomes like God', pp. 87, 88. It seeks a vision of a transcendent God, called a '*theoria*: a vision of God in one's soul ... a foretaste of the beatific vision that awaits us in eternity', p. 95. Also significant, 3) Orthodox theologians have not discussed glossolalia as apophatic speech, p. 94. 4) 'Along with the ancient ecclesial reasons for the quashing of the pneumatic gifts there is a clear disdain within Eastern Orthodoxy for Pentecostalism as an incomplete Christian expression. Orthodoxy consistently restricts the charismata to ecclesial and liturgical categories', p. 94, n. 48.

Second, ‘Postmodernism is open to non-rational and non-verbal means of knowing ... (it) rejects the tenant that all-knowing is rational, linear or verbal’.<sup>596</sup> There are two categories, imaging and aesthetics, that could utilized to explain glossolalia. Phenomenologically, glossolalia is similar to a golfer imagining the end result rather than thinking about their swing: ‘the Pentecostal believer who intercedes with unintelligible utterances does not focus on the sounds her mouth is making ... (but) is fixated upon the person, community, or situation for whom or which the Holy Spirit is impelling her to pray’.<sup>597</sup> Aesthetics and art are ‘dynamic and inclusive realms for framing glossolalic practice’.<sup>598</sup> ‘Like an artist who paints what cannot easily be put into words, tongues speaking-praying-worshipping helps the believer express to God what words cannot’.<sup>599</sup>

### Daniela C. Augustine, 2012.

Perhaps the most theologically comprehensive view of glossolalia comes from an Eastern European Pentecostal context, which developed through ‘continual dialogue (with) the Eastern Orthodox tradition’, and was ‘inspired by the liturgical life of the underground Pentecostal movement under Communism’.<sup>600</sup> In this view, Pentecost was a pivotal event, making the church an ‘icon on earth’<sup>601</sup> where glossolalia is an audible eschatological sign of ‘the ultimate destiny of heaven and earth ... being called together into one holy *koinonia*’,<sup>602</sup> functioning as a sacrament.<sup>603</sup>

---

<sup>596</sup> Rybarczyk, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 96.

<sup>597</sup> Rybarczyk, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 100.

<sup>598</sup> Rybarczyk, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 101. ‘God is himself an artist ... the gospel was not given as an idea, an abstract or logical *logos* as it appeared in ancient Greek thought ... (but as) Jesus, the incarnate Word of God’, p. 99.

<sup>599</sup> Rybarczyk, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 100.

<sup>600</sup> Daniela C. Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012).

<sup>601</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 18. She calls her view of Pentecost, an ‘incarnationalist view’, p. 25.

<sup>602</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 36. She uses the word sign instead of icon to describe glossolalia, especially when she later describes it as a sacrament that actually participates in what it symbolizes, pp. 37, 39.

<sup>603</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, pp. 35-39.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Following the ‘Christus Victor’<sup>604</sup> view of the redemption of society<sup>605</sup> and creation, Daniela Augustine wrote that just as the last Adam

reversed the consequences of the fall by rejecting the temptation to take a shortcut towards attaining one’s calling … (so) Pentecost reverses the consequences of Babel’s imperial project,<sup>606</sup> by reaffirming God’s salvific work as redemption of the human community.<sup>607</sup>

Both the Garden of Eden and the tower of Babel were ‘short-cuts’ to humanity’s ultimate calling of ‘deification (*theosis*)’.<sup>608</sup> At Pentecost, ‘the Son recapitulates in Himself – into His Body, the Church’<sup>609</sup> and ‘the creative power of the Word (like at Mt. Sinai<sup>610</sup>) brings about the reality of the Kingdom in the present through the voices of the Spirit-filled community’.<sup>611</sup>

Speech is an excellent symbol of embracing and accepting ‘the other’ because ‘language … lies on the borderline between oneself and the other’.<sup>612</sup> Therefore, ‘it is no

---

<sup>604</sup> This view of the atonement is also called, the ‘dynamic’ or ‘classic’ view’, cf. Gustaf Aulén, *Christus Victor: An Historical Study of the Three Main Types of the Idea of the Atonement* (New York: MacMillian Publishing Co., Inc., 1969).

<sup>605</sup> Her view of salvation goes beyond the individual to the whole of society. For example, ‘The Church is the incarnational vehicle of this divinely ordained transfiguring of the world’, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 30. Also, ‘Pentecost is also a literal crossing of the bridge from the private to the public … revealing of the sons (and daughters) of God for which creation longs and groans’, p. 26, cf. p. 32.

<sup>606</sup> Societal sin is the elimination of ‘the other’ into an ‘homogenizing shortcut’ which has ‘dehumanizing patterns of association’ contrary to God’s plan of affirming diversity, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, cf. pp. 31-32.

<sup>607</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 42.

<sup>608</sup> ‘The eastern Orthodox understanding of deification (*theosis*) as attaining the likeness of God in Christ-likeness is affirmed as the ultimate calling and purpose of all humanity … It takes one will to create humanity, but two to sanctify it … the synergistic collaboration between the divine and human will’, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 22, cf. p. 21.

<sup>609</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 27.

<sup>610</sup> Acknowledging scholarly doubts about Pentecost having a Mt. Sinai connection, she nevertheless notes two connections: 1) there is a covenant with his people. ‘Pentecost marks the moment of the historical promise of covenantal renewal with God and neighbor … (the) *telos* for humanity and the rest of creation’, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 34. 2) There is flaming speech. ‘God establishes in a creative speech act a covenant with His people … His flaming words become visible to the multitude … and later to the flames of Pentecost’, p. 32.

<sup>611</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 29.

<sup>612</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 34.

accident that the language of the other stands at the center of the Pentecost event as an expression of the prioritization of the other in the kingdom of a new humanity'.<sup>613</sup> Glossolalia then connects the church with her future as 'an audible sign of this eschatological unfolding with the Body of Christ – the mutual indwelling of heaven and earth as a foretaste of the ultimate Christic destiny'.<sup>614</sup> However, it is more than a mere sign of the future: 'the Spirit empowers humanity to recover the speech of the other across lines of alienation and mutual exclusion into a "covenantal conversation that fosters the root form of human relatedness: communion"'.<sup>615</sup> It actually 'unites the material and spiritual dimensions of existence ... transforming and transfiguring the earth into the Kingdom of God'.<sup>616</sup>

Glossolalia functions sacramentally by 'articulating the mystery of the union of the redeemed creation with its Creator and experiencing the in-breaking of the eschatological fullness of Christ in His Body'.<sup>617</sup> There is genuine power in glossolalia because it 'mediates to us the power of the invisible grace that transforms us into a visible extension of Christ on earth'.<sup>618</sup> It is within the context of sacramental tongues that she defines Pentecostalism's IE and ongoing gift of tongues: 'the initial surrender ... is an expression of embracing this call to oneness in Christ as our personal and communal destiny ... (and) the continual practice of speaking in tongues by the believer could be viewed as an act of *praktikê* (ascetic struggle) within the context of liturgy'.<sup>619</sup>

---

<sup>613</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 34.

<sup>614</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 36.

<sup>615</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 35.

<sup>616</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 36.

<sup>617</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 37.

<sup>618</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 39. Here she is building upon Macchia, and others who write that tongues are a sign that actually participate in that which they symbolize, p. 38.

<sup>619</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 37. She defines *praktikê* as 'fasting from oneself on behalf of the other' as in Jn 3:30: 'He must become greater; I must become less'.

**Daniel Castelo, 2017.**

Daniel Castelo believes ‘that Pentecostalism is … best understood as a mystical tradition of the church Catholic’.<sup>620</sup> He argues that mysticism is the best epistemological category<sup>621</sup> for Pentecostal theology, otherwise, ‘if reduced to concepts and proposition … (it) loses its very essence’.<sup>622</sup> This is ‘not due to illogicality on their part, (or) owing to the emotional nature of their faith, but … [rather that] the mystery of Yahweh … (is) disposed to leave certain things unresolved’.<sup>623</sup> ‘God and the experience of God are inherently irreducible at the conceptual level. Many Pentecostals have been repeatedly at a loss to articulate what it is they witness and experience in Pentecostal worship’.<sup>624</sup> Regarding glossolalia, Castelo believes that ‘apophaticism’ effectively explains the limits of what humanity can understand and communicate about God encounters.<sup>625</sup> He ‘does not feel obligated to retain initial evidence logic’,<sup>626</sup> but understands tongues as ‘a mystical encounter’ coupled with ‘a mystical doctrine that support and critique one another’.<sup>627</sup> He offers three suggestions: 1) Pentecostals highlight testimonies involving

---

<sup>620</sup> Daniel Castelo, *Pentecostalism as a Christian Mystical Tradition* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans, 2017), pp. xv-xvi. He defines mysticism as ‘the encounter with God of the Christian confession’ and spirituality as ‘activities and practices that anticipate both the encounter itself and the outcomes and obligations stemming from it’, pp. xviii-xix.

<sup>621</sup> Castelo, offer’s Land’s ‘master category’ of spirituality within the community as the best way to ground mysticism epistemologically, Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 3-6, 18, 24. Pinnock’s category of ‘perfection and relationality’ does not connect the bifurcation of spirituality and theology’, pp. 15-16.

<sup>622</sup> Here quoting Hollenweger, Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 4. Chan’s category of biblical revelation, self, and the world also fails because ‘it puts the systematician “in the driver’s seat”’, p. 20.

<sup>623</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 14.

<sup>624</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 22-23.

<sup>625</sup> ‘Apophaticism can serve a crucial role in countering logo-centrism … both apophaticism and Pentecostalism are at odds with the kinds of evangelicalism … that assume that revelation needs to be rational, and that which is rational in this particular sense is inextricably bound to an understanding that words can adequately and fittingly account for the mysteries of the faith’, Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 129.

<sup>626</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 159. Further, IE logic might be ‘perpetuating a masking of a more basic lacuna. Generally put, the empirical availability of tongues may have contributed to a theologically impoverished account of Spirit-baptism among classical Pentecostal American denominations.’

<sup>627</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 160. Italics original.

'the *attainment* and the *pursuit* of fullness' to downplay the reductionist tendency of the 'haves and have-nots': 'there is always more to experience and consider, given that we live this side of the eschaton'.<sup>628</sup> 2) To 'recognize that trials and spiritual aridity, even spiritual defeat and desolation, are a part of growth even *after* one's baptism in the Holy Spirit'.<sup>629</sup> And 3), that 'the transformation of language can be a channel of divine self-disclosure',<sup>630</sup> a knowable ignorance:

Pentecostals need to wrestle with the claim that ignorance in the spiritual life generally and Spirit-baptism in particular can be a dynamic of grace because the ignorance in question is not vacuous but distance-creating or space-accommodating for the possibility of beholding uniquely the divine splendor'.<sup>631</sup>

Tongues-speakers 'do not know what they are saying ... (and) in some sense, *they do not need to know* what they are saying because what is happening at such moments resists and defies description ... (and points) to the superabundance of ... God'.<sup>632</sup>

## V. Literature Utilizing the Early Pentecostal Periodicals.

This review of literature should reveal the need for this thesis. It is obvious that a lot of theological discussion has occurred about glossolalia. However, an important voice has largely been missing: the testimony of the first Pentecostals. There are only seven articles that extensively research and utilize these primary sources and testimonies in the area of Pentecostalism's distinctive feature of glossolalia.<sup>633</sup> These articles demonstrate the richness of theological material that has yet to be fully explored. They

---

<sup>628</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 161, 163. 'The Spirit-baptized life is one that lives in an ongoing paradox of attainment and pursuit because its ground and end is the triune God of Christian confession. The Spirit-baptized life is epicletic in nature – it is a way of life that is actively receptive. It is driven by a burning desire that tastes and seeks the goodness of God', p. 166.

<sup>629</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 167. Italics original.

<sup>630</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 173.

<sup>631</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 176. 'Just as the senses can neither grasp nor perceive the things of the mind ... the inscrutable One is out of the reach of every rational process. Nor can any words come up to the inexpressible Good, this One, this Source of all unity, this supra-existent Being', p. 173.

<sup>632</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 176. Italics original.

<sup>633</sup> Though several monographs appeal to these works, only these seven articles begin with the periodicals and work towards the theology of the early Pentecostals. For example, Macchia's arguments, in 'Groans Too Deep For Words (surveyed above)', relies on the early periodicals; however, he uses them as support rather than building an argument from them.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia are examined here as a conclusion to this review of literature and as an introduction to the exploration of the early Pentecostal periodicals.

### **Gary B. McGee, 1991, 2001, 2008.**

Historian Gary B. McGee's carefully examined the earliest documents and wrote three articles utilizing the Pentecostal periodicals.

In the first article, he specifically seeks out lesser known books, tracts, and magazines to hear the voices of popular preachers and personalities on IE.<sup>634</sup> As expected, McGee discovers that glossolalia was a sign of empowerment for a last day's harvest.<sup>635</sup> However, he also finds a rich purpose for tongues beyond its sign-value. Tongues 1) encourage holiness,<sup>636</sup> 2) reveal yieldedness,<sup>637</sup> 3) minimize the distinctions between clergy and laity,<sup>638</sup> and 4), provide 'a refreshing of spirit for the initiated'.<sup>639</sup>

As for IE, McGee discovers that the pattern from the book of Acts is popular and connected with divine healing.<sup>640</sup> Statements about IE are bold: 'there is no record of anyone ever speaking in tongues before he was baptized in the Holy Ghost',<sup>641</sup> or, does God have a new method for us or 'does He still fill them ... as He did in the days of old'?<sup>642</sup> There is a distinction between initial tongues and the gift of tongues, otherwise 'the Scriptures ... contradict themselves, and Paul's teachings seriously disagree with

---

<sup>634</sup> Gary B. McGee, 'Popular Expositions of Initial Evidence', in Gary B. McGee (ed.) *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), p. 120.

<sup>635</sup> For example, McPherson wrote, 'when you walk down the street looking for a barber, first you look for a red and white pole, the sign, in other words. When you are looking for dinner you look for a sign that says, Restaurant. The barber's pole cannot shave you, neither can the wooden restaurant sign feed you, but they are just signs to indicate that behind those doors there is a barber who can serve you, or within the restaurant doors there is food that will satisfy your hunger. So it is with the Bible sign, the speaking in tongues. It indicates that the Comforter has come to abide within', McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 122; cf. p. 121.

<sup>636</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 122.

<sup>637</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 123.

<sup>638</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', pp. 123-24.

<sup>639</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 124.

<sup>640</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', pp. 125-27. The connection point is Mk 16.16-18.

<sup>641</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', pp. 126-27.

<sup>642</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 127.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

his practice'.<sup>643</sup> Initial tongues are not controlled by the mind and are 'unregulated by apostolic instruction'; whereas with the gift of tongues, the mind is in control and Paul's rules apply.<sup>644</sup> Finally, McGee notes that these early pioneers tried to make their case in scripture and not on experience alone; however, 'a person that has eaten an apple...is better qualified to speak on the question of the kind and quality of the apple'.<sup>645</sup>

In his second article, McGee makes a case that 1) there was great anticipation for the 'restoration of the gift of tongues ... among radical evangelicals for over two decades' before the ASM revival,<sup>646</sup> and 2) that Parham's theology of MT and IE has roots that predate his formulation.<sup>647</sup> Regarding the failure of MT, McGee writes that by late 1906 and 1907, 'most came to recognize that speaking in tongues constituted worship and intercession in the Spirit (Rom. 8:26; 1 Cor. 14:2), which in turn furnished the believer with spiritual power'.<sup>648</sup>

In his third and final article utilizing the Pentecostal periodicals, McGee proposes that the early Pentecostals were not overwhelmed by the failure of MT<sup>649</sup> because they

---

<sup>643</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 129, cf. pp. 127-29.

<sup>644</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 129.

<sup>645</sup> McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 129.

<sup>646</sup> Gary B. McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation? Radical Evangelicals, Missions, and the Gift of Tongues', *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 25.3 (2001), p. 122. As early as 1885, three missionaries 'put their Chinese grammar books aside and prayed for the Pentecostal gift of Mandarin and supernatural power according to Mk 16:17', p. 119. In 1889 eight men and women went to Sierra Leone 'confident of biblical promises of healing and Pentecostal tongues'. However, missionary tongues were not received, three died of malaria and the rest persevered through language study, p. 119. Simpson in 1891 'considered the possible reappearance of tongues ... (and wrote) "instances are not wanting now of its apparent restoration in missionary labours both in India and Africa"', p. 110. Later Simpson pulled away from this position. Godbey predicted that the 'gift of language ... (was) destined to play a conspicuous part in the evangelization of the heathen world... (and that) all missionaries in heathen lands should seek and expect this Gift', p. 120.

<sup>647</sup> Pastor Walker Black preached about a 'post-conversion baptism in the Holy Spirit' as early as December, 1895, and Jennie Glassey received a 'wonderful language lesson', McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', pp. 119-20. Through a mutual friend, Frank W. Sandford, Parham heard Glassy's story and even witnessed glossolalia in Durham, Maine. Parham printed Glassy's story in 1899, p. 123 nn. 26-34; cf. Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 72; Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 40-43.

<sup>648</sup> McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', p. 122.

<sup>649</sup> McGee notes that by November of 1906 hesitation was expressed for missionary tongues and its influence was greatly diminished by 1908 because of the reports coming back from the missionary field,

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

already had a new worldview, a ‘new world of realities’,<sup>650</sup> in which glossolalia was functionally sound. The soundness of this new worldview enabled the early Pentecostal to ‘tease out’ the following about glossolalia:<sup>651</sup> 1) tongues are a means of deeper prayer,<sup>652</sup> 2) new love inspires Pentecostals to ‘reach over ethnic and cultural barriers’,<sup>653</sup> and 3) deeper worship is possible through glossolalia.<sup>654</sup>

### **Cecil M. Robeck, Jr., 1991 and Rena Brathwaite, 2010.**

Cecil M. Robeck is another historian who makes a significant contribution using the early Pentecostal periodicals. Robeck’s first article and Rena Braithwaite’s response will be treated together.

Robeck’s first article traces the development of Seymour’s theology of glossolalia and that of three other pioneers: Pastor Joseph Smale of New Testament Church; his associate Elmer K. Fisher; and Parham.<sup>655</sup> An unsigned ditty in *AF* states ‘*tongues are one of the signs that go with every (Spirit-) baptized person ... but it is not the real evidence of the baptism in everyday life*’.<sup>656</sup> Robeck concludes that tongues were tested by four

---

Gary B. McGee, “‘The New World of Realities in Which We Live’: How Speaking in Tongues Empowered Early Pentecostals”, *Pneuma* 30.1 (January 1, 2008) pp. 108-35 (115, n. 36).

<sup>650</sup> McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, p. 108. McGee’s title comes from a quote by Alfred Street, an early Pentecostal pioneer, who observes this new worldview: ‘it is a mistake to think that outward signs ... are the most important part ... The real wonder is the new world of realities in which we live, the new possibilities that arise from our spirit being restored to its proper place under the guidance of the Holy Spirit’, p. 130.

<sup>651</sup> An earlier draft of ‘The New World of Realities’ was published as: McGee, ‘Sphere of the Supernatural’, p. 11.

<sup>652</sup> McGee, ‘Sphere of the Supernatural’, p. 7. Because ‘tongues-speech as a missio-linguistic tool drove the notoriety of the new movement, the concomitant role of prayer and worship was obscured’, McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, pp. 113-14; cf. pp. 119-20, 130.

<sup>653</sup> McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, pp. 113-14; cf. p. 130. Much has been made by other historians that Seymour had to sit outside the classroom in the hall to hear the lecture because of his race. But McGee notes that four of the ten teachers were women and one of these four was African-American, pp. 117, 18. This egalitarian spirituality within Pentecostalism ‘explains in part why Pentecostalism has been so easily contextualized around the world’, p. 121.

<sup>654</sup> McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, pp. 119-20.

<sup>655</sup> Cecil M. Robeck, Jr., ‘William J. Seymour and “The Bible Evidence”’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.) *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 72-95.

<sup>656</sup> Robeck, ‘William J. Seymour and “The Bible Evidence”’, p. 81. Italics, Robeck.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
pioneers: Parham and Fisher arrive at what would become the standard North American doctrine of tongues as the IE of SB; while Smale and Seymour acknowledge the reality of tongues, they reject its evidentiary nature.<sup>657</sup>

Rena Brathwaite challenges Robeck's thesis.<sup>658</sup> Where Robeck sees an 'evolution' in Seymour's thinking, Brathwaite sees a nuancing and not an abandonment.<sup>659</sup> Brathwaite points out three weaknesses: 1) there is a distinction between the 19 articles signed by Seymour and unsigned articles.<sup>660</sup> 2) Robeck's creative use of italics (above).<sup>661</sup> 3) This infers that Seymour, who was kicked out of his denomination for holding to his beliefs, would knowingly allow 'blatant misrepresentations' that were contrary to the published statement of faith in *AF*.<sup>662</sup> Brathwaite concludes that Seymour's view was merely trying to balance 'an over-dependence on the evidentiary value of tongues'.<sup>663</sup>

### **Glen Menzies, 1998.**

Glen Menzies evaluates today's AG doctrine of IE with other materials of its original author, Daniel W. Kerr's doctrinal writings, to see if and how they differ.<sup>664</sup> Menzies writes that 'Kerr represents an early stage in the development of Pentecostalism ... characterized by greater fluidity ... (when) theological variety was tolerated'.<sup>665</sup> He

---

<sup>657</sup> Robeck, 'William J. Seymour and "The Bible Evidence"', p. 88.

<sup>658</sup> Rena Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics: William J. Seymour and the "Bible Evidence": A Response to Cecil M. Robeck Jr.', *Pneuma* 32.2 (2010), pp. 203-22.

<sup>659</sup> Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics', pp. 204, 222. Brathwaite writes 'this is a pastoral distinction and not a new teaching that seeks to replace tongues with the fruit of the Spirit as the Bible evidence of Spirit baptism', p. 209. Margaret Poloma compares these differing approaches to Jonathan Edwards and John Wesley. Parham, like Edwards approached revival in categories of 'true' or 'false', while Seymour, like Wesley was 'willing to let the weeds grow along with the wheat (rather) than quench what they believed to be the activity of the Holy Spirit', Margaret Poloma, *Main Street Mystics: The Toronto Blessing & Reviving Pentecostalism* (Walnut Creek, CA: Altamira Press, 2003), p. 63.

<sup>660</sup> Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics', p. 209.

<sup>661</sup> Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics', p. 209.

<sup>662</sup> Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics', pp. 212-13.

<sup>663</sup> Brathwaite, 'Tongues and Ethics', p. 222.

<sup>664</sup> Glen W. Menzies, 'Tongues as "The Initial Physical Sign" of Spirit Baptism in the Thought of D.W. Kerr', *Pneuma* 20.2 (1998), pp. 175-89. He notes specifically, books, sermons, and doctrinal committee work, and a handwritten proposed Statement of Fundamental Truths that he was commissioned to draft, pp. 180-83.

<sup>665</sup> Menzies, 'The Initial Physical Sign', p. 189.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

believes that Kerr would hold a broader view.<sup>666</sup> Menzies reasons: 1) the earliest official articulation of IE was phrased: ‘the full consummation of the baptism … is indicated by the initial [physical]<sup>667</sup> sign of speaking in tongues’, implies the completion of a process.<sup>668</sup> 2) The word ‘physical’ ‘seems to have lost all significance’ today, but for the earliest pioneers the word physical was a specific contrast to ‘spiritual’ signs that were far more subjective.<sup>669</sup> 3) Kerr believes that ‘tongues are not the only sign of the baptism’ but they are ‘the silencing sign’.<sup>670</sup> There was only one sign that served ‘as an apostolic litmus test’ which silenced all doubt and criticism – glossolalia.<sup>671</sup>

### Cecil M. Robeck, Jr., 2003.

In his second article, Cecil Robeck theorized that there is a rising magisterium in the AG that is indistinguishable from one in the RCC.<sup>672</sup> Robeck studied the early Pentecostal literature and concludes that the pioneers ‘showed a remarkable ability to tolerate a variety of theological positions on subjects such as the nature of the Trinity and theories on sanctification, baptism in the Holy Spirit, and speaking in tongues’.<sup>673</sup> The experience

---

<sup>666</sup> For example, Menzies writes that ‘there is certainly some doubt about whether Kerr would have been comfortable with saying, as does the Assemblies of God position paper mentioned above, that “[evidential tongues] always occurred at the very time the believers were baptized in the Spirit and not on some future occasion” … he would almost certainly have agreed with the broader view, common among early Pentecostals’, Menzies, ‘The Initial Physical Sign’, p. 188.

<sup>667</sup> The word ‘physical’ was said to be inadvertently absent from the published minutes, the following year’s council corrected this, see p. 178, n. 12.

<sup>668</sup> Menzies, ‘The Initial Physical Sign’, pp. 178-9.

<sup>669</sup> Menzies, ‘The Initial Physical Sign’, pp. 183. For example, Flower claimed ‘to have been baptized in the Spirit weeks before first speaking in tongues’, p. 185; cf. n. 30. Flower writes, ‘certainly, the voice of the Word and Spirit within are more sure than the sign of tongues without’, p. 184.

<sup>670</sup> Menzies, ‘The Initial Physical Sign’, p. 187.

<sup>671</sup> Menzies, ‘The Initial Physical Sign’, p. 187.

<sup>672</sup> Cecil M. Robeck Jr., ‘An Emerging Magisterium? The case of the Assemblies of God’, *Pneuma* 25.2 (Fall 2003), p. 214. To be fair with Robeck concerning this piece, he categorically denies it is about the doctrine of IE, but about who makes doctrinal decisions, Robeck, ‘Emerging Magisterium’, p. 212. Also, Robeck pleads for both the leadership of denominations and the academy to work together as a part of Christ’s Church, p. 211. To those in the academy he pleads for them to remain honest in reporting facts and not revise them for the sake of peace or advancing one’s career, p. 207.

<sup>673</sup> Robeck, ‘Emerging Magisterium’, p. 176. Regarding glossolalia Robeck believes doctrinal lines were fluid regarding the nature of tongues, precise terminology, and the timing of IE, pp. 177-78; cf. n. 32.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
of SB and glossolalia, rather than theology, was held in common.<sup>674</sup> Due to its primal state, there was no single theology of glossolalia among the early Pentecostals. Differences included the nature and purpose of glossolalia<sup>675</sup> as well as IE.<sup>676</sup>

### **Conclusion to Literature Utilizing the Early Pentecostal Periodicals.**

Given the number of publications on glossolalia, it is surprising that there are only six articles that examine what the first Pentecostals believed. The six articles above are narrow in scope and yet reveal the theological importance of the early Pentecostal periodicals. Because of a lack of research in this area, McGee calls for this thesis:

though the psychological and social factors of speaking in tongues and the theologies of some early leaders have been carefully explored, the earliest Pentecostal descriptions of Spirit baptism and how tongues empowered them deserve further consideration.<sup>677</sup>

---

<sup>674</sup> Robeck, 'Emerging Magisterium', p. 177.

<sup>675</sup> For example, regarding nature of tongues Robeck notes that 'W. F. Carothers saw subtle differences in purpose and use', Robeck, 'Emerging Magisterium', pp. 177-78.

<sup>676</sup> For example, 'many understood that if a person had not spoken in tongues, s/he had not received the baptism in the Spirit. Others were not so dogmatic on the issue of timing ... "sooner or later they will speak in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance"', Robeck, 'Emerging Magisterium', pp. 177-78; cf. p. 177, n. 32. The personal testimonies of two Pentecostal pioneers (Flower and Gee) ran counter to the established doctrine of IE, pp. 186-97.

<sup>677</sup> McGee, 'The New World of Realities', p. 110.

## Chapter 3

### The Wesleyan-Holiness Pentecostal Periodicals.

#### I. The Azusa Street Mission Revival – *The Apostolic Faith*.

##### A. History of the Revival.

Glossolalia was experienced by many before the ASM revival facilitated exponential growth. Noteworthy occurrences were Edward Irving's Catholic Apostolic Church in London,<sup>1</sup> the Camp Creek revival in 1896,<sup>2</sup> Benjamin H. Irwin's itinerate ministry<sup>3</sup> and Frank Sanford's ministry in Shiloh, Maine.<sup>4</sup> It was at Shiloh, just outside the sleepy mill town of Durham, Maine, where the theological founder of Pentecostalism, Parham, first witnessed glossolalia.<sup>5</sup> Parham had asked his students in Topeka, Kansas to search the bible for the evidence of the baptism of the Holy Ghost. They concluded that 'the indisputable proof on each occasion was, that they spake with other tongues'.<sup>6</sup> That evening at a watch-night service, Agnes Ozman 'began speaking in the Chinese language and was unable to speak English for three days'.<sup>7</sup> Parham's ministry eventually led him to Houston, Texas where Seymour attended classes and meetings.<sup>8</sup> At the dawn of the ASM revival, 'it is estimated that at least 1,000 people had received

---

<sup>1</sup> Shumway, 'The Gift of Tongues', pp. 74-142.

<sup>2</sup> Also called, 'Cherokee County' revival. It led to the formation of the Church of God, Cleveland, TN, Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 72-73, cf. Conn, *Like A Mighty Army*, pp. 18-45.

<sup>3</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 52. It is also noteworthy that Irwin was the first of the WH tradition to 'conclude there was a third experience beyond sanctification called "the baptism with the Holy Ghost and fire"'. His meetings were very emotional and physical, often compared to an earlier revival in 1801 at Cane Ridge, KY, cf. pp. 12, 52.

<sup>4</sup> Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, pp. 57-59, 73-74. Sanford believed that human evangelism methods were insufficient and that the supernatural ability to speak languages was needed.

<sup>5</sup> Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 73.

<sup>6</sup> Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 66.

<sup>7</sup> Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 67. She later changed her name: 'I received the baptism of the Holy Ghost and spoke in other tongues, on January 1, 1901, at Topeka, Kansas Bible school. My name then was Miss Agnes N. Ozman, now Mrs. P.M. LaBerge', Mrs. P.M. LaBerge, 'Has Had The Baptism For Fifteen Years', WE 129 (Mar 4, 1915), p. 5.

<sup>8</sup> Robeck, 'William Joseph Seymour', p. 1055.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
the Baptism in the Spirit and spoken in other tongues ... and there were some 60  
preachers and workers in the State of Texas alone'.<sup>9</sup>

Seymour received a call to lead a new WH church in Los Angeles, but it was short lived as he was soon locked out of the church for preaching about SB as evidenced by glossolalia.<sup>10</sup> In his defence before his WH leaders, he affirmed his belief that only when one had spoken in tongues was one Spirit baptized.<sup>11</sup> Bereft of church or denomination, Seymour started holding meetings in the home of the couple he was staying with, Edward and Mattie Lee. Soon these meetings moved to the home of Richard and Ruth Asberry at 214 North Bonnie Brae Street. On April 6, 1906, Lee did not feel well and asked Seymour to pray for him, whereupon, 'he fell to the floor and spoke with tongues'.<sup>12</sup> They then walked over to the Asberry's home and told the nightly gathering what had happened. One of the attendees, Jennie Moore says that,

the power of God fell and I was baptized in the Holy Ghost and fire, with the evidence of speaking in tongues ... it seemed as if a vessel broke within me and water surged up through my being, which when it reached my mouth came out in a torrent of speech in the languages which God had given me.<sup>13</sup>

It was not just Lee and Moore, but 'the whole company was immediately swept to its knees as by some mighty power'.<sup>14</sup> So many were attracted to the meetings that within a week an unused African Methodist Episcopal Church at 312 Azusa Street was rented and the revival meetings continued there for the next three years.<sup>15</sup>

'The significance of Azusa lies also in the testimonies of those whose lives were transformed by an experience of an immanent God, through the Holy Spirit'.<sup>16</sup>

---

<sup>9</sup> Frodsham, *With Signs Following*, p. 29.

<sup>10</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 63.

<sup>11</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 63.

<sup>12</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 67.

<sup>13</sup> J. Moore, 'Music from Heaven', *AF* 1.8 (Mar 1907), p. 3. Note the near poetic symbolism: vessel, surge, and torrent. Women tended to express themselves right from the start in more ecstatic and poetic terms.

<sup>14</sup> Shumway, 'The Gift of Tongues', p. 174.

<sup>15</sup> The most important years were 1906-1908, though the congregation continued on past Seymour's death (9-28-1922). The building was demolished in 1931 and the land lost to foreclosure in 1938, Robeck, 'Azusa Street Revival', p. 347-49, cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 319-20.

<sup>16</sup> Robeck, 'Azusa Street Revival', p. 349.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

However, not all who experienced the ASM fully embraced it. Most significant of these was Parham.<sup>17</sup> Parham's complaints were threefold: 1) the methods used by altar workers to guide seekers into glossolalia was 'over-zealous' and there was a lack of control in the meetings.<sup>18</sup> 2) The mixing of the races.<sup>19</sup> 3) Indistinct glossolalia. Because of his belief in MT, Parham insisted on clear and distinct language-like tongues. Seymour was content with less clear glossolalia believing, that as the individual learned to yield to the Spirit, their language would become distinct.<sup>20</sup> The list of those people whose lives were transformed at ASM would read like a 'Who's Who' of world-wide Pentecostalism. Individuals, church planters, missionaries, and founders of denominations all believed they were equipped with God's power for ministry as evidenced by tongues: 'the significance of Azusa was centrifugal – those who were touched by it took their experiences elsewhere and touched the lives of others'.<sup>21</sup>

### B. The 'Bible Evidence', Glossolalia as a Sign.

This review of *AF* newspaper affirms that there was a fascination with the evidential tongues.<sup>22</sup> The front page of the inaugural issue summarized the importance and logic

---

<sup>17</sup> Ann Taves notes that 'Parham began distancing himself from the revival in Los Angeles in the weeks prior to his visit ... Parham told the *Topeka Daily State Journal* that his was a "dignified movement ... when any of that class [Holy Rollers] come to our meeting and begin throwing fits, we quietly have the attendants take them out"', Ann Taves, *Fits, Trances, & Visions* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1999), p. 329.

<sup>18</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 140-41. 'The real gift of tongues, is never accompanied by spasms, jerks, or foolishness of any sort', p. 230.

<sup>19</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 141.

<sup>20</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 236, cf. p. 270; *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

<sup>21</sup> Robeck, 'Azusa Street Revival', p. 349. A minority and opposing view is that rather than spreading out from ASM, 'there fell simultaneously in the year 1906, in different parts of the world, what members of the movement call "a mighty outpouring of the Holy Spirit." ... simultaneously, similar groups sprang up all over the world', Dalton, *Tongues Like As Of Fire*, p. 9. Hollenweger holds a nuanced position that, 'the Pentecostal movement spread like wildfire over the whole world' from United States, Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 63. However, there are indigenous religions that have 'remarkable parallels' to Pentecostalism, thus making the ground fertile for the Pentecostal message, Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 54.

<sup>22</sup> 'Bible evidence' is the preferred nomenclature in the *AF*. Other synonyms include: 'sign', 'evidence', 'outward evidence', and 'the evidence', cf. 'Tongues as a Sign', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2; Mrs. W.H. Piper, '"He Shall Baptize You"', *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 4; 'Bro. Seymour's Call', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1. However, it was possible to avoid the Pentecostal nomenclature altogether. For example, Antoinette

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
of tongues as a sign. The opening article connected the ASM revival with the Day of Pentecost through the ‘bible evidence’:<sup>23</sup>

Pentecost has surely come and with it *the Bible evidences* are following, many being converted and sanctified and *filled with the Holy Ghost, speaking in tongues* as they did on the day of Pentecost.<sup>24</sup>

A second article distinguished the WH view of SB from the Pentecostal view of SB because ‘they did not have the evidence of the second chapter of Acts, for when the disciples were all filled with the Holy Ghost, they spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance’.<sup>25</sup> Another significant article rounded out the logic with the purpose for tongues: it is the ‘gift of language’ or MT.<sup>26</sup>

### 1. Why Evidence?

Just as Jesus had witnesses such as the angels at his birth and at the tomb, the dove at his baptism and people at his ascension, it was natural for these early pioneers to see speaking in tongues as a ‘Bible witness, a supernatural witness’.<sup>27</sup> First, it is significant that the preferred terminology was ‘the bible evidence’. The bible was believed and followed. Therefore, it was important to have the same experience as the disciples on the Day of Pentecost. In fact, the paper’s statement of faith reads:

the Baptism with the Holy Ghost is a gift of *power* upon the sanctified life; so when we get it we *have the same evidence* as the Disciples received on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2:3, 4), in speaking in new tongues. See also Acts 10:45, 46; Acts 19:6; 1 Cor. 14:21.<sup>28</sup>

Second, tongues at one’s personal Pentecost were the sign of God’s equipping power.<sup>29</sup> This power was a part of a world view in which the return of Christ was

---

Moomau wrote, ‘He gave me the Bible experiences, speaking through me in other tongues’, ‘China Missionary Receives Pentecost’, AF 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 3.

<sup>23</sup> The subtitle is, ‘Los Angeles Being Visited by a Revival of Bible Salvation and Pentecost as Recorded in the Book of Acts’, ‘Pentecost Has Come’, p. 1.

<sup>24</sup> ‘Pentecost Has Come’, p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>25</sup> ‘Bro. Seymour’s Call’, p. 1.

<sup>26</sup> ‘Pentecost Has Come’, AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

<sup>27</sup> AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4.

<sup>28</sup> ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’, AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2. Italic mine.

<sup>29</sup> ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’, AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2.

imminent.<sup>30</sup> Tongues were a restoration of apostolic power for an end-times revival.<sup>31</sup>

One article noted that chronologically, throughout history, there had been a restoration of salvation, sanctification, healings and now a restoration tongues with ‘the Bible evidence’.<sup>32</sup> This restoration of glossolalia was pragmatically connected to the sharing of the gospel with MT: ‘the wonderful sign in 1906 is the restoration of tongues, which foretells the preaching of the pure gospel to all nations, which must be done before the Gentile Times end. (Matt. 24:14.)’.<sup>33</sup> In ‘Signs of His Coming’, the author reviewed biblical prophecy and affirmed the soon return of Christ, but the climax of his argument rests on the latter rain metaphor. God

sent the latter rain to bring it into perfection, that it might be ready for harvest. And now He is pouring out the latter rain upon the church, the baptism with the Holy Ghost and fire. We are receiving the Pentecost, speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance, and the wonders and signs are still following.<sup>34</sup>

However, it would be wrong to state that tongues were exclusively seen as a restoration of what was lost. The concept that a remnant never lost the gift of tongues was also believed.<sup>35</sup>

Third, tongues announced the presence of the Holy Spirit: ‘tongues are like a bell, ringing the people up. They are waking up to the fact that God is in the land’, testified one participant.<sup>36</sup> The signs of Mk 16.16-18 occurred in Los Angeles to ‘prove that God is true’, noted another testimony.<sup>37</sup> It was like living in a modern-day book of Acts because similar ‘signs as on the day of Pentecost are following ... the work is spreading

---

<sup>30</sup> McQueen, Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology, pp. 61-74.

<sup>31</sup> For example, ‘Everything is Pointing Toward the Coming of the Lord’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1.

<sup>32</sup> The author ties each of these restorations to an individual: Luther is tied to justification by faith, Wesley is tied to sanctification, Cullis is tied to the restoration of divine healing, and Parham to SB with its sign of tongues. ‘The Promised Latter Rain Now Being Poured out on God’s Humble People’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 2.

<sup>33</sup> *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 1.

<sup>34</sup> ‘Signs of His Coming’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 6. Cf. ‘We realize that we are in the time of the “latter rain” preceding His coming’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3; transcribed a meeting and sermon by W.J. Seymour, *AF* 1.7(Apr 1907), p. 2.

<sup>35</sup> ‘The Promise Still Good’, *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 3.

<sup>36</sup> ‘Notice’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4.

<sup>37</sup> ‘Sign Follows’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 4.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia fast'.<sup>38</sup> One person encouraged doubters to believe for the sake of the revival, to examine the effects of the revival, especially speaking in new tongues and deliverances from demons and healings.<sup>39</sup>

Fourth, though tongues were the predominate sign, other ‘effects’ or ‘signs following’ were a part of the revival. Healing, deliverance from demons or vices, divine love and the advance of the gospel worldwide confirmed the logic of their theology. For example, one man spoke in tongues and his family thought he had lost his mind until they saw the divine love he had.<sup>40</sup> Even Mason acknowledged that he accepted the other signs of Mk 16.16-18 more readily than tongues at first, but changed his mind after he put aside his assumptions and experienced glossolalia for himself.<sup>41</sup> Another significant sign of the revival was the breaking down of racial barriers and gender barriers: ‘God makes no difference in nationality … (all) nationalities worship together’.<sup>42</sup> One article noted that, ‘if it had started in a fine church, poor colored people and Spanish people would not have got it … It is noticeable how free all nationalities feel’.<sup>43</sup>

## 2. Biblical Support.

The article ‘Tongues as a Sign’ was typical of the biblical support offered throughout *AF*.<sup>44</sup> The premise of the article was that signs were to be expected simply because the bible said so.<sup>45</sup> Mark 16.16-17 was the favourite verse used to support tongues as a sign; it: ‘plainly declares that these signs SHALL follow them that believe’.<sup>46</sup> Tongues were

---

<sup>38</sup> A.G. Johnson, ‘Pentecost in Other Lands, In Sweden’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 1.

<sup>39</sup> *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2.

<sup>40</sup> *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2.

<sup>41</sup> C.H. Mason, ‘Tennessee Evangelist Witnesses’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7.

<sup>42</sup> *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 3. ‘The people are all melted together … all one body in Christ Jesus’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1

<sup>43</sup> ‘Bible Pentecost’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1.

<sup>44</sup> ‘Tongues as a Sign’, *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2.

<sup>45</sup> These early pioneers expected miracles and signs to follow: ‘we must believe it all … a return to the full Gospel brings a return of the signs following them that believe’, ‘Signs Shall Follow’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2.

<sup>46</sup> At times belief referred not to salvation but to the Pentecostal message, cf. ‘Beginning of World Wide Revival’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 1.

unique from the OT signs because they were reserved for the Day of Pentecost to fulfil the prophecy of Joel in Acts 2.12-17 and Jesus' promise of power to witness in Acts 1.4-8.<sup>47</sup> However, from the Day of Pentecost onward, tongues were repeatable for believers as a sign of the Spirit's baptism following the example of Acts 10.46; 19.1-6. Throughout *AF*, the Lucan writings were quoted more extensively than the Pauline corpus, and in 'Tongues as a Sign', one lonely sentence noted Paul's nine gifts of the Holy Spirit.<sup>48</sup>

### 3. Evidence of Spirit Baptism.

Glossolalia as the Bible evidence was staunchly defended.<sup>49</sup> For example, Durham wrote, 'I would advise all my friends to seek the baptism in the Holy Ghost, till they get the evidence in tongues, for it always follows; I know of no exception'.<sup>50</sup> Seymour wrote,

beloved, when we receive the baptism with the Holy Ghost and fire, *we surely will speak in tongues* as the Spirit gives utterance. We are not seeking for tongues, but we are seeking the baptism with the Holy Ghost and fire. And when we receive it, we shall be so filled with the Holy Ghost, that He Himself will speak in the power of the Spirit.<sup>51</sup>

People were encouraged to seek SB and not tongues: 'just pray the Lord to give you the baptism with the Holy Ghost', A.A. Boddy's wife advised, 'I did not ask for "tongues" but for the Holy Ghost, and He "gave me utterance," and the joy of praising God in the Spirit'.<sup>52</sup> Personal testimony played a supporting role as participants testified in hindsight that they did not really have the baptism until they spoke in tongues.<sup>53</sup> For

---

<sup>47</sup> 'Sanctified Before Pentecost', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2.

<sup>48</sup> The Pauline works are only infrequently cited. Seymour's most extensive Pauline treatment is on the importance of prophecy in the assembly over uninterpreted tongues which only edify an individual, W.J. Seymour, 'Gifts of the Spirit', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2; cf. *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 4.

<sup>49</sup> It was so much a part of the theology that an article questioned why the phrase 'with the bible evidence' did not accompany every testimony of SB, but then assured its readers that 'the *Apostolic Faith* expected it would be so understood, whether it was stated or not', R.L. Lupton, 'This is That', *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 3, reprint; the *New Acts*.

<sup>50</sup> W.H. Durham, 'A Chicago Evangelist's Pentecost', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 4.

<sup>51</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Baptism with the Holy Ghost', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7. Italics mine.

<sup>52</sup> Mrs A.A. Boddy, 'Testimony of a Vicar's Wife', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 1. For example, 'do not ask the Lord for tongues. Just pray the Lord to give you the baptism with the Holy Ghost', 'The Enduement of Power', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2.

<sup>53</sup> 'Baptized in Minneapolis', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 4.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
example, George H. Taylor wrote, ‘to me it was a witness that I had received the baptism, just as it was to Peter when at the house of Cornelius’.<sup>54</sup>

The bible evidence was not without theological and experiential variety. The *Apostolic Faith* allowed alternative and at times conflicting positions. Seymour’s article ‘Counterfeits’, represented a pivotal adjustment of the evidential nature of glossolalia and the other components of glossolalia.<sup>55</sup> Seymour was surprised that ‘people have imitated the gift of tongues’.<sup>56</sup> What was thought to be solely from heaven now had potential to be faked. From that article onward, godly living functioned as a backup confirmation to the sign of glossolalia. For example, an unsigned article on the need for fresh anointings noted that

tongues are *one of the signs* that go with every baptized person, *but it is not the real evidence of the baptism in the every day life*. Your life must measure with the fruits (sic) of the Spirit. If you get angry, or speak evil, or backbite, I care not how many tongues you may have, you have not the baptism with the Holy Spirit.<sup>57</sup>

Seymour called for discernment by the Holy Spirit and encouraged an ethical testing to distinguish the true from the counterfeit. The article added that it was possible to ‘lose the Spirit of Jesus, which is divine love’.<sup>58</sup> Even though this additional ethical component was to help distinguish the genuine from false, in the same issue Seymour affirmed the evidential nature of tongues: ‘He sent the Holy Spirit to our hearts and filled us with His blessed Spirit, and He gave us the Bible evidence, according to the 2nd chapter of Acts verses 1 to 4, speaking with other tongues’.<sup>59</sup>

The eleventh issue highlighted another challenge to the bible sign doctrine, delayed glossolalia. A statement of faith written as a Q & A catechism asked: ‘what is the real

---

<sup>54</sup> George H. Taylor, ‘A Witness in Michigan’, *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 3.

<sup>55</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Counterfeits’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2; cf. ‘The Enduement of Power’, p. 2.

<sup>56</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Counterfeits’, p. 2.

<sup>57</sup> This article appears directly under the subscription information, in a location normally reserved for the statement of faith or an editorial. ‘To The Baptized Saints’, *AF* 1.9 (June 1907), p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>58</sup> ‘To The Baptized Saints’, p. 2.

<sup>59</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Letter to One Seeking the Holy Ghost’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

evidence that a man or woman has received the baptism of the Holy Ghost'?<sup>60</sup> It then answered divine love and the fruit of the Spirit, stating these are

*the real Bible evidence in their daily walk and conversation; and the outward manifestations; speaking in tongues and the signs following; casting out devils, laying hands on the sick and the sick being healed, and the love of God for souls increasing in their hearts.*<sup>61</sup>

After affirming the ethical confirmation, the article states:

the baptism of the Spirit is a gift of power on the sanctified life, and when people receive it, *sooner or later* they will speak in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance. A person *may not speak in tongues for a week after the baptism*, but as soon as he gets to praying or praising God in the liberty of the Spirit, the tongues will follow.<sup>62</sup>

Throughout the *AF* one finds testimonies which imply or explicitly state a delay in tongues after SB.<sup>63</sup> For example, Mrs. J.E. Smith of Wolcott, NY wrote: 'I will say I have been wonderfully filled with the Holy Ghost but have not received the speaking in tongues'.<sup>64</sup> Nevertheless, Seymour affirmed tongues as the evidence of SB in the final issue calling it 'the Azusa standard':

the Azusa standard of the baptism with the Holy Ghost is according to the Bible in Acts 1:5, 8; Acts 2:4 and Luke 24:49 ... Hallelujah to the Lamb for the baptism of the Holy Ghost and fire and speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance ... when you get your personal Pentecost, the signs will follow in speaking with tongues as the Spirit gives utterance.<sup>65</sup>

The Azusa Standard was: 'when you have received your baptism, He, the Holy Ghost, will speak through you in tongues';<sup>66</sup> however, glossolalia had to be confirmed by divine love and the fruit of the Spirit.

---

<sup>60</sup> 'Questions Answered', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2. This issue of the statement of faith is in a question and answer, catechetical-type of format.

<sup>61</sup> 'Questions Answered (*AF*)', p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>62</sup> 'Questions Answered (*AF*)', p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>63</sup> Ambiguous examples: 'At Chambersburg, Pa., about 25 got baptized and some spoke in tongues, some saved, sanctified and healed', *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1; 'last Thursday, two sisters being shaken and nearly spoke in tongues', Mary Martin, 'London, England', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 1.

<sup>64</sup> Mrs. J.E. Smith, *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 4.

<sup>65</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3. Seymour writes, 'stop quibbling and come to the standard that Jesus laid down for us in Acts 2'.

<sup>66</sup> *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 3.

#### 4. Defining Spirit Baptism within the Wesleyan-Holiness Movement.

An important early theological issue was the distinction between Pentecostal SB and the WH position of sanctification. Wesleyan-holiness people who accepted the Pentecostal message affirmed their experiences of salvation and sanctification and simply added a third experience of SB that was evidenced by glossolalia.<sup>67</sup> However, some WH people persisted that SB was sanctification and chose to reject tongues. It became a major point of conflict.<sup>68</sup> For example, F.E. Hill walked out of the Nazarene Church which forbade ‘speaking in tongues or testifying on the line of the baptism with the Holy Ghost upon the sanctified life’ and started his own church.<sup>69</sup> Exegetically, for support, if the pattern from Acts was not used, Mk 16.15 was employed.<sup>70</sup> Theologically, the Pentecostals carefully clarified that SB was not a work of grace like justification or sanctification, but was ‘the gift of power … it gives you power to speak in the languages of the nations’.<sup>71</sup> This was an emotionally-charged issue on both sides. One article likened the WH position to the prodigal son’s elder brother who disliked the music and dancing which celebrated the restoration of the lost son.<sup>72</sup> Reflecting on his regional situation, Cashwell noted that some have been so ‘gulled here (to) take it by faith’ that their faith was nearly gone.<sup>73</sup>

---

<sup>67</sup> W.A. Love, ‘A Holiness Preacher Who Received Pentecost’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7.

<sup>68</sup> One testimony cryptically reports, ‘there was some trouble about the Bible evidence to the baptism with the Holy Ghost, but as soon as that was straight, God began to work’, ‘Victory in Oakland’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1.

<sup>69</sup> ‘Vernon Mission’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1.

<sup>70</sup> Some WH people rejected Mk 16.15 due to textual issues. To counter their argument, one article delved into the transmission and validation of the various ancient manuscripts and concluded that the present day experience affirms the variant reading; therefore, ‘do not let any man riddle your Bible for you or cut out any part of it’, ‘Shall We Reject Jesus’ Last Words?’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 2. For a fuller examination of how the early Pentecostal’s interpreted and defended Mk 16.9-20, see John Christopher Thomas and Kimberly Alexander, ““And The Signs Are Following”: Mark 16.9-20”, *JPT* 11.2 (April, 2003), pp. 147-170. They call for a ‘reappropriation’ of this passage.

<sup>71</sup> ‘The Enduement of Power’, p. 2.

<sup>72</sup> ‘The Elder Brother’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 2.

<sup>73</sup> ‘Hundreds Baptized in the South’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 3. This might have been the result of a powerless sanctification or Irwin’s belief in multiple baptisms in the south-eastern part of the States. Here Cashwell notes specifically the baptisms of fire, dynamite, and lyddite, which are Irwin’s thesis, *Synan, The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 57, cf. pp. 51-58. The AF reports that Irwin’s magazine, *Live Coals*,

### C. Missionary Tongues.<sup>74</sup>

‘God is solving the missionary problem, sending out new-tongued missionaries on the apostolic faith line’ quipped one writer who aptly summarizes both the theology and logic of the theory of MT:<sup>75</sup> God inspired xenolalia enables people to share the gospel without having to learn a foreign language.<sup>76</sup> For example, ‘many are speaking in new tongues, and some are on their way to the foreign fields, with the gift of the language’.<sup>77</sup> One can see two areas of weakness with the theory from the start: 1) lack of credible verification,<sup>78</sup> and 2) participants who were braggadocios about the number of languages they could speak.<sup>79</sup> However, even though many of the testimonies were second-hand, throughout *AF* there were enough foreign-language speakers who claimed to have heard the gospel or received a revelation from God in their native language that xenolalia received a measure of credibility while the theory of MT would be tested and be discarded.<sup>80</sup>

---

espoused the Pentecostal sign after seeing that the bible distinguished between tongues as a gift and as a sign, ‘Transformed by the Holy Ghost’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar), p. 5, reprint; *Apostolic Evangel*, Royston, GA. A few issues later the *AF* reports that through Cashwell’s effort ‘a great number of the officials and members of the Fire-Baptized Holiness Church have given up their man-made theories about Pentecost and gone down and received the genuine Pentecostal baptism, with the Bible evidence following’, A.E. Robinson, *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 2.

<sup>74</sup> Other monikers are the ‘gift of language’ and the ‘Pentecostal gift’.

<sup>75</sup> *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2.

<sup>76</sup> For example, a brother Lee comments, ‘Friends, I did not go to college to get this language. It is the Holy Ghost that speaks. He can talk the languages of the nations’, ‘A Catholic That Received Pentecost’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 4.

<sup>77</sup> ‘Pentecost Has Come’, *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

<sup>78</sup> Consider: ‘a Mohammedan, a Soudanese by birth, a man who is an interpreter and speaks sixteen languages, came into the meetings at Azusa Street and the Lord gave him messages which none but himself could understand. He identified, interpreted and wrote a number of the languages’, *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

<sup>79</sup> For example, ‘I now speak eleven or twelve languages’, Andrew Johnson, ‘Letter From Bro. Johnson’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3. ‘I must have spoken seven or eight languages to judge from the various sounds and forms of speech used’, ‘Baptized In New York’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3. Cashwell writes, ‘five preachers received the baptism and some of them have two or three languages already and can preach sermons and pray in the tongues’, Cashwell, ‘Pentecost In North Carolina’, p. 1.

<sup>80</sup> George Berg’s writings appear often in *AF* in connection with xenolalia and he professes to know a couple tribal languages of India. Overhearing xenolalia convinced him of its truth: ‘there are very few that get the native accent by study, but this man spoke the beautiful accent of that country ... That convinced me that the Holy Ghost was giving languages in this place’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 4.

## 1. The Theory of Missionary Tongues.

The theory of MT was popularized at Parham's 1901 bible school in Topeka, KS:

instantly the Lord took his vocal organs, and he was preaching the Word in another language ... this man has preached in different languages over the United States, and men and women of that nationality have come to the altar and sought God.<sup>81</sup>

Biblically, it was hoped that MT were God's equipping to share the good news around the world according the biblical pattern on the Day of Pentecost, in Acts 2.4-11.<sup>82</sup> Other passages thought to support the practice are, Isa. 28.11<sup>83</sup> and 1 Cor. 13.1.<sup>84</sup> There were several pragmatic components to the theory: 1) the language one spoke pointed to the place of one's calling. One man spoke French, for example, 'was given a vision of Paris and called there'.<sup>85</sup> Later though, Seymour encouraged people not to 'puzzle' themselves about which language they were speaking.<sup>86</sup> 2) Because it was a real language for sharing the good news, it should be a clear and identifiable.<sup>87</sup> However linguistically, great latitude was afforded xenolalia because of the wide variety of languages in the world:

there are 50,000 languages in the world. Some of them sound like jabber. The Eskimo can hardly be distinguished from a dog bark. The Lord lets smart people talk in these

---

<sup>81</sup> 'The Pentecostal Baptism Restored', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 1; cf. *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2. McGee traces the roots of the theory back to 1885 in McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparations', pp. 119-122.

<sup>82</sup> For example, 'when He sent them out after Pentecost ... they had seventeen nationalities that heard the gospel in their own tongue without confusion. (Acts 2:9-11) He is doing the same today', 'The Baptism With The Holy Ghost', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 4.

<sup>83</sup> E.g. 'Pentecost At Middle States, In Potterbrook, Pa', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 3; 'This Is That', p. 3; 'From The Bible School in Mukti, India', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1.

<sup>84</sup> 'Pentecost in England', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 1. Though contemporary scholarship places a great deal of emphasis on the psychological nature of glossolalia, this survey of *AF* reveals very little reflection on the subject. For example, 'ecstasy' is used only three times and then as a dramatic highlight or in poetic fashion. 'Tongues of men and angels' is believed to be used only once, 'When Jesus Comes', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2; 'The Pentecostal Revival', *AF* 1.13

<sup>85</sup> 'At Azusa Mission', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 2.

<sup>86</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Baptism With The Holy Ghost', p. 7.

<sup>87</sup> For example, when the 'Holy Ghost falls upon them and they rise to their feet speaking in a clear language as the Spirit gives utterance', 'Pentecost In San Jose', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1; cf. G.B. Cashwell, 'Pentecost In North Carolina', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

jabber-like languages. Then He has some child talk in the most beautiful Latin and Greek, just to confound professors and learned people.<sup>88</sup>

The languages people used were not limited to spoken languages as some were thought to have received sign-language for the deaf.<sup>89</sup> ‘Writing in tongues’ was initially thought to be possible but it was judged to be unbiblical.<sup>90</sup> 3) It was expected that the sounds would be indistinct at first, but as an individual yielded himself to the Spirit, the language would become clear. For example, ‘he now began to speak with the tongue yielded to Him, at first in a stammering way, finally flowing out in a clear, distinct language which sounded like Chinese’.<sup>91</sup> 4) Completing the linguistic family of MT was the recognition that English could be a ‘foreign tongue’ when one was overseas.<sup>92</sup>

Expectation of successful world evangelism was high as ‘missionaries for the foreign fields, equipped with several languages, are now on their way’.<sup>93</sup> For example, ‘G.W. Batman and wife are saved, sanctified and baptized with the Holy Ghost and have the gift of languages. They are all packed up for Monrovia, Liberia, Africa’.<sup>94</sup>

---

<sup>88</sup> AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 4. One ‘Indian’ language was described as ‘chanting songs’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3. Another example is when the poor young girls in Mukti, India are given ‘the sacred language of the Brahmans, the priestly class of India’, ‘Pentecost in Mukti, India’, AF 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 4.

<sup>89</sup> F.R. Townsend, ‘Pentecostal Testimonies’, AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8; cf. ‘Ye Are My Witnesses’, AF 1.8 (May 1907), p. 4; AF 1.1 (Sept 1906), p. 1. There are three testimonies of the deaf being healed: ‘Fire Falling At Oakland’, AF 1.1 (Sept 1906), p. 4; AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2; ‘The deaf have had their hearing restored’, AF 1.1 (Sept 1906), p. 1.

<sup>90</sup> ‘We do not read anything in the Word about writing in unknown languages, so we do not encourage that in our meetings. Let us measure everything by the Word, that all fanaticism may be kept out of the work. We have found it questionable whether any real good has come out of such writing’, AF 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 2; cf. T. Junk, ‘Pentecost in Seattle’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1; Johnson, ‘Pentecost in Other Lands, In Sweden’, p. 1; F.R. Townson, ‘Pentecostal Testimonies’, AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>91</sup> W.H. Standley, ‘Worth Tarrying For’, AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

<sup>92</sup> ‘Quite a number had received the ability to speak in English, a language before unknown to them’, while others received languages from other parts of India or completely unidentifiable, Albert Norton, ‘Natives In India Speak In Tongues’, AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 2.

<sup>93</sup> ‘Fire Still Falling’, AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 1. There are two other testimonies on the same page of people going to Africa anticipating God to use them. Another typical testimony would be: ‘I received my Pentecost and the gift of tongues, and am speaking in many different languages. I am soon expecting to start around the world preaching full salvation as I go, trusting my heavenly Father to supply all my needs’, H.M. Turney, ‘Alaska Brother Proves Acts 1.8’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3.

<sup>94</sup> ‘Notice’, AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4. The Batmans are said to have the ‘power from on high and the fitness of the gift of tongues’, ‘En Route to Africa’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 4.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Furloughing veteran missionaries who studied and learned a foreign language rejoiced 'to find "the more excellent way"',<sup>95</sup> while others thought it was an answer to prayer.<sup>96</sup> This passion for missions extended to non-English speakers in America as well.<sup>97</sup> There was even a testimony in Spanish followed by an English translation in the *AF*.<sup>98</sup> Tom Hezmalhalch went into great detail about one Native American preacher's sermon and the interpretation that was revealed to him.<sup>99</sup> His testimony ended with a call for people to pray for these unreached Native Americans.

Because initially glossolalia was the gift of a real language, translation was possible. Often there was an interpretation<sup>100</sup> that happened spontaneously or in response to prayer.<sup>101</sup> These interpretations usually centred on the Lord's soon return or were a call for repentance. For example, 'Jesus is coming again soon. Do not reject His voice. Don't reject Him, don't reject Him. He was nailed on the cross for you',<sup>102</sup> or 'God is love, and Jesus is coming soon'.<sup>103</sup>

### 2. The Doctrine Develops.

Initially, Seymour fully supported the theory of MT, but he slowly redefined it to mean prophetic speech, though he never went so far as to exclude the possibility of genuine xenolalia. In the first issue Seymour wrote an article on the five-fold gospel<sup>104</sup> where he

---

<sup>95</sup> G.A. Cook, 'Pentecostal Power In Indianapolis', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 3.

<sup>96</sup> 'When I heard them speaking in tongues, I thought, now is the time for me to get the Chinese language. I had been in a Chinese Mission, and had been praying for the language for nearly four years', M.F. Mayo, 'A Peniel Worker Baptized', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 4.

<sup>97</sup> 'Spanish Receive The Pentecost', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3. Cf. 'Preaching To The Spanish', *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 4.

<sup>98</sup> 'Spanish Receive The Pentecost', p. 3.

<sup>99</sup> T. Hezmalhalch, 'Among The Indians At Needles, California', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

<sup>100</sup> Mrs. Nora Wilcox, 'In Denver, Colo.', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 1.

<sup>101</sup> 'The interpretation is unlocked by prayer. I am glad the Lord has some things the devil cannot find out. If not, anyone could unlock the mysteries of Christ', 'Unlocked By Prayer', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 3.

<sup>102</sup> *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1, cf. 'In Minneapolis, Minn.', *AF* 1.9 (Sep 1907), p. 1. 'The interpretation of many of the messages in nearly every language spoken by the Holy Ghost in unknown tongues is that Jesus is coming', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 3.

<sup>103</sup> Mrs. Pearl Bowen, 'Akron Visited With Pentecost', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 1.

<sup>104</sup> Though he clearly has the five-fold gospel in mind theologically Seymour does not mention the Second Coming in this short article, W.J. Seymour, 'The Precious Atonement', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2. A similar article in the second issue gives pastoral logic to the order of justification, sanctification and SB,

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

states that SB occurred upon the sanctified life and enabled one to 'lift up Christ to the world in all His fullness ... (and) in His power to speak all the languages of the world'.<sup>105</sup> By the third issue he cautioned people from going abroad: 'some think they must go out because they have the tongues but those are good for Los Angeles or anywhere else. The Lord will lead you by His small voice'.<sup>106</sup> In the same issue, the Meads who were missionaries to Africa for 20 years before the ASM revival, lent credibility and caution to MT.<sup>107</sup> Mr. S.J. Mead noted that he was 'conscious' the whole time and God 'flooded (him) with Divine love; and I commenced to speak as I would sing a new song'.<sup>108</sup> But then added,

many ask, 'Do you think these tongues will be used in a foreign field?' As for myself *I cannot say*. My God is able, this I know ... I believe God is about to repeat many of the miracles and wonders wrought in the early history of the church.<sup>109</sup>

Earlier, his wife had corroborated some tongues as a difficult African dialect and then offered an interpretation,<sup>110</sup> yet Mr. Mead's vague answer (above) was significant for its lack of full endorsement.<sup>111</sup>

In the fourth issue there is a pivotal article in which Seymour recognizes the possibility of counterfeit glossolalia: 'we should know a tree by its fruit. Wherever we

---

W.J. Seymour, 'The Way Into The Holiest', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4. He does not mention the full five-fold gospel, including the Second Coming, until the 5<sup>th</sup> issue, W.J. Seymour, 'Behold The Bridegroom Cometh!', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2. On the same page there is an unsigned article condemning the doctrine of the annihilation of the wicked, 'Annihilation Of The Wicked', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2. He notes the soon return again in the 9<sup>th</sup> issue, W.J. Seymour, 'Testimony And Praise To God', *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 4.

<sup>105</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Precious Atonement', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2.

<sup>106</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'In Money Matters', *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 3.

<sup>107</sup> S.J. & A.K. Mead, 'New-Tongued Missionaries For Africa', *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 3.

<sup>108</sup> S.J. & A.K. Mead, 'New-Tongued Missionaries For Africa', p. 3.

<sup>109</sup> S.J. & A.K. Mead, 'New-Tongued Missionaries For Africa', p. 3. Italics mine.

<sup>110</sup> 'Message Concerning His Coming' *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4.

<sup>111</sup> A month later, he reportedly identified the specific tribe of one xenolaliac occurrence, then interpreted it into English and then repeated it again in the tribal tongue, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 4.

find the real, we find the counterfeit also'.<sup>112</sup> He is surprised that 'people have imitated the gift of tongues' after they were 'tested' and 'found wanting'.<sup>113</sup>

In the fifth issue Seymour gave priority to interpreted tongues as prophecy in the corporate setting over the concept of MT. He wrote that God 'can speak in any language He chooses to speak', but 'prophecy is the best gift to the church, for it builds up the saints and edifies them and exalts them to higher things in the Lord Jesus'.<sup>114</sup> The article encouraged the Pauline boundaries in the assembly of 1 Corinthians 14, and ended pragmatically:

we all used to break out in tongues; but we have learned to be quieter with the gift. Often when God sends a blessed wave upon us, we all may speak in tongues for awhile, but we will not keep it up while preaching (sic) service is going on, for we want to be obedient to the Word, that everything may be done decently and in order and without confusion.<sup>115</sup>

The doctrine of MT did not change quickly because the editors allowed additional testimonies to be printed as the theory was being tested. For example, George E. Berg writes,

in regard to the languages given here, I can testify that they are real languages, because I have interpreted not less than five messages given by different persons, spoken in languages of British, India, which languages I know personally, having lived in India.<sup>116</sup>

In the sixth issue Seymour again took the emphasis off foreign languages and put it onto intelligent speech:

do not seek for tongues but the promise of the Father ... Beloved, if you do not know the language that you speak, do not puzzle yourself about it, for the Lord did not

---

<sup>112</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'Counterfeits', p. 2. He specifically mentioned practitioners of Christian Science, Theosophy, and Spiritualism. Another WH preacher testifies in the subsequent issue that at ASM 'I saw the real and I saw the counterfeit, the wheat and chaff', J. Jeter, 'There Is Something In This For Jesus', AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 6.

<sup>113</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'Counterfeits', p. 2. He uses the word 'imitate' twice in this article referring to people imitating a genuine work of God.

<sup>114</sup> Seymour, 'Gifts Of The Spirit', p. 2.

<sup>115</sup> Seymour, 'Gifts Of The Spirit', p. 2.

<sup>116</sup> Geo. E. Berg, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost', AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3; cf. Geo. E. Berg 'The Heavenly Anthem', AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3; 'God Is His Own Interpreter', AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

promise us He would tell us what language we were speaking, but He promised us the interpretation of what we speak.<sup>117</sup>

In the ninth issue one can see the theory of MT being separated from xenolalia. On the one hand, Seymour defined the ‘other tongues’ of Acts 2.1-4, to be known languages.<sup>118</sup> On the other hand, two significant items indicated a change in the doctrine of MT: 1) missionary A.G. Garr reported from the field that reaching the missionaries is the key to missions because ‘they know all the customs of India *and also the languages*. The only way the nations can be reached is by getting the missionaries baptized with the Holy Ghost’.<sup>119</sup> 2) The outcome of an investigation by the CMA into a glossolalic episode at one of its churches in Chicago was published.<sup>120</sup> The report stated that, the tongues they speak in *do not seem to be intended as a means of communication between themselves and others*, as on the Day of Pentecost, but corresponds more closely with that described in the 14th (sic) of 1 Corinthians, 2nd verse, and seems to be a means of communication between the soul and God.<sup>121</sup>

A respected fellowship like the CMA stating that glossolalia is not a means of communication was significant. The report affirmed the phenomenon as biblical, having usefulness in praise, prayer, and as a sign.<sup>122</sup>

---

<sup>117</sup> Seymour, ‘The Baptism With The Holy Ghost’, p. 7.

<sup>118</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Letter to One Seeking the Holy Ghost’, p. 7.

<sup>119</sup> A.G. Garr, ‘From Distant Lands, The Work in India’, AF 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>120</sup> This testimony probably refers to an outpouring of the Spirit at their annual Convention in Cleveland, OH when Henry Wilson was charged to investigate, ‘From Other Pentecostal Papers’, AF 1.8 (May 1907), p. 3. If this is the same investigation, it concludes that the experience of tongues is ‘scriptural’. The CMA and its close relationship to the Pentecostal movement is noted often: ‘Many Witnesses to the Power of the Blood and of the Holy Ghost, In Homestead, PA’, AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 1; M.L. Ryan, ‘Pentecost In Spokane, Wash.’, AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 4; ‘In The Last Days’, AF 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 1 ‘The Promise Of The Father And Speaking With Tongues In Chicago’, AF 1.9 (June 1907), p. 3; ‘The Lord Is Speaking in the Earth Today, Swanton, Ohio’, AF 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1; ‘Fires Are Being Kindled, Jerusalem’ AF 2.13(May 1908), p. 1; ‘Fires Are Being Kindled, India’, AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1; ‘Chinese Filled With The Holy Spirit’, AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 4. Respecting the close relationship, there is a correction that reads, ‘the Christian Alliance did not come into the work or discontinue their meetings, as might have been understood’ in a prior issue, ‘Correction’, AF 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 2.

<sup>121</sup> ‘The Promise of the Father and Speaking with Tongues In Chicago’, AF 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 3. Italics mine.

<sup>122</sup> Ironically, the next issue of AF reported that at the CMA’s annual convention a young lady was filled with the Spirit and spoke in an African tongue. It read that the language ‘was recognized by

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Their singular view of the nature of glossolalia was slowly splitting into the view that there are two types of tongues, xenolalia and glossolalia. They discovered that not all glossolalia was xenolalia nevertheless enough native speakers testified to hearing something in their own language from God that these pioneers left room for genuine xenolalia. For example, a testimony in the twelfth issue affirmed that glossolalia was not for communication:

they who have received the gift of tongues are not using them for delivering messages from the Scriptures, except those who have received the gift of interpretation. They pray and praise God, and sometimes sing hymns in unknown tongues.<sup>123</sup>

But, there were several testimonies about speaking in another language throughout the twelfth issue<sup>124</sup> and even in the final issue.<sup>125</sup> In the end, Seymour's final article on SB emphasized power for miracles and mission that flow out of unity and purity, and that speaking in tongues was 'the Azusa standard' of IE, but this standard was not defined as the ability to speak foreign languages.<sup>126</sup>

### 3. Testimonies of Missionary Tongues.

A considerable number of testimonies by native speakers lent credibility to the theory of MT before it was separated from rare cases of xenolalia.<sup>127</sup> For example, one of the more dramatic stories was of a man who spoke in tongues to a police officer and was thrown in jail and then later was taken to the hospital as insane, but 'one of the attendants interpreted one of the languages that I spoke as the Kru language, a tribe in

---

missionaries from Africa as being the very language of the part of Africa to which the sister was expecting to go', *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1.

<sup>123</sup> 'From The Bible School In Mukti, India', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1.

<sup>124</sup> F. Crawford, 'The Lord Is Speaking in the Earth Today, Minneapolis and St. Paul', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1; 'The Lord Is Speaking in the Earth Today, Lynn Mass.', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1; W.H. Standley, 'Testimonies', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 3.

<sup>125</sup> For example: 'A Policeman's Testimony', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1; Sister John Woodruff 'A Mother's Experience Of Pentecost', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3; W.H. Standley 'Worth Tarrying For', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3; A.H. Argue, 'Italians And Indians Receive The Holy Ghost', *AF* 2.13, p. 4.

<sup>126</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', p. 3.

<sup>127</sup> The *AF* even published Sister Rosenthal's address at the end of her testimony as if to say, 'go talk to her', Sister Rosenthal, 'The Miracle of Speaking in Tongues', *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 2.

Africa that he was acquainted with'.<sup>128</sup> Then, before being institutionalized as insane, he preached in tongues to a review board, whereupon one of the judges understood his speech as Italian and released him. Another testimony was from a medical doctor who had spent time in India. He wandered into a service and through great conviction over a period of days 'got the whole thing'. He was so touched when he identified the Marathi language that he left his medical practice and returned to India as a missionary.<sup>129</sup> These who heard, spoke or witnessed such occurrences were not shaken by the fact that MT did not work exactly as they had anticipated because there were other biblical purposes for glossolalia besides MT.

#### D. Purposes for Glossolalia.

In addition to its evidential value, glossolalia had other biblical purposes, such as empowerment, prayer, praise, and revelation.

##### 1. Empowerment.

'The Baptism with the Holy Ghost is *a gift of power* upon the sanctified life; so when we get it we have the same evidence as the Disciples received on the Day of Pentecost', read the AF's statement of faith.<sup>130</sup> The primary purpose for tongues according to these early Pentecostals was to validate God's empowering. Power was connected to speech through the glossolalist's need, through biblical support, and through a built in correspondence.

In their testimonies one often reads two words, 'lack' and 'more'. These Pentecostal pioneers believed that their Christian experience did not match what they read in the NT.<sup>131</sup> There was a lack of 'true Pentecostal power' that sent Parham searching until he

---

<sup>128</sup> 'Arrested For Jesus' Sake', AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3. Lucy Farrow testified upon her return from Liberia that, 'the Lord had given her the gift of the Kru language and she was permitted to preach two sermons to the people in their own tongue', 'Pentecostal Missionary Reports', AF 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 1.

<sup>129</sup> T. Hezmalhalch, 'In Indianapolis, Ind.', AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 1.

<sup>130</sup> 'The Apostolic Faith Movement', p. 2. Italics mine. Cf. 'The Spirit Follows the Blood', AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 3.

<sup>131</sup> H.M. Turney, 'Alaska Brother Proves Acts 1:8', AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3; Durham, 'A Chicago Evangelist's Pentecost', p. 4; Louis Osterberg, AF 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 4; W. H. Standley, 'Worth Tarrying For', AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

had ‘more of the power of God’.<sup>132</sup> Veteran missionaries to Africa wrote, ‘we felt the lack of the power and love in the service of our Master, and we commenced seeking that power from Him’.<sup>133</sup> The means to receive power was to admit one’s need and seek God like the disciples on the Day of Pentecost.<sup>134</sup> Lack of power motivated them to seek and cry out for more: ‘we want all the signs that it may prove that God is true. It will result in the salvation of many souls’.<sup>135</sup> Glossolalia ‘gave me more power in speaking for Christ’, wrote Mrs. Boddy.<sup>136</sup>

The bible promised power, so they expected power: ‘we have the promise of the same power today’.<sup>137</sup> Like the Apostles, the purpose for receiving power was to fulfil the great commission.<sup>138</sup> The promises of Acts 1.8 and Lk. 24.49, were often quoted.<sup>139</sup> Jesus’ baptism at the River Jordan was interpreted as an equipping baptism and the logic went: if Jesus needed the power, so do his disciples today.<sup>140</sup> The article, ‘The Enduement of Power’ was typical of the teaching regarding tongues as a sign of power:<sup>141</sup> SB is ‘a gift of power ... (that) makes you a witness unto the uttermost parts of the earth. It gives you power to speak in the languages of the nations’.<sup>142</sup>

There are two built-in points of correspondence between tongues and power: anointed speech and the restoration of spiritual gifts. First, the power they sought was

---

<sup>132</sup> ‘Pentecost Has Come’, p. 1. This lack of power is noted in the statement of faith because some confused sanctification for ‘the Baptism and failed to reach the glory and power of a true Pentecost’, ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’, p. 2. ‘More’ is an important word in AF, one testimony points out that the 150 filled in Los Angeles are more than the 120 on the Day of Pentecost, AF 1.1 (Sep, 1906), p. 1.

<sup>133</sup> Ardell K. Mead, ‘Sister Mead’s Baptism’, AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 3. They were acutely aware of a lack of power: ‘we have heard the funeral of the Gospel preached, the power of nobody unto nothing, now we are preaching the power of God unto salvation’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1

<sup>134</sup> ‘Seven Months of Pentecostal Showers’, AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1.

<sup>135</sup> ‘Signs Follow’, AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 4.

<sup>136</sup> Mrs A.A. Boddy, ‘Testimony of a Vicar’s Wife’, p. 1.

<sup>137</sup> ‘The Promise Still Good’, p. 3.

<sup>138</sup> ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 2; cf. W.J. Seymour, ‘Letter to One Seeking the Holy Ghost’, p. 3.

<sup>139</sup> There are only a couple of references to Zech. 4.6, AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2; W.J. Seymour, ‘Counterfeits’, p. 2.

<sup>140</sup> ‘Pentecostal Notes’, AF 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 3; W.J. Seymour, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, p. 3.

<sup>141</sup> W.J. Seymour’s ‘Receive Ye The Holy Ghost’, AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2.

<sup>142</sup> ‘The Enduement of Power’, p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

for anointed preaching<sup>143</sup> and testimony:<sup>144</sup> ‘the gift of tongues was a sign and a powerful and a practical witnessing agency’.<sup>145</sup> In other words, if the Holy Spirit could take control of the tongue for glossolalia, God could also provide the anointing for sharing the Good News. Seymour wrote, ‘the baptism with the Holy Ghost gives us power to testify to a risen, resurrected Savior’, because ‘when the Holy Ghost life comes in, the mouth opens, through the power of the Spirit in the heart’.<sup>146</sup> Glossolalia, whether as xenolalia or ecstatic tongues, was a demonstration of power itself.<sup>147</sup> Some even reported that ‘the Holy Ghost came in mighty power, causing me to laugh as I have never done in my life’.<sup>148</sup> In their enthusiasm, sometimes these pioneers promoted ‘Pentecostal power’ more than the gospel of salvation.<sup>149</sup> For the most part however, there was ‘a missionary spirit for saving souls’.<sup>150</sup>

Second, the restoration of tongues signalled a restoration of all the gifts of the Holy Spirit. If tongues were restored, then apostolic-like power was also restored: ‘now I feel a power for witnessing I never had before and an assurance of power in service’.<sup>151</sup> At SB the glossolalic received confidence that they could be used for any of the ‘signs following’.<sup>152</sup> Georgetta Jeffries wrote, ‘I praise Him for the power in the sign He gave me of speaking in tongues ... I praise God for the healing power’.<sup>153</sup> Florence Crawford wrote,

---

<sup>143</sup> ‘Gracious Pentecostal Showers Continue to Fall’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1.

<sup>144</sup> ‘We do preach in testifying’, writes W.J. Seymour, ‘In Money Matters’, p. 3.

<sup>145</sup> A.H. Post, ‘Testimony of a Minister’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 4.

<sup>146</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘River of Living Water’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2; W.J. Seymour, ‘The Baptism with the Holy Ghost’, p. 7; cf. A.S. Copley, ‘Pentecost in Toronto’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 4; J. Hebden, ‘This is the Power of the Holy Ghost’, *AF* (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 4.

<sup>147</sup> ‘What use is it unless understood ... but in the mighty power and demonstration of the Holy Ghost’, ‘Missions in Los Angeles’, *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 2.

<sup>148</sup> A.A. Boddy, ‘Reports from England’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 1.

<sup>149</sup> ‘The Promised Latter Rain Now Being Poured out on God’s Humble People’, p. 1; cf. G.A. Cook, ‘The Pentecostal Power In Indianapolis’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 3.

<sup>150</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘The Holy Ghost and the Bride’, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 4.

<sup>151</sup> A.B. Shepherd, ‘Pentecostal Testimonies’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>152</sup> ‘Pentecost With Signs Following’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1.

<sup>153</sup> Georgetta Jeffries, ‘Another Witness’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

I am filled with wonder, love, and praise that God would permit me to see the workings of His mighty power in these last days. O to think we have lived to see the return of the apostolic power and to see the gifts restored back to the church.<sup>154</sup>

The restoration of tongues affirmed the NT worldview of an unseen spiritual battle: ‘apostolic power will mean apostolic persecution. Hell with all its power will be turned loose’.<sup>155</sup> Consider the report from one Pentecostal camp meeting: ‘the enemy came in as an angel of light, and we had a battle with the powers of darkness; but it was turned into victory after all’.<sup>156</sup> Spiritual battles required confronting demons with Pentecostal power.<sup>157</sup> Though there is counterfeit power, like Ananias and Sapphira, ‘God's power was mightier than all the forces of hell, so their sin found them out’.<sup>158</sup> For Seymour, power was defined more broadly than just tongues. It was an infusion of ‘divine power’ that invested the individual with ‘heavenly authority’:<sup>159</sup>

when you have the Holy Ghost, you have an empire, a power within yourself ... So when we get the power of the Holy Ghost, we will see the heavens open and the Holy Ghost power falling on earth, power over sickness, diseases and death.<sup>160</sup>

Overtly seeking power had its pluses and minuses. To outsiders Pentecostals sounded braggadocios, but their own self-perception was that of genuine awe and humility at being used by God. For example, ‘we are only in the A.B.C. (sic) of this wonderful power of God that is to sweep over the world’.<sup>161</sup> Another shared, ‘if we all keep low down at the feet of Jesus and give Him all the honor and glory, (that) all the power and signs of Pentecost will be restored’.<sup>162</sup> Durham assessed that Seymour’s

---

<sup>154</sup> F. Crawford, ‘Testimony And Praise To God’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 4.

<sup>155</sup> *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3; cf. J.G. Bourman, ‘A Businessman’s Testimony of Pentecost’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 4.

<sup>156</sup> ‘Everywhere Preaching The Word’, *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1.

<sup>157</sup> ‘Pentecostal Power in San Diego’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 1. ‘O to think He has given us this power and these words of the Father that bring instant healing, and rebuke demons and bring salvation to poor perishing souls’, ‘Electric Messages From The Field’, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2.

<sup>158</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Counterfeits’, p. 2.

<sup>159</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘The Holy Spirit Bishop of the Church’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907). p. 3.

<sup>160</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, p. 3.

<sup>161</sup> ‘Hallelujah for the Prospect’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4. ‘Power with God meant deep humility in our dealings with our fellow creatures’, G.A. Cook, ‘Receiving the Holy Ghost’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2.

<sup>162</sup> *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3.

power was ‘in his weakness’.<sup>163</sup> ‘Power came only through heart purity’, noted one testimony.<sup>164</sup> Yet, Pentecostals offered demonstrations of power. They looked down on those merely ‘theorizing’ and offered a ‘public testimony of His power’.<sup>165</sup> They were critical of ‘the feebleness of the so-called sanctified’ (WH people) because they ‘failed to reach the glory and power of a true Pentecost’.<sup>166</sup> Pentecostal power was often contrasted with powerless ‘formal’ Christianity. A minister of the Church of England confessed that ‘we are altogether too formal, we need the power of the Holy Spirit’ and even credits the demise of the Welsh revival with an attempt ‘to graft it (the Spirit’s power) on to their creeds and formalism’.<sup>167</sup>

## 2. Prayer.

Without much thought as to the nature of tongues, glossolalia was assumed to be horizontal speech towards men either as xenolalia or prophecy, or it was vertical speech with God. In contexts where it was not a sign of empowerment, the glossolalic was often able to discern whether her inspired speech was prayer or praise. Many reported a deeper level of prayer and worship as a result of glossolalia:

they do not speak in tongues in the assembly, but when in prayer; they become intense in their supplication; they are apt to break out in the unknown tongue, which is invariably followed by ascriptions of praise and adoration which are well-nigh unutterable.<sup>168</sup>

This deeper prayer through glossolalia could occur in the public setting, as in the example above, or in a private one: ‘while in secret prayer at my bedside, I was led of the Spirit to pray in an unknown language for nearly all the world’.<sup>169</sup> The article, ‘Prayer’, stated succinctly the reasoning of praying in tongues and revealed that the

---

<sup>163</sup> Durham, ‘A Chicago Evangelist’s Pentecost’, p. 4.

<sup>164</sup> ‘In Allegheny, PA’, AF 1.7. (Apr 1907), p. 1. ‘When we see people that are not bringing forth the fruits of the Spirit, it matters not how many tongues or how much power to move mountains they may have, the Lord says they are nothing’, AF 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 3.

<sup>165</sup> AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2; ‘Baptized in New York’, p. 3.

<sup>166</sup> A.G. Garr, ‘Pentecost in Danville, VA’, p. 2; ‘The Apostolic Faith Mission’, AF 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 2.

<sup>167</sup> S.J. Mead, ‘On the Way to Africa’, AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 5.

<sup>168</sup> ‘The Promise of the Father and Speaking with Tongues in Chicago’, p. 3.

<sup>169</sup> ‘Arrested for Jesus’ Sake’, p. 3.

early Pentecostals had incorporated Paul's theology of glossolalia in Rom. 8.26: 'prayer is the Spirit making intercession through you. Sometime it is in groanings that cannot be uttered. He takes your whole being and commences prevailing through you'.<sup>170</sup>

### 3. Praise.

If the language one spoke was neither a human language nor prayer, it was praise to God according to Acts 10.46.<sup>171</sup> Cashwell wrote, 'I began to speak in tongues and praise God. A brother interpreted some of the words to be, "I love God with all my soul"'.<sup>172</sup> Praise was often the lubricant and result of an encounter with God.<sup>173</sup> Lucy Leatherman testified that she was seeking the Baptism and that her praise brought her through 'the wound in His side' and the Lord said 'Praise Me', whereupon she 'began to praise Him in an unknown language'.<sup>174</sup> One article compared the coming of the Holy Spirit to the singers and trumpeters giving praise when the Lord's presence came down at the dedication of Solomon's Temple:

when they praised the Lord in unison, the house was filled with the glory of the Lord. He will fill the room and you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost and with fire, and God will give you a new tongue as a trumpet in singing or speaking.<sup>175</sup>

Praise occurred in private, at work,<sup>176</sup> or in a public worship setting, and when it was the latter occurred, it was occasionally interpreted as praise for the audience.<sup>177</sup> A.A. Boddy took a more Pauline view of tongues according to a reprinted tract. He wrote that 'men and women and even children (are) magnifying God in tongues' or 'speaking

---

<sup>170</sup> 'Prayer', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 3.

<sup>171</sup> 'Speaking in Tongues', *AF* 1.13 (May 1908), p. 4. For example, 'he went to the altar ... and arose drunk on the new wine of the kingdom, magnifying God in a new tongue', 'Other Points', *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1.

<sup>172</sup> G.B. Cashwell, 'Came 3,000 Miles For His Pentecost', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3; cf. Tom Anderson, 'Pentecostal Testimonies', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>173</sup> A.G. Garr, 'Pentecost in Danville, VA', p. 2; cf. *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 2. 'It was not long till the flood of joy began and all over the room they were praising and glorifying God in different tongues', 'The "Latter Rain" in Zion City, Ill', *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 1.

<sup>174</sup> 'Pentecostal Experience', *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 4.

<sup>175</sup> 'Type of Pentecost. II Chron. 5', *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 3.

<sup>176</sup> Two back-to-back testimonies told of being overcome while at work finding expression in glossolalia, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1.

<sup>177</sup> For example, 'Holy Ghost Singing', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 4.

mysteries to God for their own strengthening':<sup>178</sup> 'what I felt and realized of the sorrow and love of Jesus was beyond all expression, finding vent only in another "tongue"'.<sup>179</sup>

#### 4. Revelation.

It could be argued that revelation as a theological category could include all the purposes listed above. However, because glossolalia signalled the presence of God many experienced revelations: 'many have seen visions of Jesus and of heavenly fire'.<sup>180</sup> Another simply says, 'the Christians have seen their God', as an explanation of the tongues.<sup>181</sup> This divine and human encounter elicited a verbal response. Myrtle K. Shideler had an ecstatic experience and received a revelation of 'which there are not words enough in the English language to express'.<sup>182</sup> 'When He comes in, He comes talking', summarized one writer.<sup>183</sup> At other times, 'it means that the Spirit hushes all the flesh ... let all flesh be silent before Him'.<sup>184</sup> Often the Spirit revealed sin.<sup>185</sup> Tongues not only revealed God's mysteries to his people but also hid the meaning from Satan.<sup>186</sup>

Overall, Pentecostals believed they were on solid biblical ground for glossolalia in many ways; nevertheless, the first battle for Pentecostalism regarded sanctification's relationship to SB.

### E. Sanctification and Divine Love.

The issues of sanctification and divine love were broadly discussed in connection with glossolalia.

---

<sup>178</sup> 'Pentecost in England', p. 1.

<sup>179</sup> 'Reports from England', p. 1.

<sup>180</sup> 'Pentecost in Australia', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1.

<sup>181</sup> 'The Pentecostal Revival', p. 4.

<sup>182</sup> This ecstatic-like testimony starts with her being 'glued to the floor' because of the power of God. She begins to speak a few 'broken sentences' in tongues and then receives her unspeakable revelation. She bursts into spontaneous praise and adoration, whereupon she has either a second or a fuller revelation that includes Jesus himself, Myrtle K. Schideler, 'Received Her Pentecost', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

<sup>183</sup> 'Pentecost In Other Lands', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 1.

<sup>184</sup> *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 5.

<sup>185</sup> *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3.

<sup>186</sup> 'Unlocked by Prayer', p. 3.

## 1. Sanctification.

Sanctification was tied to glossolalia in two ways; it sequentially preceded SB and only a sanctified person could be Spirit baptized.

Separating sanctification from SB was an early priority because most WH groups believed the baptism of the Spirit to be the same as sanctification.<sup>187</sup> They could not imagine God using a dirty vessel for the grand task of world evangelism. One had to be cleansed before they could be used. The *AF* stated, ‘they could not receive the Spirit if they were not clean’.<sup>188</sup> Therefore, sequentially and pragmatically, ‘the Baptism with the Holy Ghost is a gift of power upon the sanctified life’.<sup>189</sup>

This point was emphasized in the opening lines of the first issue:

Pentecost has surely come and with it the Bible evidences are following, many being *converted* and *sanctified* and *filled* with the Holy Ghost, speaking in tongues as they did on the day of Pentecost.<sup>190</sup>

Seymour testified how he had thought the baptism of the Spirit was sanctification, but learned otherwise.<sup>191</sup> The reason for emphasizing this point was clear:

too many have confused the grace of Sanctification with the endowment of Power, or the Baptism with the Holy Ghost; others have taken ‘the anointing that abideth’ for the Baptism, and failed to reach the glory and power of a true Pentecost.<sup>192</sup>

Spirit baptism, like the Day of Pentecost, is an equipping power evidenced by ‘speaking in new tongues’ providing a ‘new language’.<sup>193</sup>

---

<sup>187</sup> ‘Bro. Rosa’s Testimony’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 1; ‘One Church’, p. 3; ‘A Holiness Preacher Who Received Pentecost’, p. 7.

<sup>188</sup> ‘The Apostolic Faith Mission’, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2; cf. ‘Cured of Doubts and Fears’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 2.

<sup>189</sup> ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’, p. 2. This one appears to be part of a brief doctrinal section under the circulation information. It is repeated verbatim in *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2, *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 2; and in modified forms in *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2, and *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2.

<sup>190</sup> ‘Pentecost Has Come’, p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>191</sup> See, ‘Bro. Seymour’s Call’ and ‘Pentecost Has Come’, p. 1.

<sup>192</sup> This appears in what could be considered a statement of faith, entitled ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’. It appears under the subscription information, p. 2.

<sup>193</sup> ‘The Old-Time Pentecost’, *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 2; ‘Two Works Of Grace And The Gift Of the Holy Ghost’, *AF* 1.1 Sep 1906), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

This WH-Pentecostal position on sanctification did not waver in *AF*.<sup>194</sup> The Pentecostal view of SB did not ask WH people to disregard their belief and experience of an evidential sanctification, but added a third experience beyond the two works of grace (justification and sanctification):

those who have received the baptism with the Holy Ghost testify that they had a clear evidence of sanctification first. Hundreds testify that they received the Bible evidence of speaking in a new tongue.<sup>195</sup>

In fact, SB and the vocal nature of tongues complimented the WH doctrine of sanctification. Seymour wrote that, ‘when we get the baptism with the Holy Spirit, we have something to tell, and it is that the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth from all sin’.<sup>196</sup> Unlike justification or sanctification, ‘the baptism with the Holy Ghost is not a work of grace but a gift of power. Sanctification is the second and last work of grace’.<sup>197</sup>

There are two other nuances of sanctification in *AF*. First, it was a sealing for the Second Coming:

the only people that will meet our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and go with Him into the marriage supper of the Lamb, are the wise virgins – not only saved and sanctified, with pure and clean hearts, but having the baptism with the Holy Ghost.<sup>198</sup>

This does not appear to be a strong theme,<sup>199</sup> and the eschatology in the newspaper seems inconsistent.<sup>200</sup> Second, some drew a hard line between fruit of the Spirit and SB:

---

<sup>194</sup> Surprisingly, Durham’s testimony does not include any mention of sanctification at this point, Durham, ‘A Chicago Evangelist’s Pentecost’, p. 4.

<sup>195</sup> ‘Gracious Pentecostal Showers Continue to Fall’, p. 1.

<sup>196</sup> Seymour, ‘River of Living Water’, p. 2.

<sup>197</sup> ‘The Enduement Of Power’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2.

<sup>198</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘Behold, the Bridegroom Cometh’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2; cf. ‘Preserved and Sealed’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7: ‘He cleanses from all unrighteousness and afterwards pours in oil. And when He fills you up with oil, then He sends you out to proclaim His precious Word. This oil keeps us pure and sweet and preserved’.

<sup>199</sup> ‘Sanctification makes us holy, but the baptism with the Holy Spirit empowers us for service after we are sanctified, and seals us unto the day of redemption’, ‘Questions Answered (*AF*)’, p. 2; cf. W.J. Seymour, ‘Receive Ye The Holy Ghost’, p. 2.

<sup>200</sup> For example, in a lengthy unsigned article, the author wrote, ‘to have part in the rapture we must be sanctified and holy and live the life of a full overcomer’ with no mention of SB, ‘Full Overcomers’, *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 2.

'when we are sanctified, we have ... the fruits of the Spirit; but when we are baptized with the Holy Ghost, He comes in with His gifts'.<sup>201</sup>

Nevertheless, the walk of a sanctified person grew to be a distinguishing mark of SB parallel to glossolalia. Again, the acknowledgement of the potential of counterfeit tongues in the fourth issue appears to have been seminal.<sup>202</sup> Seymour notes that there were real and counterfeits in the Kingdom of God, but reminded true believers to walk in the light and to remember that Jesus' blood cleanses from all sin, that spiritual discernment is required.<sup>203</sup> In the final issue, Seymour affirms that tongues will occur at SB, it is the 'Azusa standard'; however, the article also emphasized that a genuine SB will reveal itself in unity with other believers, sanctification and divine love.<sup>204</sup> Even his call for the Shekinah glory to rest upon Spirit baptized people like the fiery tongues of Pentecost did not appear to be a statement on glossolalia but rather purity.<sup>205</sup> These ethical qualities are in addition to the missionary thrust of Pentecostal SB.<sup>206</sup>

## 2. Divine Love.

Another distinguishing mark was divine love. Durham wrote, 'the first thing that impressed me was the love and unity that prevailed in the meeting, and the heavenly sweetness that filled the very air that I breathed'.<sup>207</sup> Many connected divine love to the inspired speech at SB, similar to a motive or impetus to speak.<sup>208</sup> Cashwell's testimony was typical: 'He filled me with His Spirit and love, and I am now feasting and drinking

---

<sup>201</sup> AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 5.

<sup>202</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'Counterfeits', p. 2.

<sup>203</sup> W. Seymour does not use the word spiritual discernment, he notes 'the Holy Spirit would reveal to every one of the true children that had the Pentecostal baptism, and put a heavy rebuke upon the counterfeit', W.J. Seymour, 'Counterfeits', p. 2.

<sup>204</sup> 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', p. 3. He writes, the 'Apostolic Faith means one accord, one soul, one heart', and 'He will find pure channels to flow through sanctified avenues for His power', and finally, 'a sanctified person is cleansed and filled with divine love'.

<sup>205</sup> It is nestled in between two sections entitled, 'The Baptism Falls on a Clean Heart' and 'The Holy Ghost Flows Through Pure Channels'.

<sup>206</sup> 'The Holy Ghost and the Bride', p. 4.

<sup>207</sup> Durham, 'A Chicago Evangelist's Pentecost', p. 4. It was the love and singing in the Spirit that created a longing in his heart for more.

<sup>208</sup> For example, Ardell K. Mead testified that, 'the Spirit 'flooded (me) with Divine love; and I commenced to speak as I would sing a new song', Ardell K. Mead, 'Sister Mead's Baptism', p. 3.

at the fountain continually and speak as the Spirit gives utterance'.<sup>209</sup> One Nazarene brother viewed it as the main spiritual result of SB: 'it was a baptism of love. Such abounding love! Such compassion seemed to almost kill me with its sweetness! ... This baptism fills us with divine love'.<sup>210</sup> Another connected it with the power of SB:

the Pentecostal power, when you sum it all up, is just more of God's love. If it does not bring more love, it is simply a counterfeit ... Pentecost makes us love Jesus more and love our brothers more. It brings us all into one common family.<sup>211</sup>

Others were content to leave it undefined theologically and saw divine love as a part of the atmosphere of the Holy Spirit. For example, 'I have entered into the deeper experience. Have received the speaking, singing, and reciting poetry in a number of languages' wrote pastor J.T. Boddy, and each time I receive 'something new, with love and all the fruits of the Spirit increased, and adoration to Jesus intermingled'.<sup>212</sup>

Divine love, like the fruit of the Spirit, was considered a more reliable sign than tongues. For example, 'when we see people that are not bringing forth the fruits of the Spirit, it matters not how many tongues or how much power to move mountains they may have, the Lord says they are nothing'.<sup>213</sup> As a genuine mark, divine love cannot be counterfeited, though it can be lost through backsliding.<sup>214</sup> Seymour connected divine love with sanctification and not SB: 'a sanctified person is cleansed and filled with divine love, but the one that is baptized with the Holy Ghost has the power of God'.<sup>215</sup> In one article, the editorial staff replied that the real evidence of SB is divine love and the fruit of the Spirit. However the next sentence revealed the struggle to develop a consistent theological position. They wrote that divine love and the fruit of the Spirit, are

---

<sup>209</sup> Cashwell, 'Came 3,000 Miles', p. 3.

<sup>210</sup> AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

<sup>211</sup> AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

<sup>212</sup> J.T. Boddy, 'Pentecostal Testimonies', AF 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>213</sup> AF 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 3. 'If you find people that get a harsh spirit, and even talk in tongues in a harsh spirit, it is not the Holy Ghost talking. His utterances are in power and glory and with blessing and sweetness', AF 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2.

<sup>214</sup> AF 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 4. Love was the first mark of the Spirit to go when someone backslid while tongues could remain for a while before melting away.

<sup>215</sup> W.J. Seymour, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', p. 3.

the real Bible evidence in their daily walk and conversation; and the outward manifestations; speaking in tongues and the signs following; casting out devils, laying hands on the sick and the sick being healed, and the love of God for souls increasing in their hearts.<sup>216</sup>

These two distinguishing marks for these Pentecostals were more pragmatic than theological. It is as if they were saying, ‘show me what you do rather than tell me what you believe’.<sup>217</sup>

#### F. The Heavenly Anthem.

There was one component of glossolalia that was greeted with much favour, the heavenly anthem (HA). Jennie Moore, the future wife of Seymour, was the first woman to speak in tongues at the cottage prayer meeting on Bonnie Brae Street in Los Angeles when the Spirit first fell on Monday, April 9<sup>th</sup>, 1906. She described the encounter:

I sang under the power of the Spirit in many languages, the interpretation both words and music which I had never before heard ... the Spirit led me to the piano, where I played and sang under inspiration, although I had not learned to play.<sup>218</sup>

The HA<sup>219</sup> was a part of the ASM revival from the beginning, and there were numerous testimonies and accounts throughout AF. A careful reading revealed a consensus regarding HA’s inspiration, general nature, direction, emotional affect, and purpose. For example, note how the first published account of the HA reads very close to Moore’s testimony, ‘the Lord is giving new voices, he translates old songs into new tongues, he gives the music that is being sung by the angels and has a heavenly choir all singing the same heavenly song in harmony’.<sup>220</sup>

First, the HA was believed to be inspired-speech, because it was in 1 Cor. 14.15. When one sang in this fashion, it was under the direction of the Holy Spirit: ‘no one but

---

<sup>216</sup> ‘Questions Answered (AF)’, p. 2.

<sup>217</sup> For example, ‘we are not fighting men or churches, but seeking to displace dead forms and creeds and wild fanaticisms *with living, practical Christianity*. “Love, Faith, Unity” are our watchwords, and “Victory through the Atoning Blood” our battle cry’, ‘The Apostolic Faith Movement’, p. 2, italics mine.

<sup>218</sup> J. Moore, ‘Music from Heaven’, p. 3.

<sup>219</sup> Other monikers are the ‘heavenly song’, ‘singing in the Spirit’, ‘singing in tongues’, ‘chorus of tongues’, the ‘heavenly choir’, the ‘heavenly chant’, or ‘heavenly chorus’ but an article in the fifth issue entitles the phenomena as ‘the Heavenly Anthem’, ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

<sup>220</sup> AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1.

those who are baptized with the Holy Ghost are able to join in – or better, the Holy Ghost only sings through such in that manner', read one testimony.<sup>221</sup> An even bolder statement read that the HA defies 'all the power of human (sic) to imitate'.<sup>222</sup> It was considered a gift of the Spirit without any reflection upon it not being among Paul's specific lists. For example, 'the gift of singing and playing instruments in the Spirit has been given'.<sup>223</sup>

Second, the HA was a spontaneous new song sung either in a heavenly language or in xenolalia, but occasionally it occurred with a familiar hymn or melody, with one report of a 'Christmas carol in tongues'.<sup>224</sup> Mason says, 'He has sung hundreds of songs (through me). I do not have time to go back over one to practice it, for the next will be new'.<sup>225</sup> For these early Pentecostals, it was heaven come down to earth: 'she started singing in the same tongue (Chinese-like). What heavenly music! It sounded very much like an angel's voice coming rolling (sic) over the balconies of heaven'.<sup>226</sup>

Third, one can discern a deep emotion in these reports and testimonies. There was an overflowing joy, like someone going to one's own wedding,<sup>227</sup> or an awe-inspiring beauty<sup>228</sup> that could last for hours.<sup>229</sup> One writer said it was an 'indescribable experience and must be passed through to appreciate it'.<sup>230</sup> Though spontaneous, it was controllable by the speaker. J.T. Boddy, wrote,

I have entered into the deeper experience. Have received the speaking, singing, and reciting poetry in a number of languages, with power to use one or two at will in public services or with private persons when the Lord leads'.<sup>231</sup>

---

<sup>221</sup> 'The Heavenly Anthem', p. 3.

<sup>222</sup> 'Bro. Ryan Receives His Pentecost', *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 3. cf. C. Eckert, 'Pentecost at a Funeral', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

<sup>223</sup> *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1907), p. 4.

<sup>224</sup> 'The Heavenly Anthem', p. 3.

<sup>225</sup> C.H. Mason, 'Testimonies', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 4.

<sup>226</sup> 'A Policeman Receives Pentecost', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1.

<sup>227</sup> Mason, 'Tennessee Evangelist Witnesses', p. 7.

<sup>228</sup> It is the 'most ravishing and unearthly music', wrote one eyewitness, Durham, 'A Chicago Evangelist's Pentecost', p. 3, cf. Eben Lind, 'Healed By The Lord', *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 3.

<sup>229</sup> Boddy, 'Personal Testimonies', p. 8, cf. Kathleen Scott, 'Testimonies', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 4.

<sup>230</sup> G.H. Lester, 'Testimonies', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 4.

<sup>231</sup> Boddy, 'Personal Testimonies', p. 8.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

There are only a couple reports of being overwhelmed in song to the point of losing control in an ecstatic fashion. An example from Kilsyth, Scotland read,

an engine driver was making his way home, and his legs gave way. The power of God fell on him, and they supported him to Brother Murdoch's (sic) kitchen where many have received the baptism, and he was soon 'through,' singing as the Spirit gave him utterance, and has been singing ever since.<sup>232</sup>

Fourth, theologically, the HA was a synonym for SB's IE. It was the bible evidence in song not speech. For example, one report read, 'a 10 year old was the first to get the baptism, he began clapping his hands and singing "Jesus Savior, pilot me"'.<sup>233</sup> Another read, the Holy Spirit 'gave me the Bible evidence of speaking and singing in tongues'.<sup>234</sup> It was believed that God determined the evidence; 'He will manifest His power in the demonstration of speaking *or* singing in tongues, just as the Holy Ghost chooses'.<sup>235</sup> At times it was like God priming the pump with the HA before seekers would effortlessly speak in tongues.<sup>236</sup> For example, one man 'began a song without words for a time (worshiping in the Spirit) then a few utterances in tongues, and so on till he spoke most fluently'.<sup>237</sup> Missionary Antoinette Moomu's testimony sounded similar. She wrote that after a complete sanctification, 'I was charged with the power of God and my soul flooded with glory. The Spirit sang praises unto God. Glory to Jesus. He gave me the Bible experiences, speaking through me in other tongues'.<sup>238</sup> Another wrote, 'It is so solemn and yet so heavenly and deepen's (sic) one's hunger' for the Holy Spirit.<sup>239</sup> And a grieving mother's heart was healed of the pain over her young child's death when she joined in singing with the 'voice divine'.<sup>240</sup> Female writers tended to write in more

---

<sup>232</sup> 'Pentecostal Outpouring in Scotland', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1. 'When singing or speaking in tongues, your mind does not take any part in it', 'Honor The Holy Ghost', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 2.

<sup>233</sup> 'Pentecost Among the Young People', *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3.

<sup>234</sup> R.J. Scott, 'What Pentecost Did for One Family', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7, cf. 'Humble Sister', *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 4.

<sup>235</sup> *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 3. Italics mine. 'The Lord sings and speaks through you in another tongue', 'Pentecostal Notes', p. 3.

<sup>236</sup> Mrs. J. Hebden, 'This is the Power of the Holy Ghost', p. 4.

<sup>237</sup> *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 1.

<sup>238</sup> A. Moomau, 'China Missionary Receives Pentecost', p. 3.

<sup>239</sup> 'From Distant Lands', *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 1.

<sup>240</sup> C. Eckert, 'Pentecost at a Funeral', p. 3.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
poetic language. For example, springtime and the accompanying birdsong were perhaps the most sublime definition of the HA: ‘the flowers all bud out in their souls, and they commence singing in tongues like the birds, showing us that the Holy Ghost brings spring to our hearts, and the blossoms and the fruit commence growing.’<sup>241</sup>

Fifth, the HA normally occurred in a public worship setting where the direction of the speech was upwards to God in praise. Often there was a desire to translate the praise horizontally, like prophecy to the hearers.<sup>242</sup> One eyewitness wrote that she sang a song in tongues which she then interpreted as the ‘Doxology’.<sup>243</sup> At times it was even thought to be a specific portion of scripture sung in a foreign language.<sup>244</sup>

These pioneers believed something spiritual happened when the HA occurred, but they usually saw it as parallel to speaking in tongues. Yet, as controversial as tongues were in that day, Frank Bartleman wrote that the HA’s near unanimous approval ‘seemed to still criticism and opposition, and was hard for even wicked men to gainsay or ridicule’.<sup>245</sup>

## G. Tongues as a Gift of the Holy Spirit.

Though the Pauline components of glossolalia were not fully developed in *AF*, at times one can see glimpses of Paul’s writings. First, while some seem unaware of a distinction between the bible sign and gift of tongues,<sup>246</sup> others saw a distinctions: ‘at first I find that I had tongues as a sign, now as one of the gifts’.<sup>247</sup> Their nomenclature itself was confusing and how this spiritual gift functioned in the congregation was unfamiliar.<sup>248</sup>

---

<sup>241</sup> *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2.

<sup>242</sup> ‘Message In Tongues Interpreted’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 7, cf. *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 4.

<sup>243</sup> LA. Sims, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>244</sup> ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3, cf. ‘A Missionary Family’, *AF* 1.8 (May 1907), p. 2.

<sup>245</sup> Bartleman, *An Eyewitness Account*, p. 63. One singular reference in *AF* could be read as negative. It encourages people not to sing for ‘fancy’ but under the anointing, cf. *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 2. Robeck notes two negative accounts outside of the *AF*. One from a newspaper reporter, but the most notable would be Parham who downplayed it as just another ‘negro chant’, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 150-158.

<sup>246</sup> Levi Lupton, ‘Holiness Bible School Leader Receives Pentecost’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 5.

<sup>247</sup> J. Hebden, ‘This is the Power of the Holy Ghost’, p. 4; cf. Post, ‘Testimony of a Minister’, p. 4; ‘Transformed by the Holy Ghost’, p. 5; A.B. Shepherd, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 8.

<sup>248</sup> ‘We all used to break out in tongues; but we have learned to be quieter with the gift’, Seymour, ‘Gifts Of The Spirit’, p. 2. Seymour pioneered the praxis of glossolalia in the congregational setting and as

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

For example, note how fuzzy this testimony was: ‘I myself have received the gift and speak in many different tongues’.<sup>249</sup> Here, the gift of tongues could refer to evidential tongues,<sup>250</sup> MT,<sup>251</sup> the Holy Spirit himself,<sup>252</sup> or to what Paul referenced in 1 Corinthians 12-14.<sup>253</sup> The third issue of the *AF* clearly distinguished between ‘the Bible evidence ... (and) the “gift of tongues” or “divers tongues” and the interpretation’, but this distinction was not consistently published.<sup>254</sup> Nevertheless, the following was generally accepted about the gifts of the Spirit in *AF*: 1) because eight of the nine gifts were exercised before Pentecost, tongues were somehow unique.<sup>255</sup> 2) It is a ‘free gift ... the promise of the Father’,<sup>256</sup> a ‘good gift’.<sup>257</sup> 3) ‘The Lord is restoring *all the gifts* to His church’ because ‘*all the gifts* of the Spirit ... are for the church today’.<sup>258</sup> 4) 1 Corinthians 12-14 provided the guidelines for use of the gift:<sup>259</sup> ‘we have learned to be quieter with the gift ... (so) that everything may be done decently and in order’ revealed a desire to follow the Pauline directives to Corinth.<sup>260</sup> Finally, 5), public prophecy was required to

---

such, had to deal with aberrations such as those who wanted to preach in tongues, ‘Unlocked by Prayer’, p. 3.

<sup>249</sup> E.C. Ladd, ‘In Des Moines’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 3. Cf. Maggie Geddis, ‘Found The Pearl Of Great Price’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 4.

<sup>250</sup> ‘The Promised Latter Rain Now Being Poured out on God’s Humble People’, p. 1; ‘Spanish Receive The Pentecost’, p. 3; ‘Baptized in New York’, p. 3; ‘This Is That’, p. 3.

<sup>251</sup> *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1; H.M. Allen, ‘When The Holy Ghost Speaks’, *AF* (Oct 1906), p. 2; ‘Pentecost in India’, p. 1; ‘En Route to Africa’, p. 4.

<sup>252</sup> *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1; Seymour, ‘River of Living Water’, p. 2; ‘The True Pentecost’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 2; ‘Bearing His Reproach’, *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 2.

<sup>253</sup> ‘Came From Alaska’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2; ‘The Enduement of Power’, p. 2; Post, ‘Testimony of a Minister’, p. 4.

<sup>254</sup> ‘Gracious Pentecostal Showers Continue to Fall’, p. 1; cf. ‘Transformed by the Holy Ghost’, p. 5.

<sup>255</sup> ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 2; ‘Sanctified Before Pentecost’, p. 2.

<sup>256</sup> Ophelia Wiley, ‘Sermon From A Dress’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 2; Seymour, ‘The Way Into The Holiest’, p. 4; *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1.

<sup>257</sup> *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 1; Seymour, ‘Gifts Of The Spirit’, p. 2.

<sup>258</sup> *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4. Italics mine. Cf. ‘Editors Receive The Pentecost’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 3; Post, ‘Testimony of a Minister’, p. 4; Crawford, ‘Testimony And Praise To God’, p. 4.

<sup>259</sup> ‘The True Pentecost’, p. 2; ‘Other Pentecostal Saints’, *AF* 1.4 (Dec 1906), p. 3; ‘Questions Answered (*AF*)’, p. 2.

<sup>260</sup> Seymour, ‘Gifts of the Spirit’, p. 2. This is in contrast to ‘those who have “Tongues”’ at Keswick and (were) ‘unable and unwilling to control them when moved by the Spirit’, ‘Tongues at Keswick’, *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia have an interpretation, which revealed a Pauline understanding of ‘the best gift to the church, for it builds up the saints’.<sup>261</sup> The concept of edifying oneself through glossolalia was infrequent in *AF*.<sup>262</sup>

## II. Early Southern Pentecostalism – *The Bridegroom’s Messenger*.

### A. History of the Revival.

Undoubtedly, the central figure for Pentecostalism in the south was Gaston B. Cashwell. He brought the revival fire back from Los Angeles; led what would be the East Coast revival centre; influenced many WH leaders to experience SB; and even brought several WH denominations into the Pentecostal camp. He was called ‘the apostle of Pentecost in the south’ due to his barnstorming revival tours across the south.<sup>263</sup>

Cashwell’s ministry led him from the Methodist Episcopal Church to the Holiness Church of North Carolina where he was an influential evangelist.<sup>264</sup> He heard about the ASM revival though the *Way of Faith* periodical and went to Los Angeles specifically to ‘seek for the baptism of the Holy Ghost’.<sup>265</sup> At first Cashwell was shocked by the interracial and ‘fanatical’ nature of the revival, but wrote ‘as soon as I reached Azusa Mission, a new crucifixion (sic) began in my life and I had to die to many things’.<sup>266</sup> Overcoming his racism, he insisted that Seymour pray for him and soon found what he was seeking:

the Lord opened up the windows of heaven and the light of God began to flow over me in such power as never before ... I began to speak in tongues and praise God. A brother interpreted some of the words to be, ‘I love God with all my soul.’ He filled

---

<sup>261</sup> Seymour, ‘Gifts of the Spirit’, p. 2; cf. *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1; ‘Pentecost in India’, *AF* 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 1.

<sup>262</sup> Possibly as few as two: Seymour, ‘Gifts of the Spirit’, p. 2; *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 4.

<sup>263</sup> H.V. Synan, ‘Gaston Barnabas Cashwell’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 457-58 (457).

<sup>264</sup> Stephens notes that this migration took roughly nine years and that Cashwell was a large man with a booming voice and a ‘powerful presence’, Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 201, cf. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 113.

<sup>265</sup> Cashwell, ‘Came 3,000 Miles’, p. 3; cf. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 113.

<sup>266</sup> Cashwell, ‘Came 3,000 Miles’, p. 3; cf. Synan, ‘Gaston Barnabas Cashwell’, p. 457.

me with His Spirit and love ... and speak as the Spirit gives utterance, both in my own language and in the unknown language.<sup>267</sup>

Upon his return to the south, Cashwell led a month-long revival<sup>268</sup> in Dunn, NC where thousands of WH people and many leaders<sup>269</sup> experienced SB. The revival was so strong that 'the Fire-Baptized Holiness Church (FBHC), and the Pentecostal Free-Will Baptist Church entered the pentecostal movement' though it.<sup>270</sup> Subsequent whirlwind tours by Cashwell and other recent converts<sup>271</sup> quickly brought about the Holmes Bible and Missionary Institute, two future founders of the Assemblies of God,<sup>272</sup> and influenced the Church of God (Cleveland, TN) toward the Pentecostal movement.<sup>273</sup> His own denomination was the last group to be brought into the Pentecostal movement, whereupon it changed its name to the Pentecostal Holiness Church.<sup>274</sup>

### B. Gaston B. Cashwell and Elizabeth A. Sexton as Editors.

There was a subtle difference between how Cashwell and Sexton reported on the revival. Early issues of *TBM*, largely followed the themes and interests of the *AF*.<sup>275</sup> The initial thirteen issues with Cashwell as editor were a snapshot of the leading edge of the

---

<sup>267</sup> Cashwell, 'Came 3,000 Miles', p. 3.

<sup>268</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 114; cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 218. Stephens marks this revival as the genesis of the Pentecostal movement in the south, Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 2. Stephens believes that the intense interest stems from: 'a negative, apocalyptic' premillennial eschatology that rejects civic improvement in this world, p. 138; an extensive 'print culture', pp. 111-14, 198-201; a Christianity that matches 'authentic Holy Ghost religion ... (where) tongues speech was the ultimate evidence of both Spirit empowerment and the coming of Jesus', p. 187; and a 'competitive drive against holiness fellowships', p. 222.

<sup>269</sup> 'The key to the amazing spread of the Pentecostal movement in the south was the receptive attitude of the various holiness leaders in the months from 1906 through 1908. The winning of King, Tomlinson, and Mason was crucial to the Pentecostal advance', wrote Synan. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 128.

<sup>270</sup> Synan, 'Gaston Barnabas Cashwell', p. 457; cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 218-19.

<sup>271</sup> Stephens noted that 'by 1908 hundreds of energetic evangelists were crisscrossing the South, preaching tongues and converting thousands', Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 203.

<sup>272</sup> Pinson and H.G. Rogers, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 86.

<sup>273</sup> Synan, 'Gaston Barnabas Cashwell', p. 457; Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 123-24.

<sup>274</sup> Synan, 'Gaston Barnabas Cashwell', p. 458; cf. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 117-23.

<sup>275</sup> There was even a friendly letter of encouragement by Seymour stating 'wherever this blessed gospel goes through His Spirit-filled servants – a fruitful field grows up right away', W.J. Seymour 'Letter from Bro. Seymour', p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
expanding revival and largely focused on the revival's effects in the United States.<sup>276</sup>

Even though Seymour and Cashwell envisioned a world-wide revival,<sup>277</sup> Sexton morphed *TBM* from a regional to an international revival report: 'follow His footprints around the globe and you will realize more fully that "the field is the world," and that He is stepping from continent to continent, and from zone to zone, to hasten the preparation for the great and terrible day of the Lord'.<sup>278</sup> In *TBM*, missionaries reported both their success<sup>279</sup> and struggles.<sup>280</sup>

Sexton's view was that SB was not just to evoke 'sweet heavenly melody and high-sounding praises' but worshipful obedience<sup>281</sup> to tell the whole world:

the great and last call of God has been given to the church in the Pentecostal movement. It is a call to push the missionary work; and this means that every nation must be visited with the living, saving Gospel of our Lord Jesus; and that those who

---

<sup>276</sup> During the same exact time period there were only three issues of *AF* (October, 1907, January and May 1908) while fourteen issues of *TBM* were published by Cashwell, though issue 1.10 (March 15<sup>th</sup>, 1908) is not extant.

<sup>277</sup> Many furloughing missionaries were filled with the Spirit at ASM and new ones were sent out, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 235-80. Also, the titles of articles indicate an expansive world-view: 'Beginning of World Wide Revival', *AF* 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 1; 'Pentecost Both Sides Of The Ocean', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 1; 'Everywhere Preaching the Word', *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1; 'The Lord Is Speaking in the Earth Today', *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 1; 'Fires Are Being Kindled By The Holy Ghost Throughout The World', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 1.

<sup>278</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, What Hath God Wrought?', *TBM* 2.46 (Sep 15, 1909), p. 1; e.g. E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, The Great White Harvest', *TBM* 2.38 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 1; E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Africa For Christ', *TBM* 3.68 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 1; E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Another Year of Service If The Lord Tarry', *TBM* 4.72 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>279</sup> For example: 'In Estonia ... the gift of "tongues" is heard quite often in the meetings ... they are most often uttered by young women, less frequently by men', 'Speaking in Tongues In Russia', *TBM* 3.47 (Oct 1, 1909), p. 3; 'The Pentecostal revival is rolling on in Wales ... fifteen to twenty received the baptism of the Bible sign of "tongues!" Nine received in one meeting', 'Pentecost in Wales', *TBM* 3.47 (Oct 1, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>280</sup> 'There is not one open door here where we can give this precious truth to the people', Lucy M. Leatherman, 'Pentecost In Jerusalem, Palestine', *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 1; 'Missions to Mohammedans are the most difficult of all Christian missionary enterprises ... we must break the influence of Mohammedanism or we shall ourselves be broken', 'Africa The Battle Ground', *TBM* 4.88 (Jun 15, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>281</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, "And Ye Would Not"', *TBM* 2.31 (Feb 1, 1909), p. 1. Popular missionary Thomas Junk notes that 'it pays to be obedient and go all the way with the Lord', Thomas Junk, 'From Bro. Thos. Junk', *TBM* 3.53 (Jan 1, 1910), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

are sent must measure up to the Bible standard, equipped as the disciples were after Pentecost.<sup>282</sup>

Sexton challenged her readers, ‘O beloved, God is evidently calling for Spirit-filled workers who would lay down their lives for the gospel’.<sup>283</sup> Those called to foreign lands needed to speak in tongues<sup>284</sup> and be totally committed.<sup>285</sup> *TBM* staff took responsibility for missionary offerings and distribution<sup>286</sup> and passed on practical advice, such as the need for passports.<sup>287</sup> From her editorial desk Sexton saw the world. She gave a large amount of space to foreign missions which reflected her theology of tongues: from Jerusalem to the ends of the earth.

### C. Bible Evidence and Sanctification.

#### 1. The Bible Evidence.<sup>288</sup>

Without question the expected biblical sign of SB was glossolalia, because it was clear from the pattern from the book of Acts<sup>289</sup> and Mk 16.17. Mark 16.17 was heavily relied upon as Jesus’ singular explicit reference to glossolalia.<sup>290</sup> Cashwell wrote, that Bro.

---

<sup>282</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, Increasing Missionary Activity’, *TBM* 3.69 (Sep 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>283</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorial, Going With A Message’, *TBM* 4.76 (Dec 15, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>284</sup> Often, the sole credential for several new missionaries is ‘the baptism of the Holy Spirit after the manner of the day of Pentecost’, Albert Norton, ‘The New Missionaries’, *TBM* 1.31 (Feb 1, 1909), p. 2. Some cautioned against tongues as the sole criterion: ‘do not think ... That because you received the spirit with the sign of the new tongues that you must necessarily drop your present occupation (1 Cor. 7:20-24) and go right out preaching’, ‘Good Advice’, *TBM* 3.60 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>285</sup> For example, ‘my work here is till Jesus comes or I am called home. I never shall see the home land again till I see it from the clouds’, Thomas Junk, ‘Bro. Thos. Junk’s Letter’, *TBM* 3.59 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>286</sup> Mrs. G.B. Cashwell acted as ‘Secretary and Treasurer’ until, at least, December 1<sup>st</sup>, 1908. See report, *TBM* 2.27 (Dec 1, 1908), p. 2. Eventually, Miss Sadie Wightman was added as a missions editor, ‘Missionary Editor’, *TBM* 8.167 (Feb 1, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>287</sup> Editor, ‘To Out-Going Missionaries’ *TBM* 5.105 (Mar 1, 1912), p. 2; cf. 5.111 (Jun 1, 1912), p. 3.

<sup>288</sup> The most common term used in *TBM* was ‘Bible evidence’. Other descriptors include: the ‘same evidence’, the ‘real Bible evidence’, a ‘necessary evidence’, and also the ‘infallible evidence’, cf. G.B. Cashwell, ‘Editorials (2)’, *TBM* 1.6 (Jan 15, 1908), p. 1; Eli Gardner, ‘A Great Mistake’, *TBM* 3.61 (May 1, 1910), p. 4; Mrs. A.J. Hough, ‘My Pentecostal Baptism’, *TBM* 4.83 (Apr 1, 1911), p. 3; K.E. England, ‘Latter Rain Falling’, *TBM* 6.136 (Jul 1, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>289</sup> Barrett, ‘The Holy Ghost In Samaria’, *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>290</sup> ‘I expect to see the last of Mark verified out in the east of Canada’, C.E. Kent, ‘Asks for Prayer’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 2; cf. E.D. Gatlin, ‘Bonneau, S.C.’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 3; Christine Eckman, ‘Speaking In Tongues’, *TBM* 2.30 (Jan 15, 1909), p. 4; E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorial, And These Signs Shall Follow Them That Believe (#1)’, *TBM* 7.151 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 1; A.W.F., ‘Gospel Manuscripts’, *TBM* 8.160 (Aug 15,

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

McManning ‘was filled with the Holy Ghost and spoke in tongues, *as all do who receive Him*’,<sup>291</sup> they will ‘have the same effect and give the same evidence that He did on the day of Pentecost and down through the apostles’.<sup>292</sup> One article, similar to a statement of faith, noted that ‘we teach that all who receive the Pentecostal baptism of the Holy Ghost speak with other tongues as the Spirit gives them utterance’.<sup>293</sup> Boddy wrote that ‘none are satisfied unless they have the sign of tongues’.<sup>294</sup> There were numerous examples in the early issues.<sup>295</sup> Some even retracted their opposition to the doctrine after having experienced it.<sup>296</sup> One stated, ‘what a great loss it would have been to me to have stopped short of the real Bible evidence ... press on and get God’s best’.<sup>297</sup> Tongues were the litmus test, with only a few exceptions. For example, G.W. Hall testified of a young boy who danced in the Spirit for his evidence,<sup>298</sup> and there were a few testimonies of a delay between SB and evidential glossolalia, but far fewer than in AF.<sup>299</sup>

For the believer, evidential tongues was to ‘prove that the Holy Ghost has taken possession of the Temple ... that the promise has been fulfilled’.<sup>300</sup> Those promises included that one had received the same power that the apostles received<sup>301</sup> for a ‘larger

---

1914), p. 4; Ella J. Staley, ‘My Testimony’, *TBM* 9.180 (Mar 1, 1916), p. 4; and E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorial, And These Signs Shall Follow Them That Believe (#2)’, *TBM* 9.186 (Sep 1, 1916), p. 1.

<sup>291</sup> G.B. Cashwell, ‘The Victory at Pleasant Grove Camp Meeting’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>292</sup> Cashwell, ‘Editorials (2)’, p. 1.

<sup>293</sup> ‘Questions and Answers (*TBM*)’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>294</sup> A.A. Boddy, ‘Conference of Pentecostal Saints at Hamburg, Germany’, *TBM* 2.32 (Feb 15, 1909), p. 2.

<sup>295</sup> H.H. Goff, ‘H.H. Goff’s Letter’, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 2; Fannie Winn, ‘How God has Blessed the Work of Our Missionaries in China’, *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>296</sup> H.M. Turney, ‘An Explanation’, *TBM* 2.33 (Mar 1, 1909), p. 2; B.F. Duncan ‘Athens, Ga’, *TBM* 3.60 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>297</sup> Gardner, ‘A Great Mistake’, p. 4; cf. England, ‘Latter Rain Falling’, p. 2.

<sup>298</sup> G.W. Hall, ‘Pentecost Among the Holiness Baptists’, *TBM* 1.22 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>299</sup> For example, ‘I received the baptism of the Holy Ghost in April 10th, 1908, but the first manifestation I received was in January – the same year’, W.J. Harvey, ‘Key West, Fla’, *TBM* 2.38 (May 15, 1909), p. 4; cf. H.M. Turney, ‘From England’, *TBM* 2.32 (Feb 15, 1909), p. 4.

<sup>300</sup> Lizzie Frazer, ‘Portion of a Letter from India’, *TBM* 1.6 (Jan 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>301</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, A Tract That Will Interest You’, *TBM* 2.37 (May 1, 1909), p. 1

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia witness for Jesus';<sup>302</sup> that they were now ‘especially equipped for the Master’s kingdom’;<sup>303</sup> and to prove that ‘we are his sent ones’.<sup>304</sup> Thomas B. Barrett summarizes, that ‘where tongues … are bestowed, we have a special and gracious evidence of the Holy Spirit’s indwelling presence (Acts x.46)’.<sup>305</sup>

Tongues were also a sign to the unbeliever according to 1 Cor. 14.22. This Pauline component was an advancement from *AF*’s nearly exclusive Lucan theology.<sup>306</sup> Tongues convinced some unbelievers<sup>307</sup> and hardened others:<sup>308</sup> ‘when Pentecost comes around, and people get the sign, and don’t accept the Holy Ghost, they get further off’.<sup>309</sup>

## 2. Sanctification and Divine Love.

The early Pentecostal experience of glossolalia elicited a re-examination of sanctification from two vantage points: soteriology and as a sign.

Soteriologically, that tongues now accompanied SB meant that many WH people had to redefine their sanctification experience. What they thought was SB was now a separate sanctification experience.<sup>310</sup> This distinction was emphasized more in the *AF* than in *TBM*. The driving force of this redefinition of sanctification was the glossolalic experience; if one did not speak in tongues it was presumed to be a sanctification

---

<sup>302</sup> J.A. Culbreth, ‘The Baptism and Evidence of Pentecost Foreshadowed’, *TBM* 1.8 (Feb 15, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>303</sup> T.B. Barratt, ‘Standard of Truth Taught in This Revival’, *TBM* 4.86 (May 15, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>304</sup> B. Bernsten, ‘From Brother B. Bernsten’, *TBM* 3.52 (Dec 15, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>305</sup> Barratt, ‘Standard of Truth Taught in This Revival’, p. 4

<sup>306</sup> There was an awareness of the different contexts for Paul and Luke: remember that 1 Corinthians was written ‘partly to correct the wrong use of the gifts. In the book of Acts there were no rules laid down for the speaking in tongues because it was the utterance of God himself, and who will instruct God’, E.K. Fisher ‘Stand for the Bible Evidence’, *TBM* 2.40 (Jun 15, 1909), p. 2?

<sup>307</sup> *TBM* 1.11 (Apr 2, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>308</sup> ‘It was intelligible only to those who were in sympathy with the speaker, while the unbelievers scoffingly ascribed it to madness or excess of wine’, “‘Tongues’”, *TBM* 2.30 (Jan 15, 1909), p. 4; cf. Flavius Lee, ‘Signs Shall Follow Them That Believe’, *TBM* 3.47 (Oct 1, 1909), p. 4.

<sup>309</sup> It is unclear here if the author is referring to unbelievers or anti-Pentecostals, R.B. Hayes, ‘Bethel, N.C.’, *TBM* 1.17 (Jul 1, 1908), p. 3

<sup>310</sup> J.H. King, ‘Answers to Questions as Requested’, *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), pp. 2, 3; A.H. Butler, ‘From Bro. Butler’, *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 4; H.M. Barth, ‘Justification, Sanctification, and the Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *TBM* 1.6 (Jan 15, 1908), p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia experience.<sup>311</sup> This created an issue with timing: ‘some are stumbling over the fact, that many receive the baptism soon after being saved, and use this for a basis of their argument against the necessity of being sanctified prior to receiving the gift of the Holy Ghost’.<sup>312</sup> The timing problem was typified in Caesarea (Acts 10, 11) where justification, sanctification, and SB occurred almost simultaneously. Sexton ably responded to the Caesarean problem. First, their hearts were ‘purified by faith’ and they had ‘devout Christian character’.<sup>313</sup> Second, ‘we are persuaded that God has sanctified and prepared them for the baptism’.<sup>314</sup> Third, ‘sanctification is, in a sense, comprehended in justification ... (it) may, and no doubt should begin at the same time’.<sup>315</sup> It was this last point of bundling sanctification and justification too tightly would lead to the ‘finished work’ controversy.<sup>316</sup> There is

---

<sup>311</sup> ‘There is a baptism of the Holy Ghost for God’s children different from what we receive when entirely sanctified, and that it is followed by the speaking in an unknown tongue’, E.G. Murrah, ‘Three Epochs In My Life’, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 3. ‘This cleansing is the first phase of sanctification ... not the baptism of the Holy Ghost as some teach’, R.M. Evans, ‘Nassau, N.P., Bahama Islands’, *TBM* 5.114 (July 15, 1912), p. 3.

<sup>312</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Sanctification And The Gift Of The Holy Ghost’, *TBM* 2.29 (Jan 1, 1909), p. 2; H.M. Barth, ‘Sanctification – The Yielded Life’ *TBM* 5.117 (Sep 1, 1912), p. 2.

<sup>313</sup> Acts 15.9, E.A. Sexton ‘Editorials, Some Questions Answered’, *TBM* 2.45 (Sep 1, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>314</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorial, Sanctification’, *TBM* 4.89 (Jul 1, 1911), p. 1.

<sup>315</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, Sanctification The Necessary Preparation For The Pentecostal Baptism’, *TBM* 3.65 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>316</sup> The FW controversy began in February, 1910 with Durham preaching at ‘old Azusa’, M.M. Pinson, ‘Field Notes From Bro. M.M. Pinson’, *TBM* 4.84 (Apr 15, 1911), p. 3. Initially, Durham testified to ‘sanctification as a second work’, but later changed his position and testimony to accommodate his ‘Baptist roots’, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 150, cf. n. 470. At the ASM, ‘Durham preached that ‘the finished work of Christ on Calvary provided not only for the forgiveness of sins but for the sanctification of the believer ... (and that) the believer need only appropriate the benefits of the finished work of Calvary’, Richard M. Riss, ‘Finished Work Controversy’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 638-39 (638). Despite calls for unity, this rift would continue for roughly 35 years even though Durham died in 1912, cf. A.A. Boddy, ‘A Suggested Resolution’, *TBM* 5.118 (Sep 15, 1912), p. 2; ‘we believe that Mr. Boddy’s desires to heal division in Los Angeles has been in great measure accomplished’, Rev. L.J. Mead, ‘Rev. A.A. Boddy in Los Angeles’, *TBM* 5.118 (Sep 15, 1912), p. 3. ‘Both sides often adopted extreme positions’, greater unity finally came as Pentecostals began working closer together after WWII, when ‘those who believed in sanctification as a second work of grace began to refer to the experience of entire sanctification as an eradication of one’s sinful nature, not merely a complete surrender to God. Finished work advocates ... (who) often minimized the need for experiential sanctification’ began to see the need of a more experiential

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

a teaching ... (that) at the moment of conversion, (one is) both justified and sanctified, and that they must then tarry for the baptism of the Holy Ghost. The sign by which they may certainly know that the work is accomplished is the speaking in tongues.<sup>317</sup>

Overall, the theology of glossolalia itself was not an issue during this controversy because both sides held that SB was subsequent to salvation; was not a 'third work of grace'; and that sanctification was not SB.<sup>318</sup>

Evidentially, sanctification had both passive and active facets connected with glossolalia. The logic was that only a fully cleansed person could be completely yielded to the Holy Spirit and thus speak with tongues. R.B. Hayes wrote,

when we got to the place that we gave up everything and everybody, unloaded everything, got free from every entanglement, of bondage, died to church creeds, leadership and got little in our own sight, the criticizing spirit all gone, then we received the blessed baptism of the Holy Ghost and spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance.<sup>319</sup>

In other words, tongues were evidence of a fully yielded and sanctified life. One had to be a fully cleansed temple before the Holy Spirit would enter in SB or to be used in the spiritual gifts.<sup>320</sup> Not having a cleansed temple was cited as a source for 'counterfeit baptisms and counterfeit manifestations'.<sup>321</sup>

---

sanctification, Riss, 'Finished-Work Controversy', p. 639; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly ... From Heaven*, pp. 99-106, esp. pp. 105-106; Synan, *The Holiness – Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 149-51.

<sup>317</sup> H.A. James 'Justification-Sanctification, The Finished Work Of Christ In The Soul', *TBM* 5.108 (Apr 15, 1912), p. 1.

<sup>318</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Doctrine Of The Pentecostal Movement' *TBM* 2.37 (May 1, 1909), p. 1; cf. Sexton, 'Editorials, Sanctification The Necessary Preparation', p. 1; E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Sound Doctrine', *TBM* 3.60 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 1; Pinson, 'Field Notes From Bro. M.M. Pinson', p. 3.

<sup>319</sup> R.B. Hayes, 'Slack up in Pentecostal Saints', *TBM* 4.87 (Jun 1, 1911), p. 3; 'So when the Holy Spirit has complete control we find Him using our tongues', Sexton, 'Sanctification And The Gift Of The Holy Ghost', p. 2.

<sup>320</sup> G.B. Cashwell, 'Speaking In Other Tongues', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 2; Sexton, 'Sanctification And The Gift Of The Holy Ghost', p. 2; 'Letter From Thomas Junk', *TBM* 2.42 (Jul 15, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>321</sup> Editor, 'A Word Of Warning', *TBM* 2.30 (Jan 15, 1909), p. 2. A full year before the start of the 'Finished Work Controversy', Sexton noted that another source of the counterfeit was that 'many of us have been taught that sanctification meant sinless perfection. While this is the purpose of its working ... it does not mean we are overcomers because we are sanctified. The work of transformation must go on until we are made like Him', Editor, 'A Word Of Warning', p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

However, tongues were proven to be an unreliable sign so divine love and the fruit of the Spirit became the undeniable sign.<sup>322</sup> Sexton wrote that, speaking in tongues is the distinguishing evidence of the baptism, ‘provided it is accompanied with the fruit of the spirit. Gal 5:22-23’.<sup>323</sup> One writer stated that he cannot say of a stranger,

this man is baptized in the Holy Ghost because he speaks in tongues. He would have to see also divine love ... divine love is always and absolutely a necessary and only certain evidence accompanying the true baptism ... ‘tongues’ are a sign of His mighty entrance, but love is the evidence of His continuance in controlling power.<sup>324</sup>

Mack M. Pinson, who would later follow the FW side of the controversy, called for more love to be actually lived out.<sup>325</sup> In February, 1913, eight European leaders<sup>326</sup> of the Pentecostal movement put their names to a declaration at an International Pentecostal Council. Their declaration affirms evidential tongues<sup>327</sup> if accompanied by the fruit of the Spirit, and then adds: ‘we do not teach that all who have been baptized in the Holy Ghost, *even if they should speak in tongues*, have already received the fullness of the blessings of Christ implied in this Baptism’.<sup>328</sup> Divine love and the fruit of the Spirit were concomitant and supporting evidences to glossolalia that, if missing, rendered the claim to SB void or in progress.

### D. Missionary Tongues.

#### 1. Xenolalia.

*The Bridegroom’s Messenger* wrestled more openly with MT than did *AF*. Right from the start, the definition of glossolalia was sharpened to distinguish xenolalia from

---

<sup>322</sup> ‘Real love must express itself in service; which is the proof of love’, Hattie M. Barth, ‘The Love Of Christ’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 1.

<sup>323</sup> Sexton, ‘Editorials, Doctrine Of The Pentecostal Movement’, p. 1.

<sup>324</sup> ‘Tongues: The Pentecostal Sign’, *TBM* 4.77 (Jan 1, 1911), p. 2.

<sup>325</sup> Pinson, ‘Field Notes From Bro. M.M. Pinson’, p. 3.

<sup>326</sup> Boddy and Pohill, England; Polman, Holland; Barratt, Norway; Emil Hamburg, J. Paul, and C.O. Voget, Germany; and Anton B. Reuss, Switzerland.

<sup>327</sup> We believe that SB is ‘the coming upon and within of the Holy Spirit to indwell the believer in His fullness, and it is always borne witness to by the *fruit of the Spirit and the outward manifestation*, so that we may receive the same gift as the disciples on the day of Pentecost’, emphasis mine, ‘International Pentecostal Council Issues Declaration’, *TBM* 6.126 (Feb 1, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>328</sup> ‘International Declaration’, p. 1, italics mine.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

glossolalia. Cashwell defined the ‘gift of tongues’ as ‘divers kinds of tongues of many languages’ according to 1 Corinthians 12-14 in contrast to just ‘speaking in tongues’ or the ‘manifestation’ of tongues.<sup>329</sup> For example,

we see clearly that the baptism of the Holy Ghost is not the gift of tongues ... when we receive the baptism of the Holy Ghost, we will speak in a tongue unknown to us; but when we receive the gift of tongues we will have divers kinds of languages and will speak and be understood.<sup>330</sup>

At times, articles and testimonies supported the theology of MT and at other times, failures were plainly stated.

Missionary tongues were so widely anticipated that people dreamed of speaking in a foreign language<sup>331</sup> and a phonetic transcription of tongues was even included on the first page of the first issue.<sup>332</sup> Testimonies from *AF* or other publications were reprinted for support.<sup>333</sup> The theology of MT in *TBM* initially continued a calling to a specific field by identifying the language one spoke;<sup>334</sup> the ability to speak a number of languages,<sup>335</sup> or even ‘any language’ at will,<sup>336</sup> including sign language for the deaf,<sup>337</sup> and affirmed

---

<sup>329</sup> One editorial noted that Spirit-inspired speech is not the ability to learn a language in college and that a careful reading of 1 Corinthians 12-14 revealed ‘the difference between speaking in tongues and the gift of tongues’, Cashwell, ‘Speaking in Other Tongues’, p. 2.

<sup>330</sup> G.B. Cashwell, ‘Editorials, The Word Fulfilled’, *TBM* 1.8 (Feb 15, 1908), p. 1; cf. ‘Questions and Answers (*TBM*)’, p. 2.

<sup>331</sup> I.W. Ogle, ‘Ocala, Fla.’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1907), p. 3.

<sup>332</sup> ‘Sept. 6<sup>th</sup> 5 A.M.’, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 1.

<sup>333</sup> ‘The Miracle of Speaking in Tongues’, *TBM* 1.5 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 4, reprint; Groenick, ‘The Miracle of Speaking in Tongues’, *AF* 1.9 (Jun 1907), p. 2. Cf. ‘Work in Africa’, *TBM* 1.14 (May 15, 1908), p. 1, reprint; *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 1.

<sup>334</sup> ‘Quite a number of them have received the gift of tongues, and have gone to the foreign fields as missionaries to the people whose language God has given them’, E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 1; cf. M. Perry, ‘Good Tidings from Marion, N.C.’, *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 1; E.F. Landis, ‘Pentecost in South China’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>335</sup> ‘Miss Lucy Villars’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 4; ‘Report of Pentecost from Marvels in India’, *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 1; Lewis Sawgalsky, ‘Experience and Testimony of Lewis Sawgalsky’, *TBM* 4.94.3 (Sep 15, 1911), p. 3.

<sup>336</sup> S.O. Lee, ‘Cerro Gordo, N.C.’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 3. ‘Suddenly the Holy Spirit came to his temples, baptized them then and there. Brother Colyar spoke fluently in Chinese, and has ever since been able to talk at will with all Chinamen he has met. He and his family are now on their way to China, to use, as missionaries, the new tongue was the Holy Ghost is given them’, ‘Received the Chinese Language’, *TBM* 1.39 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>337</sup> F.M. Britton, ‘Letter From Bro. Britton’, *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

that the source of this foreign speech was the Holy Spirit.<sup>338</sup> It confirmed that the apostolic age continues to the present.<sup>339</sup> Ideally, testimonies included some verification of the language. For example, one occurrence of xenolalia was labelled ‘unquestionable’ by native Norwegian and Swedish speakers.<sup>340</sup> If a native speaker was not present, the next best thing were missionaries who understood the language.<sup>341</sup>

However, MT were challenged by actual reports from the mission field. Even in the first issue of *TBM*, it is reported that ‘not many of the gifts have been restored to the Church yet … (some) thought they had the Gift of Tongues (sic)’ but they only had a ‘manifestation’ of the Spirit.<sup>342</sup> Azusa Street missionaries like well-known Garr also challenged the doctrine:

I am not able to preach to the people in their native tongue; but we have an excellent interpreter, an educated Chinese, who has received the baptism of the Spirit and speaks in tongues; and the people get about all that is preached to them in that way.<sup>343</sup>

The reality on the field was that glossolalia was rarely a foreign language that one could employ at will. Verification was usually subjective. For example, M.D. Sellers wrote that even if tongues were not a language he would still believe it because ‘I can see that it’s God’.<sup>344</sup> Sexton admitted some failures were made, but added that the

Pentecostal light which they carried with them, and the good they have accomplished greatly outweighs every blunder or mistake on their part … if but one

---

<sup>338</sup> Mrs. Littleton could not identify her language or even tell if it was a language but wrote, ‘I do know the Holy Ghost was talking through me’, ‘Mrs. E.C. Littleton’s Testimony’, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 3.

<sup>339</sup> Culbreth, ‘Pentecost Foreshadowed’, p. 2. Culbreth noted that Pentecost and the present tongues are a reversal of confusion of languages. Another reference to Babel simply noted that ‘God sent the tongues’, affirming that God was the source of language, J. Reid, ‘Concerning the Tongues’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 3; cf. V.P. Simmons, ‘Tongues’, *TBM* 5.109 (May 1, 1912), p. 1.

<sup>340</sup> H. VanLoon ‘Harford, Ontario’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>341</sup> ‘The missionaries themselves have understood several words that the Spirit spoke through me in other tongues’, T.J. McIntosh, ‘Macao, China, August 22, 1907’, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 4; cf. Geo. Hansen, ‘A Good Letter From Shanghai, China’, *TBM* 3.51 (Dec 1, 1909), p. 4; C.J. Montgomery, ‘Speaking in Tongues’, *TBM* 4.77 (Jan 1, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>342</sup> Unsigned article, *TBM* (Oct 1, 1907), p. 1.

<sup>343</sup> A.G. Garr, ‘News from China’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>344</sup> M.D. Sellers, ‘Letter from Brother Sellers’, *TBM* 1.8 (Feb 15, 1908), p. 4.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
of our missionaries can use ‘new tongues’ in their field of labor ... the fact is established forever.<sup>345</sup>

The human-side was faulted for any shortcomings. Missionary Lizzie Frazer believed she would speak in the Marathi language ‘when I am humble enough and perfectly free in spirit’.<sup>346</sup>

The concerns regarding xenolalia came to a climax in the eleventh issue, with a response to a widely known letter accusing Pentecostal missionaries in general and one young man in particular of failure.<sup>347</sup> In his front page editorial, Cashwell addressed the young man in a fatherly fashion. Cashwell encouraged him to pray, to wait, and to yield to the Holy Spirit, and then added: ‘while we did not then believe that the gift of language had come to you, *we dared not* put our hands upon God’s anointed’.<sup>348</sup> An article by John M. Pike responded to the critics. Pike believed that

God was doing a ‘new thing’ in bestowing the gift of tongues to facilitate the work of the world’s evangelization ... we (sic) could not be persuaded that He had yet bestowed ‘the gift of tongues’ upon any to preach the gospel to the heathen in their own tongue.<sup>349</sup>

However, Pike adds that ‘this did not discourage them or deter them from persisting in their God-given task’. They reached the English speakers and ‘the heathen through interpreters’.<sup>350</sup> He called his Pentecostal readers to press on because it was the 11<sup>th</sup> hour and the work was so large. He challenged critics to have forbearance and love because

---

<sup>345</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, Raised Us Up Together’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>346</sup> ‘A Testimony’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>347</sup> E.A. Sexton noted that this letter came from Macao, China and was addressed to Rev. J.M. Pike, editor of *The Way of Faith* newspaper, E.A. Sexton ‘To Our Readers’, *TBM* 1.11 (Apr 1, 1908), p. 2. One of Pike’s criticisms was that this letter was to be ‘a “private letter” to us, (but) has been published widely in England, Canada and United States and has the appearance of a determined effort to destroy the influence of this young missionary, and to cut off the means necessary for his support in the field’, J.M. Pike, ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, *TBM* 1.11 (Apr 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>348</sup> Cashwell said he prayed regularly for unity and ‘that all the gifts be restored speedily’, G.B. Cashwell, ‘Editorials, Let Us Take Courage’, *TBM* 1.11 (Apr 1, 1908), p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>349</sup> Pike, ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, p. 2. This article was first printed in *The Way of Faith*, and is noted here as a reprint.

<sup>350</sup> Pike, ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, p. 2. Sexton agreed and stated that her desire in this issue was ‘to answer these unfair statements by pointing to the mighty working of God through these same missionaries’, Sexton, ‘To Our Readers’, p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

‘a place can be found for any’.<sup>351</sup> Yes, it was a serious ‘mistake’ on this young man’s part but it ‘has not arrested his message or hindered his work’.<sup>352</sup> In the same issue, China-missionary T.J. McIntosh wrote so emotionally about his desire to speak to his hearers in their native language (via tongues), that when Cashwell read his letter, he wrote ‘I wept and prayed … I am expecting the gift of tongues just as much as I expect to see Jesus’.<sup>353</sup>

Subsequent issues revealed a more reserved doctrine of MT. First, there is a straightforward acknowledgement that tongues do ‘not seem to be an enabling … a continuous use of foreign language without practice or study’.<sup>354</sup> Second, there was a greater attempt to verify the testimonies. For example, Presbyterian overseer W.T. Ellis heard ‘girls speaking in other tongues, some in English, some in Greek, some in Hebrew’ and other languages.<sup>355</sup> Calling himself an ‘unbiased witness’, Ellis noted that it was ‘a story far surpassing in its marvel, anything we have hitherto heard’.<sup>356</sup> One testimony was even signed by fifteen Chinese who ‘acknowledge that the Holy Ghost spoke through the Chinese language to them through Mrs. George Hanson’.<sup>357</sup> Third, from early 1909 onward, some testified to hearing only a portion of a known language. This indicates a development in the doctrine to only occasionally being a known language and more generally being an unknown tongue. For example, ‘there were

---

<sup>351</sup> Pike was hesitant of all independent missionaries and would have preferred this young man work in cooperation with others, but noted that because of the shortness of time God is ‘engaging the “irregulars”’, Pike, ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, p. 2.

<sup>352</sup> Pike ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, p. 2.

<sup>353</sup> G.B. Cashwell, ‘Editorials, Have Faith In God’, *TBM* 1.12 (Apr 15, 1908), p. 1. McIntosh wrote, ‘Oh! How we would love to speak to these poor people. Of course, God speaks with our tongues, but not their language’, T.J. McIntosh, ‘Letter From Brother McIntosh’, *TBM* 1.11 (Apr 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>354</sup> ‘The Value of Speaking in Tongues’, *TBM* 1.12 (Apr 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>355</sup> Elizabeth A. Sexton, ‘Set Thine Heart To Understand’, *TBM* 1.14 (May 15, 1908), p. 1. For English as a foreign language cf. Mrs. Blanche Hamilton, ‘A Portion Of A Letter From C. And M. A. Missionary To A Friend In Florida’, *TBM* 1.17 (Jul 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>356</sup> He was an overseer for the Presbyterian Mission Board and was in India inspecting on this occasion and called himself an ‘unbiased witness’, Sexton, ‘Editorials, Set Thine Heart To Understand’, p. 1.

<sup>357</sup> Bau Yien-Ching, ‘Witness to The Chines Language Spoken as The Spirit Gave Utterance’, *TBM* 3.70 (Sep 15, 1910), p. 2.

about fifteen Indians at this camp meeting ... he spoke three different sentences in their language'.<sup>358</sup> Sexton called people to 'lay aside your prejudice now, do away with your unjust judgment' because so little was known about these 'wonderful visitations of God'.<sup>359</sup> A very pragmatic tension emerged: when xenolalia occurred it was joyfully received as the gift of tongues;<sup>360</sup> but tongues were not normally presumed to be foreign languages. Sexton's response to WH critics was an excellent summary:

we believe it would be of great profit to reprint some of the many cases known where speaking in tongues, as the Spirit gives the utterance has been understood by someone familiar with the language spoken. We gather from 1 Cor. 14:2 that not all speaking in tongues may be understood by man.<sup>361</sup>

## 2. Language Acquisition.

Concomitant with the theological wrestling of xenolalia was the acknowledgment on the field of the need to learn foreign languages: 'we cannot speak Arabic ... we could not do much but sing and shout God's praises and bear witness to the love and joy which can only come through Jesus Christ our Lord'.<sup>362</sup> Nevertheless, testimonies, beginning in 1909, reveal a pragmatic adaptation: 'Father has not given us the language out right, but has wonderfully, so wonderfully helped us, so that in the few months we not only can talk pretty well, but also read His word in Chinese, certainly not fluently, but better and better every day'.<sup>363</sup> Until the language was mastered, interpreters were

---

<sup>358</sup> 'Spoke in an Indian Language', *TBM* (Jan 1, 1909), p. 4. One testimony notes that a Hindu 'did not know enough of all these languages to get the connection ... (but) all at once he burst forth saying, "she is now speaking my language"', to infer that the tongues speech was in a known language, but that this individual did not know that tribal language well enough, so the Spirit had to switch to a better known language, J.O. Lehman, 'Johannesburg, South Africa', *TBM* (Jun 1, 1909), p. 2.

<sup>359</sup> Sexton, 'Editorials, Set Thine Heart To Understand', p. 1.

<sup>360</sup> Numerous testimonies of xenolalia were published after the pragmatic solution. For example, German was reported in, 'A Remarkable Testimony', *TBM* 1.13 (May 1, 1908), p. 4; English in, T.B. Barratt, 'In Norway', *TBM* 1.13 (May 1, 1908), p. 4; Kru in 'Work in Africa', p. 1.

<sup>361</sup> She recalls twelve instances of xenolalia that are of 'reliable authority', E.A. Sexton, 'The Unknown Tongue is Sometimes Known', *TBM* 3.66 (Jul 15, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>362</sup> Fannie Winn, 'Letter from Sister Fannie Winn', *TBM* 1.16 (Nov 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>363</sup> 'God is Blessing in China', *TBM* 2.32 (Feb 15, 1909), p. 1. 'They realize that one great need is to learn the language quickly', A. Norton, 'From Brother Norton', *TBM* 2.35 (Apr 1, 1909), p. 1. Even at one of the best documented sites of xenolalia, the Mukti Mission, India, it is reported that the 'lady missionaries ... seem to be making good progress in the study of the language', Manoramabai, 'Mukti, Mission, Kedgaon', *TBM* 3.63 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

engaged.<sup>364</sup> Testimonies began to include prayer requests<sup>365</sup> and reports of intensive study<sup>366</sup> to learn the language with the goal of preaching in the local language.<sup>367</sup> Study of foreign languages was supported biblically: ‘we are doing some very hard studying these days in the language. We desire to “show ourselves approved unto God,” but we must “study” to do it’.<sup>368</sup> However, the presumption of xenolalia was so high, that some were disappointed: ‘brother and sister Cram have gone home to the United States. Did not get the language’.<sup>369</sup> By early 1910, Barratt, addressed the issue forthrightly:

we are perfectly assured that … there will in all countries be abundant evidence of the fact that the Holy Spirit knows all languages, and is able to speak these through his believing people. Still we would point out the fact, that the speaking in tongues does not seem to have been intended to usurp the ordinary study of languages.<sup>370</sup>

---

<sup>364</sup> There was a reluctance to use interpreters: ‘we have many reasons for not preaching through an interpreter; first … we don’t know what he is saying; second, they do not interpret as we wish it to be given; third, … he wants a large sum of money’, Geo. M. Kelly, ‘Work in a Chinese Village’, *TBM* 5.109 (May 1, 1912), p. 1. However, pragmatically they were engaged until the language was learned, cf. Garr, ‘News from China’, p. 1; Pike ‘A Plea For Charity And Forbearance’, p. 2; ‘Use Of The Gift Of Tongues’, *TBM* 2.40 (Jun 15, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>365</sup> ‘We covet your prayers for … each dear missionary in the study of the language’, Lillian Garr, ‘From Sister Garr’, *TBM* 4.81 (Mar 1, 1911), p. 2. Cf. Olive Maw, ‘God Needs Workers in His Vineyard’, *TBM* 1.22 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 3; ‘Amos Bradley, ‘From Central America’, *TBM* 3.49 (Nov 1, 1909), p. 2.

<sup>366</sup> ‘We are getting the language very fast, the people say, but of course, it seems slow to us. I can do most any kind of business in the stores that I want to do, and can talk some to the people about Yisu (Jesus) and His Mukti (salvation)’, R.E. Massey, ‘Letter From Brother Massey’, *TBM* 2.34 (Mar 15, 1909), p. 2; cf. R.E. Massey, ‘Pentecostal Fire Falling at Bahraich, India’, *TBM* 2.36 (Apr 15, 1909), p. 1; R.E. Massey, ‘How God is Blessing in India’, *TBM* 3.48 (Oct 15, 1909), p. 2; ‘Studying the Chinese Language’, *TBM* 3.71 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 4; R. Atchison, ‘Brother Robt. Atchin Writes’, *TBM* 4.90 (Jul 15, 1911), p. 2, et. al.

<sup>367</sup> Winn, ‘How God Has Blessed the Work’, p. 2; Bradley, ‘From Central America’, p. 4; R.E. Massey, ‘From India’, *TBM* 2.45 (Sep 1, 1909), p. 1; Lillian Garr, ‘Portion of a Letter from Sister Garr’, *TBM* 3.58 (Mar 15, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>368</sup> Amos Bradley, ‘From Amos Bradley’, *TBM* 3.62 (May 15, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>369</sup> B. Bernsten, ‘From China’, *TBM* 3.51 (Dec 1, 1909), p. 3. A. Anderson notes that only ‘a minority returned to the USA disillusioned’, Allan Anderson, ‘The Vision of the Apostolic Faith: Early Pentecostalism and World Mission’, *Swedish Missiological Themes*, 97.3 (2009), pp. 295-314 (300).

<sup>370</sup> T.B. Barratt, ‘Instances of the Speaking in Known Tongues Through the Holy Spirit’, *TBM* 3.54 (Jan 15, 1910), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Theologically, Barratt believed glossolalia's 'chief object on the day of Pentecost was that of giving Peter's sermon a miraculous background, and invest the disciples with divine authority'.<sup>371</sup>

### E. Purposes For Glossolalia.

#### 1. Empowerment.

At the heart of their distinctive theology, these early Pentecostals connected glossolalia with an equipping power.<sup>372</sup> Not surprisingly, *TBM* continued this foundational theology from the *AF*. Restoration of the apostolic message required apostolic power. The apostles had,

credentials adequate for its (the gospel's) accomplishment ... power for service, for extending this kingdom, and the subjection and ultimate overthrow of Satan's ... We must demand and have a Pentecost to-day (sic), which will tally in every essential, with the original pattern! ... Demons must be cast out, those of all tongues must be addressed in their own language, sick must be healed, the unbelieving must see signs and know of the truth 'this is that.' ... We must be 'filled with all the fullness of God'.<sup>373</sup>

The reason for this strong connection to the past, is that 'our means were too meager and our methods inadequate for the great work of the evangelization of our sin-cursed world ... God has heard our prayer'.<sup>374</sup> Glossolalia somehow equipped for more effective speech: 'since I have received my Pentecost, I have more power and liberty to speak to souls about Jesus than I did before'.<sup>375</sup>

Tongues were also an initiation into the ability to use all sorts of Spiritual gifts. 'After Pentecost, added power came upon them all', wrote Sexton, 'and many signs and wonders were done through His name'.<sup>376</sup> Spiritual power in the Kingdom of God required a corresponding death to self so that one could be used as a conduit:

---

<sup>371</sup> Barratt, 'Instances of the Speaking in Known Tongues', p. 3.

<sup>372</sup> 'The promise of the tongues in this verse (Acts 1.8) is an equipping for service', Reid, 'Concerning The Tongues', p. 3.

<sup>373</sup> J.E. Sawders, 'The Pentecostal Standard', *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 4.

<sup>374</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorial, Entering The Fifth Year Of Service', *TBM* 5.95 (Oct 1, 1911), p. 1.

<sup>375</sup> Thomas B. Epps, 'Another Witness', *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>376</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorial, Power Of The Name Of Jesus', *TBM* 4.91 (Aug 1, 1911), p. 1. 'I am sure there has been a spiritual power operating within me since I received the Pentecostal baptism, that I did

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

He does not give us power. We are still as weak as ever. He has the power, and it is He that continues to exercise it, but He gives us ‘authority’ to claim the exercise of His power, and as we do this in our helplessness, His strength is made perfect in our weaknesses. We have the faith and He has the power.<sup>377</sup>

Death to self was also a part of ‘character development’<sup>378</sup> or preparing the bride for the Second Coming,<sup>379</sup> a sanctifying and equipping power signalled by glossolalia.

### 2. Prayer.

*The Bridesgroom’s Messenger* continued and refined the AF’s theology that glossolalia was occasionally Spirit-inspired prayer back to God. Typical testimonies were based on Paul’s groaning in the Spirit in Rom. 8.26:

the Spirit Himself does the praying in us. It is the Christ enthroned on a surrendered life groaning out the agonies of the great intercessor at God’s right hand. It is God in the earth pleading with God in the heavens on behalf of God and man.<sup>380</sup>

This glossolalic prayer was thought to be more effective because it was Spirit-led.<sup>381</sup> For example, W.M. Tallent wrote, ‘I began to pray in the unknown tongue and the child was healed.’<sup>382</sup> Such power was sacred and mysterious.<sup>383</sup> It not only reached back to the

---

not experience before that time’, N.J. Holmes, ‘One Year Of Pentecostal Experience’, *TBM* 1.18 (Jul 15, 1908), p. 4; cf. E.A.S., ‘Editorials, The Great Pentecostal Revival’, *TBM* 2.33 (Mar 1, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>377</sup> ‘Christ Has The Power’, *TBM* 5.119 (Oct 15, 1912), p. 1. Cf. *TBM* 1.13 (May 1, 1908), p. 2. Sexton sees a corresponding rest: ‘the Pentecostal baptism brings us to know more perfectly “The rest which remaineth for the people of God.” Our activity in service is by the power of the Spirit in us, we cease from our own labors. He worketh in us and our own labor is made “Peaceful activity”’, E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, River Of Water Of Life’, *TBM* 3.48 (Oct 15, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>378</sup> A.S. Worrell, ‘Wonderful Times Coming’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>379</sup> N.J. Holmes, ‘Altamont Bible And Missionary Institute’, *TBM* 1.20 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>380</sup> A.S. Copley, ‘The Prayer Of The Righteous’, *TBM* 2.35 (Apr 1, 1909), p. 2; cf. Sarah D. Wooten, ‘Testimony of Sister S.D. Wooten’, *TBM* 2.46 (Sep 15, 1909), p. 3; Lillian Garr, ‘Brother And Sister Garr In India’, *TBM* 3.59 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 1; F.F. Bosworth, ‘Pentecost at Dallas, Texas, With Signs Following’, *TBM* 4.88 (Jun 15, 1911), p. 3.

<sup>381</sup> ‘When I pray in a tongue the Holy Spirit is praying through me, and His praying through me must be of great use’, Mrs. M.K. Norton, ‘A Letter From Mrs. M.K. Norton’, *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>382</sup> W.M. Talent, ‘Brother Tallent’s Letter’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>383</sup> ‘Most of them pray at times in “tongues,” but they are so lost in praise and prayer when this takes place that one feels it is too sacred to be discussing as to the origins’, ‘Pandita Ramabai’s Work’, *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 1.

apostles<sup>384</sup> but forward to heaven: ‘how we do love to talk to Him by secret prayer! This communion is as sweet at heaven, yea, it is a foretaste of that delectable land.’<sup>385</sup>

One significant article by broadens to the concept of glossolalic-prayer of Rom. 8.26, by defining it sacramentally: when praying in tongues, one ““feeds himself.” Yes, for it is a feeding on spiritual food, of which our soul and body experience the blessing and power’.<sup>386</sup> So that the sacramental component is not missed, the author compares praying in tongues to receiving the elements in Holy Communion:

when we are edifying ourselves by speaking in tongues, we are at the same time fed by His flesh and by His blood, and this being fed by His flesh and blood brings us into closer communion with Him ... Then we realize the power of this being fed also in our soul and in our body. Our soul becomes quieter, stronger ... Our body is fed. The life which is in the flesh and blood of Christ flows through our body.<sup>387</sup>

This sacramental component is singular to this article, but that it was reprinted from the *Confidence* periodical represents a willingness to recognize a broad definition of their glossolalic experience. Her article, which defined tongues speech as speaking mysteries to God, ended with a call to holiness, especially holiness of speech.<sup>388</sup>

### 3. Praise.

Those who testified in *TBM* often assumed that glossolalia was praise. Though they did not know exactly what they were saying, they somehow knew it was praise: ‘the power of God fell upon me and soon the Holy Spirit was praising Jesus in other tongues ... I knew I was worshiping Jesus in spirit and in truth’.<sup>389</sup> Evan Roberts was confident of the result, but vague about the exact nature of God-directed glossolalia:

when we receive an anointing of the Holy Spirit and He speaks, praises, or adores God through us in an unknown tongue, we are invigorated, energized and revived

---

<sup>384</sup> ‘I know that what the Pentecost God in His mercy gave me is the same kind of blessing as that received by the disciples at Pentecost in Jerusalem’, T.B. Barratt, ‘Scenes In A Scandinavian Meeting, Where Pastor Barratt Labors’, *TBM* 2.39 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>385</sup> E.G. Murrah, ‘Macon, GA., April, 27, 1908’, *TBM* 1.14 (May 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>386</sup> Mrs. Polman, ‘Speaking in Tongues (*TBM*)’, *TBM* 7.146 (Dec 15, 1913), p. 4, reprint; Mrs. Polman, ‘Speaking in Tongues’, *Confidence* 8.6 (Aug 1913), pp. 151-52.

<sup>387</sup> Polman, ‘Speaking in Tongues (*TBM*)’, p. 4.

<sup>388</sup> Polman, ‘Speaking in Tongues (*TBM*)’, p. 4.

<sup>389</sup> C.E. Ritchie, ‘The Comforter Has Come’, *TBM* 3.49 (Nov 1, 1909), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

... those who have never received such an anointing can never understand the blessedness of it.<sup>390</sup>

Glossolalic praise was an overflow of the Spirit's presence, which often began by praising God in one's native tongue. For example,

a dear baptized sister came and kneeling behind me, began to praise the Lord in a whisper, then I remembered to try to speak a word of praise and glory to Jesus, that was the sweetest moment of my life when my tongue went off in a language I knew nothing about.<sup>391</sup>

Those who experienced glossolalic praise described an overflowing richness where, 'all English seems inadequate',<sup>392</sup> and 'wave after wave still flooded my soul so that I could not sleep much, but praised the Lord all night'.<sup>393</sup>

### 4. Revelation.

Testimonies often included the words 'revelation'<sup>394</sup> or 'mystery'<sup>395</sup> to describe their experience. Spirit baptism and its accompanying tongues initiated the believer 'into the deeper things'.<sup>396</sup> Revelations were across many areas of spirituality: 'since the fuller baptism of the Spirit ... there has also come a deeper sense of the realness of God, of the life of the Word, of the love of the Spirit and the supremacy of Christ'.<sup>397</sup> Testimonies included revelations of Jesus, the ability to discern the 'false from the true',<sup>398</sup> a greater understanding of the bible,<sup>399</sup> and insight into someone's past so that they could

---

<sup>390</sup> Evan Roberts, "Believe Not Every Spirit", *TBM* 6.131 (Apr 15, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>391</sup> Mrs. M.C. Stewart, 'Benson, S.C.', *TBM* 1.13 (May 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>392</sup> 'Tongues In The Air', *TBM* 5.97 (Nov 1, 1911), p. 3.

<sup>393</sup> Littleton, 'Mrs. E.C. Littleton's Testimony', p. 3.

<sup>394</sup> 'Quite a number of those who have received the Pentecostal baptism have been given revelations and visions and dreams', E.A. Sexton, 'The Situation', *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 2. 'This baptism in the Holy Spirit is a mighty inspiration and revelation ... how wonderful are the deeper revelations of Jesus', A.H. Post, 'Letter From Bombay, India' *TBM* 2.25 (Nov 1, 1908), p. 1

<sup>395</sup> 'And so the tongues seem to be today in connection with this "Latter Rain" baptism that is letting the saints into the mysteries of these last days', Frank Bartleman, 'Letter From F. Bartleman', *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>396</sup> 'Amos 4:4', *TBM* 5.96 (Oct 15, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>397</sup> D. Wesley Myland, 'A Personal Word', *TBM* 4.89 (Jul 1, 1911), p. 2.

<sup>398</sup> Worrell, 'Wonderful Times Coming', p. 4; cf. R.E. Massey, 'Pentecostal Convention In Fyzabad, India' *TBM* 3.56 (Feb 15, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>399</sup> Mok Lai Chi, 'Testimony of Mok Lai Chi', *TBM* 3.52 (Dec 15, 1909), p. 4.

repent.<sup>400</sup> As with the *AF*, there is no discernible pattern of revelation upon speaking in tongues; rather, it is an occasional and varied accompaniment.

### 5. Tongues as a Gift of the Holy Spirit.

Paul's gift of tongues in *TBM* was developed further than in the *AF*.<sup>401</sup> Tongues as a congregational gift was separated from Luke's ecstatic encounter. Starting with a simple biblical hermeneutic,<sup>402</sup> and still giving primacy to the book of Acts and Mk 16.15, the Pauline passages were incorporated as complimentary to the Lucan passages. Personal testimonies regularly contained phrases like, 'tongues are a sign to *unbelievers*'<sup>403</sup> and 'the gift of interpretation', revealing a greater incorporation of Pauline glossolalia rather than in the *AF*.<sup>404</sup>

In a significant article in the first edition of *TBM*, Cashwell made several points about tongues speech, but did so from 1 Corinthians 12-14 rather than Acts. First, he distinguished between the glossolalia of SB and the gift of the Spirit, which he viewed as xenolalia.<sup>405</sup> Second, the gift was more than a heightened natural linguistic ability, but a supernatural gift that offers spiritual insight; it is the ability to really 'see' and 'understand'.<sup>406</sup> Third, the Pauline restrictions apply. For the gift to be useful in the church it must be interpreted, otherwise it is no better than unknown Latin in the RCC. Outside the church the gift is a sign to the unbeliever.<sup>407</sup> Fourth, and significantly, Cashwell noted that Paul's views could inhibit and restrict Luke's views on glossolalia

---

<sup>400</sup> M.M. Pinson, V.W. Kennedy, and William Lyons, 'Meeting at Clinton, S.C.', *TBM* 2.39 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 2.

<sup>401</sup> 'Questions and Answers (*TBM*)', p. 2.

<sup>402</sup> E.A. Sexton called the bible our 'guide book' when defending against fanaticism. E.A. Sexton, 'Pentecostal Light', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 3; cf. Cashwell, 'Editorials, The Word Fulfilled', p. 1.

<sup>403</sup> Italics mine, indicating a Pauline rather than a Lucan phrase, 'The Supernatural', *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>404</sup> She quotes 1 Cor. 14.13 and writes, 'I prayed to God to give me the interpretation, and my prayer was answered ... I know what He is speaking about'. Mrs. Julia White, 'Atlanta, GA.' *TBM* 1.13 (May 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>405</sup> Cashwell, 'Speaking In Other Tongues', p. 2.

<sup>406</sup> Cashwell, 'Speaking in Other Tongues', p. 2.

<sup>407</sup> 'But the Holy Ghost moves upon many to speak for a sign to the unbeliever. Isaiah 28:11-13. 1<sup>st</sup> Cor. 14:21-22', Cashwell, 'Speaking in Other Tongues', p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia if not properly understood. He cautioned against too narrow a Pauline understanding: It was ‘the cunningness of the Devil’ to ‘explain the 2, 10, and 19 chaps. of Acts by the 14 chap. of 1<sup>st</sup> Cor., and to keep the people in ignorance’.<sup>408</sup>

The articles and testimonies confirm the merging of a Pentecostal understanding of both Lucan and Pauline glossolalia. First, these pioneers understood the nuances between Paul’s gift of tongues from Luke’s ecstatic speech:

failure to see the difference between the speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance ... and the gift of tongues ... has perplexed many honest seekers after the truth. When no differences are made, Scripture seems to contradict Scripture, and there is no harmony; but when the distinction is made, all is clear and there is perfect harmony.<sup>409</sup>

Biblically, the actual operation of the gift of tongues necessitated the revival of another gift, the gift of interpretation. E.A. Sexton called this gift, ‘one of the most important of all the gifts of the Spirit’, not only because it was ‘very solemn and impressive’,<sup>410</sup> but because it allowed the meeting to comply with the Pauline restrictions in 1 Corinthians 14.<sup>411</sup> People with this gift were sought out.<sup>412</sup>

Second, all believers could ‘become messengers of supernatural speech’,<sup>413</sup> therefore, Paul’s gift of the Spirit allowed for a greater human role than Luke’s ecstatic speech:

speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance is the direct operation of the Holy Ghost upon the vocal organs ... But the gift of tongues ... ‘is entrusted to your

---

<sup>408</sup> Cashwell, ‘Speaking in Other Tongues’, p. 2.

<sup>409</sup> R.E. McA., ‘Difference Between Speaking in Tongues and the Gift of Tongues’, *TBM* 4.88 (Jun 15, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>410</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials – Interpretation Of Tongues’, *TBM* 2.23 (Oct 1, 1908), p. 1. ‘The first time, we do not always get the interpretation, but we lay a special stress on the necessity of praying for the interpretation and with wonderful results’, Barratt, ‘Pastor Barratt’s Letter’, *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>411</sup> ‘We have an interpreter who interprets all that is spoken in tongues’, ‘Oklahoma, City’, *TBM* 1.27 (Dec 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>412</sup> ‘Pray that God will give us an interpreter of what is said in tongues, in that we may step out on God’s promises fully and wholly’, Nolia Pennington, ‘A Girl’s Testimony And Call’, *TBM* 1.20 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>413</sup> V.P. Simmons, ‘What is the Baptism of Fire?’ *TBM* 3.55 (Feb 1, 1910), p. 4. There is ‘a general gift of prophecy in the church, while some are very specially called of God to be prophets’, Pastor Barratt, ‘Prophecy’, *TBM* 2.44 (Aug 15, 1909), p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
wisdom,' and may be used at will, and must be governed according to first  
Corinthians 14<sup>th</sup> chapter.<sup>414</sup>

In other words, Lucan-like ecstatic speech 'does not need controlling' (and is uncontrollable) but with the Pauline-like gift of tongues, the speaker has the 'power to control the gift and avoid confusion in the assembly'.<sup>415</sup>

Third, because of this human component, greater order and evaluation of the spirit-inspired speech was required in the assembly. The Pauline restrictions were embraced to counter the devil's counterfeits<sup>416</sup> and oddities such as 'rebuking in tongues'<sup>417</sup> and personal prophecies.<sup>418</sup> 'The Holy Ghost never tells us to do anything contrary to the Word'.<sup>419</sup> The corporate guidelines of 1 Corinthians 14, were warmly embraced for the sake of order and biblical compliance.<sup>420</sup>

## F. Eschatological Glossolalia.

For the early Pentecostals, glossolalia was theologically related to eschatology. Tongues were linked so intrinsically with eschatology that Sexton wrote, 'our Pentecostal

---

<sup>414</sup> McA., 'Difference Between', p. 4. Being used 'at will' was a common early phrase though it probably meant at the Spirit's leading and not just anytime, Cf. Mrs. Lorena Cotton, 'Letter From Sister Cotton', *TBM* 1.22 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 4; Mary Courtney, 'Portion of Letter to a Friend', *TBM* 3.50 (Nov 15, 1909), p. 4.

<sup>415</sup> McA., 'Difference Between', p. 4.

<sup>416</sup> We need to look out for the lying spirits. I refuse to accept messages that are given in tongues or any other way, if they are not in harmony with the Word of God. There are three spirits at work everywhere: the Holy Spirit and evil spirit and human spirit ... (we need to) weigh all messages and prophesying and everything by the Word', M.M. Pinson, 'Prove All Things', *TBM* 3.52 (Dec 15, 1909), p. 2; cf. Barratt, 'Pastor Barratt's Letter', p. 4.

<sup>417</sup> 'Rebuking In Tongues', *TBM* 3.56 (Feb 15, 1910), p. 2. This author contends a biblical precedent for rebuking from 2 Tim. 4.1-2, but notes that 'rebuking in tongues' as it is presently being practiced is not in the bible. The author urges caution because 'we knew it was of the devil and the unsavoury fumes of the pit attended it'.

<sup>418</sup> If personal messages are given, 'there must be a response in the hearts of those who are Spirit filled, those were living holy lives ... I did not believe them unless they were confirmed by the word of God, and given by holy men filled with the Spirit. That is our conviction', "Personal Messages: Their Dangers", *TBM* 5.106 (Mar 15, 1912), p. 4.

<sup>419</sup> H.F. Roberts, 'Try The Spirits', *TBM* 2.31 (Feb 1, 1909), p. 4. Only one article tried to nuance Paul's admonition: 'the instructions given in 1 Cor. 14, only refer to times of teaching, not to altar services, or seasons of tarrying for the baptism of the Holy Ghost', Courtney, 'Portion of Letter to a Friend', p. 4.

<sup>420</sup> For example, see, V.P. Simmons, "Hath Raised", *TBM* 3.51 (Dec 1, 1909), p. 3.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
experience is enriched daily by the anticipation of His coming'.<sup>421</sup> A heightened eschatological urgency can be sensed in *TBM*.<sup>422</sup> For example, 'everything seems to be focusing to a climax of some undefined event. Ominous forebodings of the culmination of things seem to be felt by saint and sinner.'<sup>423</sup> Though there was no singular eschatological system, they believed that 'the Pentecostal baptism is, *somewhat*, connected with the preparation for the appearing of the Lord'.<sup>424</sup> Biblical metaphors gave logic to their eschatological perspective; glossolalia connected with three in particular:

First, the latter rain was the primary metaphor. It explained glossolalia's sudden reappearance. The restoration of tongues equated with an equipping for a final world-wide, end-times revival; it was 'the key to the present revival'.<sup>425</sup> Xenolalia was initially thought to be God's equipping for these end times missionaries:

if Jesus tarries until we have to learn all the languages of the world in colleges, He will not come soon ... The gift of languages of the world is of more importance today than ever before, for the efforts of education on this line have thus far proven a failure.<sup>426</sup>

Obedience to the Spirit's calling was critical because the Lord's return depended upon human effort.<sup>427</sup> Even though support for MT slowly diminished, a passion for a world-wide last day's mission remained.

---

<sup>421</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Hath Raised Us Up', *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>422</sup> Not that this was absent in *AF*, but eschatology was overshadowed by the experience of SB, glossolalia, and the revival itself. Note the urgency: 'since Pentecostal power to love has come into our hearts, the world is our parish, and God is hastily equipping and thrusting out people into all parts of the world. They are giving up all for Jesus', E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, The Bridegroom's Messenger One Year Old Oct. 1', *TBM* 1.22 (Sep 15, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>423</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Wonders Of The World', *TBM* 1.19 (Aug 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>424</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'And There Shall Be No More Curse', *TBM* 1.16 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 1, *italics mine*. McQueen notes that 'no single view (of eschatology) had become solidified by the end of 1920', McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, p. 77, cf. pp. 96-97.

<sup>425</sup> 'The Value of Speaking in Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>426</sup> 'Colleges vs. Gifts of the Spirit', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 1.

<sup>427</sup> 'When the Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached as a witness to all nations then the end shall come. Let's be faithful to our trust', B.S. O'Neal, 'Atlanta, Sept. 26, 1907', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 3; cf. Britton, 'Letter from Bro. Britton', p. 2; G.B. Cashwell, 'Letter From G.B. Cashwell', *TBM* 2.33 (Mar 1, 1909), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Though there were other signs that would indicate the end,<sup>428</sup> glossolalia was like a trumpet blast preceding the Lord's return (1 Thess. 4.16-17).<sup>429</sup> Glossolalia was called the 'Bible trademark of heaven' that indicated that these were the last and 'perilous days'.<sup>430</sup> Even the rejection of glossolalia by some WH people<sup>431</sup> and others was seen as the hardening of hearts that would occur in the end times. Andrew H. Argue asked, 'are God's people going to fail to give the unbeliever this sign in these closing days'?<sup>432</sup> Biblically, the urgency was fuelled by passages like Mt. 24.14, and the latter rain passages of Joel 2.28-31 and Acts 2:16-20.<sup>433</sup> Glossolalia and the frequent cry 'Jesus is coming', according to Sexton, were 'the first rays of light, (a) harbinger of the full blaze of a glorious day about to break on the slumbering church'.<sup>434</sup>

Second, that God preserved a remnant of tongues-speech is the second metaphor. It was often used to counter cessationism.<sup>435</sup> Interestingly, there is no indication that they saw a parallel between God preserving a remnant of Israel in the OT with a remnant of tongues-speech; instead, they turned to church history for support. Starting with the early church fathers like St. Chrysostom<sup>436</sup> and going throughout history to the present day, they found that 'instances like these are constantly coming to light'.<sup>437</sup> V.P.

---

<sup>428</sup> Earthquakes, for example, are foretold in Mt. 24.7. This sign is amplified in 'Earthquakes in Divers Places', *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 4. This short note reports recent earthquakes around the word and then quotes Mt. 24.7-8 as support for the Lord's soon return. Miracles and healings are another example, E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, "O, Man"', *TBM* 1.18 (Jul 15, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>429</sup> Mrs. E.L. Murrah, 'My Testimony', *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>430</sup> R.B. Hayes, 'Perilous Times', *TBM* 1.6 (Jan 15, 1908), p. 1. Author noted these verses for support: Acts 2.17; Mk 16.17; and 2 Tim. 3.1.

<sup>431</sup> G.B. Cashwell, 'Editorials (1)', *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>432</sup> A.H. Argue, 'Is "Speaking With New Tongues" An Essential Sign?', *TBM* 11.205 (n.d., likely, July, 1918), p. 2.

<sup>433</sup> 'The Value of Speaking in Tongues', p. 4. Cf. Cashwell, 'Editorials, An Explanation', p. 1; Mrs. M.K. Norton, 'A Letter From Mts. M.K. Norton', *TBM* 1.5 (Jan 1, 1908), p. 4.

<sup>434</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Jesus Is Coming', *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 1. Cf. Sexton, 'Editorials, "O, Man"', p. 1

<sup>435</sup> Bertha B. Kahrs, 'The Nine Gifts', *TBM* 4.76 (Dec 15, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>436</sup> 'What An Ancient Writer Says On The Gift Of Tongues', *TBM* 2.42 (Jul 1, 1909), p. 2.

<sup>437</sup> V.P. Simmons, 'Another Fact Concerning The Speaking In Tongues In A.D. 1844', *TBM* 3.65 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Simmons,<sup>438</sup> was a frequent contributor to this remnant metaphor. He wrote articles on the history of tongues that traced tongues speech through the centuries up to the present day revival;<sup>439</sup> articles on previously undiscovered pre-ASM occurrences of glossolalia;<sup>440</sup> and he believed that historians coloured their accounts to exclude glossolalia.<sup>441</sup>

Hattie Barth had a poignant perspective on the remnant metaphor. For her the remnant not only connected with the historical past, but also with the eschatological future: ‘the ages overlap like links in a chain ... Pentecost itself really belongs to the next dispensation ... every sign is a foretaste of that coming age’.<sup>442</sup> To Barth, glossolalia was a glimpse of the unity that is in heaven contrasted with the divisions of Babel. She encouraged her readers to ‘live in advance of our time’.<sup>443</sup> Both the restoration and remnant metaphors were embraced dialectically<sup>444</sup> and helped to explain glossolalia as an eschatological phenomenon.

Third, the bride of Christ was the last metaphor which connected glossolalia and eschatology: ‘the Pentecostal baptism has come to prepare the saints for the gifts of the

---

<sup>438</sup> Not much is known about him. One Mary B. Simmons of Frostproof, FL gave her testimony of SB in *AF*, perhaps this is his wife or daughter. Mary B. Simmons, ‘Testimonies’, *AF* 1.12 (Jan 1908), p. 4.

<sup>439</sup> V.P. Simmons, ‘History of Tongues’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 2; 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 4; ‘History of Tongues – Additional Testimony’, *TBM* 1.12 (Apr 15, 1908), p. 2. In addition to the tracts themselves, advertisements appear in *TBM* 1.8 (Feb 15, 1908), p. 2; 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 2; and 1.11 (April 1, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>440</sup> His first new discovery was of an occurrence in 1855 among the ‘Gift Adventists’ in Providence, RI, V.P. Simmons, ‘By V.P. Simmons’, *TBM* 2.34 (Mar 15, 1909), p. 2. In 1875, it continued among the ‘Gift Adventists’ more broadly, V.P. Simmons, ‘Bro. V.P. Simmons Of Frostproof, Florida’, *TBM* 2.46 (Sep 15, 1909), p. 2. His final discovery was of an occurrence at a camp meeting in New England in 1844, eleven years earlier than the ‘Gift Adventist’ outpouring, Simmons, ‘Speaking In Tongues In A.D. 1844’, p. 1.

<sup>441</sup> ‘They evidently consider tongue talking a fanaticism, a weakness, to be kept out of sight; but in some way it will out (sic), and readers will know that their biographers and compilers are not impartial writers’, V.P. Simmons, ‘Historians Dodging Tongues’, *TBM* 2.39 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 2; E.A. Sexton concurs, cf. Editor, ‘Editorials, Early Methodism’, *TBM* 3.70 (Sep 15, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>442</sup> Hattie M. Barth, ‘The Things Of The Kingdom’, *TBM* 2.34 (Mar 15, 1909), p. 4. Cf. also, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 91-93; McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, pp. 91-92.

<sup>443</sup> Barth, ‘The Things Of The Kingdom’, p. 4.

<sup>444</sup> Sexton, for example, wrote about the worldwide impact of the latter rain and then traced the remnant of tongues speech throughout history in the same article, Sexton, ‘Editorial, Some Interesting Facts’, p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Spirit that the work may be done that Jesus said before his return'.<sup>445</sup> The title, *TBM*, reveals this strong eschatological connection.<sup>446</sup> Initially, tongues were an equipping of the bride:

I saw that this outpouring of the Spirit was not only to restore to the church signs and wonders, but also to get ready the Bride for the return of the Bridegroom, and that as I was heir to all the promises (through Jesus) the 'Latter Rain' experience was for me.<sup>447</sup>

Simmons wrote that the reason for the ongoing gift of interpretation was so 'that all nine of the spiritual gifts are continued' for preparing the Church 'for (its) translation'.<sup>448</sup> Later, tongues became a part of the premillennial eschatology that narrowed the bride of Christ from all believers to just the overcomers.<sup>449</sup> Tongues became a part of this remnant-bride worldview: 'this is the period for gathering a remnant 'out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nations ... for a witness unto (not conversion of) all nations (Matt. 24:14)'<sup>450</sup>

### G. The Nature of Glossolalia.

In *TBM*, reflections on the nature of glossolalia were implicit and pragmatic.

#### 1. The Heavenly Anthem.

The testimonies about the HA in *TBM* resemble those in *AF*. First, the HA was God-inspired speech. Clyde Brawner said, 'the Holy Ghost fell on me and began to singing (sic) in other tongues'.<sup>451</sup> At times it was a gift of the Spirit for the congregation and had

---

<sup>445</sup> Unsigned article, *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 1; cf. M.W. Moorhead, 'Brother Max Wood Moorhead's Letter', *TBM* 5.120 (Nov 1, 1912), p. 4.

<sup>446</sup> *TBM*'s banner reads that 'while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made: Behold, the Bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him (Mt. 25:5-6, KJV)'.

<sup>447</sup> Eckman, 'Speaking In Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>448</sup> V.P. Simmons, 'Questions Concerning Tongues', *TBM* 1.14 (May 15, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>449</sup> McQueen believes that 'the role of the Holy Spirit was shifted from empowerment for mission to preparation of the bride of Christ' as a result of a tension between their Pentecostal experience and the developing eschatology, McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, p. 97; cf. p. 96.

<sup>450</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'The Prince Of Peace', *TBM* 7.162 (Sep 15, 1914), p. 1.

<sup>451</sup> Clyde Brawner, 'Cocoanut Grove, Fla', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 2. Supporting the belief of divine origin are testimonies, such as, 'frequently six to ten people would be singing in the foreign tongues without discord', F.M. Britton, 'Pentecostal Work in Florida', *TBM* 1.1 (Oct 1, 1907), p. 4.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

an interpretation,<sup>452</sup> at other times it was a sign of SB: ‘those who get the baptism of the Spirit in my meeting speak and sing in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance’.<sup>453</sup> Second, though generally spontaneous and new in nature, at times the melodies were from a familiar tune and could be either in English or a foreign tongue.<sup>454</sup> Third, the HA was awe inspiring. C.E. Kent wrote, ‘when we speak or sing in heaven’s own language, how the beauties fade out of the old earth and its passing scenes’.<sup>455</sup> Finally, the direction of these inspired songs were generally vertical towards God, but occasionally horizontal as prophecy. Sometimes both vertical and horizontal in direction: ‘a good many of the Chinese have also received their Pentecost, and are singing, praising and praying in new tongues … Mr. Hamill sings most wonderfully, and Mr. Quick interprets for him’.<sup>456</sup>

### 2. Passive Speech and the Source of Glossolalia.

Most noticeable regarding the nature of tongues in the Cashwell editions was the near uniformity of the testimonies that stated their experience of SB in a passive way. Instead of saying ‘I spoke in tongues’, as was common in *AF*, most testimonies were phrased like, ‘he took my tongue and testified for Himself’,<sup>457</sup> or ‘spoke for Himself’,<sup>458</sup> or ‘spoke through me’,<sup>459</sup> though some were poetically passive.<sup>460</sup> Even the phrase ‘received the

---

<sup>452</sup> ‘Pentecost in Corinna, ME’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>453</sup> M.M. Pinson, ‘Birmingham Report’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 1; cf. John Goins, ‘Pentecostal Work at Florence, Ala’, *TBM* 1.2 (Nov 1, 1907), p. 2.

<sup>454</sup> Duncan, ‘What The Movement Is’, p. 4.

<sup>455</sup> C.E. Kent, ‘Letter From C.E. Kent’, *TBM* 1.6 (Jan 15, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>456</sup> Landis, ‘Pentecost in South China’, p. 2.

<sup>457</sup> Mrs. J.B. Kilgore, ‘Largo, Fla’, *TBM* 1.7 (Feb 1, 1908), p. 3; cf. Molet Turner, ‘Testimony’, *TBM* 1.15 (Jun 1, 1908), p. 3; V.W. Kennedy ‘Saved, Sanctified, Baptized And Called To The Foreign Field’, *TBM* 2.35 (Apr 1, 1909), p. 3; *passim*.

<sup>458</sup> Goins, ‘Pentecostal Work at Florence, Ala’, p. 2; E.B. LaBaw, ‘Danville, Illinois’, *TBM* 2.6 (Apr 15, 1909), p. 3; *passim*.

<sup>459</sup> H. Bush, ‘Hermon, Cal’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 2; cf. L.S.P. ‘The Gates of Answered Prayer’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 4; Mrs. L.F. Bott, ‘Sister Poit’s (sic) Testimony’, *TBM* 1.4 (Dec 15, 1907), p. 3.

<sup>460</sup> ‘He graciously answered and poured into my innermost being a glorious flood of living water which gushed up and overflowed in mighty hallelujahs and praises to God in the Spirit’s own tongue’, Mrs. W.F.E. Story, ‘Orlando, FLA., March 27, 1908’, *TBM* 1.12 (Apr 15, 1908), p. 3; cf. Murrah, ‘Three Epochs’, p. 3; R.B. Hayes, ‘Anderson, S.C.’, *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

baptism' has a passivity about it.<sup>461</sup> With this view, the human vocal cords were a mere conduit for divine action and speech. Montgomery's testimony represents this concept:

the brain seemed entirely passive, the words not coming from that source at all, but from an irresistible volume of power within, which seem to possess my whole being, spirit, soul and body ... that He was speaking 'heavenly mysteries' through me was most delightful.<sup>462</sup>

In time there was criticism for this overly passive voice in the publication:

we have been criticized for the testimony so often heard in our assemblies: 'that the Spirit spoke for himself.' That it should be referred to as the individual speaking as the Spirit gives utterance ... No doubt mistakes have been made.<sup>463</sup>

Her defence was that the 'Spirit of God may so possess the human as to speak through him words of inspiration and power.'<sup>464</sup> Thereafter, the passive voice was less pronounced. The logic of divine origin for glossolalia was that 'language can emanate only from an intelligence, and since the language does not exist in the mind of persons thus speaking, it must come from a superior mind'.<sup>465</sup> As a conduit, it was important for an individual to yield full control. Because 'I was using my tongue constantly and my lips', the Holy Spirit said, 'that He could not use them, so long as I had them in my use or possession'.<sup>466</sup>

There was a more moderate position: human essence was present and cooperated with the divine Spirit. Some compared it to being drunk: 'I spoke in tongues for a long time, and I acted as one drunk on wine'.<sup>467</sup> Bartleman described it thusly, 'the "baptism with the Holy Ghost" sinks our minds into Christ ... (it) deals with the hitherto

---

<sup>461</sup> R.E., M.E., and John Paul Masey, 'American Mission, Fyzabad, U. P., India' *TBM* 3.54 (Jan 15, 1910), p. 4; E.C. Childer, 'Pierce, Florida', *TBM* 3.55 (Feb 1, 1910), p. 3; Herman E. Tower, 'Maryville, Tennessee', *TBM* 3.59 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>462</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Mrs. Carrie Judd Montgomery', *TBM* 2.32 (Feb 15, 1909), p. 3. Cf. E.A. Sexton, "'Who Hath Believed Our Report?",' *TBM* 1.15 (Jun 15, 1908), p. 1.

<sup>463</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, "As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance"', *TBM* 3.71 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>464</sup> Sexton, 'Editorials, "As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance"', p. 1.

<sup>465</sup> W.H. Piper, 'The Sovereignty of God', *TBM* 2.46 (Sep 15, 1909), p. 4.

<sup>466</sup> Eli Gardner, 'God's Banner Over Them Was Love', *TBM* 2.40 (Jun 15, 1909), p. 4.

<sup>467</sup> Alfred Weigle, 'Pentecostal Testimony', *TBM* 3.50 (Nov 15, 1909), p. 3; cf. J.G. Rawlings, 'What God Can Do for a Drunkard', *TBM* 2.39 (Jun 1, 1909), p. 4; E.L. Slaybaugh, 'An Interesting Testimony And God's Call to Africa', *TBM* 3.58 (Mar 15, 1910), p. 3.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia undefined realm of the religious self'.<sup>468</sup> But the issue was not straightforward at all because humans could counterfeit the genuine.

Counterfeit tongues was readily acknowledged in *TBM*.<sup>469</sup> D.W. Griffin divided tongues into three categories: 'false tongues' which were demonically inspired; 'flesh tongues' which were in one's own strength and feelings like at Corinth; and finally, 'faith tongues' which were 'the direct gift of the Holy Spirit ... where your will is in line with the divine and where you have one motive or moving power – the glory of God'.<sup>470</sup> Simmons believed that speaking in genuine tongues helped discern demonic activity so that it could be cast out.<sup>471</sup> He mentions that Mk 16.17 is more than just a list of signs; tongues speech helps to 'cast out devils'.<sup>472</sup> This human side called for discernment on the part of believers, but also gave an explanation for any failings.<sup>473</sup> Because the source of glossolalia could be either divine, fleshly, or demonic, these early pioneers had to defend the nature of their glossolalia.

### 3. The Language(s) of Glossolalia.

Because it was clear that not all tongues speech was xenolalia, a reasonable answer had to be given to the critics who said it, 'is contrary to reason and common sense, for the Holy Ghost to speak through us, and neither we, nor anyone else know what is being said'.<sup>474</sup> Occasionally, Evangelical commentators were quoted to give support and reason. For example, Godet noted it is 'a tongue which no man understands, so that what he says remains a mystery ... a sort of spiritual solilqua'; Schaff noted that 'a new experience always expresses itself in appropriate language ... (it) broke through the

---

<sup>468</sup> F. Bartleman, 'Report Of Camp Meeting, Alliance Ohio', *TBM* 1.18 (Jul 15, 1908), p. 2.

<sup>469</sup> 'Counterfeits', *TBM* 1.18 (Jul 15, 1908), p. 1; B.S. O'Neal, 'A Sanctified Mind', *TBM* 2.29 (Jan 1, 1901), p. 4; V.P. Simmons, 'Casting Out Devils', *TBM* 3.57 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>470</sup> D.W. Griffin, 'Tongues', *TBM* 4.79 (Feb 1, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>471</sup> Simmons, 'Casting Out Devils', p. 2.

<sup>472</sup> Simmons, 'Casting Out Devils', p. 2.

<sup>473</sup> 'Serious mistakes have been made by very precious Saints, as well as false teachers' but the root case is 'the want of perfect oneness among the brethren', E.A. Sexton, 'Editorials, Pentecost', *TBM* 2.38 (May 15, 1909), p. 1.

<sup>474</sup> Murrah, "They Overcame By The Blood Of The Lamb And The Word Of Their Testimony", *TBM* 1.19 (Aug 1, 1908), p. 2.

confines of ordinary speech and burst out in ecstatic language of praise'.<sup>475</sup> Dr. Bushnell claimed not to understand 'the great mystery of language' in tongues, but suggested that its unknown quality has 'greater dignity and propriety, for just the reason that they require another gift to make them intelligible' and that they are a 'symbol to the world of the possibility of a divine access to the soul'.<sup>476</sup> He reasoned that revelation needs not only God to speak but the hearer to have some response that others can see.

However, the more organic Pentecostal response was to respond that tongues were either xenolalia,<sup>477</sup> angelic, or heavenly speech,<sup>478</sup> or that it was like the Corinthian glossolalia and does not need to be a language at all:

it is often asked what profit is there in 'speaking in tongues?' ... The Holy Spirit is in communication with the spirit of the believer. This is very edifying; it strengthens and enlarges his spirit, causing him to magnify God more and more. It results in giving him an inner and very intimate knowledge of his creator.<sup>479</sup>

### **III. The Church of God in Christ – *The Whole Truth*.**

#### **A. History of the Revival.**

Charles H. Mason encountered the holiness doctrine from a northern missionary,<sup>480</sup> and together with his friend, C.P. Jones, 'cause (d) no small stir' with their dynamic holiness preaching.<sup>481</sup> Jones and Mason 'traveled and itinerated ... much more widely than most other African-Americans in the region'.<sup>482</sup> Soon they were 'expelled from the National Baptist Convention'<sup>483</sup> and formed the COGIC.<sup>484</sup> The COGIC was significant in that it

---

<sup>475</sup> "Tongues", p. 4.

<sup>476</sup> 'Dr. Bushnell On Supernatural Manifestations Of The Spirit', *TBM* 3.53 (Jan 1, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>477</sup> V.P. Simmons, 'The Exercise of Tongues', *TBM* 3.63 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 4; cf. Sexton, 'Editorials, "As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance"', p. 1.

<sup>478</sup> Simmons, 'The Exercise of Tongues', p. 4

<sup>479</sup> W.S. Lake, 'How I Received The Pentecostal Blessing', *TBM* 6.124 (Jan 1, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>480</sup> Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 77.

<sup>481</sup> Clemons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 866.

<sup>482</sup> Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 77.

<sup>483</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 115.

<sup>484</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 71.

'was the first southern holiness denomination to become legally chartered' and was also interracial.<sup>485</sup>

Soon, Mason was drawn<sup>486</sup> to the ASM revival and during the six weeks he was there<sup>487</sup> he was filled with the Spirit and developed a lifelong friendship with Seymour.<sup>488</sup> Meanwhile, Mason's church was already acquainted with Pentecostalism because of the ministry of Glen A. Cook, so it was fully behind Mason when he returned.<sup>489</sup> However, Jones 'did not want to add this new teaching to the church' and they debated for four months. Mason 'viewed the baptism in the Holy Spirit as a normative, empowering experience that came upon those who had previously been sanctified' including speaking in tongues as IE.<sup>490</sup> Their separation occurred in August, 1907 with the denomination split roughly half between Mason and Jones.<sup>491</sup>

The new Pentecostal COGIC played an important role by ordaining whites as well as blacks. Between 1906 until 1914, 'scores of white ministers joined Mason's church'.<sup>492</sup> However, the south was becoming a more 'difficult place for African-Americans to live. Whites were increasingly moving to disenfranchise blacks in the region'.<sup>493</sup> In 1914, because of 'the difficult climate of southern racism, the white membership called for separation, which culminated in the Hot Springs organizational meeting of the

---

<sup>485</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 71.

<sup>486</sup> He realized 'they did not have the power described in the New Testament, though they may see the sick healed, the dead raised, or even demons exorcised', Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 116.

<sup>487</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 219.

<sup>488</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 39. Robeck reports that Seymour sought Mason's advice regarding his relationship to Clara Lum. Mason advised against such a relationship, 'in an era of Jim Crow', p. 310.

<sup>489</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 220; cf. Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 116.

<sup>490</sup> Alexander notes that Jones 'was not convinced that tongues was the initial evidence', Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 116; cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 221.

<sup>491</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 221, cf. Clemons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 866.

<sup>492</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 70.

<sup>493</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 219.

Assemblies of God (AG)'.<sup>494</sup> There, Mason preached one of the inaugural sermons<sup>495</sup> of the AG and 'maintained warm fellowship with the white Pentecostals' thereafter.<sup>496</sup>

COGIC continued to grow,<sup>497</sup> and 'at least 10 other church bodies owed their origins to Mason's church'.<sup>498</sup> Mason desired and prayed for 'above all things a religion like the one he heard about from the old slaves and seen demonstrated in their lives'.<sup>499</sup> Pentecostalism fit nicely, both 'preserving the "spiritual essence" and the "prayer tradition" of black religious experience'.<sup>500</sup> It is said that Seymour and Mason began 'one of the most powerful expressions of Black religion in the world'.<sup>501</sup> Because of his long life, 'Mason stamped his personality on his church far more emphatically than any other holiness leader'.<sup>502</sup>

## B. Confirmation of Normative Pentecostalism.

Though it would be unwise to extrapolate too much from a single issue, three elements of normative Pentecostalism are clear in the singular extant edition of *TWT*.

First, SB with evidentiary tongues was in harmony with early Pentecostalism. Included in *TWT*'s statement of faith is Mk 16.17, 'they shall speak with new tongues'. Young reported that 'many are getting saved, sanctified and baptized with the Holy Ghost and fire, with Bible evidence of speaking in tongues' in the north.<sup>503</sup> One article

---

<sup>494</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 117. There are four possible reasons: '1) cultural racism held by white Pentecostals; 2) racial segregation in the broader culture (e.g. Jim Crow laws); 3) theological differences over sanctification (COGIC held to a second-work position, while Bell and other AG founders held to a finished-work position); 4) ecclesiological differences (COGIC had an episcopal system with bishops, and the AG held strong Congregationalist commitments', William J. Molenaar, 'Christian Unity: A Founding Principle of the Assemblies of God', *Heritage* 34 (2014), pp. 57-65 (61).

<sup>495</sup> Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 39; cf. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 172.

<sup>496</sup> Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 866.

<sup>497</sup> Clemmons reports 5,500 congregations with 482,000 adherents in 1961, Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 867.

<sup>498</sup> Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 867.

<sup>499</sup> Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 865.

<sup>500</sup> Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 866.

<sup>501</sup> Clemmons, 'Charles Harrison Mason', p. 867.

<sup>502</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 71. 'Mason served as Bishop of the church from its organization in 1896 until his death in 1961', Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 114.

<sup>503</sup> D.J. Young, *TWT* 4.4 (Oct, 1911), p. 4.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia focused on SB and affirmed the separation of sanctification from SB as two events and the evidentiary nature of tongues:<sup>504</sup>

every place we read where the spirit came upon the people or the person it was a similar experience, and I am so glod (sic) to know that when we believe on him like they believed and surrender to him like they did and tarry for the power, it will come on us just like it came on them ... Jesus said these signs shall follow the believers ... they shall speak with new tongues.<sup>505</sup>

The above quote also reveals they desired to have the same experience as the biblical Pentecost.

Second, singing a new song by the Holy Spirit played a large role in Mason's ministry during their Annual Convocation. Spirit-song occurred eight days of the convention.<sup>506</sup> Sadly, the writing was ambiguous and glossolalia was not specifically stated; additionally, often a translation was given in English. In one case, it was sung to a familiar tune, 'Glory to God'.<sup>507</sup> Also, 'we were taught to sing in the Spirit on this beautiful Sabbath morning' could imply a human source for the Spirit-song.<sup>508</sup> Mason's testimony of glossolalic singing in the *AF* was unambiguous.<sup>509</sup>

Third, there was a testimony of a child giving direction for the service via glossolalia: 'the Spirit in an unknown tongue spoke through little sister Velda Young, on the first night, and ask everyone to keep hands off, and let the Lord work in the

---

<sup>504</sup> 'The Spirit of God Upon Us', p. 4. They were sanctified when Jesus breathed on them, Jn 20.22, 23, and then it states, 'he tells them ye shall receive power after the Holy Spirit come upon you. And so they did tarry in Jerusalem'. There are two additional didactic articles: 1) the editor, Justus Bowe, provides an untitled article that affirms the reality of hell, *TWT* 4.4 (Oct, 1911), p. 2. 2) An unsigned and untitled teaching that encourages people to have a 'true heart' towards God by turning from deceitfulness, p. 2.

<sup>505</sup> 'The Spirit of God Upon Us', p. 4.

<sup>506</sup> It is listed on days, 4, 7, 11, 13, 15, 18, 19, and 27, 'Report Of The Annual Convocation', *TWT* 4.4 (Oct, 1911), pp. 1, 3.

<sup>507</sup> 'Report Of The Annual Convocation', p. 1.

<sup>508</sup> 'Report Of The Annual Convocation', p. 1. "Glory to God" was sung in the spirit by our pastor today. The Lord had sent him to us, and *as the Spirit sang out* in him the new song of praise *today the Lord gave us such a wonderful instruction* through Elder C.H. Mason', is another example of unclear scripting. Italics mine.

<sup>509</sup> 'I surrendered perfectly to Him and consented to Him. Then I began singing a song in unknown tongues, and it was the sweetest thing to have Him sing that song through me', Mason, 'Tennessee Evangelist Witnesses', p. 7.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia meeting, and great would it be (sic)'.<sup>510</sup> The leaders followed this prophetic word and reported, 'so we did and so was the work greater than we've known for the short time of five days'.<sup>511</sup>

#### **IV. Church of God (Cleveland, TN) – *The Church Of God Evangel.***

##### **A. History of the Revival.**

The Church of God (CG) traces its history back earlier than the ASM revival. Their story 'begins in the mountains of southern Appalachia in 1886 with a small group of Baptist reformers who adopted a restorationist view of the church'.<sup>512</sup> Richard G. Spurling, Jr., established the Christian Union (CU) with the guiding principle that the church was visible and corporate.<sup>513</sup> Of the four churches that formed and loosely fellowshipped with the CU, only one survived beyond the first ten years.<sup>514</sup>

In 1895 a WH revival broke out in Camp Creek, NC,<sup>515</sup> and the effects of 'the Spirit (were) similar to those recorded in the book of Acts'<sup>516</sup> including tongues.<sup>517</sup> This revival energized Spurling's followers. In 1899, evangelists from Irwin's Fire Baptized Holiness Association (FBHA) would 'set ablaze this revival and bring it to fever pitch'.<sup>518</sup> Wade

---

<sup>510</sup> 'Report Of The Children's Meeting, TWT 4.4 (Oct, 1911), p. 4.

<sup>511</sup> 'Report Of The Children's Meeting, p. 4.

<sup>512</sup> Wade H. Phillips, *Quest to Restore God's House: A Theological History of the Church of God (Cleveland, Tennessee), Volume I 1886-1923* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2014), p. xvi. This work is ground-breaking in that it varies from the denomination's accepted history (e.g. Charles Conn, *Like A Mighty Army*) and that it so quickly was accepted as a scholarly correction to the historical record.

<sup>513</sup> See Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 97-98 for the 'core principles' of the CU.

<sup>514</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 85, cf. pp. 74-91.

<sup>515</sup> It was located in the Shearer Schoolhouse in Cherokee County, Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 72.

<sup>516</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 107. This revival was not the direct result of the CU but 'the groundwork (was) laid by Spurling and his followers', p. 108. Contrary to Conn, who recorded that 'the two groups became one', Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 20, cf. pp. 13-20.

<sup>517</sup> Phillips writes that "'Speaking in tongues'" was not at first recognized as a significant and distinct manifestation ... (though) eyewitnesses later recalled occurrences of tongues speech in their meetings', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 107, cf. Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 24, cf. pp. 22-24. There were testimonies of glossolalia 'sometime between 1885 and 1886' in the CU, p. 107, n. 4.

<sup>518</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 119, cf. pp. 119-72. Phillips notes that the peak of the FBHA coincided, timing-wise, with its introduction at Camp Creek, p. 153.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Philips argues that glossolalia was a part of Irwin's theology by April 1899<sup>519</sup> and that the FBHA is the real beginning of American Pentecostalism.<sup>520</sup> On May 15<sup>th</sup>, 1902 the group was renamed the Holiness Church at Camp Creek (HCCC)<sup>521</sup> and on June 13, 1903, they added their most significant member, Ambrose J. Tomlinson.<sup>522</sup>

Originally from Westfield, IN Tomlinson found his way to Culberson, NC doing colportage work.<sup>523</sup> In his formative years he was influenced by many people<sup>524</sup> and

---

<sup>519</sup> Phillips notes two significant theological points: 1) 'Irwin had distinguished as early as April 1899 the manifestation of "tongues of fire" on the day of Pentecost in Acts 2.3 from the manifestation of the various dialects in verse four', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 138. 2) 'Irwin's reference to "ecstatic speech" as a result of the baptism of *lyddite* predates by eight months Charles Fox Parham's introduction of SB with its connection to speaking in tongues at Topeka, Kansas in January 1901', p. 136.

<sup>520</sup> 'Further research and reflection in the recent years on the historical and theological evidence has led us to conclude that the beginning of the Pentecostal movement should indeed be located in the fire-baptized holiness movement, particularly in the light of what was proclaimed and experienced in 1899-1900 with the proliferation of *glossolalia* and other spiritual gifts', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 139. His arguments are: 1) the FBHA 'movement simply metamorphosed into a new form under a new name – the Pentecostal movement', p. 125; 2) both sought spiritual power to advance the gospel, p. 127; 3) 'Parham himself was introduced not only to a post-sanctification "third work blessing" but also to glossolalia in fire-baptized meetings', p. 136, cf. p. 143; 4) and theologically, 'the developing theology of tongues speech in the Pentecostal movement (Parham's and Seymour's) ... began to sound remarkably similar to what Irwin taught in 1889–1900', p. 138. Counter arguments are: 1) Only following Azusa were tongues 'both anticipated and consciously understood to be the initial and conclusive evidence of Spirit-baptism', pp. 141-42. Conn wrote, 'what had happened the simple, rustic Christians could not then understand ... how long it was before the realization of what happened to the group is not certain, but it could not have been long', Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 24. 2) Goff notes that though Parham was influenced by FBHA, Parham 'dismissed it as "mere "chatter", "jabber", and "babble", for he claimed the ability to distinguish between known languages and mere "gibberish"', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 137; 3) The wave of revival clearly flowed from Azusa Street and not from Camp Creek. For example, in 1908 A.J. Tomlinson invited G.B. Cashwell for 'more knowledge on the subject as well as the experience itself', Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 84. Synan does call the Camp Creek revival 'the greatest instance of speaking with other tongues before 1906', Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 111.

<sup>521</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 168, cf. pp. 167-72.

<sup>522</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 210; cf. pp. 173-223; Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 44-50, Harold D. Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 1143-45; Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 96. Synan calls Tomlinson 'a mystical Quaker from Indiana. A restless wanderer', Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 74.

<sup>523</sup> Tomlinson sold for both the American Bible Society and the American Tract Society, Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson', p. 1143; cf. Phillips, *Quest*, p. 173.

<sup>524</sup> Phillips spells out a significant Quaker influence, Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 175-79. Frank W. Stanford's ministry at Shiloh in Durham, ME was a major influence as well, with Tomlinson even being re-baptized and joining his movement, pp. 194-201; cf. Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson', p. 1144; Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 75. Stephens believes that it was 'Cashwell's paper and his ceaseless

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

everyone quickly recognized his leadership skills.<sup>525</sup> Soon after joining the HCCC, Tomlinson was elected its pastor.<sup>526</sup> The HCCC slowly grew in adherents, in the number of churches, and thanks to the FBHA, in its theological vocabulary.<sup>527</sup> Tomlinson's leadership grew as well: 'by 1904 Tomlinson was pastor of three out of four affiliated congregations and edited ... a periodical titled *The Way*'.<sup>528</sup>

In 1906 a 'General Assembly'<sup>529</sup> was so popular that it became an annual event.<sup>530</sup> The HCCC 'did not claim to be a part of the Pentecostal movement before 1906'<sup>531</sup> even though its 'Pentecostal doctrine continued to grow with the emphasis ... on spiritual gifts, divine healing, and the baptism of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>532</sup> In 1907 the HCCC was renamed the Church of God.<sup>533</sup> In 1908 Tomlinson sought out Cashwell and invited him to preach at a nearby church and during the General Assembly. There Tomlinson was filled with the Spirit with the evidence of glossolalia on January 10, 1908.<sup>534</sup> After 'he received his baptism, all the Church of God ministers were then Holy Ghost baptized men, for all the others had received the experience – some as much as twelve years

---

evangelism (that) helped guide the Church of God (Cleveland) ... into the pentecostal fold', Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 203; cf. Phillips, *Quest*, p. 234. Noticeably missing from Phillips' list is Montgomery's influence on divine healing, Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson,' p. 1143.

<sup>525</sup> For example, he was not content to peddle bibles and tracts, during this time he also organized an orphanage and published *Samson's Foxes*, a paper that 'featured articles and news from the WH movement and the healing movement and appeals to assist the needy', Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson,' pp. 1143-44; cf. Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 185-92.

<sup>526</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 205, 217; cf. Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 44, 52.

<sup>527</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 119-67. Conn notes that these 'twenty years had inserted into the modern Christian vocabulary terms like "Pentecostal," "unknown tongues," and "divine perfection," and "sanctification," whose meanings had been lost in a maze of theological garble', Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 55.

<sup>528</sup> By 1904 there were four congregations in three states and three mission stations, Phillips, *Quest*, p. 217. Hunter, 'Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson,' p. 1144.

<sup>529</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 218, 223-26; cf. Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 61-62; cf. Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 96-97.

<sup>530</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 61, 62.

<sup>531</sup> It was not 'until after the dispute over speaking in tongues in 1909-1910 ...that the Church of God clearly identified itself with the Pentecostal movement', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 233. This dispute was also over Tomlinson's autocratic style of leadership, pp. 233, 238-44.

<sup>532</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 75.

<sup>533</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 74.

<sup>534</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 235-36; cf. Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 123, 124.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

earlier'.<sup>535</sup> The CG continued to grow these early years through hard work, sacrifice,<sup>536</sup> and revival:<sup>537</sup>

there were remarkable spiritual manifestations. Many afflicted persons were healed ... frequent messages were given in tongues and interpreted ... this speaking forth in ecstasy was by no means unusual but was rather the expected nature of the services.<sup>538</sup>

Today, the CG has grown to become one 'of the oldest and largest pentecostal bodies'.<sup>539</sup>

### B. 'As The Spirit Gives Utterance'.

Like other Pentecostal periodicals of the time, the COGE held firmly to evidentiary glossolalia, although the preferred terminology was the phrase to speak 'as the Spirit gives utterance'.<sup>540</sup> This phrase distinguished evidentiary tongues from the gift of tongues.<sup>541</sup> Tongues as an evidence of SB was clearly defended and explained in the pages of the COGE.

Theological reflection about IE and glossolalia was largely limited to what the bible stated. Tomlinson wrote that it was important 'to have an experience that will measure up to the word of God'.<sup>542</sup> Evidential tongues were 'plain' to all who read the bible with

---

<sup>535</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 85. Robeck states that 'by 1908 ... several Wesleyan-holiness denominations embraced the message of the Azusa Street Mission and its revival', listing CG among these denominations, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 10, cf. p. 219.

<sup>536</sup> For example, R.M. Evans, 'sold his home in Durant ... and his few cows, hogs, and chickens. With the money from these, he bought a wagon and team of mules ... (and) drove (them) more than three hundred miles to Miami ... where he ... sold the mules' and thus provided his passage to the Bahamas to evangelize, Conn, *Mighty Army*, p. 112.

<sup>537</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 85-154, cf. C.W. Conn, 'Church of God (Cleveland, TN)', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 530-34 (531).

<sup>538</sup> Conn, *Mighty Army*, pp. 136, 137.

<sup>539</sup> Conn, 'Church of God (Cleveland, TN)', *NIDPCM*, p. 530.

<sup>540</sup> W.F. Bryant, 'A Pentecostal Funeral', COGE 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 8. Other phrases to identify the evidentiary nature are: the 'bible evidence' and simply 'the evidence', cf. Edith Brawner, 'Maitland, Fla (1.)', COGE 1.5 (May 15, 1910), p. 7; 'The Church of God', COGE 1.12 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>541</sup> 'The first thing Mr. Wheatlake does is to confuse the speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance with the "gift of tongues"', Tomlinson, 'Beautiful Light Of Pentecost', COGE 8.18 (May 12, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>542</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism With The Holy Ghost?', COGE 1.19 (Dec 1, 1910), p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

an ‘unprejudiced mind’ because it was a clear ‘bible doctrine’.<sup>543</sup> A.E. Street set out to prove from scripture that one could be filled with the Spirit without speaking in tongues, but discovered that ‘the Bible is too plain’.<sup>544</sup> Tomlinson went so far as to write that in ‘the sacred book of books … it is as much of a command to receive the Holy Ghost and talk in other tongues as it is to be baptized with water or take the bread and wine to commemorate the Lord’s death till he comes again’.<sup>545</sup> The earnest desire was to relive Pentecost: ‘it was almost like Pentecost repeated, with over one hundred exercised by the power of the Spirit, at one time … talking in tongues, praising God, shouting, preaching, praying exhorting, and glorifying God’.<sup>546</sup> It was important that SB be immediately verifiable to the entire group as in T.S. Payne’s report: ‘one lady received the Holy Ghost for *we heard her* speak in tongues and magnify God’.<sup>547</sup> S.J. Heath explained that ‘to be a witness one must speak, write or give a sign. The Holy Ghost never comes into a person without speaking in an unknown tongue’.<sup>548</sup>

Exegetically, evidential glossolalia was rooted in the traditional Pentecostal reading of the book of Acts.<sup>549</sup> In addition to Acts and Mk 16.17, it was believed that Jesus taught evidential tongues in Jn 15.26, 16.13, giving the COGE the strongest Johannine footing

---

<sup>543</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Speaking in Tongues’, COGE 5.51 (Dec 26, 1914), p. 1. One could say that at times the noun ‘bible’ was used as an adjective to signify divine authority, for example, ‘we know the baptism of the Holy Ghost and tongues as the evidence is a Bible doctrine’, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘More About The Church’, COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>544</sup> A.E. Street, ‘What is Pentecost’, COGE 5.30 (Jul 25, 1914), p. 6.

<sup>545</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘We Would Not Know’, COGE 6.15 (Apr 10, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>546</sup> ‘Camp meetings at Cleveland’, COGE 1.16 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 4; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Pentecostal Shower’, COGE 1.2 (Mar 15, 1910), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Pentecostal Experience Accompanied with Tongues’, COGE 1.4 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 1; Henry Watts, ‘Vance, Ala.’, COGE 6.16 (Apr 17, 1915), p. 2; J. Wilson Bell, ‘Kingston, Jamaica, B.W.I.’, COGE 8.35 (Sep 8, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>547</sup> T.S. Payne, ‘Evangelistic’, COGE 5.7 (Feb 14, 1914), p. 8. Italics mine. Cf. C.F. Bright, ‘Valdesta, Ga.’, COGE 5.32 (Aug 8, 1914), p. 6; Jennie Lacy, ‘Shady Grove, Miss.’, COGE 6.36 (Sep 4, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>548</sup> S.J. Heath, ‘Shall We Recognize The Holy Ghost?’, COGE 10.24 (Jun 14, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>549</sup> Tomlinson, ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism With The Holy Ghost?’, p. 1; W.G. Anderson, ‘Thoughts On The Church’, COGE 5.13 (Mar 28, 1914), p. 5; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘All Will Speak In Tongues’, COGE 7.5 (Jan 29, 1916), p. 1; F.J. Lee, ‘“Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?”’, COGE 7.9 (Feb 26, 1916), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The Holy Ghost And Tongues’, COGE 9.14 (Apr 6, 1918), pp. 1, 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

of all the early Pentecostal periodicals.<sup>550</sup> People often based their testimony on Jesus' teaching that the Holy Spirit would 'speak for himself'.<sup>551</sup> Mrs. E.L. Hammond even stated that Jesus was a glossolalic: 'I was running the references and found where Christ spoke in other tongues'.<sup>552</sup> Tomlinson explained that 'the Holy Ghost is a person that can talk ... (Jesus said) the Holy Ghost would "testify" when He came'.<sup>553</sup>

Explicit doctrinal statements were rare in the *COGE*, and when they were made, were straightforward and without nuance.<sup>554</sup> One such statement read that the CG 'stands for the whole Bible rightly divided', followed by twenty-five doctrines in a single sentence with scripture references.<sup>555</sup> Those relevant to glossolalia stated:

the baptism with the Holy Ghost subsequent to cleansing: The enduement of power for service: Matt. 3:11, Luke 24:49-53, Acts 1:4-8 ... the speaking in tongues as the evidence of the baptism with the Holy Ghost: John 15:26, Acts 2:4, Acts 10:44-46, Acts 19:1-7 ... the full restoration of the gifts to the church: 1 Cor. 12:1-7-10-28-31 (sic), 1 Cor. 14:1 ... signs following believers: Mark 16:17-20, Rom. 15:18-19, Heb. 2:4.<sup>556</sup>

Glossolalia evidenced only the initial infilling. It was 'not intended to mean a permanent or continuous evidence ... but only to establish the fact that the Spirit has come in at the time He comes in'.<sup>557</sup> It was 'the one and only decisive evidence',<sup>558</sup> the singular sign: 'we are not afraid to declare in the face of every foe that all will speak in

---

<sup>550</sup> R.M. Evans, 'Missionary', *COGE* 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 7; Tomlinson, 'What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism With The Holy Ghost?', p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Receive The Holy Ghost', *COGE* 6.9 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Receive The Holy Ghost', *COGE* 6.16 (Apr 17, 1915), p. 1; Tomlinson, 'All Will Speak In Tongues', p. 1; Lee, "'Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?'", p. 1.

<sup>551</sup> E.g. Joe Bowker, 'Charlotte, Tenn.', *COGE* 6.52 (Dec 25, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>552</sup> Mrs. E.L. Hammond, 'Oakland, Fla.', *COGE* 6.3 (Jan 16, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>553</sup> Tomlinson, 'Speaking in Tongues', p. 1; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Holy Ghost', *COGE* 6.21 (May 22, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>554</sup> There is only one explicit doctrinal statement in the *COGE*: 'The Church of God', *COGE* 1.12 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 3. Phillips notes that this 'teaching' was written by a 'Committee composed of Tomlinson, Spurling, Lemons, and McClain', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 369, n. 203. Because of the infrequency of such statements, ministers were encouraged to 'preserve this copy of the Evangel for future references'.

<sup>555</sup> 'The Church Of God', p. 3.

<sup>556</sup> 'The Church Of God', p. 3. An earlier doctrinal statement contains 18 points. Spirit Baptism is defined as the 'full restoration of the gifts ... an experience for people today, the same as for the Apostles (Luke 24:49; Matthew 28:19, 20; Acts 2:39)', Phillips, *Quest*, p. 367.

<sup>557</sup> Tomlinson, 'What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism With The Holy Ghost?', p. 1.

<sup>558</sup> Lee, "'Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?'", p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia tongues when they are baptized with the Holy Ghost and fire'.<sup>559</sup> The sign was verification of God's equipping power. 'And what better method could He adopt' wrote Tomlinson, 'that we may know when the work is finished'?<sup>560</sup>

The evidential nature of SB was often challenged by critics.<sup>561</sup> Occasionally, Tomlinson advocated separation from those who denied glossolalia.<sup>562</sup> He warned his pastors not to let just anyone preach as there are deceivers who 'teach a good deal of the doctrine, but say that the speaking with other tongues is not necessarily the evidence of the baptism with the Holy Ghost, and that not all will speak with tongues who received the baptism'.<sup>563</sup> There was a fear that if tongues were not ongoing, the CG would decline or fragment:

while our experiences are still fresh and sweet, they may not continue so if we should fail to emphasize the tongues ... if the Spirit does not manifest Himself occasionally by using your tongue as He did when He first came in, how do you know that He still remains'?<sup>564</sup>

The strong defence of glossolalia and the fear of losing it were connected to a deep reverence and belief that tongues were the voice of the Holy Spirit. For example, some teachers say: 'just claim the Holy Ghost and you will have Him.' ... It is a shame to teach honest souls that the Holy Ghost is of such little consequence that they will not know when He comes ... when He comes into our being we are very

---

<sup>559</sup> Tomlinson, 'All Will Speak in Tongues', p. 1; cf. Street, 'What is Pentecost', p. 6.

<sup>560</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism With The Holy Ghost?', COGE 1.19 (Dec 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>561</sup> 'Quite a number of Pentecostal papers come to my office, but it has been a long time since I saw an article ... that taught clearly that all will speak in tongues when they are baptized with the Holy Ghost ... People are flooding me lately with letters in teachings against the tongues as evidence of the baptism ... We mean to sound the message of the "tongues" unto all the ends of the earth. All will speak in other tongues when they are baptized with the Holy Ghost', A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Experience Is Real', COGE 7.8 (Feb 19, 1916), p. 1.

<sup>562</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Mysterious Fellowship', COGE 10.40 (Oct 4, 1919), p. 1.

<sup>563</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Warning And Advice', COGE 1.12 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 1; cf. A.S. Worrell, 'The Crisis Now On', COGE 1.16 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 5; A.J. Tomlinson 'Loyalty To Christ', COGE 7.18 (Apr 29, 1916), p. 1.

<sup>564</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Emphasize The Tongues', COGE 9.7 (Feb 17, 1918), p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia conscious of the fact; others will know it too, as they hear Him make the utterance in other tongues.<sup>565</sup>

### C. Responses to the Critics.

In addition to evidential tongues, other aspects of the theology of glossolalia in the COGE were polished and clarified in response to her critics. For example, the charge of cessationism was countered by: 1) noting occurrences within church history,<sup>566</sup> 2) appealing to the latter rain hermeneutic,<sup>567</sup> and 3) with the belief that there is an all or nothing aspect to spiritual manifestations:

if we accept part of the Bible and the manifestations of the Spirit part of the way why not take all ... isn't there sufficient proof that the apostles and early church spoke in tongues? Is there one particle of evidence that the speaking has been done away?<sup>568</sup>

In response to the criticism that speech had to be intelligible to edify, Tomlinson noted that tongues 'does not always require intelligent teaching or expression'.<sup>569</sup> He further argued that there would be no need for a gift of interpretation if the audience knew what was said. He believed that 'when one speaks to himself in an unknown tongue, although he may not understand the words spoken, he is edified'.<sup>570</sup>

Some critics used Paul's 'do all speak in tongues?'<sup>571</sup> to mean that not everyone will do so. In keeping with the established Pentecostal distinction between glossolalia as a sign and as a gift, Tomlinson's reply was:

we do not claim that *the gift of tongues* is evidence of the baptism of the Holy Ghost ... (rather, it is) tongues *as the Spirit gave utterance* as the evidence of the baptism of the Holy Ghost and no one ever received this blessed baptism without the tongues.<sup>572</sup>

---

<sup>565</sup> Andrew McFail, 'Big Clifty, Ky.', COGE 8.37 (Sep 22, 1917), p. 3; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'Strange Ideas And Doctrines', COGE 7.26 (Jun 24, 1916), p. 1.

<sup>566</sup> Tomlinson, 'The Opposition Weakening', p. 1.

<sup>567</sup> Lee, "'Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?", p. 1.

<sup>568</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'Why Reject Speaking In Tongues', COGE 8.39 (Oct 6, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>569</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Edification And Comfort', COGE 8.20 (May 26 1917), p. 1.

<sup>570</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Gift Of Tongues', COGE 8.24 (Jun 23, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>571</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.30.

<sup>572</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Confidence Unshaken', COGE 8.21 (Jun 2, 1917), p. 1. Italics mine. Cf. Sam C. Perry, 'What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#2)?', COGE 9.16 (Apr 20, 1918), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The charge that tongues were ‘of the devil’ caused Lee to acknowledge and address counterfeit tongues.<sup>573</sup> Counterfeit tongues were seen in the context of a spiritual battle and were often countered by prayer and confrontation: ‘during this meeting the devil came up as an Angel of light speaking in tongues and claiming the gifts but the Lord gave the victory over the power of the devil’.<sup>574</sup> Tomlinson theorized that Satan and manipulative individuals could speak with tongues.<sup>575</sup> R.M. Evans pointed out that to focus on counterfeits weakens the ‘confidence in *the sign* of the incoming and abiding Comforter’.<sup>576</sup> Readers were encouraged to know the genuine which was identifiable by the fruit of the Spirit: ‘if the fruits of Spirit … (are) the experience of the one that talks in tongues, who could say that he was actuated by the Devil in talking in tongues?’<sup>577</sup> However, it was contended that to really understand glossolalia, one had to experience it: ‘only those who have talked in other tongues … know anything about it’.<sup>578</sup> There was a ‘deep dwelling place’ of spiritual knowledge that ‘none should try to claim … without the Holy Ghost’, wrote Tomlinson.<sup>579</sup>

### D. Signs and Wonders

The CG distinguished itself from other Pentecostal groups by signs and wonders. It claimed to be ‘the only religious institution that stands for the Bible rightly divided, with *all* the signs, gifts and graces’.<sup>580</sup> Evidential glossolalia was seen as a gateway

---

<sup>573</sup> Lee, ““Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?””, p. 1.

<sup>574</sup> E.L. Simmons, ‘Tarpon Springs, Fla.’, COGE 6.50 (Dec 11, 1915); cf. D.F. Baldree, ‘To Backsliders’, COGE 8.7 (Feb 17, 1917), p. 4; Perry, ‘What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#2)?’, p. 3.

<sup>575</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Tongues, Tithes, Knowledge’, COGE 8.29 (Jul 28, 1917), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Pray! Pray! Pray!’, COGE 5.16 (Apr 18, 1914), p. 2!

<sup>576</sup> R.M. Evans ‘Does Satan Speak In Tongues?’ COGE 9.25 (Jun 22, 1918), p. 4. Italics mine.

<sup>577</sup> Lee, ““Is The Present Tongues Movement Of God?””, p. 1; cf. Sam C. Perry ‘Why Does Satan Hate The Speaking In Tongues’, COGE 10.51 (Feb 1, 1919), p. 3.

<sup>578</sup> Tomlinson, ‘The Opposition Weakening’, p. 1; cf. Sam C. Perry, ‘What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#1)?’, COGE 8.40 (Oct 13, 1917), p. 3; Tomlinson, ‘The Holy Ghost And Tongues’, pp. 1, 2.

<sup>579</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Dwell Deep’, COGE 8.51 (Dec 29, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>580</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Editorial’, COGE 8.23 (Jun 16, 1917), p. 2. Italics mine. Cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Missionary Sunday’, COGE 8.10 (Mar 10, 1917), p. 1. Alexander noted that while ‘Tomlinson did have fellowship with other Pentecostals … the Church of God was the *true* church and the Bible church’, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 100, n. 153. Italics original. Phillips believes the emphasis on signs and wonders was two-fold: ‘Tomlinson sought for extraordinary powers and manifestations that would

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia experience, opening up the glossolalic to have faith and power for all the signs and wonders. Though all the signs of Mk 16.17-18 were claimed some signs were given more prominence than others.<sup>581</sup>

Glossolalia was *the* bible evidence, an initiation into a life characterized by *all* the bible signs, especially Mk 16.17-18.<sup>582</sup> Note how Tomlinson bundles all these signs together and considers them to be of equal rank:

it would be in the extreme to emphasize the sign of casting out devils and disregard the other signs, or laying hands on the sick and leave off the tongues or taking up of serpents ... each of these signs has its place among the signs but not alone ... neither must we make a hobby of the signs and neglect the gifts and fruits of the Spirit.<sup>583</sup>

In an article titled ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, Tomlinson reasoned that signs and wonders were scriptural;<sup>584</sup> were a sign of God’s ‘approval’;<sup>585</sup> and were a ‘means of preaching the gospel’ because they had an attractional aspect.<sup>586</sup> Practically speaking, some signs were given greater prominence.<sup>587</sup> For example, healing was a prominent

---

confirm not only his own apostolic calling and position but also the corporate identity ... as being the true restoration of the apostolic church’, Phillips, *Quest*, p. 351.

<sup>581</sup> W.H. Rogers, ‘Walhalla, S.C.’, COGE 7:44 (Oct 28, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>582</sup> Tomlinson notes that the signs of Mk 16.17-18 were ‘done with the deepest reverence and faithfulness ... (so that) the Scriptures are proven true’, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Persistent Faith’, COGE 7.51 (Dec 16, 1916), p. 1.

<sup>583</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Extremes and Extremists’, COGE 7.37 (Sep 9, 1916), p. 1; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Faith is Developing’, COGE 5.46 (Nov 21, 1914), pp. 1-2.

<sup>584</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, COGE 5.38 (Sep 19, 1914), p. 1. ‘Quite a number of our people here had been demonstrating this sign (snake handling) as indicated in Mark 16:18, and that it had been very effective for good’, Tomlinson, ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, p. 2; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Another Good Opportunity’, COGE 7.35 (Aug 26, 1916), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘True Signs that Follow’, COGE 11.15 (Apr 10, 1920), p. 1.

<sup>585</sup> Tomlinson, ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, p. 1; Mrs. Clyde Haynes, ‘Great Revival In Chattanooga’, COGE 6.27 (Jul 3, 1915), p. 3. Cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The Present Situation’, COGE 6.10 (Mar 6, 1915), p. 1; Mrs. Mary Howell, ‘The Church Of God’, COGE 8.3 (Jan 20, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>586</sup> Tomlinson, ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, p. 1; cf. W.D. Collins, ‘Signs’, COGE 8.18 (May 12, 1917), p. 3; Sam C. Perry, ‘The Power Of God’, COGE 9.7 (Feb 16, 1918), p. 3; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘One Heart And One Soul’, COGE 10.17 (Apr 26, 1919), p. 1.

<sup>587</sup> Z.R. Thomas lists running, dancing, leaping, trembling, being slain in the spirit, and speaking in other tongues among the ‘different ways the spirit operates on our mortal bodies’, Z.R. Thomas, ‘Operations of the Holy Spirit’, COGE 5.24 (Jun 13, 1914), pp. 5, 7.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
sign along with the faith to avoid taking medicine.<sup>588</sup> Snake handling<sup>589</sup> was another prominent sign for a short time (1914-1917):<sup>590</sup>

she went down in prayer and the power of the Lord fell on her and she picked the snake up in the name of the Lord and handled it in all shapes that she could think of and then started home with it in her hands. She put the serpent down three times and took it up again ... the fourth time she laid it down her mother struck it with an ax.<sup>591</sup>

Minority voices regarding snake handling were rarely printed in the COGE during the window of this study.<sup>592</sup> The power to handle live coals<sup>593</sup> or hot objects<sup>594</sup> was also frequently mentioned by Tomlinson.<sup>595</sup> For example, ‘ten were dancing under the power and speaking and singing in tongues ... eight of us ran to the fire and took up

---

<sup>588</sup> Cf. Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 101-13.

<sup>589</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Sensational Demonstrations’, COGE 5.38 (Sep 19, 1914), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson ‘Love God and One Another’ COGE 10.17 (Apr 26, 1919), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Snake Bitten Child Report’, COGE 11.38 (Sep 18, 1920), p. 1. Snake-handling was even given tacit approval at the 11<sup>th</sup> (1915) General Assembly when the COGE reported, ‘no serpents were brought in, but there was plenty of power to have taken up the most poisonous reptile if it had made its appearance’, ‘The 11<sup>th</sup> Annual Assembly’, COGE 6.46 (Nov 13, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>590</sup> It appears in COGE extensively during 1914-1917. Perhaps the earliest accounts is: J.B. Ellis, ‘Oneonta, Ala.’, COGE 5.19 (May 9, 1914), p. 8; cf. Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 350-8.

<sup>591</sup> R.D. Atnipp, ‘Poplar Bluff, Missouri,’ COGE 6.35 (Aug 28, 1915), p. 2; cf. COGE 5.40 (Oct 4, 1914), p. 6; G.M. Green, ‘Crab Orchard, Tenn.’, COGE 6.32 (Aug 7, 1915), p. 3; S.W. Patterson, ‘Report From Sobel, Tenn.’, COGE 6.38 (Sep 18, 1915), p. 4; Henry Kinsey, ‘Report’, COGE (Aug 5, 1916), p. 3, et. al.

<sup>592</sup> One unsigned notice read, ‘it had been rumored that a snake was going to be brought there for the saints to handle. Jesus said, (Matt. 12:39) “an evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign: and no sign shall be given ...”, COGE 5.36 (Sep 5, 1914), p. 3. Michael J. McVicar notes that following Tomlinson’s departure in 1922, snake handling gradually ceased being a distinctive and eventually was condemned in 1939, Michael J. McVicar, ‘Take Away the Serpents from Us’, *Journal of Southern Religion* 15 (2013), <http://jsr.fsu.edu/issues/vol15/mcvicar.html>.

<sup>593</sup> Roy L. Cotnam, ‘Sale Creek, Tenn.’, COGE 5.17 (Apr 25, 1914), p. 5.

<sup>594</sup> Chimneys and globes are mentioned, Mrs. Martha Crowder, ‘Foster Falls, Va.’, COGE 6.1 (Jan 2, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>595</sup> Even at the 1914 General Assembly there was a ‘demonstration of God’s presence by the wonderful manifestation of the “like as of fire,” and other displays of his power and glory’, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The New Building’, COGE 5.47 (Nov 21, 1914), p. 1; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The Assembly’, COGE 5.45 (Nov 14, 1914), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Extracts From An Address’, COGE 5.60 (Dec 19, 1914), p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

handfuls of live coals without being burned'.<sup>596</sup> Some saw fire in the sky<sup>597</sup> or a supernatural fire like Moses' burning bush.<sup>598</sup> Less prominent were the signs of casting out of demons<sup>599</sup> and the drinking of poison.<sup>600</sup> An occasional reference to the deaf being healed presented some challenges. The deaf requested prayer for healing<sup>601</sup> and could be Spirit baptized with tongues.<sup>602</sup> However, though some deaf were healed,<sup>603</sup> many of the healing reports were second-hand or were found to be false after investigation.<sup>604</sup>

---

<sup>596</sup> Lillie Tilghman, 'Hardy Station, Miss.', COGE 6.37 (Sep 11, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>597</sup> Scott Hayes, 'Strange Sight at Archadale, Ala.' COGE 1.18 (Nov 15, 1910), p. 4; V.W. Kennedy, 'Fire and Pillars of Smoke', COGE 1.18 (Nov 15, 1910), p. 5; Sallie O. Lee, 'Calhoun, Ga.', COGE 6.42 (Oct 16, 1915), p. 2; Mrs. Christina Smith, Clerk, 'Atlanta, Ga.', COGE 6.50 (Dec 11, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>598</sup> Aaron A. Smith, 'Wimauma Camp Meeting,' COGE 5.24 (Jun 13, 1914), p. 4. Biblical reasoning for the handling or sighting of fire were 1) John the Baptist's 'Holy Ghost and fire'. Italics mine. Tomlinson connected it to John the Baptist's statement that 'Jesus would baptize the people of Holy Ghost and fire', A.J. Tomlinson, 'Fire, and Like as of Fire', COGE 7.48 (Nov 25, 1916), p. 1; cf. W.A. Walker, 'In The Fire', COGE 5.15 (Apr 11, 1914), p. 7; E. Hayes and wife, 'A Report', COGE 5.21 (May 23, 1914), p. 6. 2) It is 'a kind of deliverance from fire exhibited in Daniel 3', COGE 14.11 (Mar 17, 1923), p. 4; cf, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 106. 3) The live coals from a seraph that touched Isaiah's lips (Isa. 6.6, 7), 'Report From Brewster, Fla', COGE 5.38 (Sep 19, 1914), p. 8; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost And With Fire', COGE 9.13 (Mar 30, 1918), p. 1

<sup>599</sup> W.M. Rumler, and wife, 'Convention Report', COGE 7.24 (Jun 10, 1916), p. 2. Cf. D.F. Baldree, 'To Backsliders', COGE 8.7 (Feb 17, 1917), p. 4; J.A. Williams clerk, 'Report', COGE 7.25 (Jun 17, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>600</sup> On the one hand, the drinking of poison was discouraged: 'if the Bible had said *they "shall"* drink deadly poison, that would have been done also, but since it says "*if they shall* drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them"', A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Church Of God', COGE 7.27 (Jul 1, 1916), p. 1. Italics mine. On the other hand, it was a bible sign that required a 'special anointing', A.J. Tomlinson, 'Drinking Deadly Poison', COGE 8.14 (Apr 14, 1917), p. 1; cf. M.S. Lemons, 'Thy Word Is Truth', COGE 7.23 (Jun 3, 1916), p. 4.

<sup>601</sup> Manerva Mitchel, 'South Pittsburg, Tenn.', COGE 5.29 (Jul 18, 1914), p. 5; Mrs. Ida Poe, 'Hixton, Tenn.', COGE 6.43 (Oct 23, 1915), p. 2; Clator Sapp, 'Wess, Ky.', COGE 10.38 (Sep 20, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>602</sup> 'Editorial Notes' COGE 6.27 (Jul 3, 1915), p. 2; M.S. Lemons, 'Chattanooga, Meeting', COGE 6.28 (Jul 10, 1915), p. 2; L.L. Turner, 'Report', COGE 6.43 (Oct 13, 1915), p. 4; S.C. Luther, 'Oppy, Ky.', COGE 9.14 (Apr 6, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>603</sup> Johnie Cagle, 'Ooltewah, Tenn.', COGE 6.34 (Aug 21, 1915), p. 4; N.M. Kinney, 'Lindale, Ga.', COGE 6.50 (Dec 11, 1915), p. 4; G.T. Stargel, 'Report', COGE 7.30 (Jul 22, 1916), p. 2; F.J. Ewart, 'God's Fig Tree Budding', COGE 8.28 (Jul 21, 1917), p. 3; H.W. Poteat, 'Wilmington, Del.', COGE 9.26 (Jun 29, 1918), p. 4; M.W. Letsinger, 'Afton, Tenn.', COGE 10.22 (May 31, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>604</sup> M.S. Lemons, 'A Solemn Warning to Persecutors', COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 3; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Marvelous Healings', COGE 5.14 (Apr 4, 1914), p. 2; J.C. Underwood, 'From Bro. Underwood', COGE 5.38 (Sep 19, 1914), p. 4.

Frequent contributor L. Howard Juillerat believed that the deaf would finally be made whole during the millennial.<sup>605</sup>

### E. Testimonies.

Because there were 325 issues read during the window of this study, a brief review of some testimonies will help the reader hear the voice of the people and will reveal the practical theology of glossolalia that developed regarding: 1) longing and victory, 2) pre-glossolalic stages, 3) the emotion or affect, and 4) glossolalia and grief.

J.W. Douglass wrote, 'I just got so hungry it didn't seem that I could endure much longer without the baptism of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>606</sup> This hunger went hand in hand with personal surrender and at the same time a passionate pursuit of the Holy Spirit.<sup>607</sup> For example, W.M. Lowman wrote,

the Lord spoke to me and said, 'if you want the Holy Ghost you must clean out the temple so I can come in.' ... I threw the plug (of tobacco) away ... stopped every mean thing in my life ... (and) after three days and nights without ceasing to call upon God I received the Holy Ghost and spoke with other tongues as the experience came.<sup>608</sup>

One's first experience with glossolalia was a deep experience for the average person and not just a doctrine.<sup>609</sup> For example, 'the reason I know I have this precious comforter is because He talks for Himself as the Spirit gives utterance, in other tongues, just as He said He would in Acts 2:4, and John 15:16'.<sup>610</sup> H.V. Freeman's experience was typical, 'I was under the power for hours when I began speaking in tongues as in Acts 2:4'.<sup>611</sup> Bursting into often loud<sup>612</sup> glossolalia was described as a victory: 'Sunday night

---

<sup>605</sup> I. Howard Juillerat, 'The Ages', COGE 9.11 (Mar 16, 1918), p. 4.

<sup>606</sup> J.W. Douglass, Gardner, Florida, COGE 5.29 (Jul 18, 1914), p. 8; cf. Geo. T. Brouayer, 'Chattanooga, Tenn.', COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 6.

<sup>607</sup> H.J. Brady, 'Request for Prayer', COGE 5.18 (May 2, 1914), p. 4; G.W. Peebles, 'Lake Butler, Fla.', COGE 6.22 (May 29, 1915), p.

<sup>608</sup> W.M. Lowman, 'Hiwassee, Va.' COGE 1.13 (Sep 1, 1910), p. 8.

<sup>609</sup> Ella Simmons, 'Boyett, Fla.', COGE 1.5 (May 1, 1910), p. 7; Lula M. Chambers, 'Culbertson, N.C.', COGE 1.11 (Aug 1, 1910), p. 7; Park Lacy, 'Scobey, Miss.', COGE 6.3 (Jan 16, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>610</sup> D.R. Holcomb, 'Dora, Ala.', COGE 7.5 (Jan 29, 1916), p. 2.

<sup>611</sup> H.V. Freeman, 'Rock Island, Tenn.', COGE 6.8 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>612</sup> John X. Smith, 'Letter of a Baptist to His Wife', COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 2; A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Great Assembly', COGE 7.42 (Oct 14, 1916), p. 1. Cf. 'Manifestations of the Spirit', COGE 1.17 (Nov 1,

four more came through to victory, shouting and talking in tongues'.<sup>613</sup> The most frequent mention of tongues in the COGE was simply a revival report noting the number of people who spoke in tongues.<sup>614</sup> The next frequent mention was praise or thanksgiving for God's wonderful provision. For example, S.W. Patterson wrote, 'I praise God for my Pentecost with Bible evidence of speaking in other tongues'.<sup>615</sup>

Probably out of kindness or as a way of making sense of the experience for those who did not speak in tongues, there were occasions where the term 'stammering lips' was used to soften the hardness of the evidentiary language.<sup>616</sup> For example, Luda Clark's eulogy stated, 'she made her way toward the baptism so close that she received the stammering lips'.<sup>617</sup> Nevertheless, it was assumed that one would push through to the genuine fluency, like Mrs. Brinson-Rushire: 'I spoke in a stammering tongue as the Spirit gave utterance ... as the Spirit continued to work in me a few days a real language was given'.<sup>618</sup>

Joy was the usual emotional result of tongues speech. J.D. Williams described it as 'unspeakable joy and happiness – the half can never be told. Joy, joy, from my head to my toes'.<sup>619</sup> Others described their SBs as times of 'joy and peace',<sup>620</sup> or 'the happiest

---

1910), p. 5; James Cline, 'Elkhurst, W. Va.', COGE 6.24 (Jun 12, 1915), p. 2. Initial Evidence could also occur quietly, cf. Julia McCallie Divine, 'My Inheritance', COGE 1.5 (May 1, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>613</sup> Walter Harden, 'Empire, Ala.', COGE 7.47 (Nov 18, 1916), p. 3; cf. 'Another Battle Abroad', COGE 1.7 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 4; M.S. Lemons, 'A Report', COGE 5.19 (May 9, 1914), p. 5.

<sup>614</sup> For example, 'there were 35 who received the baptism of the Holy Ghost with the sign speaking in other tongues as the spirit gave utterance', 'Great Meeting at Gintown, Ala.', COGE 1.15 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 5; cf. H.L. Trim, 'Evangelistic Tour', COGE 5.17 (Apr 25, 1914), p. 4; M.S. Lemons, 'Jefferson City, Tenn.', COGE 6.2 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 1, et. al.

<sup>615</sup> Rev. S.W. Patterson, 'Sobel, Tenn.', COGE 1.6 (May 15, 1910), p. 5, cf. Mittie Tubbs, 'Amor, Miss', COGE 6.36 (Sep 4, 1915), p. 2; Mrs. Maggie Osment, 'Cleveland, Tenn.', COGE 6.38 (Sep 18, 1915), p. 2; 'Dayton, Tenn.', Walter Byerler, COGE 6.46 (Nov 13, 1915), p. 2; Lamb H. Lanier, 'Deer Park, Fla.', COGE 7.27 (Jul 1, 1916), p. 3; Martha Marrisett, 'Jefferson City, Tenn.', COGE 7.41 (Oct 4, 1916), p. 4, et. al.

<sup>616</sup> W.P. Benefield, 'Midland City, Ala.', COGE 1.16 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 8; Bartley L. Hicks, 'A Spiritual House', COGE 11.47 (Nov 27, 1920), p. 4.

<sup>617</sup> 'Another One Gone', COGE 8.4 (Jan 27, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>618</sup> Mrs. Brinson-Rushire, 'Taiafu, Shantung, China', COGE 6.44 (Oct 30, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>619</sup> J.D. Williams, 'Miami, Fla.', COGE 5.18 (May 2, 1914), p. 4, cf. Mrs. E.R. Simmons, 'The Word of God', COGE 6.19 (May 8, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>620</sup> Rinah E. Ranming, 'Short Testimonies', COGE 5.18 (May 2, 1914), p. 2; cf. E.C. Childers, 'Brewster, Fla.', COGE 6.4 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 4.

hours I ever spent'.<sup>621</sup> The emotional affect was often extended to all who were at the assembly, using phrases like, 'we had a happy time',<sup>622</sup> or 'it makes us feel so good',<sup>623</sup> or 'we certainly had a grand time'.<sup>624</sup>

At times, tongues were connected with the transition from life to death, from the earthly to the heavenly:<sup>625</sup> 'when I leave this old sinful world', wrote Florence Long 'I want to go talking in tongues'.<sup>626</sup> It is hard to decipher whether glossolalia was giving comfort or functioned as a rite of passage because the testimonies were so simply stated: 'He left this world speaking in tongues and praising God'<sup>627</sup> or 'she praised God and talked in other tongues until she became unconscious'.<sup>628</sup> Nevertheless, the written testimony of glossolalia indicates that it brought peace to the speaker and their loved ones during these times of grief.<sup>629</sup>

#### F. Sanctification.

Rooted in the WH wing of Pentecostalism, the COGE held firmly to the three fold pattern of justification, sanctification, and SB; however, some testimonies revealed a lack of understanding of the tradition's teaching.

Similar to other WH groups that transitioned to Pentecostalism, it was necessary to clarify that SB was subsequent to and different from sanctification.<sup>630</sup> A.L. Tarpley's testimony was typical: 'I thought I got the baptism of the Holy Ghost when sanctified, but as soon as I heard Pentecost preached and speaking in other tongues I saw at once

---

<sup>621</sup> Myrtie Fricks, 'Craneater, Ga.', COGE 6.7 (Feb 13, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>622</sup> Bell Scoggins, 'Marco, Fla.', COGE 6.2 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>623</sup> E.H. and Clara Pearson, 'Kentwood, La.', COGE 6.47 (Nov 20, 1915), p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>624</sup> Bertha Hilbun, 'Kentwood, La.', COGE 5.60 (Dec 19, 1914), p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>625</sup> Ed. 'Asleep In Jesus', COGE 8.10 (Mar 10, 1917), p. 3; Her Pastor, 'Gone Home', COGE 8.31 (Aug 11, 1917), p. 4; J.B. Ellis, 'Gone To Rest', COGE 9.47 (Nov 23, 1918), p. 4; 'Obituaries', COGE 10.23 (Jun 7, 1919), p. 4; 'Obituaries', COGE 10.23 (Jun 7, 1919), p. 4; 'Obituaries' COGE 10.28 (Jul 12, 1919), p. 3.

<sup>626</sup> Mrs. Florence Long, 'Sale Creek, Tenn.', COGE 6.34 (Aug 21, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>627</sup> Harry Long, 'Sale Creek, Tenn.', COGE 6.30 (Jul 24, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>628</sup> C.C. Walker, 'Transported From Belmont, N.C. To Heaven', COGE 7.16 (Apr 15, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>629</sup> 'Gone Home', COGE 7.6 (Feb 5, 1916), p. 1; Ella Simmons, 'Gone To Be At Rest', COGE 8.4 (Jan 27, 1917), p. 3; Georgia Broughton, 'Gone To Be With Jesus', COGE 8.5 (Feb 3, 1917), p. 2.

<sup>630</sup> Phillips, *Quest*, p. 147.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

that I didn't have that experience ... I saw they had something that I did not have'.<sup>631</sup>

Sanctification was a prerequisite for SB: 'the Evangel will stand square for two works of grace ... sanctification subsequent to regeneration ... (and) the baptism of the Holy Ghost as an enduement of power on the sanctified life'.<sup>632</sup> Freeman clarified it further:

sanctification is holiness, the baptism of the Holy Ghost is the enduement with power; sanctification is the cleansing: the baptism is the filling ... sanctification causes you to magnify and praise Jesus: but the Holy Ghost magnifies God in new tongues and sings and praise through you himself.<sup>633</sup>

It was inconceivable that one could be filled with God's Spirit and not be holy:

we must be pure in heart and life by the redeeming blood of Jesus. None but a pure heart can bear the fruits and powers of Pentecost. Uncleanliness or sin of any kind, in thought, word or act is destructive to the Spirit's work within the human heart and life.'<sup>634</sup>

Doctrinally, SB was an equipping of power, but testimonies occasionally pointed to a completion of the sanctification process<sup>635</sup> or a 'keeping power'.<sup>636</sup> For example, my 'husband has served the Lord 25 years. When we went to hear the evangelist he used tobacco. He talked in tongues and threw away his tobacco';<sup>637</sup> or 'praise God for the wonderful baptism with the Holy Ghost and fire which burns up all sin and leaves room for nothing but hallelujahs to God';<sup>638</sup> and 'when the Holy Ghost comes he tames that unruly member which is the tongue ... and makes us speak kindly, brings peace in

---

<sup>631</sup> A.L. Tarpley, 'Hyatt Tenn.', COGE 1.8 (Jun 15, 1914), p. 4; cf. Mrs. C.L. Silver 'Burnside, Ky.', COGE 1.8 (Jun 15, 1910), p. 7; Minnie Lee Newton, 'Shelby, N.C.', COGE 8.47 (Dec 1, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>632</sup> AJ Tomlinson, 'From The Old To The New' COGE 7.53 (Dec 30, 1916), p. 4; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'Confusion Of Scriptures', COGE 5.23 (Jun 6, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>633</sup> H.V. Freeman, 'McMinnville, Tenn.', COGE 6.25 Jun 19, 1915), p. 2; cf. J.B. Lucas, 'Mooreville Mississippi, COGE 1.10 (Jul 15, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>634</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'Sanctification', COGE 5.44 (Oct 31, 1914), p. 6; cf. 'A few Words of Warning', COGE 5.40 (Oct 4, 1914), p. 4; Perry, 'What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#2)', p. 3.

<sup>635</sup> For example, the power that the Holy Spirit gives is 'power over all temptation', Mrs. P.T. Collier, 'Love Thy Neighbor', COGE 6.21 (May 22, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>636</sup> 'I am praising God for the Holy Ghost, and the Bible witness of talking in tongues ... For a power that keeps me free from sin every day', Annie May Duncan, 'Jefferson City, Tenn.', COGE 6.14 (Apr 3, 1915), p. 1; cf. Lura Clevenger, 'Jefferson City, Tenn.', COGE 6.14 (Apr 3, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>637</sup> Mrs. A.B. Sherrill, 'Spring City, Tenn.', COGE 5.15 (Apr 11, 1914), p. 8.

<sup>638</sup> Gladston Hackney, 'Soddy, Tenn.', COGE 5.17 (Apr 25, 1914), p. 7. Or, 'burns up all base desire', Beatrice B. Smith, 'Testimony', COGE 5.33 (Aug 15, 1914), p. 5.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia homes'.<sup>639</sup> Occasionally, the entire three stage process was collapsed into one event: 'she went down on her knees a sinner and came up talking in tongues'.<sup>640</sup>

## G. Purposes for Glossolalia.

### 1. Power.

From the first extant issue of the COGE, Tomlinson recognized that 'the Holy Spirit was given to the disciples ... to give them power to accomplish just what they did accomplish. He is given us today for the same purpose'.<sup>641</sup> Tongues were 'one of the smallest things connected with this blessing ... Jesus said, "Ye shall receive power." Not merely power to profess, or to make a display, but power to be, and overcome; power to do the things of Jesus Christ'.<sup>642</sup> Usually, it was power to 'testify for Jesus Christ';<sup>643</sup> however, SB with tongues opened an individual up to all the spiritual gifts:

speaking in tongues is certainly an exhibition of power ... however the goal is to do something. To stop with that and do nothing else is to lose the real value of the great blessing of God's presence that makes the tongues possible ... (it) brings into a man the entire range of the workings of the Holy Spirit himself who is thus ready to work in all his completeness the nine works of the Spirit.<sup>644</sup>

SB was transformative power so that men were 'astonished at what is being done'.<sup>645</sup>

Everyone had the potential to work signs and wonders; everyone could share the good news regardless of their education.<sup>646</sup> W.F. Hesson's testimony was typical:

this baptism gives power for service, and makes you a world-wide witness ... (it) leads into intercessory prayer as you never experienced it before ... (it) prepares you for service in this world and seals you unto the world to come.<sup>647</sup>

---

<sup>639</sup> John Burk, 'Cliff View, Va.', COGE 7.10 (Mar 4, 1916), p. 2; cf. E.J. Boehmer, 'Salvation Is Real', COGE 6.23 (Jun 5, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>640</sup> W.W. Rose, 'White Stone, Ga.', COGE 6.30 (Jul 24, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>641</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Apology for Above Title' COGE 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>642</sup> Sam C Perry, 'There Are Other Things As Well', COGE 9.19 (May 11, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>643</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'Filled With The Spirit', COGE 7.13 (Mar 25, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>644</sup> Street, 'What is Pentecost', p. 6.

<sup>645</sup> Z.D. Simpson, 'Ethelsville, Ala.', COGE 5.14 (Apr 4, 1914), p. 5, cf. 'All Need the Holy Ghost', COGE 1.5 (May 1, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>646</sup> 'All Need the Holy Ghost', p. 2.

<sup>647</sup> W.F. Hesson, 'Seeking The Baptism', COGE 5.23 (Jun 6, 1914), p. 5.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Not everyone was called overseas, so the Spirit's power also equipped the individual for use in his own neighbourhood. For example, Mrs. R.D. Atnipp wrote, 'the Lord wonderfully sanctified me and filled me with the Holy Ghost with Bible evidence ... we are having services at my home and we are praying for workers, and that lost souls may be saved.'<sup>648</sup> The Spirit would 'separate' out some especially called to go into all the world.<sup>649</sup> This power was concomitant with tongues-speech. 'One man who had never prayed before, and had been a vile sinner for 50 years, was saved, sanctified and baptized with the Holy Ghost. He spoke in tongues, *and exhorted* for two hours'.<sup>650</sup>

### 2. Prayer.

In the COGE, there was scant theological reflection on how glossolalia lead one into deeper prayer. Normally, Rom. 8.6 was simply referenced as praying in the Spirit,<sup>651</sup> and occasionally it was acknowledged that such prayer was 'according to the will of God'.<sup>652</sup> In addition to intercession, glossolalic prayer was the backdrop or environment for seekers of SB. Mrs. C.L. Thigpen's anecdote was typical:

we all knelt down and the power of prayer fell upon me, and the Spirit made intercession with groanings that could not be uttered. The husband was knocked down by the power ... he got up and prayed and praised for the Holy Ghost, and it was not long before he was knocked down again, and in about an hour came through speaking in tongues.<sup>653</sup>

Perry noted that prayer 'is a very natural exercise to the soul ... (it) is a necessary accompaniment of the baptism of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>654</sup>

---

<sup>648</sup> Mrs. R.D. Atnipp, 'Poplar Bluff, MO.', COGE 5.39 (Sep 26, 1914), p. 5.

<sup>649</sup> 'This does not mean all shall go ... some should go and the Holy Ghost is faithful to separate ... too many go without being separated', Hesson, 'Seeking The Baptism', p. 5.

<sup>650</sup> Mrs. Minnie Hall, 'Punta Gorda, Fla.', COGE 1.3 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 6. Italics mine.

<sup>651</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Holy Ghost and Us', COGE 7.50 (Dec 9, 1916), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Some Bible Teachings and Counsel', COGE 8.4 (Jan 27, 1917), p. 2.

<sup>652</sup> 'Camp Meeting at Arcadia, Fla.', COGE 1.19 (Dec 1, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>653</sup> Mrs. C.L. Thigpen, 'Mentone, Ala.', COGE 1.18 (Nov 15, 1910), p. 5; cf. H.S. Harris, 'Cascilla, Miss.', COGE 7.35 (Aug 26, 1916), p. 4; L.J. Davis, 'Canton, N.C.' COGE 6.15 (Apr 10, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>654</sup> Perry, 'Filled With The Spirit', p. 3; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'Soul Travail And Prevailing Prayer', COGE 8.32 (Aug 18, 1917), p. 1.

### 3. Praise.

Though it was only occasionally stated in the COGE, another purpose for tongues was magnifying God. ‘The Spirit of God came upon me in great power and I began to speak in a language other than my own ... I found myself in an attitude of praise and I was made to sing’.<sup>655</sup> Like other early Pentecostal periodicals, giving praise to God primed the pump for SB: ‘she began to praise Him and in a few moments she was speaking the sweetest language I ever heard, also singing in tongues was in the program’.<sup>656</sup> Also, evidentiary tongues were considered praise to God. For example, ‘two received the baptism of the Holy Ghost for we heard them speak with tongues and magnify God’.<sup>657</sup>

### 4. Revelation.

Tongues speech upon SB opened the door to revelations from God that normally would be hidden from the human mind. Tomlinson compared this to the Urim and Thummim (Ex. 28.30): ‘a means by which some things will be revealed that otherwise will never be known’.<sup>658</sup> Many times this revelation was of Jesus himself: ‘as the Holy Ghost came in with his wonderful illuminating and revealing power, as I beheld his majesty and beauty’,<sup>659</sup> or,

I was caught away in the Spirit for about one hour. I saw a blaze go from my mouth to heaven and I received the Holy Ghost just then ... I was alone with Christ in spirit. I spoke in other tongues as the spirit gave utterance.<sup>660</sup>

Because there was an emphasis on Jesus’ teaching that the Spirit would ‘testify of himself’, actual communication or conveyance of information was inferred slightly more than from other Pentecostal groups.<sup>661</sup> Sam Perry wrote, ‘the Holy Ghost will

---

<sup>655</sup> Rachel Wheeler, ‘Woodstock, Ga.’, COGE 8.40 (Oct 13, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>656</sup> Mrs. I.V. Powers, ‘A Wonderful Experience’, COGE 1.13 (Sep 1, 1910), p. 8.

<sup>657</sup> I.H. Marks, ‘Marco, Fla.’, COGE 5.18 (May 2, 1914), p. 6; cf. Mrs. Cora A. Nelson, ‘Champaign, Ill.’, I 6.2 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>658</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘More About the Gifts’, COGE 5.20 (May 16, 1914), pp. 2, 3.

<sup>659</sup> C.A. Freeman, ‘Lithia, Fla.’ COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 6; cf. Goldman Ingram, ‘Cleveland, Tenn.’, COGE 5.11 (Mar 14, 1914), p. 8

<sup>660</sup> Lottie Barnett, ‘Unicoi, Tenn.’, COGE 7.11 (Mar 11, 1916), p. 4.

<sup>661</sup> Andy Rue, ‘Athens, Tenn.’, COGE 1.8 (Jun 15, 1910), p. 5; cf. Sam C Perry, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, COGE 7.15 (Apr 8, 1916), p. 3.

testify to himself through the lips of the believer ... sometimes (with) visions, bodily emotions and great mental illuminations'.<sup>662</sup> The Spirit revealed 'love, mercy, and power',<sup>663</sup> the ability to 'tell some of the people things they had done',<sup>664</sup> about tongues itself,<sup>665</sup> and a great variety of other spiritual things. 'The Holy Ghost will reveal things that we need to know if we'll obey him ... to know a thing that is spiritual and living it must come through and by the Holy Spirit'.<sup>666</sup> Note how glossolalia was the entryway into more revelation when Tomlinson wrote,

one of the great beauties and glories in this last experience (SB) is that it is always accompanied with the speaking in other tongues ... it is only the beginning. When the Holy Ghost comes he begins to instruct and teach.<sup>667</sup>

## 5. Gifts of the Spirit.

The Pentecostal outpouring of tongues signalled the restoration of all the spiritual gifts, including the vocal gifts of the Spirit in 1 Corinthians 12-14, including: tongues, interpretation, and prophecy. Tongues and interpretation were the equivalent of prophecy that was preceded by glossolalia.

Tongues and interpretation in the public gatherings were often reported<sup>668</sup> and were straightforward in their hermeneutic: if someone spoke in tongues for the first time, it was considered the evidence of SB. Subsequent occurrences were either a message from God for the whole congregation or were for personal edification.

Tomlinson wrote, 'there is a difference between speaking with other tongues as the Spirit gives the utterance as described in the second chapter of Acts, and the gift of tongues which Paul gives instructions in the fourteenth chapter First Corinthians'.<sup>669</sup>

Tongues and interpretation were two separate gifts that functioned in tandem. Tongues

---

<sup>662</sup> Sam C Perry, 'How Can I Know', COGE 7.1 (Jan 1, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>663</sup> Tomlinson, 'More About The Gifts', p. 2.

<sup>664</sup> W.E. Evans, 'Report', COGE 8.22 (Jun 9, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>665</sup> Tomlinson, 'Tongues, Tithes, Knowledge', p. 1.

<sup>666</sup> W.G. Anderson, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost', COGE 6.37 (Sep 11, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>667</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Converted, Sanctified, and Baptized with the Holy Ghost', COGE 6.51 (Dec 18, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>668</sup> Cf. W.W. Spears, 'Benhaden, Fla', COGE 5.7 (Feb 14, 1914), p. 4; A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Assembly', COGE 5.45 (Nov 14, 1914), p. 3; C.R Curtis, 'Lake Park, Ga.', COGE 5.60 (Dec 19, 1914), p. 1.

<sup>669</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Gift Of Tongues', COGE 8.24 (Jun 23, 1917), p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia when exercised in a public assembly required an interpretation to edify the congregation and to comply with Paul's restrictions.<sup>670</sup> For example, 'she came speaking in tongues, under the mighty power of God, and gave a part of the interpretation to two of the workers',<sup>671</sup> or, 'God looked upon unworthy me in pity and gave me the interpretation of the message in tongues I had given under the power the Spirit'.<sup>672</sup> On occasion, it was believed that one person in each church possessed the gift: 'the Lord has given the gift of interpretation to a sister, who interprets our messages, for which we thank Him and praise Him'.<sup>673</sup> However, the phenomena of God speaking 'wonderful messages ... through those lips of clay' was more important than an individual's possession of a spiritual gift.<sup>674</sup> For example, 'messages began to flow and interpretations were given. Oh, it was wonderful to listen to God talking to His people through *the saints*'.<sup>675</sup> The speaker believed that they were speaking at the behest of the Spirit. Mother Cress' testimony is typical: 'the Spirit told me to stand up and He would fill my mouth. I obeyed and the Spirit spoke through me first in my own language, then in another tongue, then again in my own language'.<sup>676</sup>

Against a critic who argued that tongues were the least important gift, it was argued that you cannot go by a biblical ranking, because 'according to his theory then charity is a minor grace because it is given last ... (in) 1 Cor. 13:13' and tongues would be extremely high according to Jesus' list in Mk 16.17-18.<sup>677</sup> In the end, 'if God knows what is best for his people, the Church cannot be at its best without these gifts'.<sup>678</sup>

---

<sup>670</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Hold Steady Now', COGE 8.19 (May 19, 1917), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, 'On The Bible Line' COGE 2.23 (Jun 16, 1917), p. 1; A.J. Tomlinson, 'Samson And His Exploits', COGE 10.39 (Sep 27, 1919), p. 1.

<sup>671</sup> 'An Indian Woman's Message', COGE 1.3 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 7.

<sup>672</sup> Flora E. Bower, 'Miami, Fla.', COGE 1.14 (Sep 15, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>673</sup> Edmund S. Barr and Wife, 'Nassau', COGE 1.4 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 6; cf. A.G.S., 'Boaz, Ala.', COGE 7.9 (Feb 26, 1916), p. 3. Bertha Hendricks even prayed specifically for this gift, Bertha Hendricks, 'Harriman, Tenn.', COGE 5.9 (Feb 28, 1914), p. 8.

<sup>674</sup> L.A. Ray, 'Gone Home', COGE 8.28 (Jul 21, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>675</sup> 'Field Notes', COGE 3.14 (Sep 15, 1912), p. 7. Italics mine. Cf. Ellen Jones, 'Ethelsville, Ala.' COGE 5.13 (Mar 28, 1914), p. 6; Mrs. W.E. Lord, 'Preston, MD.', COGE 5.15 (Apr 11, 1914), p. 6.

<sup>676</sup> Mother Cress, 'Abilene, Kan.', COGE 1.14 (Sep 15, 1910), p. 6.

<sup>677</sup> A.J. Tomlinson 'Covet The Best Gifts', COGE 8.25 (Jun 30, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>678</sup> Tomlinson 'Covet The Best Gifts', p. 1.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The content of the Spirit's message through the gift of interpretation (and prophecy) was occasionally stated in the COGE. Usually, the Spirit warned that Jesus was about to return,<sup>679</sup> or encouraged people,<sup>680</sup> or warned people.<sup>681</sup> However, the majority of the testimonies highlighted the phenomenon itself – that God has spoken.

### 6. Personal Edification.

Tomlinson encouraged people to speak in tongues for their personal edification as a separate function of the Holy Spirit from IE or the public gift of tongues following 1 Cor. 14.14. To have experienced a full SB and then not speak in tongues occasionally was to live 'beneath their privilege' and to be 'without this special kind of edification that God has provided for your good'.<sup>682</sup>

### H. Eschatology and Tongues.

The return of glossolalia signalled the beginning of the end times. Tongues were part of a prophetic environment that warned of the end times and prepared the church for the Lord's return.

Mrs. E.N. Howell saw the present outpouring of tongues as 'a sign or token of a new era' similar to the era changes at the tower of Babel and at Pentecost.<sup>683</sup> Perry noted there were 'many signs which are to come in the last days'<sup>684</sup> and 'many are seeing in the present conditions the signs of Jesus' coming'.<sup>685</sup> The return of glossolalia was the preeminent sign<sup>686</sup> 'proving that we are in the last days ... declaring the coming of Jesus

---

<sup>679</sup> W.M. Coleman, 'Hill View, Tellico Mountains Tenn.', COGE 1.7 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>680</sup> W.F. Bryant, 'The Mountain Work' COGE 1.9 (Jul 1, 1910), p. 4; Milton Padget, 'Bahama Islands', COGE 5.50 (Dec 19, 1914), p. 3.

<sup>681</sup> For example, 'a message was given by the Holy Ghost that the door of mercy was going to be closed and that someone would be cut off', Minnie Ivens, 'Mentone, Ga.', COGE 6.30 Jul 24, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>682</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'What If You Have Not?', COGE 10.13 (Mar 29, 1919), p. 1; cf. Tomlinson, 'Edification And Comfort', p. 1.

<sup>683</sup> Mrs. E.N. Howell, 'Windsor, Fla.', COGE 1.7 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 6.

<sup>684</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'Jesus Is Coming', COGE 5.39 (Sep 26, 1914), p. 6; Lula L. Jones, 'Clearwater, Fla.', COGE 6.17 (Apr 24, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>685</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'The Need of The Hour', COGE 6.5 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>686</sup> AJ Tomlinson, 'Extracts From Discourse Delivered At Assembly', COGE 6.48 (Nov 27, 1915), p. 1; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'Guilty Or Not Guilty', COGE 7.41 (Oct 4, 1916), p. 1.

is near'.<sup>687</sup> The latter rain metaphor gave logic to tongues reappearance.<sup>688</sup> Most testimonies saw tongues as an eschatological sign without a lot of theological reflection. For example,

I am praising God for baptizing me with the Holy Ghost with the Bible evidence of speaking in other tongues ... I am ready and looking for the coming of Jesus with my lamp trimmed and burning, oil in my vessel and ready to meet the bridegroom when he comes'.<sup>689</sup>

Tongues were a call 'to the marriage supper of the Lamb'.<sup>690</sup>

Further, the environment of tongues speech was often concomitant with prophetic speech about the return of Jesus. Some examples are: I 'began singing in the Spirit and speaking other tongues. I feel that Jesus wants me to sound the alarm that he is coming soon',<sup>691</sup> and 'the power fell and we had a wonderful time, shouting, dancing, and talking in tongues. The Spirit spoke through me saying, "He is coming! He is coming"!'<sup>692</sup> Note the urgency when both glossolalia and eschatology are combined: 'it can be well remembered that when Pentecost was first preached that many of us were afraid that Jesus would come before we got the baptism of the Holy Ghost. His coming seems to be the theme of everyone'.<sup>693</sup>

Eschatological tongues played a role in preparing for the coming of Jesus. Tomlinson saw broadly that 'justification, sanctification, the baptism of the Holy Ghost evidenced by speaking in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance, divine healing and the Church of God ... (altogether were) mainly to prepare people for the great event – the coming of Christ'.<sup>694</sup> At times, however, the average person viewed the bible sign as

---

<sup>687</sup> Sam C. Perry, 'Be Ye Also Ready', COGE 5.47 (Nov 21, 1914), pp 6, 7; cf. Tomlinson, 'Extracts From Discourse Delivered at Assembly', p. 1.

<sup>688</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'The Holy Ghost And Fire', COGE 9.30 (Jul 27, 1918), p. 1.

<sup>689</sup> E.C. Caddell, 'Kimberly, Ala.', COGE 6.16 (Apr 17, 1915), p. 2; cf. Ella New, 'Woodstock, Ga.', COGE 5.18 (May2, 1914), p. 6.

<sup>690</sup> Howell, 'Windsor, Fla.', p. 6.

<sup>691</sup> Mrs. Nettie Way, 'Chattanooga, Tenn.', COGE 5.39 (Sep 26, 1914), p. 5.

<sup>692</sup> Belle Scoggins, 'Atlanta, Ga.', COGE 7.8 (Feb 19, 1916), p. 4.

<sup>693</sup> M.S. Lemons, 'Something To Think About', COGE 7.3 (Jan 15, 1916), p. 3; cf. Chas. E. Lockard, 'Cedar Grove, Ky.', COGE 8.41 (Oct 20, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>694</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, 'Christ Is Coming', COGE 6.29 Jul 17, 1915), p. 2; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, 'Be Careful And Wise', COGE 6.34 (Aug 21, 1915), p. 1.

the final set in the process of preparation: ‘I received the Holy Ghost over a year ago, hallelujah, with the Bible evidence of speaking in tongues as the spirit gives utterance. I praise him for ever getting me ready for His coming’.<sup>695</sup>

Finally, tongues were so thoroughly connected with eschatology that Tomlinson speculated that at

the sounding of the trumpet when the dead in Christ shall be brought forth from their graves singing that strange and beautiful song, the strains of which have never fallen on mortal ear ... the tongues as the Spirit gives utterance will be brought into use in a way scarcely thought of before.<sup>696</sup>

## I. The Nature of Glossolalia.

### 1. Missionary Tongues and Xenolalia.

Missionary tongues and Xenolalia were not as pronounced as in other publications.

While one can find anecdotal accounts, and there was a desire for MT, the COGE’s position was similar to other Pentecostal publications. Tomlinson and the COGE followed the tension in periodicals like *TBM* and *AF*: while leaving room for genuine and rare occurrences,<sup>697</sup> it was not the norm.<sup>698</sup> Occasionally there was a report of someone’s glossolalia being a known language.<sup>699</sup> For example, ‘another native boy (South African) came and received the baptism of the Holy Ghost, and spoke in the

---

<sup>695</sup> J.H. Lance, ‘Dawson, Ala.’, COGE 6.25 Jun 19, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>696</sup> Tomlinson, ‘Tongues, Tithes, Knowledge’, p. 1. Speculation and strong opinion were common for Tomlinson. For example, because tongues speech was so common, he was looking forward to some of the CG members being translated like Elijah to instill the fear of God in people, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Translation Power’, COGE 9.9 (Mar 2, 1918), p. 1.

<sup>697</sup> We ‘often hear people speak in other tongues and the messages are often understood by those who have the knowledge of other languages ... if we cut out the manifestations and demonstrations of the Holy Ghost in our meetings and homes we will fall into dead formality in only a very few days’, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Faith, Love, And Power’, COGE 9.16 (Apr 30, 1918), p. 1. Tomlinson pointed to the other signs when confronted with an occurrence of missionary tongues that was debunked, Tomlinson, ‘On The Bible Line’, p. 1

<sup>698</sup> ‘It is not stated (in the bible) that the other tongues were understood as they were by the different nationalities (as) in the first instance’, A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The Opposition Weakening’, COGE 8.9 (Mar 3, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>699</sup> Edith Brawner, ‘Maitland, Fla (2).’, COGE 1.15 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 6; W.A. Wilcox, ‘Mater, Ky.’, COGE 8.42 (Oct 27, 1917), p. 2.

English language, which was unknown to him'.<sup>700</sup> And a missionary noted a special anointing to speak in Chinese with greater fluency than her studies had provided:

I had prayed ... that the Lord would open my ears and loose (sic) my tongue and ... He most blessedly answered prayer and the Chinese noticed right away the great change ... it was hard to get back to my English, but instead it was easier to use Chinese praises and blessings ... He was answering prayer and making the Chinese language mine.<sup>701</sup>

Occasionally, someone testified of xenolalia: 'the first night I received the baptism of the Holy Ghost with the Bible evidence. The Spirit sang through me, and later spoke in five or six different languages'<sup>702</sup> or 'now I am saved sanctified and filled with the blessed Holy Ghost, and when He came He testified in a language I knew nothing about'.<sup>703</sup> Perry would go so far as to say that 'there is absolutely no evidence to sustain' the idea that tongues were used for preaching.<sup>704</sup>

## 2. Heavenly Anthem.

The HA was very well received for its beauty and divine source, and was considered both a spiritual gift and the equivalent of evidential glossolalia. Susan McKinney's testimony was typical: 'we had a glorious Pentecostal shower the last night at the meeting, with singing in tongues and dancing'.<sup>705</sup>

Testimonies of the HA gave it high praise. For example, it was 'the most beautiful of melodies to the glory of God',<sup>706</sup> and 'I have never heard anything so beautiful and soul-ravishing in my life'.<sup>707</sup>

---

<sup>700</sup> COGE 1.3 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4; cf. D.F. Baldree, 'Fargo, Ga.', COGE 8.26 (Jul 7, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>701</sup> Mrs. P.R. Rushin, 'Missionary', COGE 8.29 (Jul 28, 1917), p. 2.

<sup>702</sup> C.R. Curtis, 'A Word Of Testimony', COGE 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 6; cf. Eary A. Nelson 'Allentown Pennsylvania', COGE 1.8 (Jun 15, 1914), p. 6.

<sup>703</sup> Mrs. Lunie Thomas, 'Lula, Fla.' COGE 1.15 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 8.

<sup>704</sup> Perry, 'What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#2)', p. 3.

<sup>705</sup> Susan McKinney, 'Chokoloskee, Fla.', COGE 5.3 (Jan 17, 1914), p. 8; cf. J.W. Buckalew, 'Report from Bro. Buckalew', COGE 5.8 (Feb 21, 1914), p. 5; Lorena Cotton, 'Safety Harbor, Fla.', COGE 6.3 (Jan 16, 1915), p. 2; Editorial notes, COGE 6.20 (May 15, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>706</sup> Howard B. Tutter, 'Mansfield, Illinois', COGE 6.5 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>707</sup> 'Manifestations of the Spirit', COGE 1.17 (Nov 1, 1910), p. 4.

The HA was the Holy Spirit using human vocal organs to speak and praise.

Tomlinson stated that ‘the heavenly chorus’ is ‘the singing by the lips of the Holy Ghost through human lips as he played upon the vocal cords’.<sup>708</sup> The presence of God was sensed during the HA: ‘all of a sudden someone was up singing in other tongues. The moment she began singing the power of God struck me in both hands, and ran to my elbows. *I was convinced of it being the word of God*’.<sup>709</sup> One article noted that ‘no one can possibly join in when it is sung, except those who are baptized in the Holy Spirit; and even the baptized saints can sing in this chorus only as the Spirit moves upon them to do so’.<sup>710</sup>

The HA was considered the functional equivalent of the bible sign for the uninitiated. For example, she ‘received the Holy Ghost at home. The Spirit took her tongue and she began to sing in another language and she said it was the sweetest music she ever heard’.<sup>711</sup> But for the Spirit-baptized believer, the HA was a gift: ‘I received the gift of the Holy Ghost and sang in an unknown tongue’.<sup>712</sup>

Occasionally, atypical things occurred in the environment of the HA. Some claimed to understand what was being sung in glossolalia. For example, ‘it was thought that my wife sung from the seventh to the fourteenth Psalms’,<sup>713</sup> and ‘God gave us the interpretation … she fell in the aisle and soon began to sing in the Spirit, and then, oh how the Spirit did speak through her the wonderful things of God’.<sup>714</sup> Some noted the ability to play the organ without study. For example, ‘one sister played the organ under the power, and she did not know a thing about playing, but the Spirit carried her there’.<sup>715</sup>

---

<sup>708</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Supernatural Occurrences’, COGE 1.5 (May 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>709</sup> T.L. McLain, ‘The Latter Rain’, COGE 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 5. Italics mine.

<sup>710</sup> ‘Manifestations of the Spirit’, COGE 1.17 (Nov 1, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>711</sup> Evans, ‘Report’, p. 4.

<sup>712</sup> Jonah L. Shelton, ‘Ruskin, Tenn.’, COGE 1.15 (Oct 1, 1910), p. 5.

<sup>713</sup> Milton Padgett, ‘Miami, Fla.’, COGE 1.6 (May 15, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>714</sup> W.F. Bryant, ‘Work In The Tellico Mountains of Tennessee’, COGE 1.7 (Jun 1, 1910), p. 8.

<sup>715</sup> W.L. Reynolds, ‘Carrollton, Ala.’ COGE 6.8 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 4; cf. Geo. T. Brouayer, Whitebluff, Tenn.’, COGE 7.2 (Jan 8, 1916), p. 2; Clifford Bishop, ‘Brooksville, Fla.’, COGE 8.1 (Jan 6, 1917), p. 3.

### 3. Passive Speech and the Nature of Glossolalia.

At times, the COGE expressed a belief that the Holy Spirit completely took over an individual upon SB and that she was completely passive. Though it was never the subject of a thorough examination by the contributors to the COGE, there was a great deal of difficulty expressing the interaction between the human and divine. W.G. Anderson noted the overwhelming nature of IE:

every one (sic) who has been baptized with the Holy Ghost and spoke in other tongues know that there was at least a short period in which there was no consciousness of what was going on and as to whether the soul was in the body or out of the body God only could know ... talking in tongues is not possible for man to do it is God who talks.<sup>716</sup>

Many testified that the Spirit 'spoke' for himself,<sup>717</sup> but some phrased it as an overpowering of the person. For example, 'the blessed Holy Comforter came and testified by taking my tongue and using it in speaking in an unknown language'.<sup>718</sup>

Mary Etta Hooper compared it to dying for a period of time.<sup>719</sup> Tomlinson taught that 'the Holy Ghost has complete control and utters words through lips of clay independent of any effort of the individual'; whereas, when exercising the gift of tongues one 'can control the speaking'.<sup>720</sup> At times Tomlinson would seem to say that the human was overwhelmed by the divine, but then clarifies the indescribable interaction between the two:

when the Holy Ghost comes into our bodies to abide He always gives the utterance ... He both moves our bodies and uses our tongues in some language to suit Himself ... There are two persons in one body ... How the soul feasts while in *special communion* with the Holy Ghost. *You talk to him and then he talks to you. Your physical*

---

<sup>716</sup> Anderson, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost', p. 3.

<sup>717</sup> For example, 'He has filled me with the blessed Holy Ghost, who speaks for Himself', Mary Wood, 'Nassau, N.P., Bahama Islands', COGE 1.4 (Apr 15, 1910), p. 6; cf. Azille Pirkle, 'Chickamauga, Ga.', COGE 1.18 (Nov 15, 1910), p. 7; Joe Bowker, 'Charlotte, Tenn.', COGE 6.52 (Dec 25, 1915), p. 3; *passim*.

<sup>718</sup> Rev. J.D. Reneker, 'Orlando, Fla.' COGE 1.12 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 7.

<sup>719</sup> 'I went down for the Holy Ghost at 9 o'clock Monday night and I died until 5 o'clock Tuesday evening. When I came back to this world I was speaking in tongues,' Mary Etta Hooper, 'Cocoa, Fla.', COGE 7.34 (Aug 19, 1916), p. 3.

<sup>720</sup> Tomlinson, 'The Holy Ghost', p. 1.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

*ear may not understand His words but your soul will be flooded with the sweetness and glory of heaven.*<sup>721</sup>

Note the difficulty others had: ‘I hardly realized what happened for some time; but after a while I found myself’,<sup>722</sup> and ‘He came in He talked for Himself and I know all about it, for I was there’.<sup>723</sup> Most were aware that they were speaking but were ignorant of the content.<sup>724</sup> However, Mrs. Naomi Murphy knew that the Spirit ‘began to talk about Jesus’.<sup>725</sup> Tomlinson added that ‘the Spirit does not keep such control all the time. He leaves a person to himself a good deal of the time and here is where wisdom is needed’.<sup>726</sup>

## V. The International Pentecostal Holiness Church – *The Pentecostal Holiness Advocate.*

### A. History of the Revival.

The International Pentecostal Holiness Church (IPHC) was the result of the merger of the Fire-Baptized Holiness Church (FBHC), the Pentecostal Holiness Church (PHC), and the Tabernacle Pentecostal Church (TPC).<sup>727</sup> These three denominations were established before the ASM revival and believed in ‘a “second work of grace” following conversion’.<sup>728</sup> They had been impacted by either the National Holiness Association’s

---

<sup>721</sup> AJ Tomlinson, ‘Holy Ghost And Us’, COGE 7.50 (Dec 9, 1916), p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>722</sup> C.A. Rowland, ‘Hayesville, N.C.’, COGE 8.46 (Nov 24, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>723</sup> H.L. Gillet, ‘Parrish, Fla.’, COGE 5.45 (Nov 14, 1914), p. 7.

<sup>724</sup> For example, ‘the blessed Holy Ghost came in and took my tongue and used it. He spoke something, that I don’t know what it was,’ Manatee, Fla., ‘Mrs. B.A. Carter, COGE 6.4 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>725</sup> Mrs. Naomi Murphy, ‘Pittsburgh, Ga.’, COGE 1.12 (Aug 15, 1910), p. 6.

<sup>726</sup> AJ Tomlinson, ‘the Holy Ghost And Wisdom’, COGE 9.31 (Aug 3, 1918), p. 1; cf. A.J. Tomlinson, ‘To The Praise Of His Glory’, COGE 10.16 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 1.

<sup>727</sup> H. Vinson Synan, ‘International Pentecostal Holiness Church’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 798-801 (799). The first merge was between the FBHC and the PHC on January 31, 1911 and the second merge occurred in 1915 between the PHC and the TPC, Synan, ‘IPHC’, *NIDPCM*, p. 800; cf. Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 128.

<sup>728</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 6.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

(NHA) work<sup>729</sup> or other sanctification-oriented ‘non-Wesleyan preachers’,<sup>730</sup> and believed that ‘a fresh outpouring of the Holy Spirit was the greatest need of the church’.<sup>731</sup> These ‘small holiness groups joined the ranks of the Pentecostal movement after 1906 under the ministry of Gaston Barnabas Cashwell’, where they experienced and ‘accepted the Pentecostal “initial evidence” teaching’.<sup>732</sup> Each of these three churches had its own story.

First, the FBHC<sup>733</sup> originated out of the Iowa Holiness Association, where in 1895, Irwin ‘sought for and received an experience that (John) Fletcher referred to as a “baptism of burning love”’.<sup>734</sup> Irwin believed it was a ““third blessing” for all the sanctified, (and was) called the “baptism of fire””.<sup>735</sup> Theologically, this idea that the baptism of the Holy Ghost is an experience separate from both regeneration or sanctification is probably the most important doctrinal contribution of the movement. This later became the basic foundation of the Pentecostal Movement, with the single addition of glossolalia as the ‘initial evidence’.<sup>736</sup>

---

<sup>729</sup> Synan calls the WH Movement, ‘the mother of the modern Pentecostal revival’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 7. The NHA was founded in 1867 to ‘revive and spread the experience of entire sanctification’, p. 23 It was denounced in 1894 by the Methodists for two reasons: 1) ‘the independent nature of the National Holiness Association’, and 2) the Methodists began to ‘question the doctrine of sanctification as a second blessing’, pp. 31-32; cf. pp. 35, 38; Dayton, *Theological Roots*, pp. 35-108; Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, pp. 15-55; Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 22-43.

<sup>730</sup> For example, N.J. Holmes, a Presbyterian minister and the founder of the TPC, was ‘filled with the baptism of the Holy Ghost’, as a ‘definite experience of sanctification’ after a visit to D.L. Moody, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 126. Synan notes there were other ‘champions of sanctification’ who were outside of the normal Methodist family but aligned theologically: Charles G. Finney, John H. Noyes, A.B. Earle, and William E. Boardman, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 19.

<sup>731</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 8.

<sup>732</sup> Synan, ‘International Pentecostal Holiness Church’, pp. 799, 800. Synan finds it significant that ‘the 1911-1915 mergers ... indicated a doctrinal unity ... (and) no doctrinal compromises necessary’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 129.

<sup>733</sup> Originally called the Fire-Baptized Holiness Association, it changed its name to the FBHC in 1902, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 60.

<sup>734</sup> Synan, ‘International Pentecostal Holiness Church’, p. 799. Synan notes that, ‘according to his (Irwin’s) reading of Fletcher, many early English Methodists testified to an experience beyond salvation and sanctification which they called “the baptism of burning love”’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 45.

<sup>735</sup> Synan, ‘International Pentecostal Holiness Church’, p. 799; cf. Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, pp. 179-85; Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 51-60; Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, pp. 54-57.

<sup>736</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 61; cf. Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 138-39.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Irwin was a dynamic speaker who attracted thousands and influenced many future leaders of the Pentecostal movement, including Joseph H. King and possibly Parham.<sup>737</sup> Despite strict holiness standards,<sup>738</sup> Irwin's teaching found fertile soil in the hearts of 'Holiness people who were dissatisfied with their experience of sanctification (and) were strongly attracted to a teaching that offered more'.<sup>739</sup> The classical WH movement condemned Irwin's *more*, calling it the 'third blessing heresy', or 'third blessingism', forcing Irwin to start his own organization in August, 1898.<sup>740</sup> The FBHC grew rapidly, especially in the South and Midwest, and Irwin incorporated several scientific-sounding spiritual experiences<sup>741</sup> into meetings that 'were (already) characterized by shouting and dancing before the Lord'.<sup>742</sup> When Irwin fell into sin in 1900, the FBHA was at its peak.<sup>743</sup> His fall exposed two weaknesses in the movement: its dependence upon a single dynamic personality and that the seeking of 'ever greater experiences of religious excitement' would strain credibility and eventually become unscriptural.<sup>744</sup> Seminary-trained King succeeded Irwin and 'had the discouraging task of seeing most of the organization crumble away'.<sup>745</sup> However, in 1907, through the ministry of

---

<sup>737</sup> Historians disagree on the level of influence Irwin and the FBHC had on Parham. Here they are listed from lesser to greater influence: Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 56; Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 54; Stephens, *The Fire Spreads*, p. 189; Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 136, 135.

<sup>738</sup> For example, no neckties, adornment or eating of pork, Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 51, 119, 125.

<sup>739</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 47.

<sup>740</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 47; cf. H.V. Synan, 'Fire-Baptized Holiness Church' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 640.

<sup>741</sup> Irwin gave these post sanctification experiences scientific names like the baptism of dynamite, lyddite, oxidite, and selenite, in an effort to draw analogies of power from contemporary discoveries. For an irenic and full explanation, see Phillips, *Quest*, pp. 128-35.

<sup>742</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 799. Synan notes the existence of 'emotional phenomena that had characterized the Cane Ridge revivals earlier in the century. Those receiving "the fire" would often shout, scream, speak in other tongues, fall into trances, receive the holy dance and holy laugh, and even get the "jerks"', Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 52.

<sup>743</sup> At that time the FBHC was in 'ten American states and two Canadian providences', Synan 'FBHC', *NIDPCM*, p. 640.

<sup>744</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 55

<sup>745</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 59. King was elected on July 2, 1900. He was a graduate from the School of Theology at U.S. Grant University (now University of Chattanooga), he was an evangelist in Georgia, then the 'ruling elder of Ontario and pastor of the Toronto church when the call came to assume the editorship of *Live Coals* in March 1900', p. 58.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Cashwell, the ASM's revival resuscitated the FBHC.<sup>746</sup> King received his Pentecostal baptism with other tongues<sup>747</sup> and in 1908, 'the church amended its doctrine to include the Pentecostal view on tongues, thus becoming the first official Pentecostal denomination in the U.S.'<sup>748</sup> King served as IPHC's general superintendent from 1917 to 1946.<sup>749</sup>

Second, the PHC<sup>750</sup> was founded as the Holiness Church of North Carolina (HCNC) by evangelist Ambrose B. Crumpler who was 'determined to bring the holiness movement to his native state'.<sup>751</sup> Two years after 'the holiness movement had been officially discredited in southern Methodism' (1896), a revival broke out under Cumpler's ministry 'that rivaled the great awakenings of the antebellum camp meeting era'.<sup>752</sup> Significant among those touched was Taylor.<sup>753</sup> Crumpler was a dynamic preacher who 'declared he had not committed a sin since his "second blessing"'<sup>754</sup> and was critical of Methodism's lack of holiness.<sup>755</sup> He broke with the Methodist Church in

---

<sup>746</sup> Synan notes that 'the ministers of the Fire-Baptized Holiness Church were especially interested in hearing Cashwell', Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 101-102. He also notes the dynamic effect of the ASM revival on the western states, pp. 116-18.

<sup>747</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 102. Cf. Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 117.

<sup>748</sup> Synan 'FBHC', *NIDPCM*, p. 640.

<sup>749</sup> H.V. Synan, 'Joseph Hillary King' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 822-23. His long tenure was interrupted once from 1941-45, when another led the PHC.

<sup>750</sup> Several names preceded IPHC: the Pentecostal Holiness Church of North Carolina (1900), then the HCNC (1901), then the Pentecostal Holiness Church (1909), and finally it was changed to IPHC in 1975, Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', pp. 799-800.

<sup>751</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 799.

<sup>752</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 68.

<sup>753</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 73. Taylor would go on to found the Falcon Holiness School, publish Sunday School materials, serve as General Superintendent (1917-19), and become the founding editor for the *Pentecostal Holiness Advocate*, cf. Synan, 'George Floyd Taylor', pp. 1115-6.

<sup>754</sup> Synan writes, 'this claim made him (Crumpler) famous and controversial. It became the central attraction of his meetings and stirred up passions pro and con', Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 69; cf. pp. 71, 73.

<sup>755</sup> Crumpler was fond of calling the Methodist church 'the church of the holy refrigerator,' or 'the old theater-going, whiskey-drinking, card-playing, tobacco-using, secret lodge-loving, oyster-frying, ice cream supper, dancing church', Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 74.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

1899<sup>756</sup> over holiness and issued a call to ‘several independent holiness groups ... for a meeting in Fayetteville to organize a new denomination’, called the HCNC.<sup>757</sup> Crumpler settled in Goldsboro, North Carolina, built a large congregation and published a bimonthly paper called *The Holiness Advocate*.<sup>758</sup> News of the ASM revival in 1906 ‘electrified’ holiness people and ‘the “tongues” doctrine quickly became the number one issue within holiness circles’.<sup>759</sup> When Cashwell held a meeting in Dunn, North Carolina on December 31, 1906,<sup>760</sup> Crumpler did not attend<sup>761</sup> but his ‘preachers listened in awe as Cashwell spoke with other tongues ... and scores of people quickly received the Pentecostal baptism and spoke in other tongues “as the Spirit gave utterance”’.<sup>762</sup> Taylor received his Pentecost there and in 1907 ‘published a ringing defense of the new Pentecostal doctrine entitled *The Spirit and the Bride*’, which proved timely.<sup>763</sup> Timely because Crumpler’s attitude toward glossolalia changed from ‘cautiously welcoming’ to ‘taking an extremely strong editorial position against the “tongues crowd”’.<sup>764</sup> ‘After a great struggle’ in 1908, ‘Crumpler walked out of the life of the church he had

---

<sup>756</sup> Crumpler had an on / off relationship with the Methodist church, breaking with the church twice (1898 & 1899) cf. Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp 73-9. He rejoined the Methodist church because he was ‘determined to overturn Rule 301’ which required evangelists to get prior local pastoral approval before ministering in a location, H.V. Synan, ‘Ambrose Blackman Crumpler’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 566. After he lost control of the HCNC, ‘he returned to the Methodist Church, where he remained for the rest of his life’, p. 566.

<sup>757</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 79. ‘It is not known if this was called as a session of the “North Carolina Holiness Association” or a call to reformulate Crumpler’s first denomination, ‘The Pentecostal Holiness Church’, which had not met since 1897; cf. pp. 75, 76.

<sup>758</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 80-82.

<sup>759</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 94.

<sup>760</sup> Synan writes, ‘every holiness preacher on the East Coast, it seemed, wanted to investigate the new doctrine to actually see and hear for himself an Azusa recipient as he spoke in the strange new tongues’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 98. The Dunn revival was so significant to the Pentecostal movement that Synan calls the Dunn revival, ‘Azusa Street East’, Synan, *Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 114, cf. pp. 114-17.

<sup>761</sup> Synan writes, ‘Crumpler, who was previously engaged to hold a meeting in Florida during the same month of the Dunn revival ... let it be known ... he was going to oppose it. However, in Crumpler’s absence, most of his preachers received the experience and accepted Cashwell’s doctrine of initial evidence’, Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 101.

<sup>762</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 99; cf. Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 216-19.

<sup>763</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 107; cf. Synan ‘Taylor’, *NIDPCM*, p. 1115.

<sup>764</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 100, 106.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia founded'.<sup>765</sup> In 1909, the HCNC renamed itself the PHC.<sup>766</sup> The FBHC and the PHC merged on January 31, 1911, taking the name of the latter.<sup>767</sup>

Third, the TPC<sup>768</sup> was formed when Nickles J. Holmes 'accepted the second blessing teaching of D.L. Moody'<sup>769</sup> and 'received a definite experience of sanctification' in 1896.<sup>770</sup> That brought him into conflict with the Presbytery Synod of South Carolina; whereupon he left the Presbyterian Church 'to found an independent congregation' in 1898.<sup>771</sup> Other Presbyterian churches in the area, mostly South Carolina, that had been touched by the WH movement followed Holmes' lead.<sup>772</sup> He started the Holmes Bible and Missionary Institute<sup>773</sup> in 1898 and sent out several missionaries.<sup>774</sup> This small group also accepted the Pentecostal 'teaching under the ministry of G.B. Cashwell and Taylor'.<sup>775</sup> The TPC merged with the PHC in 1915.<sup>776</sup>

H. Vinson Synan wrote that the IPHC 'would have a heavy southern accent, with by far the largest concentration of strength in the Southeast'.<sup>777</sup> Nevertheless, 'the church did grow to be one of the most respected and influential churches in the Pentecostal movement'.<sup>778</sup>

---

<sup>765</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 105, 108.

<sup>766</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 110.

<sup>767</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 800.

<sup>768</sup> The TPC was originally named Brewerton Independent Presbyterian Church then the Tabernacle Presbyterian Church and then changed to the TPC 'in keeping with its new doctrinal position', Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 127, cf. p. 126.

<sup>769</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 799.

<sup>770</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 126.

<sup>771</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 799.

<sup>772</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 799.

<sup>773</sup> It is 'now known as Holmes College of the Bible, (and) is the oldest Pentecostal educational institution in the world', H.V. Synan, 'Nickles John Holmes' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 730.

<sup>774</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, pp. 126-29.

<sup>775</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 126.

<sup>776</sup> Synan, 'International Pentecostal Holiness Church', p. 800.

<sup>777</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 129.

<sup>778</sup> Synan, *Old Time Power*, p. 135.

## B. The 'Initial Evidence'.

In the first edition of the *PHA*, Taylor made it clear that 'the church and paper stand for the Baptism<sup>779</sup> of the Spirit to be received subsequent to heart cleansing, and that the initial evidence of this Baptism is the speaking in tongues as in Acts 2:4'.<sup>780</sup> It is believed that statement is the first use of the phrase 'initial evidence', a full eleven years after the ASM revival.<sup>781</sup> The official doctrinal statement came a few months later:

we believe also that the Pentecostal Baptism of the Holy Ghost and fire is obtainable by a definite act of appropriating faith on the part of the fully cleansed believer, and that the initial evidence of the reception of this experience is speaking with other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance (Luke 11:13; Acts 1:5; 2:1-4; 8:17; 10:44-46; 19:6).<sup>782</sup>

Yet there must have been pressure to 'back down' from this position as seen by the consistent defence of IE's terminology, exegesis, and theological arguments.<sup>783</sup>

First, 'initial evidence' was the primary phrase used by the leaders in their teachings. However, others phrases such as the 'first sign', the 'first miraculous manifestation', and the 'first evidence'<sup>784</sup> were used to highlight the points that tongues are not 'the greatest phase of the Baptism' and that '*other* Bible evidences, or rather

---

<sup>779</sup> The *PHA* was consistent in capitalizing the word 'baptism' when referring to SB because it signified the abiding presence of the Holy Spirit in the believer. Taylor wrote, 'the phrase "Baptism of the Holy Ghost" is not found in the Bible, but we build the phrase from the words of John the Baptist', G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Chapter XV, the Baptism of the Holy Ghost', *PHA* 1.38 (Jan 17, 1918), pp. 8-9.

<sup>780</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Our Policy', *PHA* 1.1 (May 3, 1917), p. 9; cf. G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Chapter XV, The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', *PHA* 1.38 (Jan 17, 1918), pp. 8-9.

<sup>781</sup> Cf. Robeck, 'William J. Seymour and "The Bible Evidence"', p. 89.

<sup>782</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Chapter XVII, Initial Evidence', *PHA* 1.40 (Jan 31, 1918), pp. 4-5; cf. G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Examination Questions', *PHA* 6.28 (Nov 9, 1922), p. 4; F.M. Britton, 'We Believe', *PHA* 6.43 (Feb 22, 1922), p. 2.

<sup>783</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial Thoughts', *PHA* 1.20 (Sep 13, 1917), p. 1; G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 9. 'There is a tendency among some people today to let up on the real evidence of the Baptism of the Holy Ghost ... let us all stand by the old landmarks and let those people who come through in our meetings know that if they did not speak in tongues they did not get the Baptism of the Holy Ghost', O.C. Wilkins, 'Reports', *PHA* 3.36 (Jan 1, 1920), p. 15.

<sup>784</sup> J.H. Pate, 'Goldsboro, N.C.', *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 3; G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 8; G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Our Church History', *PHA* 4.47 (Mar 24, 1921), p. 9.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

results' should follow the believer.<sup>785</sup> The phrase, 'as the Spirit gives utterance' was used consistently to distinguish evidentiary tongues from the gift of tongues and was the preferred nomenclature in testimonies.<sup>786</sup>

Second, the *PHA* paralleled other Pentecostal periodicals in using the pattern from the book of Acts. Taylor wrote that 'in every place in the New Testament where there is a record of one receiving the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, there is a record of the speaking in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance'.<sup>787</sup> Even Acts 8 'is strongly in favor'.<sup>788</sup> In a retort to opponents, Taylor begs, 'for one single Bible instance where any of these (other spiritual gifts) were given as the "initial evidence or result" of the Baptism apart from speaking in tongues'.<sup>789</sup> Additionally, both Jn 15.26 and Mk 16.17, 18 were foundational. Though Jesus was not thought to speak in tongues,<sup>790</sup> Jn 15.26 was seen as prophetic, a 'thus saith the Lord' passage<sup>791</sup> that was now fulfilled: 'I praise God for

---

<sup>785</sup> Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 8; Taylor, 'Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues', p. 10. Italics mine, bold original.

<sup>786</sup> For example, 'in 1 Cor. 14, Paul is comparing the gift of tongues with the gift of prophesy, and that has nothing to do with the speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance', Taylor 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 8; Lewis Sawgalsky, 'Testimony and Experience of Lewis Sawgalsky, Converted Jew' *PHA* 1.6 (Jun 7, 1917), p. 5.

<sup>787</sup> Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 10; G.F. Taylor, 'Sunday School Lesson: Peter and John in Samaria – Acts 8:4-39', *PHA* 3.40 (Jan 29, 1920), p. 2; W.H. McCurley, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', AF 1.23 (Oct 4, 1917); G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Chapter XVII, Initial Evidence', *PHA* 1.40 (Jan 31, 1918), pp. 4, 5; Taylor 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 9.

<sup>788</sup> Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 10. The argument of Deane Alfred and Adam Clarke, is that that the Samaritans 'saw' something that caused Simon to want the ability to convey the Holy Spirit, Taylor, 'Peter and John in Samaria – Acts 8:4-39', p. 2. Additional to Alfred and Clarke's exegetical argument, F.M. Britton parallels Acts 8 to Acts 11 and concludes 'that as the two lessons are paralleled into separate meetings ... they must have been both the same in speaking in other TONGUES', F.M. Britton, 'We Believe', *PHA* 6.49 (Apr 5, 1922), pp. 3-4.

<sup>789</sup> Taylor, 'Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues', p. 10; cf. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', p. 10.

<sup>790</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Question Box, #357', *PHA* 3.7 &8 (Jun 12 & 19, 1919), p. 11. An exception was Emma Bullin, who had a vision where 'I heard Jesus singing and speaking in tongues', Emma Bullin, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 5.23 (Oct 6, 1921), p. 14.

<sup>791</sup> 'We have several passages that would sustain our position without twisting the meaning a particle ... John 15:26 says "When the Comforter is come ... he shall testify of me." Here is a "Thus saith the Lord"', Taylor, 'Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues', *PHA* 3.10 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 10; cf. J.A. Culbreth, 'The Comforter', *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 5; C.F. Noble, 'Questions Answered', *PHA* 3.23 & 24 (Oct 2 & 9, 1919), p. 5; J.G. Kimrey, 'Do All Speak With Tongues?', *PHA* 4.6 (Jun 10, 1920), p. 2; W.M. Branch, 'The

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia being filled with the Holy Ghost, like they got on the day of Pentecost. I praise God that when He came *He testified, just like He said he would*.<sup>792</sup> Based on this passage, F.M. Britton believed that tongues were expected on the Day of Pentecost:

if it had not been that they were expecting the Holy Ghost to speak when He came they would no doubt have claimed Him before or by the time they got back to Jerusalem, because they had as much as any holiness man you ever saw without speaking in other tongues.<sup>793</sup>

Mark 16.17, 18 was another significant passage,<sup>794</sup> but it was used to highlight a balanced view of tongues in contrast to excesses of those who longed for signs and wonders.<sup>795</sup>

Third, though evidential tongues were primarily supported from the pattern in the book of Acts, two facets were theologically-driven. Both of these were seen in the earlier writings by Crumpler, who was reluctant to embrace the bible sign.<sup>796</sup> Crumpler saw little difference between SB and sanctification because they ‘are so closely connected and related that they are really treated in Scripture as one’.<sup>797</sup> Also, tongues were not the sole evidence of SB: ‘we see no reason why the outpouring of the blessed Spirit should

---

Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *PHA* 4.32 (Dec 9, 1920), pp. 3, 4; Marie Thompson, ‘Pentecost as a Preparation for Work’, *PHA* 5.1 (May 5, 1921), p. 13. F.M. Britton, ‘We Believe’, *PHA* 6.44 (Mar 1, 1922), p. 2.

<sup>792</sup> Coy Lawson, ‘Winston-Salem, N.C.’, *PHA* 1.38 (Jan 17, 1918), p. 11.

<sup>793</sup> F.M. Britton, ‘We Believe’, *PHA* 6.44 (Mar 1, 1922), p. 2.

<sup>794</sup> Taylor affirmed its place in the book of Mark despite the textual issues, G.F. Taylor ‘Editorial: Mark 16:19-20 Examined’, *PHA* 2.17 (Aug 22, 1918), p. 8.

<sup>795</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #10’, *PHA* 1.2 (May 10, 1917), pp. 12, 13; CF Noble, ‘Christianity, Men and Methods’, *PHA* 1.37 (Jan 10, 1918), p. 2; G.F. Taylor ‘Editorial: Mark 16:19-20 Examined’, *PHA* 2.17 (Aug 22, 1918), p. 8; G.F. Taylor ‘Editorial: Mark 16:19-20 Examined’, *PHA* 2.18 (Aug 29, 1918), p. 8; G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #324’, *PHA* 2.48 (Mar 27, 1919), p. 6; G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #665’, *PHA* 4.39 (Jan 27, 1921), p. 10; R.B. Beall, ‘The Holy Spirit Is A Person’, *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 2; Noble, ‘Questions Answered’, p. 5.

<sup>796</sup> Crumpler wrote: ‘we are not able to accept some of the teaching, especially that which affirms that *all who receive* the Baptism of the Spirit *will necessarily* speak with new tongues’, A.B. Crumpler, ‘Press the Revival – Reject the Counterfeit’, *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 4. Italic mine. Possibly as early as June 1, 1906 (edition is undated), J.A. Culbreath stated that the IE issue was ‘waiting for a settlement’, but in support of IE encouraged readers not fear ‘a “third blessing”’ and ‘never stop short of the same manifestation of Pentecost’, J.A. Culbreth, ‘The Comforter’, *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 5 (n.d.).

<sup>797</sup> A.B. Crumpler, ‘The Baptism of Fire’, *HA* 6.5 (Jun 15, 1906), p. 4; cf. A.B. Crumpler, ‘The Work of the Holy Spirit’, *HA* 6.5 (Jun 15, 1906), p. 4.

not be accompanied by the *manifestation of all His gifts* in these days'.<sup>798</sup> Even though Crumpler had a glossolalic-experience, these positions would lead him eventually to walk away from his own denomination.<sup>799</sup> To be theologically feasible Taylor had to separate evidentiary glossolalia from both sanctification and the gift of tongues.

To answer the question, 'do all speak in tongues' upon SB? Taylor explained that the 'plain language of Acts 2:4' really meant 'all'.<sup>800</sup> Further, Taylor had to show that the tongues as a sign and as a gift were distinct theologically even though they were identical in essence. Paul advocated for a wide distribution of spiritual gifts based on 1 Cor. 12.7-31 for the common good; whereas, the book of Acts revealed a single initiatory sign for everyone Spirit baptized.<sup>801</sup> Taylor articulated that if Acts 2.4 was the (Pauline) *gift of tongues*, it is exceedingly strange that all the one hundred and twenty received the same gift ... if God really means to give diversity of gifts as the initial evidence of the Baptism, it is exceedingly strange that He failed to do so in the very first case.<sup>802</sup>

Further, if it was the gift of tongues at Ephesus (Acts 19), it was curious that Paul 'raised no objections to the whole twelve speaking in tongues at one time', which was contrary to his own guideline in 1 Cor. 14.27.<sup>803</sup> Therefore, to those who argued that any of the nine gifts could suffice as an evidence of SB, Taylor concluded that 'if all who receive the Baptism in Apostolic day spoke in other tongues, *it is logical* that all who

<sup>798</sup> A.B. Crumpler, 'Editorial: Extracts and Comments', *HA* 7.3 (May 15, 1907), p. 1. Emphasis mine. A prior edition states 'every Bible scholar that follows this believer in God's word will find that the first sign that follows the ones that receive the Holy Ghost was the speaking in "tongues"', J.H. Pate, 'Goldsboro, N.C.', *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 3.

<sup>799</sup> A.B. Crumpler, 'Editorial: He Satisfies: He Abides', *HA* 7.4 (Jun 1, 1907), p. 1; G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Who Are We?', *PHA* 1.24 (Oct 11, 1917), pp. 4-6; G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Our Church History', *PHA* 4.46 (Mar 17, 1921), pp. 8-9.

<sup>800</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Question Box, #79', *PHA* 1.18 (Aug 30, 1917), p. 8; cf. G.T. Alady, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 1.19 (Sep 6, 1917), p. 13; G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues', *PHA* 3.10 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 9.

<sup>801</sup> 'I do not see that *all receive* any one of these nine gifts. The Spirit divides the gifts as He pleases, and He may not please to give one of these gifts to *every one*', G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 9. Italics mine. His argument from 1 Cor. 12.11 emphasizes that 'all these are the work of one and the same Spirit, and he gives them to each *one just as he determines*'.

<sup>802</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 9. Further, if Acts 2.4 'was the gift of tongues there is a serious conflict between Acts 2:4 and 1 Cor. 12'.

<sup>803</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14', *PHA* 5.3 (May 19, 1921), p. 8; cf. G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 9.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia receive the Baptism today will do the same'.<sup>804</sup> Finally, a pragmatic defence was that 'the only preachers that have ever been successful in getting persons through to Pentecost have been those who have stood for speaking in tongues as the evidence'.<sup>805</sup>

### C. Responses to Critics.

#### 1. Signs and Wonders.

Because they covered roughly the same geographic area, the PHC faced competition and criticism from its neighbour the CG. These early issues of the *PHA* revealed an ecclesiology and a function for signs and wonders in contrast to the CG.<sup>806</sup> The CG claims

they are the only church that preaches the whole Bible, and that certain unscriptural signs must follow them or they will be lost ... (they say) we as a church have compromised, and *we don't believe in the signs of tongues*, healing ... they claim to go beyond us in signs, by handling snakes and coals of fire, hot lamp chimneys, stovepipes, etc.<sup>807</sup>

Mark 16.17, 18 was carefully explained several times to counter such excesses. For example, two of Mark's signs were 'for the benefit of others – casting out devils, and healing the sick; two signs (were) for the benefit of the believer – taking up serpents, and drinking deadly things'.<sup>808</sup> However, glossolalia was the natural consequence of the incoming of the glorified 'Word.' (John 1:1, 14; 7:39) ... it is the *inevitable result* of a certain cause ... The early church did not speak in tongues just to display power; they spoke in tongues as the *inevitable result* of their Baptism, and the blessings that followed were the God-given overplus.<sup>809</sup>

---

<sup>804</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Speaking In Tongues', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 10. Italics mine.

<sup>805</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial Thoughts', *PHA* 1.20 (Sep 13, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>806</sup> 'This paper undertakes to assist the church in its work, but not to *magnify the church* out of due proportion ... (but to) use great caution *not to ridicule any other church*. The editor knows several who have undertaken to build up their organization at the expense of others', G.F. Taylor, 'Our policy', *PHA* 1.1 (May 3, 1917), p. 10; cf. G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial thoughts', *PHA* 1.1 (May 3, 1917), p. 1; C.F. Noble, 'Christianity, Men, and Methods (#1)', *PHA* 1.22 (Sep 27, 1917), p. 3; W.J. Noble, 'Beware the Church of God', *PHA* 1.24 (Oct 11, 1917), p. 3; G.F. Taylor, 'Sunday School Lesson', *PHA* 3.28 (Nov 6, 1919), pp. 2, 3; S.W. Sublett, 'The Church', *PHA* 4.19 (Sep 9, 1920), pp. 2, 3.

<sup>807</sup> Noble, 'Beware the Church of God', p. 3. Italics mine.

<sup>808</sup> Taylor, 'Question Box, #10', pp. 12, 13.

<sup>809</sup> Taylor, 'Question Box, #10', p. 13. Italics mine.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Contributors to the *PHA* had strong words for believers who sought signs.<sup>810</sup> For example, because of Jesus' admonition that an adulterous generation seeks a sign, tongues were not to be sought: 'we are not to get our eyes on the sign, but the One who will show the sign ... we are to see the signs follow us ... (but) we are not to follow the signs at all'.<sup>811</sup> However, God did provide signs. There was Noah's rainbow and the virgin birth, so too 'the sign of the Baptism of the Holy Ghost ... is speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterances'.<sup>812</sup> Tongues are 'a token or manifestation of the Spirit to show you He has come to abide forever ... to let you know He has come'.<sup>813</sup> This glossolalia 'should be held sacred, and should not be used for show'.<sup>814</sup>

### 2. Cessation.

Cessationism was largely countered by appeals to scripture<sup>815</sup> and not just experience.<sup>816</sup> For H.C. Webb cessationism was a non-issue because spiritual 'gifts were concomitants of the (ongoing) gospel';<sup>817</sup> cessationists 'quote no Scripture in support' and conveniently forget that 'Paul said, "forbid not to speak in tongues"'.<sup>818</sup> He mused in a retort, 'why not believe also that the Epistles written to the churches were intended only for that generation of Christians then living, and therefore nothing preached or

---

<sup>810</sup> For example, they had 'another spirit', Noble, 'Christianity, Men, and Methods (#1)', p. 3; a 'heathenish practice', CF Noble, 'Christianity, Men and Methods', *PHA* 1.37 (Jan 10, 1918), p. 2; they are 'playing with demons', R.M. Ramlie, 'Osceola, Ark.', *PHA* 2.14 (Aug 1, 1918), p. 12; it is 'next to blasphemy', G.F. Taylor 'Editorial: Mark 16:19-20 Examined', *PHA* 2.18 (Aug 29, 1918), p. 8; and is a commitment to 'presumptuous things', G.F. Taylor, 'Question Box, #665', *PHA* 4.39 (Jan 27, 1921), p. 10.

<sup>811</sup> C.F. Noble, 'Christianity, Men, and Methods (#2)', *PHA* 1.24 (Oct 11, 1917), p. 12; cf. C.F. Noble, 'Christianity, Men, and Methods (#3)', *PHA* 1.29 (Nov 15, 1917), p. 14.

<sup>812</sup> W.O. Akers, *PHA* 5.37 (Jan 12, 1922), p. 2; cf. Z.A. Sutphin, 'Our Weekly Sermon: The Holy of Holies', *PHA* 4.10 (Jul 8, 1920), p. 3.

<sup>813</sup> C.F. Noble, 'Christianity, Men and Methods', *PHA* 1.28 (Nov 8, 1917) p. 6.

<sup>814</sup> Taylor 'Editorial: Mark 16:19-20 Examined', p. 9.

<sup>815</sup> W.J. Martin, 'Our Weekly Sermon: Acts 12:5', *PHA* 6.9 (Jun 29, 1922), p. 4.

<sup>816</sup> 'These are days of conflicting theories, and largely on individual experiences ... We must not interpret the Word of God by our experiences, but every experience must be interpreted in the light of God's Word – the infallible rule of our faith and practice', A.B. Crumpler, 'Bible Repentance', *HA* 7.4 (Jun 1, 1907), p. 1.

<sup>817</sup> H.C. Webb, 'Spiritual Gifts', *PHA* 2.44 (Feb 27, 1919), p. 7.

<sup>818</sup> H.C. Webb, 'Spiritual Gifts', *PHA* 2.44 (Feb 27, 1919), pp. 6-7.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia written by the apostles is binding on any Christian now?<sup>819</sup> A query about the prophecy that tongues will cease (1 Cor. 13.8) was answered that ‘in heaven or in the age to come there will be but one language, and so tongues will be unnecessary’.<sup>820</sup> The latter rain was still a popular biblical metaphor for SB<sup>821</sup> but it was not as prominent a response to cessationism as with the earlier periodicals.<sup>822</sup>

### 3. Counterfeits.

Taylor wrote, ‘we do not say that all who claim to speak in tongues have the Baptism; but what we say is that all who receive the Baptism will speak in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance’.<sup>823</sup> That is because ‘the devil counterfeits everything good’; the genuine tongues begets counterfeits.<sup>824</sup> ‘These demons know everybody, and they can exactly mimic the voice ... (and) there are many examples in the New Testament of evil spirits speaking through men’.<sup>825</sup> The genuine can be discerned from the counterfeit by revelation or by the lack of love and unity.<sup>826</sup> Taylor bluntly stated that,

there are those who speak in tongues, *but are void of love*, and surely such speaking in tongues is as sounding brass, or tinkling cymbal ... are they speaking by the power of the Holy Spirit? They are not ... (but) by the spirit of the devil.<sup>827</sup>

The genuine could also be discerned by holiness: ‘we know the devil can sing, pray, testify, talk in tongues, shout, and preach; but he cannot live holy’.<sup>828</sup>

---

<sup>819</sup> H.C. Webb, ‘Spiritual Gifts’, *PHA* 2.44 (Feb 27, 1919), p. 7.

<sup>820</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #911’, *PHA* 5.46 (Mar 16, 1922), p. 14.

<sup>821</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box #1335’, *PHA* 7.30 (Nov 22, 1923), p. 6.

<sup>822</sup> F.M. Britton, ‘We Believe’, *PHA* 6.47 (Mar 22, 1922), pp. 4, 5.

<sup>823</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Sunday School Lesson: Peter and Cornelius – Acts 10:1-11:18’, *PHA* 3.41 (Feb 5, 1920), p. 3.

<sup>824</sup> Byon A. Jones, ‘Our Weekly Sermon: Anti-Pentecost’, *PHA* 6.19 (Sep 7, 1922), p. 2.

<sup>825</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Basis of Union, Chapter XXVI: Spiritualists’, *PHA* 1.52 (Apr 25, 1918), p. 4.

<sup>826</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Sunday School Lesson: Love – 1 Corinthians 13’, *PHA* 3.7 & 8 (Jun 12 & 19, 1919), pp. 2-3; A.L. Sisler, ‘Holiness God’s Plan’, *PHA* 4.15 (Aug 12, 1920), p. 2.

<sup>827</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Sunday School Lesson: Love – 1 Corinthians 13’, *PHA* 3.7 & 8 (Jun 12 & 19, 1919), pp. 2-3; G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial: Essentials’, *PHA* 4.36 (Jan 6, 1921), pp. 8-10; G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial: Essentials’, *PHA* 4.37 (Jan 13, 1921), p. 9. Italics mine.

<sup>828</sup> H.S. Brooks, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.52 (Apr 22, 1920), p. 14.

At a lesser level, there were pretenders<sup>829</sup> and godly people who could speak evil with their tongues. Such speech was like gangrene according to Taylor.<sup>830</sup> For example: ‘oh, Jesus trim off the evil speaking from our tongues’<sup>831</sup> and ‘pray that the Lord will keep my tongue from speaking evil words, and that I may do the Lord’s will’.<sup>832</sup> And it was possible for some who wanted to make a show and ‘strain a point to shout, or talk in tongues’ while ‘in the flesh’.<sup>833</sup> The solution for this was to

yield your members to God as his instruments of righteousness ... let’s hold the doors of our lips, and only let the Holy Ghost himself speak through us as he will. I do not only believe we speak with other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance, in other tongues, but I do believe He ought to have the complete control of our tongue to speak in English, and let Him speak alone and be controlled by Him.<sup>834</sup>

#### D. Testimonies.

The content and style of the testimonies in the *PHA* were very similar to other early Pentecostal periodicals, especially the *COGE*. Spirit Baptism was simply added to the phraseology of earlier second-work testimonies in the *PHA*. For example, a typical early *HA* testimony was: ‘I want to praise God that I am still saved and sanctified and healed’.<sup>835</sup> A typical later *PHA* was: ‘I am glad I have the old time religion, saved, sanctified, and *baptized with the Holy Ghost, with the evidence of speaking with other tongues as the spirit gives utterance*’.<sup>836</sup> Nevertheless, other themes are clearly seen through the voice of these early pioneers.

The most common references to glossolalia in the testimonies were those of gratitude and praise for the experience, like Robert Bartlett: ‘I am so glad because I have the evidence of speaking in tongues as the spirit gave me utterance’.<sup>837</sup> The second most

---

<sup>829</sup> E.D. Norton, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 6.14 (Aug 3, 1922), p. 13.

<sup>830</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial: Eating Cankers’, *PHA* 5.35 (Dec 29, 1921), pp. 4-5; cf. R.B. Beall, ‘The Advocate and it’s Editor’, *PHA* 5.32 (Dec 8, 1921), p. 3.

<sup>831</sup> Mrs. Le McDaniel, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 5.6 (Jun 9, 1921), p. 15.

<sup>832</sup> Mrs. Mary E. Rowe, ‘Request For Prayer’, *PHA* 6.20 (Sep 14, 1922), p. 5.

<sup>833</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial’, *PHA* 2.7 (Jun 13, 1918), p. 9

<sup>834</sup> C.F. Noble, ‘Reports’, *PHA* 3.14 (Jul 31, 1919), p. 6.

<sup>835</sup> F.J. Cain, *HA* 6.3 (May 15, 1906), p. 2.

<sup>836</sup> D.M. Dennis, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 2.47 (Mar 20, 1919), p. 15. Italics mine.

<sup>837</sup> Robert Bartlett, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 2.26 (Oct 24, 1918), p. 8.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

common reference were the revival reports that usually included the number of people who spoke in tongues.<sup>838</sup> Insightful for this study were the testimonies that described their experience apart from the standard phraseology. For example, Elwood Dobbins was amazed that ‘the blessed Holy Ghost came in and spoke through the lips of clay in other tongues’.<sup>839</sup> Others elaborated on the confirmation of the Holy Spirit’s presence:

some people say they do not know whether they received the Holy Ghost or not, but if they received it like I did, they will know when they get it, for he will take control of your tongue and speak through you ... I went to the altar and had only been there a short while until the Holy Ghost begun to sing through me. That was the sweetest music I ever heard. I could not help singing, and I did not want to help it.<sup>840</sup>

Some commented on the Holy Spirit’s communication. He ‘spoke for Himself’,<sup>841</sup> ‘testified for Himself’,<sup>842</sup> and ‘talked for Himself’<sup>843</sup> about the ‘mysteries of God’<sup>844</sup> or ‘testified of Jesus’.<sup>845</sup> Sadie Turlington even broke into glossolalia while writing out her testimony:

I just pressed my case up to God for the Baptism of the Holy Ghost according to the Bible evidences, for I knew He had never testified for Himself with tongue, and nothing anooi onomyrd (sic) my tongue, and nothing short of this would ever satisfy me.<sup>846</sup>

The glossolalist’s emotion was usually joy. For example, glossolalia ‘starts the joy bells ringing in my soul’ wrote Mrs. Annie Brott.<sup>847</sup> There often was a section entitled ‘Our

---

<sup>838</sup> For example, ‘there were fifty saved, fifteen sanctified as a second work of grace, eight receive the Holy Ghost, and spoke in other tongues as the spirit gave utterance (Acts 2:4)’, J.F. Ramsey, ‘Evangelistic Notes’, *PHA* 1.12 (Jul 19, 1917), p. 10.

<sup>839</sup> Elwood A. Dobbins, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 6.32 (Dec 7, 1922), p. 15.

<sup>840</sup> Lizzie Miller, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.6 (Jun 5, 1919), p. 14.

<sup>841</sup> B.C. Sellers, ‘Reports’, *PHA* 1.8 (Jun 21, 1917), p. 7; G.H. Montgomery, ‘From The Holmes Bible and Missionary Institute’, *PHA* 6.45 (Mar 8, 1922), p. 7.

<sup>842</sup> Mrs. Virginia Hayes, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 6.4 (May 25, 1922), p. 7. This phrase followed the example of testimonies in the *PHA*, cf. Ada H. Barnes, ‘The Witness Stand’, *HA* 7.3 (May 15, 1907), p. 2; Sudie Turlington, ‘My Experience’, *PHA* 7.3 (May 15, 1907), p. 2.

<sup>843</sup> A.C. Knight, ‘Greensboro, N.C.’, *PHA* 1.44 (Feb 28, 1918), p. 5.

<sup>844</sup> Mrs. Cora Barnett, ‘Nicholson, GA’, *PHA* 1.43 (Feb 21, 1918), p. 12.

<sup>845</sup> D.M. Dennis, ‘Marion, S.C.’, *PHA* 1.28 (Nov 8, 1917), p. 9.

<sup>846</sup> Sudie Turlington, ‘My Experience’, *HA* 7.3 (May 15, 1907), p. 2.

<sup>847</sup> Mrs. Annie Brott, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.37 (Jan 8, 1920), p. 15; cf. Katie Parker, ‘My Experience’, *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906), p. 6; Crumpler, ‘Editorial: He Satisfies: He Abides’, p. 1; F.M. Britton, *PHA* 1.22 (Sep 27,

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Dead' that honoured those who 'died in the faith'.<sup>848</sup> Remembrances of SB,<sup>849</sup> and public displays<sup>850</sup> of glossolalia helped friends and relatives mourn. There were many accounts of the dying speaking or singing in tongues just moments before their death. For example, 'in her last hours she remained shouting, praising the Lord, and talking in tongues, until the death angel took her away',<sup>851</sup> and 'she shouted and talked in tongues 10 minutes before she died'.<sup>852</sup> Mrs. M.E. Oden

shouted and praised the Lord for gifts, and Jesus appeared to her in a vision and she spoke to Him. The Spirit sang through her in other tongues, 'The Eastern Gates,' 'Hallelujah Bells,' 'If You Don't Bear the Cross You'll not Wear the Crown,' and many other beautiful songs that we had never heard.<sup>853</sup>

Tongues provided courage and faith during times of suffering, E.D. Reeves wrote 'our faith is made stronger by her death'.<sup>854</sup> Deathbed glossolalia occasionally preceded a plea for dying's loved ones to turn to faith,<sup>855</sup> or a prophetic word.<sup>856</sup> One young man arose from the dead speaking in tongues and was commissioned to 'tell his father and mother that this is the right gospel'.<sup>857</sup>

---

1917), p. 12; J.O. Lehman, 'Letter from S.A.', *PHA* 2.27 (Oct 31, 1918), p. 13; O.E. Sproull, 'The Blessing of Sorrow', *PHA* 6.8 (Jun 22, 1922), p. 4.

<sup>848</sup> G.R. Thomas, 'Tribute to the Memory of Mrs. Rebecca Harrison', *PHA* 2.28 & 29 (Nov 7 & 14, 1918), p. 14; T.M. Bizzell, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 2.36 & 37 (Jan 2, 9, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>849</sup> J.L. Oliver, 'Our Dead: Mrs. Zadie Farmer', *PHA* 2.52 (Apr 24, 1919), p. 16; cf. W.J.A. Russum, 'Our Dead: Sister N.E. Dudley', *PHA* 3.27 (Oct 30, 1919), p. 7; D.B. Causey, 'Our Dead: MC. D. Brown', *PHA* 4.32 (Dec 9, 1920), p. 6.

<sup>850</sup> Mrs. C.A. Stroud 'Our Dead: Gertrude Johnson', *PHA* 2.42 (Feb 13, 1919), p. 10; His Brother, 'Our Dead: Noel Earl Sutphin', *PHA* 3.37 (Jan 8, 1920), p. 6; 'Our Dead', *PHA* 3.43 (Feb 19, 1920), p. 6.

<sup>851</sup> Sam D. Page, 'In Memory of Our Darling Sister', *PHA* 2.30 & 31 (Nov 21 & 28, 1918), p. 14.

<sup>852</sup> Mrs. N.E. Greenwood & Mrs. J.P. Spain, 'Our Dead: Sister Melton', *PHA* 5.6 (Jun 9, 1921), p. 11.

<sup>853</sup> Mrs. M.E. Oden, 'Our Dead: Eula Melvin', *PHA* 3.7 & 8 (Jun 12 & 19, 1919), p. 16; cf. Mrs. E.D. Reeves, 'Our Dead: Spencer', *PHA* 3.34 (Dec 18, 1919), p. 12; H.O. Harris, 'Myrtius Rebecca Roland', *PHA* 5.21 (Sep 22, 1921), p. 7.

<sup>854</sup> E.D. Reeves, 'Our Dead: Mrs. Helen Reese', *PHA* 3.47 (Mar 18, 1920), p. 7. For honesty about suffering and glossolalia cf. Minnie Finely, 'Our Dead: Parks Sorrow', *PHA* 5.44 (Mar 2, 1922), p. 4. For those claiming no pain, cf. S.D. White, 'Our Dead: Mrs. M.J. Fort', *PHA* 5.37 (Jan 12, 1922), p. 6; A.H. Butler, 'Our Dead: Sister Francis Elks', *PHA* 5.47 (Mar 23, 1922), p. 11.

<sup>855</sup> L.R. Graham, 'Our Dead: Malissis Jan Tew Crabtree', *PHA* 2.48 (Mar 27, 1919), p. 13; A Friend, 'Mrs. W.T. Freeman', *PHA* 5.24 (Oct 13, 1921), p. 8.

<sup>856</sup> Mrs. AH Butler, 'Obituary', *PHA* 1.33 (Dec 13, 1917), p. 7.

<sup>857</sup> David Niswander, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 3.10 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 13.

## E. Sanctification.

Two theological facets of glossolalia touched upon the doctrine of sanctification: is SB sanctification? And, ‘can God use a dirty vessel’?

In the very first edition of the *PHA* Taylor wrote that SB was ‘subsequent to heart cleansing’,<sup>858</sup> a third work of grace in the five-fold WH tradition that was distinct from justification and sanctification. References to this difficult theological issue were not as numerous as expected;<sup>859</sup> however, there were some hints of the ongoing debate. For example, Mrs. F.H. Davis wrote that ‘the M.P. Holiness Church is here and there are some good Christians in it too, but they will not have the tongues, as they claim they receive the Holy Ghost at sanctification’.<sup>860</sup> Also, J.A. Synan wrote,

I thought according to the doctrine of the holiness folks that I had received the Holy Ghost, but when I heard a Pentecostal sermon preached from Acts 2:4, and witnessed the demonstrations, shouting, dancing, and speaking in tongues I could see they had something more than I had ... I have not spoken in tongues.<sup>861</sup>

In the WH schema of the *ordo salutis* the three parts were neatly divided up,<sup>862</sup> even at the popular level.<sup>863</sup> For example: ‘I am still saved, sanctified, and baptized with the Holy Ghost with the initial evidence of speaking in other tongues as the spirit gives utterance’<sup>864</sup> or ‘I praise God this day finds me saved, sanctified, and the precious Holy

---

<sup>858</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Our Policy’, *PHA* 1.1 (May 3, 1917), p. 9.

<sup>859</sup> There is no mention of SB or tongues in the two ‘Basis of Union’ articles on entire sanctification, where one would expect a mention of this distinction, G.F. Taylor, ‘Basis of Union, Chapter XII: Entire Sanctification’, *PHA* 1.35 (Dec 27, 1917), pp. 4, 5; G.F. Taylor, ‘Basis of Union, Chapter XIII: The Second Work of Grace’, *PHA* 1.36 (Jan 3, 1918), pp. 2, 3; cf. G.F. Taylor, ‘Basis of Union, Chapter 1: Who Are We?’, *PHA* 1.24 (Oct 11, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>860</sup> Mrs. F.H. Davis, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.47 (Mar 18, 1920), p. 13; cf. W.H. McCurley, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *PHA* 1.23 (Oct 4, 1917), p. 2; E.C. Bolen, *PHA* 1.25 (Oct 25, 1917), p. 9; Mrs. Lena Swann, ‘Bessemer, Ala’, *PHA* 1.43 (Feb 21, 1918), p. 7; E.H. Blake, ‘Our Weekly Sermon’, *PHA* 6.8 (Jun 22, 1922), pp. 2, 3..

<sup>861</sup> J.A. Synan, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.43 (Feb 19, 1920), p. 13.

<sup>862</sup> C. Webb, ‘Baptized Into One Body’, *PHA* 4.30 (Nov 25, 1920), pp. 2-3.

<sup>863</sup> Remarkably, two early and knowledgeable writers defended against the conversion / initiation view of SB long before Dunn wrote *The Baptism in the Holy Spirit* (Westminster Press, 1970). cf. D.B. Southern, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *PHA* 4.1 (May 6, 1920), pp. 3-4; Webb, ‘Baptized Into One Body’, pp. 2-3.

<sup>864</sup> J.B. Horton, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 6.52 (Apr 26, 1922), p. 12.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Ghost still abides with the Bible evidence of speaking in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance according to Acts 2:4'.<sup>865</sup>

Logically, sanctification had to precede SB in order for the genuine Holy Spirit to abide in the believer:

the experience of sanctification *prepares us for* the Baptism of the holy Ghost, and to preach or teach, that we can receive the Baptism of the Holy Ghost without being sanctified ... (is to) be possessed with inbred sin ... (and) at enmity against God ... and lay(s) the foundation for an awful spirit of deception and a *counterfeit baptism*.<sup>866</sup>

Therefore, there were numerous appeals to put away tobacco,<sup>867</sup> 'worldly amusements',<sup>868</sup> and to overcome sin.<sup>869</sup> In fact, Taylor believed the standard for fellowship should not be tongues, because 'sanctification as a second definite work of grace is the balance wheel to the experience and doctrine of the Christian church'.<sup>870</sup> Spirit baptism was not just about power, or tongues, or 'the gifts of the Spirit as recorded in the 12th of 1st Corinthians, but the coming of the Holy Ghost HIMSELF to abide with us forever'<sup>871</sup> and 'entering into the very closest relations and fellowship with God'.<sup>872</sup> It was the abiding Spirit, or Jesus himself, who spoke through the believer:

the Baptism of the Holy Ghost is the bringing of the glorified Jesus into our hearts and lives ... they (the apostles) were filled with the glorified Word. This glorified Word began to manifest itself through the vocal organ. This is one reason why they spake in tongues.<sup>873</sup>

---

<sup>865</sup> Mrs. Allie Surglon, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 6.8 (Jun 22, 1922), p. 13.

<sup>866</sup> A.H. Butler, 'Our Weekly Sermon', *PHA* 6.50 (Apr 12, 1922), p. 3. Italics mine. F.M. Britton, 'We Believe', *PHA* 6.44 (Mar 1, 1922), p. 2.

<sup>867</sup> F.M. Britton, 'The Indwelling Spirit', *PHA* 1.5 (May 31, 1917), p. 3; G.W. Stanley, 'Reports', *PHA* 6.9 (Jun 29, 1922), p. 11.

<sup>868</sup> H.E. Oxendine, 'Our Weekly Sermon: Holiness', *PHA* 5.48 (Mar 30, 1922), p. 2; cf. H.H. Morgan, 'Shine', *PHA* 5.43 (Feb 23, 1922), p. 4.

<sup>869</sup> Bell Lewis, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 5.43 (Feb 23, 1922), p. 13.

<sup>870</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial Thoughts', *PHA* 1.20 (Sep 13, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>871</sup> D.B. Southern, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost', *PHA* 4.1 (May 6, 1920), p. 3.

<sup>872</sup> Webb, 'Baptized Into One Body', pp. 2-3.

<sup>873</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Sunday School Lesson: The Holy Spirit Our Helper', *PHA* 2.51 (Apr 17, 1919), pp. 2, 3; cf. R.B. Beall, 'The Holy Spirit Is A Person', *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

At times, this view caused a bifurcation of the Spirit's indwelling into two parts, where just 'because we have received the Spirit (sanctification) is not proof that we have received the Spirit Himself (SB)'.<sup>874</sup>

### F. Purposes for Glossolalia.

Compared with other early periodicals, the purpose for tongues in the *PHA* was more implicit than explicit. However, a careful examination revealed the same purposes for glossolalia as the other periodicals, that is: power, prayer, praise and revelation.

#### 1. Power.

'We see where Jesus told his disciples that they should receive power after the Holy Ghost had come on them', wrote Mrs. P.S. Foster, 'it seems that after we receive the Baptism of the Holy Ghost we are better equipped to work for God and can tell more about his wonderful works'.<sup>875</sup> Further, Jesus promised spiritual power and modelled it after his baptism at the Jordan River: 'the purpose of the Holy Spirit's coming upon Jesus at this particular time was to anoint Him for service. Jesus did His work through the power of the Spirit'.<sup>876</sup> Most believed that SB was to facilitate evangelism: 'last Monday night the power of God fell in such a wonderful way that the people shouted and danced, and talked in tongues, and sinners rush to the altar until the altar was full'.<sup>877</sup> However, testimonies that mentioned power usually referred to powerful altar experiences.<sup>878</sup> Only a few stated they could share their faith more effectively.

Glossolalia was not the power in itself, but a sign of the Spirit's power within. Mrs. Ethel Cook poignantly wrote that 'the Baptism is the gift of power on a clean life'.<sup>879</sup>

---

<sup>874</sup> R.B. Beall, 'The Holy Spirit Is A Person', *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 2.

<sup>875</sup> Mrs. P.S. Foster, 'Modern Pentecostal Missionary Work', *PHA* 5.1 (May 5, 1921), p. 14.

<sup>876</sup> W.J. Noble, 'Sunday School Lesson: Baptism and Temptation of Jesus', *PHA* 4.22 (Sep 30, 1920), p. 4.

<sup>877</sup> R.B. Beall, 'Notice', *PHA* 2.45 &46 (Mar 6 & 13, 1919), p. 11

<sup>878</sup> For example, 'we began to pray and the power began to fall on the saints and brother Jesse Banks began to talk in tongues, and the first thing I knew I was shouting, and I sang in tongues and danced under the power of God', Nora Dawson, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 4.7 (Jun 17, 1920), p. 12.

<sup>879</sup> Mrs. Ethel Cook, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 3.6 (Jun 5, 1919), p. 12; cf. Joseph F. Barnett, *PHA* 1.25 (Oct 25, 1917), p. 7; cf. Lucinda Banister, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 3.37 (Jan 8, 1920), p. 16.

## 2. Prayer.

Taylor's response to the question 'what is the good of speaking in other tongues' highlighted prayer as the foremost reason for tongues: '(1 Cor. 14:4). It is always good to edify yourself in him ... It is always good to speak to God (1 Cor. 14:2) ... (1 Cor. 14:14, 15). It is always good for your spirit to pray ... It is good to let the Holy Spirit speak through you. (Acts 2:4)'.<sup>880</sup> 'There is praying in tongues', he wrote, 'but then the understanding is unfruitful'.<sup>881</sup> He explained that prayer could go beyond human reason and vocabulary to praying in the Spirit.

## 3. Praise.

R.B. Beall noted it was 'usually overlooked' that the purpose of tongues was to 'praise and glorify' God.<sup>882</sup> He clarified that

speaking in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance was used as *a doxology or praise* ... (whereas) the speaking in tongues with the gift is different; it is not so much a doxology or praise, but *a sign* to unbelievers, Mark 16:17; 1 Cor. 14:22.<sup>883</sup>

Testimonies such as Brother Glenn's confirmed that praise was one of the purposes for glossolalia: 'he would rejoice, speak in tongues, and praise God'.<sup>884</sup>

## 4. Revelation.

Occasionally, there were revelations of Jesus when speaking in tongues.<sup>885</sup> Taylor wrote this Pentecostal Baptism ... brings to the heart a revelation of the son of God. It is the glorified Jesus coming back to dwell in us. It is Jesus crowned within. It is a revelation of the Trinity to the soul. It is the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit coming to dwell with us and in us forever.<sup>886</sup>

---

<sup>880</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Question Box, #595', *PHA* 4.19 (Sep 9, 1920), p. 10.

<sup>881</sup> Taylor, 'Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14', p. 9.

<sup>882</sup> R.B. Beall, 'The Holy Spirit Is A Person', *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>883</sup> R.B. Beall, 'The Holy Spirit Is A Person', *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 3. Italics mine. Cf. G.F. Taylor, 'Editorial: Our Church History', *PHA* 4.46 (Mar 17, 1921), p. 9.

<sup>884</sup> W.J. Martin, 'Our Dead: Owen S. Glenn', *PHA* 5.23 (Oct 6, 1921), p. 11; cf. A.H. Butler, 'Kingston, N.C.', *PHA* 2.16 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 11; Fletcher Ackerman, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 11; R.L. Stewart, 'Our Dead: Mrs. Mary Anne Fisher', *PHA* 3.45 (Mar 4, 1920), p. 11.

<sup>885</sup> W.A. Cramer, 'Pentecost at Cleveland', *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906), p. 4; Fletcher Ackerman, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 11.

<sup>886</sup> G.F. Taylor, 'Basis of Union: Chapter XV, the Baptism of the Holy Ghost', *PHA* 1.38 (Jan 17, 1918), p. 9.

Testimonies affirmed that revelation occasionally accompanied glossolalia. For example, Mollie Kenny wrote that ‘when I yielded to the Lord he showed me a large ball of fire, and just above that I saw the head of Jesus’.<sup>887</sup> Emma Bullin was walking and talking in tongues when ‘I saw Jesus in the Spirit looking down on the whole human family full of love, pity, and tender mercy’.<sup>888</sup> However, Crumpler had a vision of ‘the awful doom of the soul lost in hell’ that was concomitant with his IE.<sup>889</sup>

### G. Tongues as a Gift of the Holy Spirit.

Another purpose for glossolalia was the public gift of tongues. The *PHA* presented the most thorough explanation on the gifts of tongues to date. First, Luke’s view of glossolalia was complimentary with Paul’s:<sup>890</sup>

Paul was teaching on the same line with Peter, as he spoke on the day of Pentecost after one hundred and twenty received the Holy Ghost and began to speak in other tongues ... Paul was teaching the doctrine of Repentance, Justification, Sanctification, the *Baptism of the Holy Ghost*, Divine Healing, and the Nine Spiritual Gifts.<sup>891</sup>

Second, IE was the doorway to the spiritual gifts. ‘After this filling, we believe there are several gifts of the Spirit, that all these gifts are under the control of the person receiving them, and that the gift of tongues is one of them’.<sup>892</sup>

Third, that the gift of tongues differed from IE was addressed multiple times.<sup>893</sup> ‘A person with the gift of tongues can speak any language on earth at will’.<sup>894</sup> ‘He may speak any language under the sun at his own discretion. Though I do think that the one

---

<sup>887</sup> Mollie Kenny, ‘Testimonies’ *PHA* 1.12 (Jul 19, 1917), p. 15.

<sup>888</sup> Emma Bullin, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 5.23 (Oct 6, 1921), p. 14.

<sup>889</sup> Crumpler, ‘Editorial: He Satisfies: He Abides’, p. 1.

<sup>890</sup> ‘Paul never tried to regulate those who spoke in tongues as the spirit gives utterance’, G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #839’, *PHA* 5.27 (Nov 3, 1921), p. 5.

<sup>891</sup> S.E. Stark, ‘Paul’s Doctrine’, *PHA* 1.12 (Jul 19, 1917), p. 3. Italics mine. Cf. G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial: Do All Speak With Tongues’, *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 10, 1919), p. 9; Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, pp. 8-9.

<sup>892</sup> Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 8; cf. Webb, ‘Baptized Into One Body’, p. 2.

<sup>893</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #32’, *PHA* 1.9 (Jun 28, 1917), p. 15; G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #732’, *PHA* 4.47 (Mar 24, 1921), p. 10; Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, pp. 8, 9; Taylor, ‘Question Box, #839’, p. 5; G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1108’, *PHA* 6.37 (Jan 11, 1923), p. 10.

<sup>894</sup> Taylor, ‘Question Box, #32’, p. 15. ‘There seems to be no limit to the number of languages that might be so spoken’, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 8.

who has the gift of tongues will be led by the Spirit as to when to exercise the gift.<sup>895</sup>

Also, the tongues of IE did not need to be interpreted. Even though all glossolalia could be interpreted, ‘I have my doubts whether it all should be interpreted … (because) some things are spoken directly to God, and need to be interpreted’.<sup>896</sup> The regulation by Paul in 1 Cor. 14.27, was for ‘those who have the gift of tongues as a gift … it does not refer to speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance’.<sup>897</sup>

Fourth, a closely related gift, the gift of interpretation, was ‘absolutely independent of the mental powers’, wrote Taylor: ‘I never know it is until I say it’.<sup>898</sup> ‘Interpretation is not translation. Men translate from one language to another with their understanding, but interpretation is given just like speaking in tongues’;<sup>899</sup> whereupon, ‘he gives his vocal organs to the Holy Spirit, and the Spirit gives interpretation’.<sup>900</sup> The HA could receive an interpretation.<sup>901</sup>

Finally, the orientation of speech for the gift of tongues was two-directional: vertically, it was communication with God for prayer<sup>902</sup> and personal edification.<sup>903</sup> Horizontally, tongues in the public setting were to be interpreted and were ‘equal to the message through prophecy’.<sup>904</sup> This public setting for tongues and interpretation was what Paul restricted to two or three occurrences.<sup>905</sup> Also horizontal, occasionally, tongues were a sign to the sinners of their hard-hearts:<sup>906</sup> ‘when I yielded to the Lord he

---

<sup>895</sup> Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1008’, p. 10.

<sup>896</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #33’, *PHA* 1.9 (Jun 28, 1917), p. 15; cf. G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #618’, *PHA* 4.26 & 27 (Oct 28 & Nov 4, 1920), p. 10.

<sup>897</sup> Taylor, ‘Question Box, #732’, p. 10.

<sup>898</sup> G.F. Taylor ‘Question Box, #41’, *PHA* 1.10 (Jul 5, 1917), p. 15.

<sup>899</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1055’, *PHA* 6.22 (Sep 28, 1922), p. 9.

<sup>900</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #815’, *PHA* 5.18 (Sep 1, 1921), p. 5.

<sup>901</sup> C.E. White, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.27 (Oct 30, 1919), p. 14.

<sup>902</sup> ‘Often the intensity of the prayer was so great that it is impossible to express it with the understanding, and then is when the Spirit prays. (Rom. 8:26)’, Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 9.

<sup>903</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #458’, *PHA* 3.46 (Mar 11, 1920), p. 10; cf. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1055’, p. 9.

<sup>904</sup> Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 9; cf. F.M. Britton, ‘We Believe’, *PHA* 6.47 (Mar 22, 1922), pp. 4, 5.

<sup>905</sup> Taylor, ‘Question Box, #839’, p. 5.

<sup>906</sup> Taylor expounded, ‘there are some people who have hardened their hearts against God in the truth. God has given them every kind of a warning but they will not yield. In Isaiah 28:9-13 we read that

... gave out a message in tongues to the lost sinners, but some just stood back as hard-hearted as the devil would want them to'.<sup>907</sup>

## H. Eschatology and Glossolalia.

Compared to other early periodicals, glossolalia was not as strongly connected with eschatology. Some exceptions were that Crumpler saw tongues as evidence of the restoration of spiritual gifts through SB in 'this dispensation', but did not elaborate.<sup>908</sup> Britton noted that 'men and women in all generations had the Holy Spirit ... in the measure that belonged to their day and dispensation'.<sup>909</sup> Tongues was the dividing line between the former rain and the later rain: 'there was not any speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance in the old dispensation, but all that received the Holy Ghost in His personal abiding fullness spoke in other tongues'.<sup>910</sup> Della Cobb noted that 'it will take more than' tongues 'to meet Jesus in the air ... we have to live the life and give Him the praise due Him'.<sup>911</sup> And Zebrum Sutphin noted that tongues were a part of the eschatological message: 'blessed indeed will it be for Jesus to come and find his servant or servants preaching the Baptism of the Holy Ghost with the same evidence that God stamped upon it at the beginning (with other tongues as the spirit gave utterance)'.<sup>912</sup>

## I. Nature of Glossolalia.

### 1. Singing in the Spirit.

Singing in the Spirit was most often reported as an altar experience similar to Nora Dawson's: 'we began to pray and the power began to fall on the saints and brother Jesse Banks began to talk in tongues, and the first thing I knew I was shouting, and I sang in tongues and danced under the power of God'.<sup>913</sup> Singing in tongues was the functional

---

God speak to this class in other tongues as a sign that the final doom was near at hand', Taylor, 'Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14', p. 9; cf. Taylor, 'Question Box, #595', p. 10.

<sup>907</sup> Mollie Kenny, 'Children's Corner', *PHA* 1.12 (Jul 19, 1917), p. 15.

<sup>908</sup> Crumpler 'Editorial: Extracts and Comments', p. 1.

<sup>909</sup> F.M. Britton, 'We Believe', *PHA* 6.47 (Mar 22, 1922), p. 4.

<sup>910</sup> F.M. Britton, 'We Believe', *PHA* 6.47 (Mar 22, 1922), p. 4.

<sup>911</sup> Della Cobb, 'Who Will Be In The Air', *PHA* 6.48 (Mar 29, 1922), pp. 4-5.

<sup>912</sup> Zebrum Sutphin, 'Coming of the Son of Man', *PHA* 2.8 (Jun 20, 1918), p. 2.

<sup>913</sup> Nora Dawson, 'Testimonies', *PHA* 4.7 (Jun 17, 1920), p. 12.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia equivalent for IE; it was tongues with a melody: ‘I sure did get a blessing in my cup and saucer both run over ... The Holy Ghost talked in tongues and sang in tongues through me. I know I have got him’.<sup>914</sup> Sometimes the song was a familiar tune<sup>915</sup> and at other times a new song.<sup>916</sup>

## 2. Passive Speech.

The *PHA* held the same idea as the *GOGE* that an individual was completely passive during IE:

when one receives the Baptism of the Holy Ghost the Spirit speaks himself with the human tongue without any effort whatever on the individuals part any more than he must yield not only his tongue, but his entire being to the Holy Ghost.<sup>917</sup>

This was in order that the Holy Spirit could do the speaking:

when we receive the Holy Ghost like they did at Pentecost, the Holy Ghost himself does the speaking. It is not us, but him. We find in St. John 15:26 these words ... ‘He shall testify of me.’ We see from the reading of these words, that the Holy Ghost speaks himself.<sup>918</sup>

Testimonies affirmed this passive nature for IE. For example, E.J. Jarrett wrote, ‘it seemed to me like my tongue was cloven tongues, then he began to speak. I could do nothing only open my mouth, and He did the rest’,<sup>919</sup> and J.C. Conley wrote, ‘the first

---

<sup>914</sup> Mrs. Fletcher Bowen, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 2.19 (Sep 5, 1918), p. 13; cf. Katie Parker, ‘My Experience’, *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 6; Mrs. Florence Anderson, ‘The Witness Stand’, *HA* 7.4 (Jun 1, 1907), p. 2; Lizzie Miller, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.6 (Jun 5, 1919), p. 14; O.M. Millsap, ‘Reports’, *PHA* 3.41 (Feb 5, 1920), p. 13; Mrs. A. Gamble, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.52 (Apr 22, 1920), p. 14; Mrs. Nora Scarce, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 4.2 (May 13, 1920), p. 16.

<sup>915</sup> Mrs. Nora Scarce, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 4.2 (May 13, 1920), p. 16; Mrs. M.E. Oden, ‘Our Dead: Eula Melvin’, *PHA* 3.7 & 8 (Jun 12 & 19, 1919), p. 16; Fletcher Ackerman, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.11 (Jul 3, 1919), p. 11; Mrs. E.D. Reeves, ‘Our Dead: Spencer’, *PHA* 3.34 (Dec 18, 1919), p. 12; Mrs. Nora Scarce, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 4.2 (May 13, 1920), p. 16.

<sup>916</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Editorial: Our Church History’, *PHA* 4.46 (Mar 17, 1921), p. 9; cf. W.A. Cramer, ‘Pentecost at Cleveland’, *HA* 6.4 (Jun 1, 1906 [?]), p. 4; J.J. King, ‘A Timely Warning’, *PHA* 5.11 (Jul 14, 1921), p. 2.

<sup>917</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1108’, *PHA* 6.37 (Jan 11, 1923), p. 10; cf. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #839’, p. 5.

<sup>918</sup> W.M. Branch, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *PHA* 4.32 (Dec 9, 1920), p. 4.

<sup>919</sup> E.J. Jarrett, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.31 & 32 (Nov 27 & Dec 4, 1919), p. 14.

thing I knew, I lost sight of everything and the next thing I knew the Holy Ghost had come and I was speaking in other tongues'.<sup>920</sup>

### 3. Xenolalia.

Neither MT nor xenolalia were a notable part of the anecdotal or theological conversation in the *PHA*, but they were not totally absent either. For example, Lewis Sawgalsky boasted, ‘it will be easy for wife and I to preach Christ in our country, as we can speak about thirteen different languages, *besides the many that the Holy Ghost speaks through us*'.<sup>921</sup> In one playful article, C.F. Noble reported that ‘there were two Chinese boys in South Carolina heard (sic) a sister speak in their own language while engaged in prayer’.<sup>922</sup> He also noted that the Holy Spirit speaks all the languages of the world, but that tongues were intentionally ‘unknown’.<sup>923</sup> He believed it possible that God could grant the ability to read or write known foreign languages, just like Daniel interpreted the handwriting on the Babylonian wall.<sup>924</sup> Generally though, missionaries were expected to study the local language:

I’m improving daily in my Chinese and am able to speak quite freely now. Me and my colporteurs stand on the street corners and preach for hours at a time. It is a joy unspeakable to be able to tell the story of Jesus to the Chinese in their own language.<sup>925</sup>

Overall, the examples listed here were rare compared to the earlier periodicals and R.B. Beall admitted that, ‘some have made sad mistakes ... because they had the gift of

---

<sup>920</sup> J.C. Conley, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.51 (Apr 15, 1920), p. 15.

<sup>921</sup> Sawgalsky, ‘Testimony and Experience of Lewis Sawgalsky, Converted Jew’, p. 5. Italics mine.

<sup>922</sup> C.F. Noble, ‘Questions Answered’, *PHA* 3.23 & 24 (Oct 2 & 9, 1919), pp. 3-5 (3); cf. Anderson, ‘The Witness Stand’, p. 2.

<sup>923</sup> Noble, ‘Questions Answered’, pp. 3-4; cf. G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box, #928’, *PHA* 5.48 (Mar 30, 1922), p. 10.

<sup>924</sup> Noble, ‘Questions Answered’, p. 3.

<sup>925</sup> W.H. Turner, ‘Missionary Department’, *PHA* 5.31 (Dec 1, 1921), p. 3. Also, ‘if we are called as a missionary, we are not to suppose that his coming is so near we have no time to prepare for our work, but must rush out without preparation. If you are called to any work, first prepare yourself for it, and if Jesus comes while you are preparing you will be just as ready as you would be if you are doing that work’, G.F. Taylor, ‘Looking For Jesus’, *PHA* 1.29 (Nov 15, 1917), p. 9.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
tongues and spoke the language of a certain nation (thought they) must go to that  
nation, but this is not Scripture'.<sup>926</sup>

---

<sup>926</sup> R.B. Beall, 'The Holy Spirit Is A Person', *PHA* 1.3 (May 17, 1917), pp. 3, 4; cf. Bertha C. Doering, 'Missionary Department', *PHA* 4.33 (Dec 16, 1920), p. 12.

## Chapter 4

### The Finished Work Pentecostal Periodicals.

'From 1906 to 1910, the Pentecostal movement fit decidedly within the Wesleyan stream of theology' and then

in 1910, William Durham modified his theology, accommodating it to his Baptist roots. This new Pentecostal soteriology disclaimed sanctification as a second definite work of grace, seeing justification and sanctification as occurring at the moment of conversion. He based his theology on what he called the Finished Work of Christ on the cross.<sup>1</sup>

Durham had 'a strongly polemic temper',<sup>2</sup> and pushed the issue relentlessly.<sup>3</sup> His theology would eventually cause Pentecostalism to coalesce into three camps: WH, FW, and Oneness Pentecostalism.<sup>4</sup> Recent scholarship has shown that sometimes the WH and the FW streams share a common theology and at other times they diverge.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 150. Richard M. Riss cites the 'Keswick movement in England and the Christian Missionary Alliance' as exceptions to the WH view of sanctification, Riss, 'Finished Work Controversy', p. 638. William K. Kay notes that 'there were two relevant doctrinal schemes in circulation' at the time, WH and Keswick's higher life, William K. Kay, *Pentecostalism: A Very Short Introduction* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2011), p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 76. For example, he strongly warned against Pentecostal churches organizing into a denomination, William Durham, 'Warning', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp. 9-10.

<sup>3</sup> There is a possibility that he was just responding in kind to his opponents, Bartleman, *Azusa Street*, p. 175. Durham's writings fit with Spittler's assessment of Fundamentalism: 'Fundamentalism reacted in an intellectual style ... argumentative, logical, rational ... (and) the Bible presented inerrant factual truth', Spittler, 'Are Pentecostals and Charismatics Fundamentalists?', p. 107.

<sup>4</sup> Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 105; cf. pp. 101-105.

<sup>5</sup> Alexander discovered that 'the understanding of salvation and how it is obtained has directly affected the way each group theologized about healing', Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 195. McQueen's examination of eschatology noted a distinct difference between the two streams. He concludes that the FW eschatology quickly became 'fossilized' and is less dynamic than WH's because of 'a single reference point' for salvation, McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, p. 203. Green found no distinction between the two traditions regarding the Lord's Supper, Green, *Towards a Pentecostal Theology of the Lord's Supper*, p. 178. Finally, Melissa Archer notes that both streams 'present a unified portrait of worship', Archer, 'I Was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day', p. 117.

## I. Advocate and Bridge-BUILDER<sup>6</sup> – *Triumphs of Faith.*

### A. History of Carrie Judd Montgomery.

As a result of the newly discovered ‘prayer of faith’<sup>7</sup> Carrie Judd was healed from a nervous disease.<sup>8</sup> She received hundreds of inquiries about ‘faith cures’ after her own healing was reported in the local newspaper.<sup>9</sup> This prompted her to write a book called *The Prayer of Faith*.<sup>10</sup> It was ‘revolutionary’ and became wildly successful because it ‘was one of the earlier books published on divine healing’.<sup>11</sup> Even more letters arrived after its publication and at the urging of her brother, she started the monthly publication *TOF*.<sup>12</sup> About that same time she opened a healing home<sup>13</sup> and spoke wherever she was invited.<sup>14</sup> The timing and focus of her ministry ‘brought her into the leadership circle of

---

<sup>6</sup> ‘Her contribution to the Pentecostal movement can ... be described generally in two broad roles; enthusiastic advocate and bridge-builder between movements’, Daniel Albrecht, ‘Carrie Judd Montgomery: Pioneering Contributor to Three Religious Movements’, *Pneuma* 8.1 (1986), pp. 101-19 (111).

<sup>7</sup> Her father read about Sarah Mix’s account of healing in the newspaper and wrote to her about how she was healed. Mix immediately wrote back and instructed her about prayer and faith. At an agreed upon day and time, Sarah, Carrie and her father prayed together, Jennifer A. Miskov, *Life on Wings: The Forgotten Life and Theology of Carrie Judd Montgomery (1858-1946)* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012), pp. 19-23; cf. p. 303; Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 26.

<sup>8</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 21. Miskov reports that she was healed of hyperesthesia, ‘a condition of the nerves’ on February 2, 1879, p. 15.

<sup>9</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 25. *The Buffalo Commercial Advertiser* of Buffalo, NY, ran the story on Oct. 20, 1880, Warner, ‘Carrie Judd Montgomery’, p. 904.

<sup>10</sup> Carrie F. Judd, *Prayer of Faith* (Chicago and New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1880).

<sup>11</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 26. Miskov reports that by 1893, 40,000 copies had been sold and it was translated into French, Dutch, German, and Swedish, pp. 26-27. Miskov notes that it was the timing of Montgomery’s story along with her writing talent, otherwise, ‘her story might have just been another ... healing among a stack of many’, p. 29.

<sup>12</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 27. First edition was January, 1881. In 1899, Montgomery wrote the periodical ‘is a monthly journal, purely undenominational, and devoted to the promotion of Christian Holiness and Divine Healing (from a scriptural standpoint alone)’, p. 28.

<sup>13</sup> She ‘was at the beginning of the tide of healing homes’ and predated John G. Lake’s famous healing room by twenty years, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 35, 49. Even Parham would follow her pattern for a healing home, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 35.

<sup>14</sup> Miskov notes that she avoided the debate about women in ministry and spoke wherever invited’, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 53-54. She also became a friend and mentor to many of the famous women preachers of her day, Elizabeth Sisson, Maria B. Woodworth-Etter; Catherine Booth; missionary Minnie Abrams; Amie Semple McPherson, pp. 53-54; 72-79; 86; 131-35 (respectively).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
the growing faith movement'.<sup>15</sup> Over the years her personal network of friends grew to become a virtual who's who of the healing and Pentecostal movements.<sup>16</sup>

Carrie Judd was so 'busy running her various ministries'<sup>17</sup> that she did not have the time or energy to consider the new signs at Azusa Street', but her new husband, businessman George Montgomery, investigated it in the fall of 1906.<sup>18</sup> Carrie Montgomery 'saw that there was something more' and was soon Spirit baptized and speaking in tongues.<sup>19</sup> She became a founding member of the AG<sup>20</sup> but was careful not to sever her many friendships with non-Pentecostals, acting instead as a 'Pentecostal ambassador' and living out her belief that divine love and unity were more important than manifestations of the Spirit.<sup>21</sup>

---

<sup>15</sup> Warner, 'Carrie Judd Montgomery', p. 904.

<sup>16</sup> In addition to the friends listed in the notes above were A.B. Simpson, Charles Cullis, William E. Boardman, Elizabeth Baxter, Warner, 'Carrie Judd Montgomery', pp. 904-905. She was even 'named recording secretary to the board' of the CMA when it was organized in 1885 by Simpson, p. 905. After the ASM revival, she expanded her circle of friends to include Pentecostal pioneers, such as: Bartleman, Seymour, Boddy, Frodsham, Zelma Argue; and Francisco Olzábal, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 47, 135-38.

<sup>17</sup> Albrecht calls her a symbolic 'religious entrepreneur', Albrecht, 'Carrie Judd Montgomery', p. 101. Her endeavours included: prison ministry, a healing home, special projects with the Salvation Army, a refuge home, camp meetings, ministerial training school, and an orphanage, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 85, 86, 86-93, 92, 95-97, 97-99, 100-105.

<sup>18</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 112. It is unknown exactly when George Montgomery visited the ASM revival, but the first mention of the revival in *TOF* appears in December, 1906. An editor's note simply says, 'my husband had recently visited Los Angeles and attended some of these meetings', Editor's Note, to F. Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', *TOF* 26.12 (*Way of Faith*) (Dec 1906), pp. 247-52 (247).

<sup>19</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 117; cf. pp. 114-17; Carrie Judd Montgomery, '"The Promise of the Father": A Personal Testimony', *TOF* 28.7 (Jul 1908), pp. 145-49; Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Speaking in Tongues: A Personal Testimony', *TOF* 30.11 (Nov 1910), pp. 253-55.

<sup>20</sup> She is listed as a 'founder' by default. Albrecht notes that 'she was listed as an A/G charter member because of her affiliation with' the COGIC, where she received ordination papers on 11/1/1914, Albrecht, 'Carrie Judd Montgomery', p. 118, n. 65. Her first self-sought credentials with the AG were on 30/11/1917, when she renewed what had been rolled over from the COGIC.

<sup>21</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 139; cf. pp. 130-31. 'While Carrie supported the Pentecostal movement, she did not cut ties with other religious organizations ... Simpson invited her to speak at his meeting up until the end of his life regardless of her new affiliation', pp. 126, 131.

## B. Pre-Azusa Hints of Glossolalia.

Through its large and independent subscription list, the *TOF* helped to lay the groundwork for the Pentecostal movement.<sup>22</sup> Even before the ASM revival, phrases like 'baptized in the Spirit',<sup>23</sup> 'former and latter rains',<sup>24</sup> and 'Pentecost/al'<sup>25</sup> were common parlance in *TOF*.<sup>26</sup> *Triumphs of Faith* promoted the idea that the gift of divine healing was still possible through faith; however, the restoration of one spiritual gift inferred the restoration of all the spiritual gifts.<sup>27</sup> Here are three pre-ASM revival examples in *TOF* that hint of glossolalia.

First, eight months before the ASM revival, Adam Clark, sounded thoroughly Pentecostal when he wrote that Spirit-led vocalization was the most effective type of prayer:

the Spirit ... leads the saints to express themselves in words, groans, sighs or tears ... the unutterable groan is big with meaning, and God understands it, because it contains the language of his own Spirit. Some desires are too mighty to be expressed; there is no language expressive enough to give them proper form and distinct vocal sound.<sup>28</sup>

Second, three months before the ASM revival, Montgomery wrote that often, full healing occurred in the presence of Jesus, where 'no human eloquence can avail ... (and) all earthly wisdom stilled. The power of human speech taken away (sic) that the *heavenly tongue* may be given instead'.<sup>29</sup>

---

<sup>22</sup> Dayton calls the spiritual environment pre-ASM dry tinder that was 'awaiting the spark that would set it off', Dayton, *Theological Roots*, p. 174.

<sup>23</sup> Theodore L. Cuyler, 'The Effectual Prayer', *TOF* 26.1 (Jan 1906), pp. 8-11 (11); Charles G. Finney, 'Power From on High', *TOF* 26.11 (Nov 1906), pp. 217-20 (218-19); Clement C. Cary, 'How Some Revivals Were Brought About', *TOF* 26.11 (Nov 1906), pp. 228-31 (230).

<sup>24</sup> Sisson, 'A Call To Prayer For A World-Wide Revival', *TOF* 26.3 (Mar 1906), pp. 57-61 (58).

<sup>25</sup> W.W. Foulston 'How the New Pentecost is Coming', *TOF* 31.3 (Mar 1911), pp. 63-66, reprint; *The Concentrated Life* (Sept 1906). Montgomery editor's note states she was unaware of the ASM revival and Ramabai's work in India, p. 63.

<sup>26</sup> Miskov notes that 'as early as 1885, Carrie spoke at a conference that encouraged people to seek "a special baptism of the Holy Spirit"', Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 229; cf. 228-32.

<sup>27</sup> 'Scripture on Sickness and Healing', *TOF* 27.4 (Apr 1907), pp. 88-90.

<sup>28</sup> Adam Clark, 'He Maketh Intercession', *TOF* 25.8 (Aug 1905), pp. 188-89 (189).

<sup>29</sup> Editor, 'The Touch Of His Healing Hand', *TOF* 26.1 (Jan 1906), p. 2. Italics mine.

Third, one month before the ASM revival, Elizabeth Sisson pleaded for intercessors who would pray for a great revival because, during the Welsh revival,<sup>30</sup> ‘we realised we were in the last days’ and ‘we were knee-deep in another mighty Pentecost’.<sup>31</sup> Her call highlighted Joel’s promise that ‘we might expect a literal outpour (sic) of God’s Spirit upon all flesh’ during the latter rain.<sup>32</sup>

### C. Azusa Fire Spreads to TOF.

Montgomery’s introduction of tongues to her audience was cautious and measured.<sup>33</sup> The first intentional mention of glossolalia in *TOF* likely occurred in October, 1906, and was rather cryptic: ‘there is a state of deep, divine fervor described in Scripture as a “hot heart,” “fervent, or boiling in spirit,” and having a “*tongue of fire*”’.<sup>34</sup> The article called its readers ‘to walk between the two extremes of cold formality … and wild ranting fanaticism’.<sup>35</sup> Montgomery clearly used this article to reaffirm her boundaries. For example, the piece noted that ‘true fire … will have its demonstrations, but does not emphasize them, nor measure its sanctity by them, nor prescribe them to other, nor condemn other for not having them’.<sup>36</sup>

In December, 1906 Montgomery introduced glossolalia to her readers with two articles – one by Bartleman and the second by A.S. Worrell – but she wrote special notes from the editor that functioned as bookends for both.<sup>37</sup> The first bookend stated ‘my

---

<sup>30</sup> Using the Welsh revival as a baseline, she believed this latter rain revival would be so great that it would ‘throw the revival in Wales into the shade’ of history, Sisson, ‘A Call To Prayer’, pp. 59-60.

<sup>31</sup> Sisson, ‘A Call To Prayer’, pp. 57, 59. Sisson, worked at William Boardman’s healing home in London from time to time. It ‘was … the place where Andrew Murray experienced his healing’, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 33.

<sup>32</sup> Sisson, ‘A Call To Prayer’, p. 58.

<sup>33</sup> Alexander observes that despite her entrepreneurial spirit, ‘she did not enter into these new arenas without caution’, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 27. ‘Negative opinions were balanced by a growing group of friends from around the world who reported a personal Pentecost’, Albrecht, ‘Carrie Judd Montgomery’, p. 109.

<sup>34</sup> ‘True And False Fire’, *TOF* 26.10 (Oct 1906), pp. 195-98 (195). Italics mine.

<sup>35</sup> ‘True And False Fire’, pp. 195, 197.

<sup>36</sup> ‘True And False Fire’, p. 197.

<sup>37</sup> Bartleman, ‘Letter From Los Angeles’, p. 247; A.S. Worrell, ‘The Movements in Los Angeles’, *TOF* 26.12 (*Gospel Witness*) (Dec 1906), pp. 256-57 (257).

husband has ... attended some of these meetings ... and is convinced that *the work is of God*'.<sup>38</sup> Then, the first sentence of Bartleman's article reads, 'I believe the Lord would have me mention a few facts, especially in regard to the feature of the "tongues" in our meetings'.<sup>39</sup> Bartleman pointed out that there were counterfeit tongues, but that the existence of these counterfeits only proves the existence of the genuine.<sup>40</sup> Cautious to not 'unduly exalt' tongues above the 'Giver of the gift', he then answered the question 'of what practical use are tongues?' First, though hesitant of xenolalia, he noted, 'there have been a few cases where they have worked salvation among foreigners within our own borders'.<sup>41</sup> Second, the gift of tongues when interpreted, has been 'praises to God, exhortations, (and) warnings'.<sup>42</sup> Third, 'God is trying to attract our attention'. Fourth, the 'heavenly choir' is 'the very foretaste of the rapture that we shall soon realize when He shall call for us'.<sup>43</sup> The second piece, by Worrell, confirmed 'there are *real gifts of tongues* here in Los Angeles' as well as counterfeits.<sup>44</sup> Following Worrell's account, the final bookend reads, 'we do not stand for this whole movement, but only for the part that is of God'.<sup>45</sup> Compared with other early Pentecostal periodicals examined above, there are far fewer references to glossolalia.

#### D. Testimonies.

The personal testimonies in *TOF* are much longer than in other early Pentecostal periodicals. In fact, most are article length. Even though this limited the testimonies in each issue, what was published was carefully selected and often had more theological weight than the brief and often repetitious testimonies found in other periodicals.

---

<sup>38</sup> Editors note, Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', p. 247.

<sup>39</sup> Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', p. 247.

<sup>40</sup> Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', pp. 247-48.

<sup>41</sup> Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', p. 248. Note his caution: 'it has not yet been proven of just what practical value the present gift of tongues will be in foreign fields', and 'the tongues have played their part already ... our judgment if far from perfect, and we do well to walk softly at such time as this', pp. 248, 251

<sup>42</sup> Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', p. 249.

<sup>43</sup> Bartleman, 'Letter From Los Angeles', pp. 251-52.

<sup>44</sup> Worrell, 'The Movements in Los Angeles', p. 256. He went to Los Angeles 'to investigate the facts' and visited four revival centres in Los Angeles in 1906, p. 257.

<sup>45</sup> Editor's note in Worrell, 'The Movements in Los Angeles', p. 257.

Therefore, personal testimonies will not be treated separately, but are incorporated into this survey of *TOF* below.

## E. The Evidence and Divine Love.

Perhaps more than any other early periodical, Montgomery provided space for various opinions about the evidentiary nature of glossolalia.<sup>46</sup> Though Montgomery eventually embraced IE, she allowed the discussion to play out in her periodical for some time and balanced the divisive doctrine an evidence with a call for unity and love.

### 1. 'The Evidence'.

Those who doubted or denied the sign value of tongues tended to give theological and pastoral reasons for their position.<sup>47</sup> For example, Worrell believed there was an 'an undue importance attached to speaking in tongues' especially if it were 'regarded as *the decisive proof* that one has received his Pentecost'.<sup>48</sup> His reasons: Satan can counterfeit tongues, it causes pride and an unteachable spirit, and it ignores 'the work of the Spirit in the development of Christ-life in the Trinity-filled believer'.<sup>49</sup> Later, he endorsed I.

---

<sup>46</sup> Montgomery waited at least nine issues between hearing of glossolalia's restoration ('True And False Fire', p. 195) and publishing an article about glossolalia's sign-value, A.A. Boddy, 'These Signs Shall Follow', *TOF* 27.6 (Jun 1907), p. 138-40 (139). The most popular phrase was simply 'the evidence', A.T. Lange, 'The Glory That Excelleth', *TOF* 29.11 (Nov 1909), pp. 250-55. Other phrases include: 'first evidence', 'immediate evidence', 'bible evidence', and 'unmistakable evidence', cf. Mrs. G.A. Murray, 'Evidences Of A Real Pentecostal Baptism', *TOF* 30.9 (Sep 1910), pp. 205-209 (206); W. Bramwell, 'How Rev. William Bramwell Received Entire Sanctification', *TOF* 31.4 (Apr 1911), p. 82; Ellen M. Winter, 'A Plea For The Love And Unity Of The Spirit', (*Word and Work*) *TOF* 32.9 (Sep 1912), pp. 195-99 (198); E.M. Stanton, 'The Effect of the Divine Indwelling', *TOF* 34.7 (Jul 1914), pp. 160-61 (161).

<sup>47</sup> For example, A.T. Lange experienced God's presence without glossolalia so strongly that he called it his SB. Eight months later, his subsequent tongues-experience 'added nothing to the glory and joy in the spirit of worship, to the sense and vision of His glorious presence' of his previous SB, Lange, 'The Glory That Excelleth', pp. 250-55.

<sup>48</sup> A.S. Worrell, 'The Pentecostal Movement in Los Angeles', *TOF* 27.8 (Aug 1907) pp. 179-81 (179). Italics mine.

<sup>49</sup> Worrell, 'The Pentecostal Movement in Los Angeles', p. 180.

May Throop's testimony of a progressive Spirit-baptism as a great 'representative of this Pentecostal experience'.<sup>50</sup> Abrams refused to say that tongues were 'the only sign':<sup>51</sup>

while all may and should receive the sign,<sup>52</sup> yet we dare not say that no one is Spirit-baptized who has not received the sign. Yet we see the same gifts and graces and power for service in those who hold these different beliefs ... the Scriptures do not warrant our pronouncing judgment on those who do not speak in tongues.<sup>53</sup>

She did not want the evidence to be divisive and advocated for working together in love.<sup>54</sup> George B. Studd believed there was a preoccupation with signs<sup>55</sup> and could not 'subscribe to this for one moment' because

many, very many, precious saints of God have received and rejoiced in the conscious indwelling presence, comfort, sanctifying power and guidance of the Holy Spirit; but they have not yet seen their privilege nor obtained the blessing of that *full possession* which He takes of the body as well as the soul.<sup>56</sup>

He reasoned that less than full possession of the Holy Spirit was possible because the church had 'lost its original purity and power ... the full truth has only been restored to us by degrees'.<sup>57</sup>

However, even doubters of the evidence noted that tongues functioned as a gateway experience for other gifts of the Spirit. Worrell believed that all the gifts were

---

<sup>50</sup> A.S.W. 'Remarks', TOF 28.11 (Nov 1908), p. 132. Throop wrote, I 'knew that I had the Holy Spirit' but not like 'the people of Azusa Street', I. May Throop, 'A Partial Experience', TOF 29.6 (Jun 1909), pp. 129-32 (129). She 'tarried' for her Pentecost and then grasped it by faith. 'I was perfectly conscious of having received the baptism of the Holy Ghost; but I was also conscious that I had not received the fire, neither had I received the new tongue', p. 131. Five days later, there was 'a chattering first, then the Heavenly song, then the song in an unknown tongue ... God had taken possession of my body, even that unruly member – my tongue'.

<sup>51</sup> Miss Minnie Abrams, 'India', TOF 28.11 (Nov 1908), pp. 260-62 (260). 'It is evident that most of the Christians in Apostolic times did speak in tongues', p. 261.

<sup>52</sup> Abrams encouraged everyone to press on until they receive 'the fullness of this Pentecostal blessing', Abrams, 'India', p. 261.

<sup>53</sup> Abrams, 'India', p. 261.

<sup>54</sup> Abrams, 'India', p. 261.

<sup>55</sup> George B. Studd, 'Floods of Blessing', TOF 33.6 (Jun 1913), pp. 125-29 (126).

<sup>56</sup> George B. Studd, 'The Holy Ghost Received', TOF 31.2 (Feb 1911), pp. 41-42 (41). Italics mine. Later, Studd sounded as if he embraced IE, cf. George B. Studd, 'And There Was A Voice', TOF 34.8 (Aug 1914), pp. 182-86 (185).

<sup>57</sup> Studd, 'The Holy Ghost Received', p. 42.

possible 'after the Pentecostal experience has begun'.<sup>58</sup> A CMA article noted that 'the "tongue" is *but the beginning* of God's work ... the great object and value of such baptisms and of the gifts of the Spirit is that we may be used in the salvation of the perishing souls'.<sup>59</sup> Mrs. G.A. Murray believed that '*the first evidence* ... was that of speaking with other tongues'; however, 'while the utterance in unknown tongues is one of the evidences of a spiritual baptism, it is not a sufficient proof in itself'.<sup>60</sup> For her the 'crowning evidence' was unity and love.<sup>61</sup>

Those who embraced a sign-value for tongues tended to emphasize specific biblical passages<sup>62</sup> and personal testimonies. For example, Boddy believed that the signs of Mk 16.17-18 would be given to 'true believers ... (and) certainly present among Spirit-filled Christians' as promised by Jesus himself and seen writings of Luke and Paul.<sup>63</sup> Boddy was a strong proponent of evidential glossolalia, stating, 'we consider it the Pentecostal movement, because God is giving the same sign, the speaking with tongues, as he did in the beginning at Jerusalem and at Ephesus and at Caesarea'.<sup>64</sup> Cecil Pohill called tongues a distinctive 'Pentecostal sign' and his friend experienced a 'wonderful manifestation of Pentecostal power, including and evidenced by the speaking in other tongues'.<sup>65</sup> Albert Norton wrote,

I was kept from becoming an earnest seeker by the thought ... that I might have the fullest baptism of the Spirit without any utterance in tongues; and that I had in all

---

<sup>58</sup> Worrell, 'The Pentecostal Movement in Los Angeles', p. 180.

<sup>59</sup> CMA Report (1907), 'Work In South China', TOF 29.1 (Jan 1909), pp. 9-12 (11). Italics mine.

<sup>60</sup> Murray, 'Evidences Of A Real Pentecostal Baptism', pp. 206, 207. Italics mine.

<sup>61</sup> Murray, 'Evidences Of A Real Pentecostal Baptism', p. 207-208. Her other evidences are typical: power for witnessing and holiness, joy in worship, unselfishness, and prayer, pp. 206-208.

<sup>62</sup> Several authors appealed to scripture without landing on either side IE and therefore added very little to the debate; cf. Thos. M. Jeffreys, 'Faith In The Spoken Words Of God', (*The Overcoming Life*), TOF 30.1 (Jan 1910), pp. 10-14 (14); E.T. Slaybaugh, 'What are the Manifestations of the Spirit for the Edifying of the Body of Christ?', TOF 30.2 (Feb 1910), pp. 31-32; 'Trusting God Beforehand', TOF 32.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 21-22.

<sup>63</sup> Boddy, 'These Signs Shall Follow', p. 139.

<sup>64</sup> A.A. Boddy, 'Pentecostal Outpouring', TOF 32.11 (Nov 1912), pp. 231-35 (231-2).

<sup>65</sup> Cecil Pohill, 'This is That', TOF 28.5 (May 1908), pp. 100-104 (100).

probability have this fullest baptism in a wonderful experience ... all I needed now was to have that experience revived.<sup>66</sup>

However, after meeting some Pentecostal missionaries, Norton re-examined scripture and came to believe 'that when the full baptism came I would have an utterance in another tongue', which he did.<sup>67</sup> E.M. Stanton attempted to distinguish between sign and symbol.<sup>68</sup> If the glossolalia in Acts 'were mere symbols' they could be removed from the narrative without damaging it; however,

tongues appears as a part of the narrative, a real constituent (sic) of the event ... and that it was repeated at Caesarea and Ephesus is an evidence that it was not a mere symbol but that it belonged inseparably to the baptism of the Holy Ghost.<sup>69</sup>

Stanton called glossolalia the 'immediate effect of the divine incoming and indwelling', which is an evidence to the speaker himself.<sup>70</sup> Horace Bushnell observed that tongues were so foolish looking and sounding, that 'for just that reason it has the stronger evidence when it occurs'.<sup>71</sup>

Montgomery's own testimony caused her to be less dogmatic about the evidence. On the one hand, she saw signs and wonders as thoroughly biblical.<sup>72</sup> On the other hand, she was not bothered by a delay between the embrace of SB by faith and the actual reception of the Spirit.<sup>73</sup> This followed the pattern of her personal healing, when

---

<sup>66</sup> Albert Norton, 'Rain In The Time Of The Latter Rain', *TOF* 29:9 (Sep 1909), pp. 195-200 (196).

<sup>67</sup> Norton, 'Rain In The Time Of The Latter Rain', p. 197; cf. p. 195 for an account of Spirit-baptism.

<sup>68</sup> He quotes Dr. Kyper that symbols had a less essential quality to the narrative than signs: 'symbols ... are intended to represent, or indicate something or call attention to it, hence they may be omitted without them suffering the matter itself ... if these signs were mere symbols, the event would have been the same without them; but the absence of the sign of other tongues would have modified the character of subsequent history completely', Stanton, 'The Effect of the Divine Indwelling', p. 160.

<sup>69</sup> Stanton, 'The Effect of the Divine Indwelling', p. 160. 'The speaking with tongues is not simply the sign or evidence of the baptism, but (is) a part of the divine baptism itself, B.H. Irwin, 'My Pentecostal Baptism – A Christmas Gift', *TOF* 27.5 (May 1907), pp. 114-16 (114).

<sup>70</sup> Stanton, 'The Effect of the Divine Indwelling'), p. 161.

<sup>71</sup> Horace Bushnell, 'Dr. Bushnell On Supernatural Manifestations Of The Spirit', *TOF* 29.2 (Feb 1909), pp. 36-37 (36); cf. Studd, 'And There Was A Voice', p. 185.

<sup>72</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'God Is Confirming His Word By Signs and Wonders', *TOF* 33.5 (May 1913), pp. 97-99 (99).

<sup>73</sup> Mrs. Belle Marshall, 'Deliverance of an Insane Sister', *TOF* 27.1 (Jan 1907), pp. 11-13 (11); John Salmon, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost', *TOF* 28.11 (Nov 1908), pp. 258-60; S.R. Break, 'The Latter Rain

she first accepted SB ‘by faith’ and, within a week, spoke ‘a few scattered words in an unknown tongue and then burst into a language (that) came pouring out in great fluency and clearness’.<sup>74</sup> Faith was emphasized because ‘without the operation of faith’ there are no results.<sup>75</sup> In fact, at times, faith itself became the evidence:<sup>76</sup> ‘the Spirit is received by faith in Jesus … the Holy Ghost must be accepted without feeling or evidence of any kind, except simply the word of promise’.<sup>77</sup> However, for those with weak faith, signs would be granted.<sup>78</sup>

## 2. Divine Love.

Throughout the IE debate, Montgomery’s strongest words were for those who spoke in tongues and lacked love.<sup>79</sup> Lack of love caused “fleshy manifestations” … (and) repel(led) other hungry seeking souls’.<sup>80</sup> Montgomery began her personal testimony by stating, ‘there was much that did not appeal to me … (some people) seemed to get in the way of the Spirit … became lifted up … (caused) confusion … (and) failed to walk in Scriptural lines’, and only after she heard of a godly friend’s SB did she “thirst” for the fullness’.<sup>81</sup> Because love was the ‘foundation and root’ of the Spirit<sup>82</sup> it was possible to determine between a true and counterfeit experience:

the real test is divine love … some of the ‘tongues’ heard in these days are brassy and metallic and without the sweetness and benediction of the Spirit in them. Praise God

---

Fullness, A Personal Testimony’, *TOF* 29.4 (Apr 1909), pp. 82-83; Ethel L. Opie, ‘Healed and Baptized’, *TOF* 34.7 (Jul 1914), pp. 155-57 (156).

<sup>74</sup> Montgomery, “The Promise of the Father”, p. 148. She dated her SB as 29 June, 1908 when she spoke in tongues and not her earlier experience or stand of faith, p. 149; cf. Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 247

<sup>75</sup> F.F. Bosworth, ‘The Wonders of Faith’, *TOF* 33.10 (Oct 1913), pp. 231-35 (234).

<sup>76</sup> ‘Living Faith’, *TOF* 30.10 (Oct 1910), pp. 222-23.

<sup>77</sup> ‘The Gift of the Holy Ghost – How Received?’, (*Our Monthly*) *TOF* 29.12 (Dec 1909), pp. 280-82 (281). Italics mine.

<sup>78</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, “Little Faith” and “Great Faith”, *TOF* 31.3 (Mar 1911), pp. 49-63 (54); cf. M. Boddy, ‘Trials Of Faith, Leading To The Manifestation Of The Sons Of God’, *TOF* 31.3 (Mar 1911), pp. 66-68; ‘Trusting God Beforehand’, pp. 21-2.

<sup>79</sup> Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 254-58.

<sup>80</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘The Editor in Los Angeles, Calif.’, *TOF* 30.2 (Feb 1910), pp. 27-28 (27).

<sup>81</sup> Montgomery, “The Promise of the Father”, p. 146.

<sup>82</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘Touch Not Mine Anointed’, *TOF* 30.3 (Mar 1910), pp. 52, 53; cf. ‘Life at the Home of Peace’, *TOF* 32.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 12-16.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

for the true ‘tongues’ of heavenly adoration proceeding from a heart filled with love to God and man, which glorify him.<sup>83</sup>

The genuine Spirit of God within will be recognized by divine love and not by ‘the exercise of gifts.’ Divine love ‘is the very Creator Himself in us’.<sup>84</sup> Genuine glossolalia, rooted in love, reverses Babel’s divisions and brings unity.<sup>85</sup>

At times, Montgomery implied that strong doctrinal statements created separation. For example, ‘we feel that minor differences of doctrine should not be allowed to separate’.<sup>86</sup> Consider Ellen Winter’s snapshot of the situation:

not a few Christian leaders are trying to ‘unite’ the members on some points of doctrine that they are making a specialty ... some of them insist that speaking in tongues is the Bible evidence, while others hold that the possession of any of the other gifts of the spirit, without tongues, maybe proof of the baptism ... let me magnify the wisdom and grace of God that place the love chapter between the twelfth and fourteenth chapters of 1 Cor., like meat in a sandwich.<sup>87</sup>

Unity will not be attained through doctrinal statements but through ‘divine love circulating through the whole body of Christ’.<sup>88</sup> Therefore, Montgomery reasoned that ‘love, perfect Divine love is the only and most necessary sign of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. But other gifts, such as ... to speak with tongues ... are not to be discarded’.<sup>89</sup>

### F. Responding to the Critics.

Despite the fact that Montgomery’s aim was divine love and unity, she cautiously introduced her large independent readership to glossolalia. Whether it was intentional or not, after an issue that was especially tongues-centric or polemic in nature, she would downplay or have a complete absence of glossolalia in the next issue.<sup>90</sup> This

---

<sup>83</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘Service for the King’, *TOF* 30.10 (Oct 1910), pp. 217-220 (220).

<sup>84</sup> Mrs. M. Baxter, ‘In The Last Day’, *TOF* 33.1 (Jan 1913), pp. 5-7 (70).

<sup>85</sup> Mrs. Polman, ‘Testimony of Mrs. Polman’, *TOF* 30.2 (Feb 1910), p. 43.

<sup>86</sup> Montgomery, ‘The Editor in Los Angeles’, p. 28.

<sup>87</sup> Ellen M. Winter, ‘A Plea For The Love And Unity Of The Spirit’, (*Word and Work*) *TOF* 32.9 (Sep 1912), pp. 195-99.

<sup>88</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘For this Cause’, *TOF* 30.12 (Dec 1910), pp. 265-68 (266).

<sup>89</sup> ‘Word From India’, *TOF* 29.2 (Feb 1909), pp. 39-40 (39).

<sup>90</sup> For example, issue 33.5 (May 1913) has two significant articles on glossolalia: Montgomery, ‘Confirming His Word’, pp. 97-99; Kent White, ‘Baptized With The Holy Ghost And Fire’, *TOF* 33.6 (May

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

balancing act required *TOF* to both defend speaking in tongues and to be self-critical of Pentecostal excesses. *Triumphs of Faith* addressed the role of signs and manifestations, cessationism, and counterfeit tongues.

According to W. Berhard, it was ‘the evident supernatural element in the movement’ that was ‘a great stumbling block’ and raised the broader question of ‘the supernatural or miraculous’ signs and manifestations in general.<sup>91</sup> However, the appeal to the bible for support was common: ‘let’s cease trying to justify ourselves with bodily manifestations as the manifestations of the Spirit of God … and with open hearts, face the word of God and measure up to it’.<sup>92</sup> ‘An insatiate hunger for manifestation of the Spirit’s power’, wrote Theodore Cuyler, was the natural outflow of ‘a tremendous responsibility for (lost) souls’.<sup>93</sup> Tongues and divine healing<sup>94</sup> were the primary manifestations of the Holy Spirit in *TOF*, but ‘holy laughter’<sup>95</sup> and groaning<sup>96</sup> were also mentioned.

*Triumphs of Faith* recognized that cessationism posed a threat to the gifts of the Spirit and glossolalia.<sup>97</sup> *Triumphs of Faith* dealt with cessation much like the other periodicals and appealed to scripture and church history for defence. For example, because Mk 16.17-18 was in ‘doubt’, one author turned to ‘the corresponding closing passages in other evangelists’ and found that the word of God was to be preached with signs following; that the word ‘was attested by the “sign”, or visible evidence, of perfected bodily restoration’.<sup>98</sup> It was reasoned that because healings still occurred,

---

1913), pp. 99-103. The subsequent issue does not mention tongues specifically, and even includes a call to prayer so that ‘we shall not be so occupied with manifestations’, Studd, ‘Floods Of Blessing’, p. 126.

<sup>91</sup> Berhard, ‘Supernatural Gifts’, p. 201.

<sup>92</sup> Slaybaugh, ‘What are the Manifestations of the Spirit’, p. 32; cf. Morton Plummer, ‘The Fear Test’, *TOF* 33.8 (Aug 1913), pp. 190-91; Montgomery, ‘Speaking In Tongues’, *TOF* 30.11 (Nov 1910), pp. 253-55; Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 251-54.

<sup>93</sup> Cuyler, ‘The Effectual Prayer’, p. 11; cf. Bushnell, ‘Reflected Light’, p. 243.

<sup>94</sup> Etta Costellow, ‘Pentecostal Blessing’, *TOF* 31.7 (Jul 1911), pp. 179-80; ‘A Visit From Rev. A.A. Boddy’, *TOF* 32.9 (Sep 1912), p. 216.

<sup>95</sup> Opie, ‘Healed and Baptized’, p. 156.

<sup>96</sup> ‘A Cyclone Of Power And Glory In Answer To Prayer’, *TOF* 28.1 (Jan 1908), pp. 11-12.

<sup>97</sup> ‘It is now commonly assumed that miracles and all similar externalities of divine power have been discontinued, because … the canon of Scripture is closed up’, Bushnell, ‘Reflected Light’, p. 243.

<sup>98</sup> ‘Scripture on Sickness and Healing’, p. 90.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

tongues also continued. Historically, miracles and glossolalia were ‘lost for all the centuries’ because men were not faithful and ‘spasmodic in their faith and spirituality’.<sup>99</sup> Bushnell noted that the theory of cessation fails because, ‘miracles continued for two hundred and fifty years after’ they should have ended.<sup>100</sup>

Satan ‘can devise … (and will) counterfeit, oppose and destroy the work of the Holy Spirit’; satanic tongues are possible.<sup>101</sup> However, the counterfeit implies a genuine.<sup>102</sup> The following advice was given regarding counterfeit glossolalia: seek God wholeheartedly;<sup>103</sup> pray for the ‘spirit of discernment’;<sup>104</sup> the fruit of the Spirit is the ‘proper foundation’ for the gifts of the Spirit, especially, divine love and humility;<sup>105</sup> the devil’s counterfeit will be ‘cold, formal, lifeless’ and have no power, while the genuine will be ‘full of praise to Jesus, and glowing with his matchless love’;<sup>106</sup> and finally, ‘the blood of Christ … and the Spirit of God who has been poured out on them according to his promise, are able to keep them from errors’.<sup>107</sup> One pastor did not teach about tongues as a ‘protection against all counterfeit and spurious imitation’; nevertheless, ‘they received powerful premonitions of the Latter Rain … (which were) fully affirmed and witnessed to by a manifestation in tongues’.<sup>108</sup> Two authors mentioned that

---

<sup>99</sup> Bushnell, ‘Reflected Light’, p. 244; cf. Bessie Porter Head, ‘Many Kinds Of Voices’, *TOF* 28.11 (Nov 1908) pp. 254-58; ‘Work In South China’, p. 9;

<sup>100</sup> Horace Bushnell, ‘Reflected Light’, *TOF* 27.11 (Nov 1907), pp. 243-45 (243); cf. ‘Pentecost In The Year 1830’, *TOF* 29.2 (Feb 1909), pp. 41-42; ‘A Wonderful Work’ *TOF* 27.6 (Jun 1907), pp. 128-9; E. Sisson, ‘Extract From Andrew Murray’s New Book’, *TOF* 29.3 (Mar 1909), p. 72; W. Berhard, ‘Supernatural Gifts’, *TOF* 31.9 (Sep 1911), pp. 199-204 (201-202).

<sup>101</sup> J.M. Pike, ‘Pentecostal Movement’ *TOF* 30.11 (Nov 1910), pp. 250-51; cf. ‘Work In South China’, pp. 10-11.

<sup>102</sup> Foulston, ‘How the New Pentecost Is Coming’, pp. 63, 65; cf. A.S. Worrell, ‘An Open Letter To The Opposers Of This Pentecostal Movement’, *TOF* 27.11 (Nov 1907), pp. 246-49 (246).

<sup>103</sup> V.P. Simmons, ‘Is It Reasonable’, *TOF* 29.10 (Oct 1908), pp. 222-23 (222).

<sup>104</sup> ‘Work In South China’, pp. 10-11.

<sup>105</sup> ‘Try The Spirits’, *TOF* 30.6 (Jun 1910), pp. 133-34; cf. Bertha Pinkham Dixon, ‘The Latter Rain’, *TOF* 28.5 (May 1908), pp. 115-19.

<sup>106</sup> Worrell, ‘An Open Letter To The Opposers’, p. 249; cf. J.O. Lehman, ‘Reports From Regions Beyond’, *TOF* 29.2 (Feb 1909), pp. 37-39 (38).

<sup>107</sup> ‘Word From India’, pp. 39-40.

<sup>108</sup> Gerard A. Bailly, ‘Calvary Leads To Pentecost’, *TOF* 30.2 (Feb 1910), pp. 41-43 (42).

'blasphemy of the Holy Spirit' was 'to ascribe to Satan the mighty working of the Holy Spirit in many of these Pentecostal people'.<sup>109</sup>

## G. Sanctification.

Montgomery's view on sanctification either never neatly fit into either category or changed from Wesleyan's 'complete in a moment' to the FW's 'ongoing process'.<sup>110</sup>

Regardless, 'sanctification is the necessary preparation for receiving the gift of the Holy Ghost' with tongues.<sup>111</sup> *Triumphs of Faith* called Pentecostals to higher standards of holiness.<sup>112</sup> Further, one must strive for more holiness, being daily filled with the Spirit.

Note Montgomery's poetic language when she writes, do not neglect

to press through ... until the vessel is FILLED with oil ... our bodies must be holy and separated from the lusts of the earth ... when your body gets full of the oil of the Holy Spirit your lips and tongue get filled also, and the new tongues drop off your lips like honey; you will be distinctly conscious that it is the Heavenly Dove who is speaking through you in other tongues ... but after receiving the baptism there must be a continuous act of faith, always drinking of Christ in order to keep filled.<sup>113</sup>

Whether writing about healing, sanctification, or the presence of the Holy Spirit, Montgomery believed that there was always 'more' available.<sup>114</sup>

---

<sup>109</sup> Worrell, 'An Open Letter To The Opposers', p. 247; cf. 'Word From India', pp. 39-40.

<sup>110</sup> Miskov believes that even before her SB she mixed both Keswick and Wesleyan terms and concepts along with Phoebe Palmer's theology to 'act in faith to take hold of what was already available, confess what has been receive, and stand on God's word as the evidence', Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 238. For support of her WH side see, Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Letter From Mrs. Montgomery', *TOF* 29.9 (Sep 1909), pp. 207-09 (207); Bramwell, 'How Rev. William Bramwell Received Entire Sanctification', p. 82. For support to her FW side see, Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Sanctification and the Baptism of the Holy Spirit', *TOF* 31.11 (Nov 1911), pp. 241-44 (243); Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'The Remnant of the Oil', *TOF* 31.12 (Dec 1911), pp. 265-70. Her own unique view of sanctification is best pictured as measures of the Spirit and the call for 'more', cf. Miskov, *Life On Wings*, pp. 235-40, 266-73.

<sup>111</sup> E.A. Sexton, 'Sanctification And The Gift Of The Holy Ghost' *TOF* 29.9 (Sep 1909), pp. 200-203.

<sup>112</sup> 'This movement demands of its promoters, pure hearts, clean lives, perfect love, earnest zeal, the deepest self-denial, abounding liberality, intense spirituality, perfect obedience to God', (*Way of Faith*) 'Intensified Opposition', *TOF* 29.12 (Dec 1908), pp. 278-79 (278).

<sup>113</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'The Promise Of The Father', *TOF* 37.1 (Jan 1917), pp. 1-6 (4-5). Capitols original. Cf. A.S. Worrell, 'The Season Of The Latter Rain', *TOF* 34.2 (Feb 1914), pp. 42-43.

<sup>114</sup> Montgomery, 'Sanctification And The Baptism of the Holy Spirit', p. 243; cf. Montgomery, 'The Remnant Of The Oil', pp. 265-70; Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 268-73.

## H. Purposes for Glossolalia.

The purposes for glossolalia in *TOF* followed those of other periodicals.

### 1. Power.

Though not as prominent as other periodicals, tongues-speech was connected with power in *TOF*.<sup>115</sup> For example, ‘the power of the Spirit came upon the preacher, and he began to pray, bursting forth in an unknown tongue’,<sup>116</sup> or ‘the Holy Ghost has the power to equip you for every emergency’.<sup>117</sup> However, *TOF* was careful to note that the power for ministry was not from tongues but from having God’s Spirit within.<sup>118</sup>

Tongues were merely the sign of full Spirit possession:<sup>119</sup>

don’t take it as power because you speak in tongues … don’t take that for the power … there is a place to get where you know the Spirit is upon you, so you will be able to do the works which are wrought by this blessed Spirit of God in you, and the manifestation of His power shall be seen.<sup>120</sup>

Power was not resident within the individual but was the ‘giving out from ourselves of freshly-received Divine life’.<sup>121</sup>

### 2. Prayer.

Tongues offered a new and deeper way to pray, indeed ‘it is Jesus praying through us, by the Holy Spirit … remember it is Jesus praying through you’.<sup>122</sup> For example, even though she was thousands of miles away, one missionary recounted that they ‘were

---

<sup>115</sup> Miskov’s assessment is that SB’s main purpose for Montgomery was empowerment for service ‘with hints of eradication included (a Wesleyan influence)’, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 244; cf. pp. 240-44.

<sup>116</sup> Minnie F. Abrams, ‘God’s Wonderful Working in India’, *TOF* 32.4 (Apr 1912), pp. 78-81 (80).

<sup>117</sup> Smith Wigglesworth, ‘Spiritual Gifts’, *TOF* 34.11 (Nov 1914), pp. 248-52 (249-50); cf. ‘The Dhond Revival’, *TOF* 28.9 (Sep 1908), pp. 196-200 ().

<sup>118</sup> ‘Testimony’, *TOF* 28.11 (Nov 1908), pp. 243-44 (244).

<sup>119</sup> Henry Varley, ‘Fullness Of The Holy Ghost’, *TOF* 27.7 (Jul 1907), pp. 160-62; ‘A Prayer’, *TOF* 27.6 (Jun 1907), p. 140; cf. Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 245.

<sup>120</sup> Smith Wigglesworth, ‘What Wilt Thou Have Me To Do’, *TOF* 34.10 (Oct 1914), pp. 227-30 (228-29).

<sup>121</sup> Varley, ‘Fullness Of The Holy Ghost’, p. 160. Italics mine. Cf. C.F. Ladd, ‘Power For Service’, *TOF* 29.3 (Mar 1909), pp. 69-70 (69).

<sup>122</sup> LBY, ‘That Your Prayers Be Not Hindered’, *TOF* 33.1 (Jan 1913), pp. 17-18 (17); cf. ‘Days Of Blessing In India’, *TOF* 27.4 (Apr 1907), pp. 95-96; Ramabai, ‘Showers Of Blessing’, *TOF* 27.12 (Dec 1907), pp. 267-69.

told in tongues to pray for me; all this shows a new the power of intercessory prayer'.<sup>123</sup>

These prayers were viewed as spiritual warfare in the unseen realm:

how blessed when your whole being feels the prayer of the spirit working within you mightily! You are conscious of having a force within you of unalterable desire, the groanings, which cannot be uttered, of the Holy Ghost in the midst.<sup>124</sup>

Glossolalic-groaning was occasionally seen as deep intercession for holiness<sup>125</sup> or a personal need, but usually it was intercession for the lost.<sup>126</sup> The Holy Spirit, 'pled through her for souls ... with groanings and tears and evidences upon her face of great interior suffering'.<sup>127</sup> At times revelation was given 'to identify themselves with the person prayed for'.<sup>128</sup>

### 3. God's Presence: Greater Worship and Revelation.

First, similar to other early periodicals, *TOF* envisioned glossolalia as a means of richer worship and a response to God's revelation: 'there has been an increased spirit of praise, and a worshiping of the blessed Trinity, the increased revelation of Christ and His finished work ... has needed a new medium of praise. This God has given us in the new tongues'.<sup>129</sup> Grace Dempster testified that 'praise and worship swelled up within and sought expression, but words cannot be found which satisfied until the Holy Spirit

---

<sup>123</sup> Alma E. Doering, 'A Missionary's Testimony', *TOF* 31.6 (Jun 1911), pp. 124-27 (126).

<sup>124</sup> 'The Imperative Mood And The Present Tense Of Faith', *TOF* 31.3 (Mar 1911), pp. 69-72 (70); cf. Miss Abrams, 'Intercessory Prayer', *TOF* 29.1 (Jan 1909), pp. 16-17 (16); Emma Krater, 'A Word From India', *TOF* 33.2 (Feb 1913), pp. 30-31 (31).

<sup>125</sup> 'A Cyclone Of Power', pp. 11-12.

<sup>126</sup> Miss E. Sisson, 'God's Prayer House', *TOF* 29.10 (Oct 1908), pp. 230-34 (234); Break, 'The Latter Rain Fullness, A Personal Testimony', p. 83; Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Letter From Mrs. Montgomery', *TOF* 29.5 (May 1909), pp. 112-18.

<sup>127</sup> Editor, 'Pentecostal Outpouring And Beulah', *TOF* 28.9 (Sep 1908), p. 195.

<sup>128</sup> Abrams, 'Intercessory Prayer', p. 16.

<sup>129</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'A Year With The Comforter', *TOF* 29.7 (Jul 1909), pp 145-47 (146-47).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Himself gave utterance through other tongues'.<sup>130</sup> The revelation was of a deeper understanding of the bible<sup>131</sup> or was a 'fresh, deep, mighty revelation of Himself'.<sup>132</sup>

Second, Montgomery envisioned further experiences with God that were inexpressible, even with glossolalia:

there is ... an experience beyond service and beyond prayer, and that is a revelation of His own personality to such an extent that there is nothing but adoring worship filling our being. Usually it is a blessed experience to be able to speak in tongues, to let the heavenly song flow out, but there are times when even tongues cease, when His presence is so all-pervading in the atmosphere so heavenly that I cannot talk at all in any language, but the power of His blessed Spirit upon me is so marvelous that it seems as though I were almost dwelling in heaven.<sup>133</sup>

This desire for the presence of God was described as a 'hunger' for God.<sup>134</sup>

Finally, tongues were a symbol of the liminal overlap between God and humankind. While other early periodicals wrote simply about the Holy Spirit dwelling in and speaking through the individual, *TOF* produced at least two articles that enriched the theology of divine presence and glossolalia. First, 'this gift of tongues ... is designed to be a symbol to the world of the possibility and fact of a divine access to the soul, and a divine operation in it'.<sup>135</sup> Second, Mrs. Polman explicitly envisioned glossolalia as sacramental, an intermingling of the human and divine:

the Holy Spirit uses this gift of tongues to bring us into closer communion with God ... He gave us the gift of tongues to receive spiritual food. And are not we fed when

---

<sup>130</sup> Grace S. Dempster, 'That I May Know Him', *TOF* 30.2 (Feb 1910), pp. 28-31 (31); cf. Max Wood Moorhead, 'A Personal Testimony', *TOF* 28.9 (Sep 1908), pp. 203-205; Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Be Filled With The Spirit', *TOF* 29.9 (Sep 1909), pp. 193-95 (193); Costellow, 'Pentecostal Blessing', pp. 179-80; Mrs. Henry S. Morgan, 'Healed by The Power of God', *TOF* 34.4 (Apr 1914), pp. 76-77 (77).

<sup>131</sup> 'This Is That', *TOF* 28.5 (May 1908), pp. 100-104 (102); Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Some Important Changes', *TOF* 28.12 (Dec 1908), pp. 267-69 (268).

<sup>132</sup> Head, 'Many Kinds Of Voices', p. 256; Lange, 'The Glory That Excelleth', pp. 252-53.

<sup>133</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'The Life On Wings: The Possibility Of Pentecost', *TOF* 32.8 (Aug 1912), pp. 169-77 (175-6); cf. Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'The Quickening Life of the Indwelling Spirit', *TOF* 29.10 (Oct 1908), pp. 217-19 (217). Miskov believes that for Montgomery it was possible to speak in tongues and not have one's 'full baptism', Miskov, *Life on Wings*, pp. 258-60. 'While Carrie personally associated one's Spirit Fullness with tongues, her teaching was sometimes inconsistent with this', p. 262. Italics mine.

<sup>134</sup> Miss Cora Hansen, 'Testimony', *TOF* 28.9 (Sep 1908), pp. 202-203; Moorhead, 'A Personal Testimony', p. 203; Chas. T. Hettiaratchy, 'In His "Banqueting House"', *TOF* 30.3 (Mar 1910), pp. 66-69 (66).

<sup>135</sup> Bushnell, 'Supernatural Manifestations', p. 37.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

we come into communion with the Holy One? ... We also feel the depth of blessing which is in eating His flesh and drinking His blood ... so, when we are edifying ourselves by speaking in tongues, we are at the same time fed by His flesh and by His blood, and this being fed by His flesh and blood brings us into closer communion with Him ... as it were, married to Him, and become one flesh, one bone with Him.<sup>136</sup>

Perhaps this was what the pioneers were aiming to say when they wrote that 'the Spirit teaches them to speak ... in unbroken communion with God',<sup>137</sup> or the Holy Spirit 'speaks for Himself'.<sup>138</sup>

### 4. Tongues as a Gift of the Holy Spirit.

Public glossolalia is a biblical gift of the Spirit that somehow edifies the Church and, when interpreted, is the equivalent of prophecy.<sup>139</sup> The practice in the local church should follow the boundaries established in 1 Corinthians 14.<sup>140</sup> Readers were encouraged to seek God and not the gift: 'the more we realize that God has furnished us with a gift, the more completely we will be united with Jesus, so that people will be conscious of Him rather than of His gift'.<sup>141</sup> One article made a sharp distinction between the gifts of the Spirit and OT miracles because

the personal gift of the Holy Ghost as at Pentecost, was not possible before His (Jesus') own ascension and glorification ... the gift of the Spirit ... since the Day of Pentecost, was and is something totally distinct from anything before that time, a new and loftier dispensation.<sup>142</sup>

---

<sup>136</sup> Mrs. Polman, 'Speaking in Tongues (TOF)', *TOF* 33.10 (Oct 1913), pp. 235-37 (236-37); cf. Mrs. Polman, 'Speaking in Tongues', *BGM* 7.146 (Dec 15, 1913), p. 4, reprint; Mrs. Polman, 'Speaking in Tongues', *Confidence* 8.6 (Aug 1913), pp. 151-52.

<sup>137</sup> 'Word From India', p. 40.

<sup>138</sup> Stanton, 'The Effect of the Divine Indwelling', p. 161.

<sup>139</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Edifying The Body Of Christ', *TOF* 32.6 (Jun 1912), pp. 121-24 (123); Wigglesworth, 'Spiritual Gifts', pp. 249-50.

<sup>140</sup> 'Try The Spirits', pp. 133-4; Montgomery, 'Confirming His Word', pp. 97-99.

<sup>141</sup> Wigglesworth, 'Spiritual Gifts', pp. 249-50; cf. Berhard, 'Supernatural Gifts', p. 199; cf. Break, 'The Latter Rain Fullness, A Personal Testimony', pp. 82-83.

<sup>142</sup> S.P. Jacobs, 'The Spirit Before Pentecost', *TOF* 31.9 (Sep 1911), pp. 213-14.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Finally, though ‘rebuking’ a person in tongues was condemned in one article,<sup>143</sup> two testimonies ‘rebuked’ the demonic powers and saw a spiritual victory.<sup>144</sup>

### I. The ‘Latter Rain’.

‘The latter rain’ was a significant metaphor that accounted for glossolalia’s return and at the same time signalled that the end-times were near.<sup>145</sup> The latter rain was more prominent here than in other early Pentecostal periodicals. It was used to describe the current season of revival: ‘we are living in the time of the actual physical rain, and also in the time of the latter spiritual rain. Joel ii:23 is a wonderful picture of a Pentecostal meeting’.<sup>146</sup> It connected the current revival with Pentecost<sup>147</sup> and greater torrents of the ‘latter rain’ were prayed for: ‘let us be determined to give God no rest and no men rest until we have the revival all around us. Use letters, conversation etc. “Ask of the Lord Rain in the time of the Latter Rain” (Zech. X., 1) He says, and He will send it’.<sup>148</sup>

### J. The Nature of Glossolalia.

The nature of tongues in *TOF* was ecstatic and mysterious, and at times it was a song or a known language.

#### 1. Ecstatic and Mysterious.

When speaking in tongues, ‘the believer did the talking’ but the ‘Spirit gives the utterance’, according to Fred F. Bosworth.<sup>149</sup> Glossolalia occurred when the human

---

<sup>143</sup> ‘The Spirit Of Long-Suffering’, *TOF* 30.6 (Jun 1910), 130-32 (131).

<sup>144</sup> Smith Wigglesworth, ‘The Confidence That We Have In Him’, *TOF* 34.8 (Aug 1914), pp. 177-79; Mabel C. Scott, ‘In The Beginning – God’, *TOF* 34.8 (Aug 1914), p. 186.

<sup>145</sup> Boddy, ‘Pentecostal Outpouring’, pp. 234-35; A.B. Simpson, ‘Gospel Healing’, *TOF* 34.4 (Apr 1914), pp. 80-86 (85); Julia Morton Plummer, ‘The Bridegroom Cometh’, *TOF* 34.7 (Jul 1914), pp. 165-66 (165); cf. Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 258.

<sup>146</sup> Boddy, ‘Pentecostal Outpouring’, p. 233; cf. Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘Letter From Mrs. Montgomery’, *TOF* 29.4 (Apr 1909), pp. 73-80 (74); Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘Letter From Mrs. Montgomery’, *TOF* 29.5 (May 1909), p. 112; ‘Tongues Are For A Sign’, *TOF* 30.1 (Jan 1910), pp. 23-24; Sadie Cody, ‘The Work And Workers’, *TOF* 32.11 (Nov 1912), pp. 228-29 (229).

<sup>147</sup> Pohill, ‘This is That’, p. 104.

<sup>148</sup> Cecil Pohill, ‘The Pentecostal Movement In The Foreign Mission Field’, *TOF* 29.4 (Apr 1909), pp. 80-81 (81).

<sup>149</sup> F.F. Bosworth, ‘Power In The Holy Ghost’, *TOF* 34.11 (Nov 1914), pp. 244-47 (246-47); cf. Geo. E. Berg, ‘My Pentecostal Baptism’, *TOF* 30.11 (Nov 1910), pp. 251-53.

spirit was wrapt into a state of ecstasy by the immediate communication of the Spirit of God. In this ecstatic trance the believer was constrained by irresistible power to pour forth his feelings of thanksgiving and rapture in words; yet the words which issued from his mouth were not his own.<sup>150</sup>

Pohill noted that the believers' understanding of glossolalia changed from 'to speak in a foreign language not previously studied' to be an 'ecstatic and worshipping voice ... an inexpressible longing of their hearts (that) was not satisfied until this new tongue was given'.<sup>151</sup> Though ecstatic, 'tongues ... are as real to Him (God), as the spoken tongues of the world'.<sup>152</sup>

## 2. Heavenly Singing.

The 'heavenly singing' often occurred when 'the tide (of) gladness reaches its climax ... (and) all who have received the Pentecostal baptism join in and it is like music of the angels'.<sup>153</sup> The singing was generally thought to be praise that overlapped the praise in heaven.<sup>154</sup> Through the gift of interpretation, Abrams 'found the same words of praise being spoken through various ones in different languages'.<sup>155</sup> Heavenly singing was the equivalent of the glossolalia of IE.<sup>156</sup> Montgomery was known for her singing in the Spirit<sup>157</sup> and so appreciated its sound that she wrote of one occasion that the song was 'so wonderful that it thrilled my heart to its depth'.<sup>158</sup>

---

<sup>150</sup> Conybeare and Howson, 'The Gift Of Tongues', *TOF* 29.7 (Jul 1909), p. 168.

<sup>151</sup> Pohill, 'This is That', pp. 101, 102.

<sup>152</sup> Bushnell, 'Supernatural Manifestations', p. 37.

<sup>153</sup> Mrs. F. Kies, 'The Morning Prayer Service at Beulah Heights', *TOF* 33.10 (Oct 1913), pp. 221-22.

<sup>154</sup> 'She sang praises to God in new tongues ... and together we praised in tongues until we seemed we were in Heaven', Mrs. Herbert Dyke, 'Healing Through the Great Physician', *TOF* 33.7 (Jul 1913), p. 156.

<sup>155</sup> Abrams, 'Intercessory Prayer', p. 16.

<sup>156</sup> Cora Doucette, 'Healing Of Soul And Body', *TOF* 27.12 (Dec 1907), pp. 286-87.

<sup>157</sup> Kies, 'The Morning Prayer Service at Beulah Heights', pp. 221-22; Montgomery, ""The Promise of the Father"", p. 148; Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'Behold, I Make All Things New', *TOF* 33.1 (Jan 1913), pp. 3-4 (4); Dyke, 'Healing Through the Great Physician', p. 156.

<sup>158</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, 'As Dying, And Behold We Live', *TOF* 34.5 (May 1914), p. 98. One exception to a beautiful melody had 'a deep guttural language', Mrs. C. Nuzum, 'From Every Nation, Kindred And Tongue', *TOF* 34.2 (Feb 1914), pp. 29-30 (30).

### 3. Xenolalia.

Xenolalia is a small but regular feature throughout the window of this examination. However, *TOF* published testimonies of xenolalia long after the other early Pentecostal periodicals had ceased regularly publishing accounts.<sup>159</sup> Similar to testimonies in other periodicals, they listed the languages they spoke,<sup>160</sup> noted cases when non-English speakers spoke colloquial English,<sup>161</sup> and addressed the supernatural aspect of tongues.<sup>162</sup> Some writers longed for ‘missionary tongues’<sup>163</sup> to facilitate the gospel and noted the sign value of xenolalia.<sup>164</sup> Two interesting accounts explained that the hearers did not ‘understand all the words’, but grasped enough to identify the language and get a rudimentary understanding, revealing a level of critical judgment towards xenolalia.<sup>165</sup> Perhaps accounts of xenolalia were given greater latitude because of Montgomery’s own testimony of SB, when she ‘spoke and sang in unknown tongues (there seemed three or four distinct languages)’.<sup>166</sup> Later she went to great lengths to verify what ‘seemed like Chinese’ by a ‘credible witness’.<sup>167</sup> Missionary tongues were an

---

<sup>159</sup> In the periodicals listed above, accounts past 1909 were rare. McGee noted that by late 1906 and early 1907 accounts of glossolalia emphasized ‘worship and intercession in the Spirit’, McGee, ‘Shortcut to Language Preparation’, p. 122. However, here they appear as late as, Grace Agar, ‘Life More Abundant’, *TOF* 34.2 (Feb 1914), pp. 27-29 (28).

<sup>160</sup> Irwin, ‘My Pentecostal Baptism – A Christmas Gift’, pp. 114-17; Mary B. Mullen, ‘A New Experience’, *TOF* 28.9 (Sep 1908), pp. 213-14.

<sup>161</sup> *TOF* 27.5 (May 1907), p. 105; Albert Norton, ‘The Gift of the Holy Ghost’, *TOF* 28.1 (Jan 1908), pp. 14-16 (14-15).

<sup>162</sup> Bushnell, ‘Supernatural Manifestations’, p. 37.

<sup>163</sup> Lizzie Fraser, ‘Testimony’, *TOF* 29.1 (Jan 1909), pp 12-13; Lehman, ‘Reports From Regions Beyond’, pp. 37-38; J.O. Lehman, ‘Johannesburg, South Africa’, *TOF* 29.9 (Sep 1909), p. 213.

<sup>164</sup> Norton, ‘The Gift of the Holy Ghost’, p. 15; ‘extract from a Christian workers letter’, *TOF* 28.11 (Nov 1908), p. 249; ‘Tongues Are For A Sign’, pp. 23-24.

<sup>165</sup> Doering, ‘A Missionary’s Testimony’, p. 126; Norton, ‘The Gift of the Holy Ghost’, pp. 14-15.

<sup>166</sup> Montgomery, ““The Promise of the Father””, p. 148. Miskov notes that Montgomery ‘did not rely upon the manifestation of tongues to enable her to speak foreign languages’ but had experienced xenolalia, Miskov, *Life on Wings*, p. 251; cf. pp. 250-51.

<sup>167</sup> Montgomery, ‘Speaking in Tongues’, p. 253. The credible witness for Montgomery was Harriette M.T. Shimer, ‘a missionary of the Society of Friends who had been working in China for the past seven years’ wrote a verification that ‘Mrs. Montgomery ... repeatedly prayed and sang in Chinese’, p. 255. This article was reprinted as a tract: Carrie Judd Montgomery, *Speaking in Tongues* (Framingham, MA: Christian Workers Union, Inc., n.d.). For other attempts of verification, cf. Sadie Cody, ‘The Work and Workers’, *TOF* 32.11 (Nov 1912), pp. 228-29; *TOF* 34.2 (Feb 1914), pp. 28-29.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia exception to the rule and not the norm: at first we thought that ‘the gift was for the preaching of the gospel to foreigners’ but now we see it as a sign, where ‘unbelievers are brought face-to-face with the supernatural and evidence of “the powers of the world” to come’.<sup>168</sup>

## K. Affect – Joy and Laughter.

Joy is an emotion that stands out when reading *TOF*: ‘it is far beyond the power of pen to describe or tongue to express the unspeakable joy that comes from Himself as He perfectly subdues and endues’.<sup>169</sup> Laughter was an outflow of joy, but it was also a means of learning to yield to the Spirit, a foreshadowing of full glossolalia like ‘stammering lips’. For example,

I wanted all the Lord had for me ... as we bowed our heads in prayer the Holy Spirit came upon me and holy laughter (Ps. cxxvi:2) ... (later) when he again came upon me in holy laughter, and as I just let go of my tongue and vocal organs He took possession, speaking and singing so sweetly in His own language.<sup>170</sup>

One very reserved man had a dream that he would have uncontrollable laughter upon his baptism and then did.<sup>171</sup> However, there was little theological reflection on laughter other than its occurrence.

---

<sup>168</sup> Berhard, ‘Supernatural Gifts’, p. 204.

<sup>169</sup> Mullen, ‘A New Experience’, p. 214; cf. Mrs. Frances Kies, ‘A Year As “Door Keeper”’, *TOF* 34.4 (Apr 1914), p. 87.

<sup>170</sup> Opie, ‘Healed and Baptized’, p. 156; cf. Marshall, ‘Deliverance of an Insane Sister’, p. 12 ; A.C. ‘Pentecostal Outpouring In England’, *TOF* 29.1 (Jan 1909), p. 15; Hettiaratchy, ‘In His “Banqueting House”’, pp. 66-69; F.F. Bosworth, ‘Letter From Dallas, Texas’, *TOF* 34.3 (Mar 1914), p. 72; Grace C. Agar, ‘Missionary Gleanings’, *TOF* 34.9 (Sep 1914), pp. 209-10 (209); Mrs. May Evans, ‘Healed of Cancer’, *TOF* 34.12 (Dec 1914), pp. 271-72.

<sup>171</sup> W.W. Simpson, ‘Notes From Kansu’, *TOF* 33.3 (Mar 1913), pp. 53-55.

## II. Pre-Assemblies of God – *The Pentecost.*

### A. History of J. Roswell Flower.

J. Roswell Flower's parents<sup>172</sup> became disillusioned with John A. Dowie's<sup>173</sup> community in Zion, IL and moved to Indianapolis, IN where they attended the CMA church.<sup>174</sup> 'The Pentecostal message came to Indianapolis from the ASM revival in Jan. 1907 through the ministry of Cook' where Flower surrendered his life and 'became active in ministry'.<sup>175</sup> At the time, Flower was working for a seed company and studying to become a lawyer. At the age of 20 he started *The Pentecost* and 'his contributions clearly demonstrate his familiarity with many personalities and facets of the emerging Pentecostal movement'.<sup>176</sup> Flower added his name to those calling for organization of what would become the AG.<sup>177</sup> He attended the Hot Springs, AR meeting and held 'almost continuous positions of leadership from the inception of the Assemblies of God until his retirement, exercising an important stabilizing ministry during formative years'.<sup>178</sup>

---

<sup>172</sup> See Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 10-11, for the story of Mr. and Mrs. George L. Flower.

<sup>173</sup> Edith L. Blumhofer, 'John Alexander Dowie', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 586-87.

<sup>174</sup> Gary B. McGee, 'Joseph James Roswell Flower and Alice Reynolds', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 642-44 (642).

<sup>175</sup> McGee, 'Flower', *NIDPCM*, p. 642.

<sup>176</sup> McGee, 'Flower', *NIDPCM*, p. 642.

<sup>177</sup> The first call appeared in: 'General Convention Of Pentecostal Saints and Churches Of God In Christ', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 1. His support was published one issue before the convention in, WW 10.3 (Mar 20, 1914), p. 1. It appears that Flower was in search of a suitable affiliation. Note TP's attempts at finding a suitable association: two issues states this paper was the 'Official organ of the Christian Assembly, corner Alabama and New York streets, Indianapolis, Indiana', TP 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 4; TP 1.4 (Dec 1908), p. 8. Issue five notes that it was the 'Official organ of the Apostolic Faith Mission, cor. Alabama and New York str., Indianapolis, Indiana', TP 1.5 (Jan / Feb 1909), p. 6. The very next issue states that 'we have moved *The Pentecost* from Indianapolis to Kansas City, Mo. It is about two years since I first met Brother Copley and since that time our hearts have slowly been *joined together* in a peculiar and wonderful manner', TP 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p 6. Italics mine.

<sup>178</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 66. He served as founding secretary and secretary 1914-16 and 1935-59, and Foreign Missions Secretary from 1919 to 1925, Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 167-68.

## B. The 'Full Consummation' of Spirit Baptism.

Perhaps it was Flower's personal SB that caused him to hold a theologically nuanced and pastoral approach to the bible sign.<sup>179</sup> In fact, his views diverged slightly from the standard view of IE in three ways. First, Flower 'shifted the focus from tongues as the necessary accompaniment of the reception of SB to tongues as the fullness of expression toward which the experience leads'.<sup>180</sup> Question: 'is the baptism in the Holy Spirit the finishing touch of the Christian experience? Ans. No. It is the top layer of the foundation of such experiences'.<sup>181</sup> As such, there was theological room for various experiences leading up to fullness. For example, 'stammering lips' were a type of proto-glossolalia that occurred before fullness. One missionary to Africa wrote, 'a white brother in our cottage meeting here last Friday night was near the confirmation of his baptism – stuttering and stammering, yet he did not let go'.<sup>182</sup> Also, there could be various 'anointings' that were not SB.<sup>183</sup> Finally, there were varying degrees of 'fullness'. For example, 'by this manifestation (tongues) ... it is known whether believers enjoy Pentecostal or *pre-pentecostal fullness*'.<sup>184</sup>

---

<sup>179</sup> 'Bible evidence' is the phrase used to describe the sign value of glossolalia in *TP*, e.g. H.M. Allen, 'The Bible Evidence', *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 5.

<sup>180</sup> Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 172.

<sup>181</sup> Flower, 'The Apostolic Question Box', *TP* 1.9 (Aug 1909), p. 9. It is unclear who authored this piece, though Flower was the Editor and Copley was the Associate Editor. In a later tract, Flower wrote, 'the receiving of the Holy Spirit was not considered a crowning experience for the believer – the culmination of Christian perfection – but an initial experience', J.R. Flower's tract, 'Is it Necessary to Speak In An Unknown Tongue' (Toronto, Canada: Full Gospel Publishing House, 1954 [?]), pp. 7-8.

<sup>182</sup> Ida F. Sackett, 'Words From Johannesburg', *TP* 2.4 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 8; cf. A.W. Brenzinger, 'Victory in Biglerville, Pa', *TP* 1.8 (Jul 1909), p. 2.

<sup>183</sup> Mrs. N. Mc -, 'A Timely Testimony', *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 3; cf. A.S. Copley, 'Sanctification', *TP* 1.2 (Sep 1908), p. 7. However, the editors note that 'the New Testament certainly makes no distinction between the anointing of the Spirit and the baptism in the Spirit. They are one and the same thing', *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>184</sup> A.S. Copley, 'The Threefold Standard', *TP* 1.1 (Aug 1908), p. 8. Italics mine.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Second, *TP* was comfortable printing testimonies which noted a delay between when one 'received the Spirit by faith'<sup>185</sup> and when the sign of tongues occurred.<sup>186</sup> For example, Mary Lindley wrote, 'I accepted the promise the 11<sup>th</sup> day of last October and received the baptism in the Holy Spirit *and a few weeks later* the Spirit spoke for Himself through my lips in another tongue'.<sup>187</sup> Most notable among the testimonies of delayed tongues was the editor himself.<sup>188</sup> He claimed the baptism by faith and days later, 'the Lord ... gave me a big blessing, but no tongues'.<sup>189</sup> Later, in Kansas City

while alone in prayer, the Lord gave me *a few words in tongues* and I spoke them. Instantly the power of God struck me and ... I was filled with joy unspeakable and full of glory. Then for a whole month I had to stand right there believing God. He gave me much joy and peace *but no tongues*.<sup>190</sup>

Later, 'God confirmed His Word' with signs following.<sup>191</sup> Overall, Flower answered delayed glossolalia with pastoral care:

praise Him and tongues will invariably follow ... let us not discourage that one by telling him that he has not received the baptism simply because he has not spoken in

---

<sup>185</sup> The position of *TP* is identical to Montgomery's noted above. For example, 'faith brings the answer', *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4; 'speaking in new tongues is not promised to them who tarry for tongues, but to them that believe', *TP* 2.9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910), p. 11. Flower claimed both his sanctification and SB by faith, J. Roswell Flower, 'God Honors Faith', *TP* 2.3 (Feb 1910), p. 1.

<sup>186</sup> Ruth Angstead, 'A Grand Experience', *TP* 1.2 (Sep 1908), pp. 1-2 (1); 'Nuggets for Seekers', *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 6; Ida F. Sackett, 'Words From Johannesburg', *TP* 2.4 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 8; Mrs. N. Mc -, 'A Timely Testimony', *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>187</sup> Mrs. Mary Lindley, 'The Beginning of Days for Me', *TP* 2.2 (Jan 1910), pp. 1, 3 (p. 3). Italics mine.

<sup>188</sup> Flower's testimony was published three times after the founding of the AG: 1) J. Roswell Flower, 'How I Received the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', *PE* 982 (Jan 21, 1933), pp. 2-3 and *PE* 983 (Jan 28, 1933), pp. 6-7; 2) J. Roswell Flower, 'How I Received the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', *PE* 2000 (Sep 7, 1952), pp. 5-7 and *PE* 2001 (Sep 14, 1952), pp. 5, 12-13; 3) J. Roswell Flower, 'How I Received the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', *PE* 4132 (Jul 18, 1993) pp. 18-20. Macchia notes that the final retelling 'omits Flower's description of the delay in his experience between Spirit baptism and tongues', Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 172; cf. Robeck, 'Emerging Magisterium', pp. 186-93. The 1933 and 1952 retellings are nearly identical with only minor changes. The 1993 retelling receives a substantial editing, omitting that SB, like healing, is obtained by faith, J. Roswell Flower, 'How I Received the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', *PE* 4132 (Jul 18, 1993), pp. 18-20 (20).

<sup>189</sup> Flower, 'God Honors Faith', p. 1.

<sup>190</sup> Flower, 'God Honors Faith', p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>191</sup> Flower, 'God Honors Faith', p. 1. The fullest published testimony (1933) notes: signs of joy, holy laughter, and the casting out of a demon, J. Roswell Flower, *PE* 983 (Jan 28, 1933), pp. 6-7 (7).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

another language. Let us not assume the place of God ... the voice of the Word and Spirit within are more sure than the sign of tongues without.<sup>192</sup>

Third, while Flower believed that glossolalia was the bible evidence after the pattern in Acts,<sup>193</sup> he was nevertheless open to other signs of the Holy Spirit's presence:

too much stress on speaking in tongues as the Bible evidence weakens the argument. To insist that this is the only evidence of the baptism in the Holy Spirit is to compel us to accept all speaking in tongues as divine. Whereas some is purely human and others certainly satanic. The Scripture is beautiful and safeguards itself. It records at least three signs of the Spirit's presence ... '**speak with tongues and magnify God**' (Acts 10:46) ... '**spake with tongues and prophesied**' (Acts 19:6) ... we do not need to have a new tongue to magnify the Lord or to prophesy ... let us not stress any gift or doctrine out of due proportion ... when the Comforter comes, He will make Himself known, and evidence His presence.<sup>194</sup>

Because tongues were the final rather than first evidence of fullness, there was theological room for other signs of the Spirit's indwelling that led to that fullness. However, eventually,

all those who are baptized with the Holy Spirit will either at the time of their baptism or shortly afterwards speak in tongues, yet we must with great care and humility teach this truth not too dogmatically or we shall be before we are aware, preaching tongues and thereby obscure the Christ.<sup>195</sup>

Finally, H.M. Allen disliked the scientific term 'Bible evidence' even though he fully embraced the concept as biblical.<sup>196</sup>

---

<sup>192</sup> TP 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4; cf. TP 2.9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910), p. 11.

<sup>193</sup> 'Caution to Seekers', TP 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 9; J.O. Lehman, 'The Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', TP 1.12 (Nov 1909), p. 2.

<sup>194</sup> TP 2.11 & 12 (Nov / Dec 1910), p. 9; cf. Lehman, 'The Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', p. 2. Initial Evidence 'is beyond controversy'.

<sup>195</sup> Lehman, 'The Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit', p. 2. In a short tract Flower clarified: 'it would seem that there are varying measures of the Spirit experienced by believers ... (which) is determined by the willingness or ability of the person to yield to the Holy Spirit's possession ... it would be decidedly wrong for such a consecrated believer to declare that he had not received the Holy Spirit, even though he had not spoken in tongues. However his experience ... is still somewhat short of the pattern as set forth in the Acts ... without denying anything that God has done for him in the past, the individual may yield still further ... (then) *there will be inspired utterance*', J.R. Flower, 'Is it Necessary to Speak In An Unknown Tongue', (Toronto, Canada: Full Gospel Publishing House, 1954?). pp. 13-15. Italics mine. He distinguished between a baptism and 'an "inbreathing" of the Holy Spirit'.

<sup>196</sup> Allen, 'The Bible Evidence', p. 5.

### C. Responding to Critics.

*The Pentcost* dealt lightly with two areas of criticism, the origin of tongues and cessation. Glossolalia could have a satanic origin.<sup>197</sup> As noted above, tongues could not be the singular sign of SB otherwise all tongues speech, including fleshly and demonic would be divine.<sup>198</sup> Such thinking would ‘weaken the argument’ of spiritual signs and cause ‘well-meaning but untrained people to sometimes exalt this gift above measure, (and) pass beyond the Spirit into the flesh, become selfish and hence fanatical’.<sup>199</sup> Glossolalia could have a human origin, such as having a seeker repeat the same word or sound repetitiously. Such fleshly origins were ‘dangerous’:

our duty is to tarry for the enduement with power, the fullness of God, by a wholly yielded attitude of the entire being to God ... many times seekers are rushed through. *They do get some kind of tongues*, but do not get the baptism; hence there is a lack of love and humility.<sup>200</sup>

To counter the claim that ‘speaking in tongues is from the pit’, several safeguards were posited.<sup>201</sup> First, genuine tongues should follow the biblical precedents, flow out of a humble heart and edify.<sup>202</sup> The yielded heart was to seek God and not tongues.<sup>203</sup> Second, the fruit of the SB person was a key indicator of the genuineness (or not) of their glossolalia.<sup>204</sup> Flower retooled Gamaliel’s sage advice here, that ‘if the work be of God, it shall stand. If not, it shall fail’.<sup>205</sup>

Cessationism was addressed in passing by two writers. Mrs. Divine noted several outpourings of tongues-speech in Church history. She called these ‘oases’ that ‘brought

<sup>197</sup> ‘Why?’, *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 2; *TP* 1.9 (Aug 1909), p. 10.

<sup>198</sup> Lehman, ‘The Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit’, p. 2.

<sup>199</sup> Flower, ‘The Apostolic Question Box’, p. 9.

<sup>200</sup> ‘Caution to Seekers’, *TP* 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 9. Italics mine.

<sup>201</sup> ‘Why?’, *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 2.

<sup>202</sup> Flower, ‘The Apostolic Question Box’, p. 9; *TP* 2.9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910), p. 11.

<sup>203</sup> Mrs. Minnie Quinn, ‘testimony’, *TP* 1.1 (Aug 1908), p. 2; Alice M. Reynolds, ‘Note From Indianapolis’, *TP* 1.8 (Jul 1909), p. 11. Lehman notes that if someone wants the baptism but does not want tongues ‘it shows at once that their will is not surrendered to God’s will, for it is God’s will that you shall speak in tongues’, Lehman, ‘The Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit’, p. 2.

<sup>204</sup> ‘Why?’, *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 2.

<sup>205</sup> J. Roswell Flower, ‘An Important Warning’, *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 6.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia refreshing from the presence of the Lord'.<sup>206</sup> An unnamed writer mused that some say 'the age of miracles is passed', but at the same time say 'the Holy Spirit is needed by all believers'.<sup>207</sup> This subtly implied that the Holy Spirit was not limited to 'one dispensation' or was solely 'for the Jews', undercutting reasons for cessation.

## D. Purposes for Glossolalia.

*TP* had several implied purposes for glossolalia similar to the periodicals above, though discussing the purpose for tongues did not seem to be a priority.<sup>208</sup> The following reasons for glossolalia were inductively culled from *TP* rather than didactically stated.

### 1. Power, Prayer, and Praise.

First, glossolalia was intimately connected with power and the missionary call:

the baptism of the Holy Ghost does not consist in simply speaking in tongues ... it fills our souls with the love of God for lost humanity, and makes us much more willing to leave home ... when we have tarried and receive that power, then, and then only are we fit to carry the gospel. When the Holy Spirit comes into our hearts, the missionary spirit comes with it; they are inseparable.<sup>209</sup>

Second, Copley noted that the Spirit prays through us: 'the Spirit Himself maketh superlative intercession for us with groanings inexpressible (Rom. 8:26 Int.) O, Lord, teach us to pray and teach us how to let the spirit pray through us'.<sup>210</sup> Third, 'The messages in tongues were largely praises'.<sup>211</sup>

### 2. Xenolalia.

Xenolalia was another stated reason for tongues.<sup>212</sup> *The Pentcost* published accounts of MT during a fourteen month window, and then went silent on the subject. In the very

---

<sup>206</sup> Mrs. Julia McCallie Divine, 'Spiritual Manifestations and the Churches', *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 5.

<sup>207</sup> *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4.

<sup>208</sup> One solitary paragraph stated: 'what is the use of tongues? ... prophecy is (now) fulfilled ... the human heart truly is satisfied only when it satisfies the heart of Jesus Christ fully by letting Him have His way absolutely ... personal upbuilding ... (it) builds up the church ... (and) it is a sign to the unbelieving', Flower, 'The Apostolic Question Box', p. 9.

<sup>209</sup> J.R. Flower, 'Editorial', *TP* 1.1 (Aug 1908), p. 4.

<sup>210</sup> A.S. Copley, 'Pentecost in Type', *TP* 1.8 (Jul 1909), pp. 7-8 (7).

<sup>211</sup> Mrs. Melvia Booker, 'Impressions', *TP* 1.10 (Sep 1909), pp 2-3 (2); cf. Anna Holmquist, 'The Lord Hath Helped', *TP* 2.9 & 10 (Sep / Oct 1910), pp. 9, 16 (16).

<sup>212</sup> 'Why?', *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 2.

first issue (Aug 1908) it reported that ‘one dear man got saved, sanctified and baptized in about 10 minutes ... for several hours, praising God in tongues, speaking in German and Dutch languages he never knew before’.<sup>213</sup> One testimony even professed to a miracle of hearing:

the Lord withheld the gift of tongues from us. Here (Hailua, Hawaii) most of the people were Japanese, Portuguese, Chinese and natives, who cannot speak nor understand English tongues. We asked the Father in Jesus name to give them interpretation of our tongue. Glory, he did!<sup>214</sup>

*The Pentecost* reported that ‘we have just received word that Brother O'Reilly, in South America, is speaking in languages and being understood. As soon as we get more information will make announcement’.<sup>215</sup> The next issue questioned, ‘how can the Jew be reached unless he ... hears the speaking in tongues in his own language by people who never learned the language’?<sup>216</sup> Four testimonies in subsequent issues were of xenolalia.<sup>217</sup> For example, ‘Mrs. Hanson spoke in Chinese, yet did not know her own message ... the astonished student ... heard his own Mandarin tongue’.<sup>218</sup> The final account (Oct 1909) of xenolalia came from Antoinette Moomau who reported that ‘one Chinese woman came through to her baptism speaking in clear English and she could not speak a word of English naturally’.<sup>219</sup> After October, 1909 there is no mention of MT in the remaining eleven extant issues of *TP*.

## E. The Nature of Glossolalia.

### 1. Heavenly Anthem.

Similar to reports in other periodicals, the HA was more easily embraced than spoken-tongues, and was more readily identified as inspired. Copley wrote

---

<sup>213</sup> J.O. Lehman, *TP* 1.1 (Aug 1908), p. 7; cf. Bro. Murray, ‘The Use of Tongues’, *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 6; W.H. Standley, ‘A Tardy Experience’, *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 7.

<sup>214</sup> F.E. Yoakum, ‘Pentecostal Miracle’, *TP* 1.4 (Dec 1908), p. 14.

<sup>215</sup> *TP* 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 6.

<sup>216</sup> *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 6.

<sup>217</sup> A.W. Brenzinger, ‘Victory in Biglerville, Pa’, *TP* 1.8 (Jul 1909), p. 2; Mrs. M.E.H., *TP* 1.9 (Aug 1909), p. 4.

<sup>218</sup> Mrs. Woodbury, ‘Tongues Heard and Understood’, *TP* 1.9 (Aug 1909), p. 2

<sup>219</sup> Sisters Moomau and Phillips, ‘Report From China’, *TP* 1.11 (Oct 1909), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the sublimest (manifestation) ... is the anthem of the so-called 'heavenly choir.' Where the Holy Spirit has His way fully, He often utters unnameable, indescribable sounds through surrendered voices and lips ... the ecstasy at such moments is inexpressively glorious'.<sup>220</sup>

If someone were able to sing in tongues, they would be counted among the Spirit-baptized; it was their bible evidence. For example, 'one of our dear people here has received her baptism. She has the Bible evidence ... she induced them to let her sing of Jesus and of His blood. As she began to sing, she received her baptism'.<sup>221</sup> The HA also attested to the Holy Spirit's presence in the meeting: 'the power of God fell on the meeting and many were speaking and singing in tongues'.<sup>222</sup>

### 2. Inspired Human Speech.

According to one unnamed author in *TP*, glossolalia was people talking at the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, they were not a passive mouthpiece through whom the Holy Spirit spoke:

the phrases, 'He spoke for Himself,' 'He spoke through me,' 'He will speak through me,' are not scriptural ... it is not the Spirit but the people talking in tongues. It is true, the Spirit furnishes the language – the 'utterance' – but the people furnish the subject.<sup>223</sup>

Many testimonies either refrained from saying 'He spoke for Himself', or were revised to have a more active human part. For example, Mrs. Minnie Quinn, wrote, 'I spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance', or, 'I praised God when the Spirit gave utterance in an unknown tongue to me', and 'I spoke in two languages'.<sup>224</sup> However, the author did give leeway for the Spirit to operate:

---

<sup>220</sup> A.S. Copley, 'Pentecost in Type (Part 2)', *TP* 1.11 (Oct 1909), pp. 5-6 (6); cf. Ruth Angstead, 'A Grand Experience', *TP* 1.2 (Sep 1908), pp. 1-2 (1).

<sup>221</sup> 'Baptized and Healed', *TP* 2.11 & 12 (Nov / Dec 1910), p. 5; cf. Grace Gilliam Mitchel, 'My Testimony for Christ', *TP* 1.11 (Oct 1909), p. 6; Amanda Smith, 'Testimonials', *TP* 2.4 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>222</sup> Mrs. S.A. Smith, 'Pentecost in Tennessee', *TP* 1.2 (Sep 1908), p. 8; cf. Alice M. Reynolds, 'The Indianapolis Work in General', *TP* 1.6 (Apr / May 1909), p. 11; L.B. Sly, 'Pentecost in Youngstown, Ohio', *TP* 1.7 (Jun 1909), p. 10.

<sup>223</sup> *TP* 2.9 &10 (Sep / Oct 1910), p. 11.

<sup>224</sup> Mrs. Minnie Quinn, 'testimony', *TP* 1.1 (Aug 1908), p. 2; Martha J. Lewis 'Pentecost for nine years', *TP* 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 7; H.H. Jones, *TP* 1.10 (Sep 1909), p. 4.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

to be sure, God might give the message. The Greek for the word ‘utterance’ would include the subject matter as well as the language, and it is entirely possible that the Spirit might, not only furnish the language but also furnish the subject matter, as He certainly does and the gift of prophecy. But if we are to judge by Scripture examples, this must be very rare.<sup>225</sup>

Testimonies where the individual was a passive tool of the Holy Spirit were published as well.<sup>226</sup>

### **III. Rise of the Finished Work – *Pentecostal Testimony*.**

#### **A. History of William H. Durham.**

Though William H. Durham only served for five years as a Pentecostal pastor and evangelist before dying of pneumonia in 1912, his FW doctrine would identify the FW denominations and provide the foundation for Oneness Pentecostalism.<sup>227</sup> Though some would be won over to the FW position, Durham seemed to have given voice to large numbers of people who did not embrace the WH position.<sup>228</sup> Coming from a Baptist background, Durham pastored at Chicago’s North Avenue Mission when he heard about the revival in Los Angeles. At Azusa, Seymour prophesied over him that wherever Durham would preach, ‘the Holy Spirit would fall upon the people’.<sup>229</sup> This proved to be true because his powerful preaching drew thousands.<sup>230</sup> At his Chicago revival, it was not at all uncommon to hear people at all hours of the night speaking in

---

<sup>225</sup> TP 2.9 &10 (Sep / Oct 1910), p. 11.

<sup>226</sup> ‘Nuggets for Seekers’, TP 1.3 (Nov 1908), p. 6; Alice M. Reynolds, ‘Note From Indianapolis’, TP 1.8 (Jul 1909), p. 11.

<sup>227</sup> William Durham, ‘Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham’, PT (Mar 1909), pp. 5-7; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 100; Riss, ‘Finished Work Controversy’, p. 639; Richard M. Riss, ‘William H. Durham’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 594-95 (594); David A. Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 936-44 (936-37).

<sup>228</sup> Goss, *The Winds of God*, p. 204; Bartleman, *Azusa Street*, pp. 169-79.

<sup>229</sup> Durham, ‘Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham’, p. 7 (reprint in PT 2.3 (Jun 1912), p. 4); Riss, ‘William H. Durham’, p. 594.

<sup>230</sup> Riss, ‘William H. Durham’, p. 594.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia tongues and singing in the Spirit.<sup>231</sup> He also influenced others who would become leaders in the movement<sup>232</sup> and networked with ethnic minority Pentecostal leaders.<sup>233</sup> William W. Menzies notes that ‘God used Durham there (Midwest) much as He did Cashwell in the south’.<sup>234</sup>

## B. The Finished Work and Spirit Baptism.

Durham had two theological passions that show up throughout *PT*: the FW and SB.<sup>235</sup> For example, the

Pentecostal Testimony stands for *real full salvation* (FW) in Christ, and for the *real baptism of the Holy Spirit*. *False theories concerning the baptism will be exposed ... we stand, and shall continue to stand for unity of all God's people in the Spirit, not in the flesh. We cannot afford to purchase unity by sacrificing the Truth of God.*<sup>236</sup>

### 1. The Finished Work.

Even though Durham himself had a second-work of sanctification experience, after his own SB he reformulated his theology to adapt ‘it to his Baptist roots ... This new Pentecostal soteriology disclaimed sanctification as a second definite work of grace,

---

<sup>231</sup> William Durham, ‘The Great Chicago Revival’, *PT* 2.2 (May 1912), pp. 13-14; cf. William Durham, ‘How The Work Is Progressing’, *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 15; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 69; Goss, *The Winds of God*, pp. 199-204.

<sup>232</sup> Riss, ‘William H. Durham’, p. 594. Notable among the early leaders are: Argue, E.N. Bell, Howard Goss, and McPherson. Cf. Durham, ‘How The Work Is Progressing’, p. 15; Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 65, 76. Brumback believes the Chicago revival also impacted William Piper and the Stone Church, Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 70-71.

<sup>233</sup> His work among ethnic minorities include: Daniel Berg (founded AG in Brazil), Luigi Fancescon (Italians), F.A. Sandgren (Scandinavians), and Urshan (Persian). Durham took note of the multiple ethnics touched in the Chicago revival and wrote, ‘if I ever saw the proof that God is no respecter of persons, I saw it here. Old and young, black and white, without respect to creed or nationality, the people who went to seek God were met with His mighty power and baptized in the Spirit’, Durham, ‘The Great Chicago Revival’, p. 13.

<sup>234</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 65.

<sup>235</sup> William Durham, ‘The Two Great Experiences’, *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), pp. 5-7 (6); William Durham, ‘The Progress Of The Work In General’, *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), p. 1; Durham, ‘The Great Battle Of Nineteen Eleven’, p. 7; Durham, ‘The Great Chicago Revival’, p. 14.

<sup>236</sup> William Durham, ‘Editorial’, *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 1. Italics mine. Note the sharp line here: God ‘used it (IE) to draw a line between those who had the baptism in those who had not’, William Durham, ‘Speaking In Tongues Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Holy Spirit’, *PT* 2.2 (May 1912), pp. 9-11 (11). Italics mine.

seeing justification and sanctification as occurring at the moment of conversion'.<sup>237</sup>

Durham became highly critical of the WH second work of sanctification,<sup>238</sup> especially because he viewed it as an incomplete view of salvation.<sup>239</sup> Sanctification, he believed, was complete upon justification and then one lived a life of 'continual dependence on Jesus Christ ... (an) overcoming life'.<sup>240</sup>

Durham's FW doctrine touched glossolalia in two ways: first, tongues signified that in SB the person was 'sealed unto the day of redemption ... (a) seal of a finished salvation in Jesus Christ';<sup>241</sup> however, he would not go so far as to say 'only those who had the baptism and spoke in tongues were saved'.<sup>242</sup> This was accomplished by two clear receptions: 'the truth is, sinners receive Christ, and believers, and believers only, receive the Holy Spirit'.<sup>243</sup> Though it is unclear exactly what he meant by 'seal' of the Spirit, he compared it to the sign-value of circumcision: 'this sealing did not make him (Abraham) righteous, but was an external sign, a testimony'.<sup>244</sup>

Second, Durham argued that sanctification experiences should not be called the baptism of the Holy Spirit. 'Many of us have called our experiences by the wrong

---

<sup>237</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 150. Alexander notes that the memorial edition 'omits the account of his sanctification experience', n. 470.

<sup>238</sup> His two primary criticisms are: 1) there is 'not even one Scripture that teaches that sanctification is a second work of grace', William Durham, 'Sanctification', *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), pp. 1-3 (1); cf. Durham, 'The Two Great Experiences', p. 6; William Durham, 'An Open Letter To My Brother Ministers In And Out Of The Pentecostal Movement. A Strong Appeal', *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), pp. 12-13 (13); William Durham, 'The Finished Work of Calvary: Identification with Jesus Christ Saves and Sanctifies', *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 1-3. 2) 'Experience, and not Scripture is used to prove the experience', Durham, 'Sanctification', p. 1. 3) Durham's opponents mischaracterize his position, William Durham, 'Some Other Phases Of Sanctification', *PT* 2.2. (May 1912), pp. 7-9 (9).

<sup>239</sup> He writes that with the WH position 'men are *partly saved* in conversion, and that it takes a second work of grace to complete the job', Durham, 'The Two Great Experiences', p. 6.

<sup>240</sup> Durham, 'Sanctification', p. 2; cf. Durham, 'The Great Battle Of Nineteen Eleven', pp. 6-8; William Durham, 'The Great Need Of The Hour', *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 10-11 (10).

<sup>241</sup> Durham, 'The Two Great Experiences', p. 6; cf. Durham, 'The Progress Of The Work In General', p. 1.

<sup>242</sup> William Durham, 'False Doctrines', *PT* 2.2 (May 1912), pp. 6-7 (6); cf. William Durham, 'Sealed With The Spirit (incomplete article)', *PT* (Mar 1909), p. 12.

<sup>243</sup> Durham, 'False Doctrines', p. 6.

<sup>244</sup> Durham, 'Sealed With The Spirit', p. 12. This sealing is compared to a corporate logo today, a 'Bible brand', William Durham, 'A Word To Ministers, From A Minister', *PT* (Mar 1909), pp. 10-12 (11); William Durham, 'The Great Crisis Number Two', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp. 1-4 (3).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia name’,<sup>245</sup> and then questioned “what am I to do with my experience?” Brother, change its name’.<sup>246</sup> One testimony implied that leading people into SB was easier when people were unaware of ‘the second work theory’.<sup>247</sup> Durham did not elaborate, but perhaps he believed that in such cases, a clarification of terms was not necessary.

## 2. The Evidence.<sup>248</sup>

‘Many honest souls oppose the truth of God’, wrote Durham, ‘telling them they could have the Holy Ghost and not speak in tongues, or that they already had the baptism and all they need to do is wait for the evidence of tongues’.<sup>249</sup> Durham disagreed and became a staunch defender of evidentiary glossolalia.<sup>250</sup> He even called it the dividing ‘line between those who had the baptism and those who had not’.<sup>251</sup> He reasoned that this was either ‘a genuine outpouring of the Holy Spirit, or it is the basest fraud the world has ever seen’.<sup>252</sup> His defence of the evidence may have been a reaction to the spirituality and cultural background of his day. First, he saw few Christians living a vibrant life: ‘there is neither fanaticism nor counterfeit in the denominational churches of this day; the reason is they are dead’.<sup>253</sup> Further, ‘higher criticism’ and ‘intellectual knowledge’ were weakening the faith of future ministers.<sup>254</sup> He viewed the revival and

---

<sup>245</sup> Durham, ‘Sanctification’, p. 1.

<sup>246</sup> William Durham, ‘The Second Work Of Grace People Answered’, *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), pp. 7-9 (9); cf. Durham, ‘The Two Great Experiences’, p. 6. Durham notes that sanctification could also mean ‘set apart for a holy use’ and not just cleansing, Durham, ‘The Second Work Of Grace People Answered’, p. 8; cf. Durham, ‘Some Other Phases Of Sanctification’, pp. 7-8.

<sup>247</sup> William Durham, ‘A Great Revival In Dallas, Texas’, *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), p. 14.

<sup>248</sup> ‘The evidence’ is used to describe evidential glossolalia. Durham used the moniker, ‘the bible evidence’ in his testimony, Durham, ‘Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham’, p. 7.

<sup>249</sup> Durham, ‘An Open Letter To My Brother Ministers’, p. 12.

<sup>250</sup> William Durham, ‘Criticisms Answered’, *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), p. 11.

<sup>251</sup> Durham, ‘Speaking in Tongues is the Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit’, *PT* 2.2 (May 1912), pp. 9-12 (11); cf. William Durham, ‘The Winnipeg Convention’, *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 11-12 (12).

<sup>252</sup> Durham, ‘The Great Crisis Number Two’, p. 3.

<sup>253</sup> William Durham, ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Holy Ghost, No. 3’, *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 4-6 (5); cf. William Durham, ‘The Great Crisis: The Finished Work Is Hastening It’, *PT* 2.2 (May 1912), pp. 4-6 (5).

<sup>254</sup> Durham, ‘A Word to Ministers, from a Minister’, p. 10.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
its accompanying sign as a restoration of biblical Christianity for the end times.<sup>255</sup>  
Second, he stood for a living relationship with God against the influence of the popular  
new scientific method. He believed there was

an attempt on the part of the scientific world to rule God out entirely, or to leave us  
only a vague, mysterious, impartial God ... (but) we have this clear unmistakable  
*proof* of the word of God concerning the baptism of the Holy Ghost ... the blessed  
Holy Spirit simply comes upon and into our souls and bodies and takes possession  
and speaks through us, as a *proof* that is the real Bible brand.<sup>256</sup>

A case could be made that Durham (along with others)<sup>257</sup> co-opted the language of  
science for apologetic and evangelistic engagement with his culture.<sup>258</sup> Terms like  
'*proof*'<sup>259</sup> and '*evidence*' are frequent in *PT*: 'we believe the speaking in tongues to be  
the *evidence* of the baptism of the Holy Ghost. God is *confirming* this doctrine with the  
signs (sic)'.<sup>260</sup>

If scientific proof of SB was demanded, then Durham was happy to oblige. Three  
extant articles with nearly identical arguments laid fact upon fact toward the logical  
conclusion that SB 'is always a definite experience. It is invariably accompanied by the  
speaking in other tongues as the spirit gives utterance.'<sup>261</sup> His arguments were: fact one,  
'the most Spiritual persons were the first to be baptized, and speak in tongues'.<sup>262</sup> In  
contrast, 'the dishonesty of those who opposed the movement did much to convince me  
of its genuineness', because they charged 'the Pentecostal people with what they

---

<sup>255</sup> Durham, 'The Great Crisis Number Two', p. 4; Durham, 'An Open Letter To My Brother  
Ministers', p. 13; William Durham, 'The Gospel Of Christ', *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 8-10 (9); Durham, 'The  
Great Crisis: The Finished Work Is Hastening It', p. 6.

<sup>256</sup> Durham, 'The Great Crisis Number Two', pp. 2-3.

<sup>257</sup> Sisson, 'A Call To Prayer For A World-Wide Revival', p. 60; Sam C. Perry, 'Why Reject Speaking In  
Tongues', *COGE* 8.39 (Oct 6, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>258</sup> Spittler, 'Suggested Areas For Further Research In Pentecostal Studies', p. 48; cf. H.D. McDonald,  
*Theories of Revelation: An Historical Study 1860-1960* (London: Uwin Brothers, 1963).

<sup>259</sup> Durham, 'A Word to Ministers, from a Minister', p. 10; Durham, 'The Great Chicago Revival', p.  
13.

<sup>260</sup> Durham, 'Editorial', p. 1. '*Evidence*' is used at least 30 times, e.g. William Durham, 'Manifestations  
Number II', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp. 7-9; William Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp.  
12-14; Durham, 'Evidence, No. 3', pp. 4-6; Durham, 'Evidence Of The Baptism', pp. 9-11.

<sup>261</sup> Durham, 'The Two Great Experiences', p. 6.

<sup>262</sup> William Durham, 'Fragment', *PT* (Mar 1909), p. 5; cf. Durham, 'Evidence Of The Baptism', p. 10;  
Durham, 'Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham', p. 6.

neither believed nor taught ... (and) they began to ridicule the manifestations of the Spirit in the movement'.<sup>263</sup> Fact two eliminated doubt. Durham asked the Azusa workers

if everyone had spoken in tongues, they replied they had, and I will confess that I was disappointed, as it would've been a great relief to me if I could've found one who had received just what the rest did except the tongues, but I could not.<sup>264</sup>

Fact three was Durham's own personal journey which led him from opposing it 'with all my might' to writing that 'God gloriously baptized me in his Holy Spirit, and O! How He did speak through me in tongues!'<sup>265</sup> Fact four was that the bible gave 'this as the sign in every case'.<sup>266</sup> Even though Durham believed that all one 'had to do was to read Acts 2:4, and measure their experience by it, as this is God's only standard',<sup>267</sup> the experiences of the disciples in Acts 10, 11, and 19 were 'a sign whereby they knew beyond a doubt that the Holy Ghost had fallen'.<sup>268</sup> Fact five was the personal testimony of thousands who, when Spirit baptized, spoke in tongues. Further, 'whenever they cease in any place to teach that the tongues are the evidence the power of God lifts and they have very few baptisms anymore'.<sup>269</sup> As Durham saw it, there was no middle ground: 'if the tongues are the evidence, and men reject that part of the message, they are rejecting that much of the message of God'.<sup>270</sup>

Durham applied the bible evidence standard to himself and his close friends. Both he and Bell had multiple experiences before they testified to a full SB: Durham felt 'a mighty current of power' go through him, fell to the floor and then later physically shook before his third encounter when he spoke in tongues.<sup>271</sup> Bell was filled with joy

---

<sup>263</sup> Durham, 'Evidence, No. 3', pp. 4-5.

<sup>264</sup> Durham, 'Fragment', p. 5; cf. Durham, 'Evidence, No. 3', p. 4.

<sup>265</sup> Durham, 'Fragment', p. 5; cf. Durham, 'Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham', pp. 6, 7.

<sup>266</sup> Durham, 'Fragment', p. 5.

<sup>267</sup> Durham, 'Evidence, No. 3', p. 5.

<sup>268</sup> Durham, 'Fragment', p. 5; cf. Durham, 'Tongues Is The Evidence Of The Baptism', p. 11.

<sup>269</sup> Durham, "Speaking in Tongues is the Evidence of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit", pp. 10-11.

<sup>270</sup> Durham, 'An Open Letter To My Brother Ministers', p. 12.

<sup>271</sup> Durham, 'Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham', p. 7.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia and a ‘holy laughter filled my mouth’, and then was given one word to shout, ‘glory’ before his third encounter when he too spoke in tongues.<sup>272</sup>

### C. Responding to Critics.

In addition to his passionate writings on the evidence and the FW, Durham did address some general criticisms of glossolalia. He wrote,

whenever there is a revival of considerable power there are sure to be manifestations ... when signs and wonders cease it is a sure evidence that the church has drifted away from God, and that God has withdrawn His presence from it ... His return is evidence and accompanied by signs and wonders ... (however) there never was a genuine work in progress that Satan did not get some counterfeit in to it.<sup>273</sup>

He countered cessation with an appeal to history and encouraged people to judge for themselves the genuineness of the present revival.<sup>274</sup> He warned that ascribing to Satan what is an actual work of the Spirit is ‘blaspheming the Holy Spirit’.<sup>275</sup>

In one article Durham answered the criticism of A.C. Dixon, the pastor of Moody Church.<sup>276</sup> First, Dixon believed that Pentecost was a miracle of hearing not speaking<sup>277</sup> and that it was unrepeatable. Durham responded that Dixon ignored Peter’s account in Acts 10.47 and the retelling in Acts 11.15, where Peter specifically stated, ‘it was the speaking in other tongues ... that convinced both Peter and those with him’. Further, he noted that Dixon left off the adjective ‘other’ in his writing, as if people simply spoke ‘in a different way in the same language’.<sup>278</sup> Second, Dixon believed that tongues were ‘ecstatic ... (and) expressed emotion without thought’.<sup>279</sup> The gift of interpretation was ‘someone would stand up and explain to the people that the one speaking in tongues

---

<sup>272</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Testimony Of A Baptist Pastor’, *PT* (Mar 1909), pp. 8-10 (10); cf. E.N. Bell, ‘Sermon Given By Bro. E.N. Bell’, *WE* 113 (Oct 30, 1915), p. 3; cf. Bro. E.N. Bell, ‘Sermon’, *WE* 113 (Oct 30, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>273</sup> Durham, ‘Manifestations Number II’, pp. 7-8.

<sup>274</sup> Durham, ‘Manifestations Number II’, pp. 7-8.

<sup>275</sup> Durham, ‘Manifestations Number II’, p. 8.

<sup>276</sup> Durham, ‘Doctor Dixon Answered’, pp. 12-14.

<sup>277</sup> Durham does not counter this argument. He writes, ‘the Scriptures say distinctly that they spake in other tongues, to our mind there is no room whatever for doubting that they really spake in other tongues’, Durham, ‘Doctor Dixon Answered’, p. 12.

<sup>278</sup> Durham, ‘Doctor Dixon Answered’, p. 12.

<sup>279</sup> Durham, ‘Doctor Dixon Answered’, p. 13.

was not crazy, but simply so happy that he had lost control of himself'.<sup>280</sup> Durham responded that it was a travesty to downplay a gift of the Holy Spirit to happy emotionalism. When Durham spoke in tongues,

I spoke as the Spirit gave utterance ... it was the operation of the Holy Ghost that caused the speaking in tongues ... I am just as apt to speak when under a burden for the lost, or for the work of the Lord, or when in earnest prayer, as when I am rapturously happy.<sup>281</sup>

Third, 'Dixon makes the astonishing statement that speaking in tongues was a sign of unbelief rather than faith'.<sup>282</sup> Durham reminds Dixon of Jesus' promise that 'these signs shall follow them that believe' and that by Paul's own admission he would be the 'greatest unbeliever'.<sup>283</sup>

#### **D. The Finished Work as *The Pentecostal Testimony's* only Distinction.**

In the five extant issues<sup>284</sup> of *PT* only the emphasis on the FW is unique. Beyond that, the testimonies and articles reveal that Durham held views of glossolalia in keeping with other Pentecostal periodicals. For example, IE is dogmatically supported and the purposes for tongues are: praise,<sup>285</sup> prayer,<sup>286</sup> and as a sign.<sup>287</sup> The nature of glossolalia could be the HA<sup>288</sup> or glossolalia. Durham does not address the role of the human will

---

<sup>280</sup> Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', p. 13.

<sup>281</sup> Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', p. 13.

<sup>282</sup> Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', p. 14.

<sup>283</sup> Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', p. 14.

<sup>284</sup> The memorial issue, *PT* 2.3 (Jun 1912), has only a few revival reports and ministry updates that are new. All the significant articles were reprints of prior editions.

<sup>285</sup> Bell, 'Testimony Of A Baptist Pastor', p. 10.

<sup>286</sup> Durham, 'Doctor Dixon Answered', p. 13.

<sup>287</sup> Durham, 'A Word To Ministers, From A Minister', p. 11.

<sup>288</sup> Durham, 'Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham', p. 6; cf. William Durham, 'Our Canadian Tour', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp. 5-6 (5); William Durham, 'The Miraculous, Instantaneous Healing Of Mabel Snipes, From Consumption', *PT* 1.5 (Jul 1910), pp. 6-7 (6); Durham, 'Manifestations Number II', p. 7; Durham, 'How The Work Is Progressing', p. 15; William Durham, 'The Great Revival At Azusa Street Mission – How It Began And How It Ended', *PT* 1.8 (Aug 1911), pp. 1-4 (3); Durham, 'The Winnipeg Convention', p. 11; William Durham, 'Los Angeles Convention', *PT* 2.1 (Jan 1912), pp. 12-13 (13).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
in glossolalia other than to say it is not ‘ecstatic’,<sup>289</sup> that the Holy Spirit speaks through  
the individual,<sup>290</sup> and one should not seek tongues but SB.<sup>291</sup>

#### IV. Pre-Assemblies of God – *Word and Witness.*

##### A. Eudorus N. Bell.

Eudorus N. Bell was ‘one of the better educated Pentecostals during this period’.<sup>292</sup> He sought and received his SB during a requested leave of absence from his Baptist church.<sup>293</sup> His first Pentecostal pastorate was in Malvern, AK during which time he became the editor of WW.<sup>294</sup> He would be among the first to call for the organization of the AG and was elected as its first general chairman.<sup>295</sup> ‘When he was rebaptized during the early years of the Oneness controversy, it both shocked and pleased Pentecostals who were divided over the issue. Trinitarians, however, were relieved when he returned to their camp.’<sup>296</sup> Brumback believed Bell flip-flopped because of spiritual

---

<sup>289</sup> Durham, ‘Doctor Dixon Answered’, p. 13.

<sup>290</sup> Durham, ‘The Gospel Of Christ’, p. 8.

<sup>291</sup> Durham, ‘A Word To Ministers, From A Minister’, p. 11. The full quote reads, ‘is the baptism in the Holy Spirit the finishing touch of a Christian experience? ... No. It is the *top layer of the foundation* of such an experience ... they are exhorted to go on to perfection’.

<sup>292</sup> Wayne E. Warner, ‘Eudorus N. Bell’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 369. He attended ‘Stetson University in the 1890s, Southern Baptist Theological Seminary (1900-1902), and the University of Chicago (B.A., 1903)’.

<sup>293</sup> While Bell was a pastor in Fort Worth, TX, he received his SB at North Avenue Mission, Chicago, IL, under the ministry of Durham, Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 69; cf. E.N. Bell, ‘Testimony Of A Baptist Pastor’, *PT* (Mar 1909), pp. 8-10 (10); E.N. Bell, ‘Sermon Given By Bro. E.N. Bell’, *WE* 113 (Oct 30, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>294</sup> Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 164.

<sup>295</sup> A position Bell held in 1914 and again in 1920-23. He also served as General Secretary 1919-1920 and pastored from 1917-1919, Warner, ‘Eudorus N. Bell’, p. 369.

<sup>296</sup> Warner, ‘Eudorus N. Bell’, p. 369; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 195-99; Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 114-18. Even though Bell ‘published articles and editorials denouncing the New Issue ... he accepted baptism in the name of Jesus Christ as a valid alternative, (but) opposed any requirement to be rebaptized’, Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 937. In the summer 1915 he was rebaptized at a camp meeting in Jackson, TN, Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 195-96. By November, 1915, Flower wrote that Bell had ‘been desiring to be released from the editorial chair for one year, and offered his resignation’, J.R. Flower, ‘A Change of Editors’, *WW* 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 4. Eventually, it was Bell’s ‘firm Trinitarian belief’ that kept him ‘from enlisting in the new movement’. By the 3<sup>rd</sup> General Council, Fall 1916, Bell was back in favour with the AG when it was ‘faced with the

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia exhaustion and the desire to have a successful meeting.<sup>297</sup> Menzies stated, ‘he had been swept away out of fear of losing influence’.<sup>298</sup>

## B. ‘The Evidence’.

‘The evidence’ or the ‘bible evidence’<sup>299</sup> in the WW was a ‘great essential doctrine’<sup>300</sup> that ‘does for us exactly what it did for’ the earliest Christians.<sup>301</sup> At times, WW reads as though the discussion was beyond ‘the evidence’, at least by its contributors. For example, ‘the sign of receiving the baptism is, *beyond controversy*, (it is) speaking in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance’.<sup>302</sup> O.P. Brann wrote that his SB was ‘such a clear definite evidence ... I can positively say no one receiving the experience will ever again have a shadow of doubt about this being the evidence and sign God has set’.<sup>303</sup> Nevertheless, contributors reaffirmed that the sign value of tongues was scriptural, that it was the ‘first of the gifts’ among multiple experiences, and that the terminology used to express it was insufficient.<sup>304</sup>

The evidence was so thoroughly believed to be biblical that the testimonies in WW developed a unique ‘shorthand’ to signify this rootedness. The most frequently used shorthand phrase was ‘as in Acts 2.4’. For example, Harry Van Loon testified that

---

unpleasant task of setting doctrinal limits’ contrary to a founding principle that it would not create an organization ‘that legislates or forms laws and articles of faith’, Warner, ‘Eudorus N. Bell’, p. 938.

<sup>297</sup> ‘He found himself “in a corner” ... Bell had been working day and night ... (which) made it almost impossible for him to pray ... At the camp meeting, Bell received the impression that, if he did not preach Acts 2:38, the camp would be the worst’, and the meeting went ‘flat’ so he announced his baptism, Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 199.

<sup>298</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 118.

<sup>299</sup> The preferred nomenclature is ‘the evidence’, with quite a few references to the ‘bible evidence’. One time Bell states, ‘THE SPEAKING IN OTHER TONGUES AS THE SPIRIT OF GOD GIVE THE UTTERANCE IS THE INDISPUTABLE EVIDENCE OF THE BAPTISM WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT’, E.N.B., ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Spirit’, WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 7.

<sup>300</sup> L.C. Hall, ‘The Great Crisis Near at Hand’, WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>301</sup> Geo. G Brinkman, WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), pp. 1-2 (1).

<sup>302</sup> C.W. Doney, ‘The Gospel Of The Kingdom’, WW 10.3 (Mar 20, 1914), p. 2. Italics mine. Consider Pinson’s remark, ‘all the leading preachers and workers stood together that ... when God saves a man he is ready for baptism in the Spirit and when baptized he will speak in tongues’, M.M. Pinson, ‘Trip to the Southwest’, WW 8.6 (Aug 20, 1912), p. 1.

<sup>303</sup> O.P. Brann, ‘O.P. Brann Baptized’, WW 10.3 (Mar 20, 1914), p. 4.

<sup>304</sup> Andrew L. Fraser, ‘A Contrast in Values’, WW 10.8 (Aug, 1914), p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

'fifteen on this one day were baptized in the Spirit and came through speaking in other tongues *as in Acts 2:4*'.<sup>305</sup> Other shorthand phrases were, 'as the Spirit gave utterance',<sup>306</sup> 'as in Acts 10:44-46',<sup>307</sup> as 'in Acts 2:4; 10:45; and 19:16',<sup>308</sup> 'as they did on the day of Pentecost',<sup>309</sup> 'as at first',<sup>310</sup> 'according to the book of Acts',<sup>311</sup> and the phrase, 'Bible evidence'.<sup>312</sup> Contrary to those who labelled glossolalia the 'TONGUE HERESY' and the 'DELUSION OF THE DEVIL', J.E. Longdon challenged his readers to 'read the following references in your Bible, and hear God's own answer to this question'.<sup>313</sup> Longdon then noted there were 'three witnesses' in Acts: Jews, Romans, and Greeks 'all alike at once spoke with other tongues when baptized with the Holy Ghost'.<sup>314</sup>

---

<sup>305</sup> Harry Van Loon, 'Oakland, Cal.', WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 1. This phrase was used extensively, cf. Editor, 'God Working Still In The land', WW 8.10 (Dec 20, 1912), p. 3; 'Bro Sweaza, MO', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 3; J.M.C., 'Paxton, Fla.', WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), p. 3; Carry Dyer, 'Charlton, Iowa', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 1.

<sup>306</sup> 'Glory In Unity At The Eureka Springs Camp!', WW 8.6 (Aug 20, 1912), p. 1; Herbert Buffum, 'Topeka, Kan', WW 9.5 (May 20, 1913), p 3; M.M. Pinson, 'Cazadero Camp Meeting', WW 10.10 (Oct, 1914), p. 1; E.F Cunningham And Wife, 'Maud, ILL', WW 12.9 (Sep 1915), p. 3.

<sup>307</sup> F.R. Anderson, 'Morgan Center, IA', WW 9.3 (Mar 20, 1913), p. 2; Wm. A. Summers, 'Sinners Deeply Convicted', WW 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 8; W.T. Robbins, 'Prayer Answered', WW 12.8 (Aug 1915), p. 2; Wm. T. Robbins, 'God Wonderfully Works At Fagan, KY.', WW 12.9 (Sep 1915), p. 7.

<sup>308</sup> M.M. Pinson, 'Sanctified In Christ', WW 9.1 (Jan 20, 1913), p. 4; Clyde Bailey, 'Grand View, Ind.', WW 10.3 (Mar 20, 1914), p. 1; Editor, 'A New Creation', WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 2; 'All Round Christians', WW 9.1 (Jan 20, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>309</sup> F.M. Couch 'God Working In Egypt', WW 8.6 (Aug 20, 1912), p. 3; cf. Daniel C.O. Opperman, 'Gleanings From The Foreign Mission Field', WW 9.5 (May 20, 1913), p. 4; Wm H. Me, 'Topeka Camp Glorious', WW 10.10 (Oct, 1914), p. 1.

<sup>310</sup> 'Frank Denney', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 6.

<sup>311</sup> Mrs. F.L.P., 'Osborne, Kan.', WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), p. 3.

<sup>312</sup> S.A. Jamieson, 'God Still In Dallas', WW 9.2 (Feb 20, 1912), p. 2; Mary DeWeese, 'Springfield, MO', WW 9.5 (May 20, 1913), p. 3; Mrs. Annie Green, 'Baptized 28 Years Ago', WW 10.1 (Jan 20, 1914), p. 2; W.M. Coleman, 'The Mountain Work', WW 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 7.

<sup>313</sup> J.E. Longdon, 'Are Tongues A Heresy?', WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 6.

<sup>314</sup> Longdon, 'Are Tongues A Heresy?', p. 6. Here Longdon alludes to Moses' requirement for multiple witnesses in Deut. 17.6; 19.15 (cf. Mt. 18.16; 2 Cor. 13.1; and Heb. 10.28), but he expands this concept from the witness of three individuals to the three people groups of Jews, Romans, and Greeks in Acts 2.4; 10.44-47; 19.2. Longdon also includes Jn 15.26 in this list. Cf. 'The Sign Will Follow', WW 9.10 (Oct 20, 1913), p. 2.

Similar to other Pentecostal periodicals, there were testimonies in WW that came close to full SB but fell just short of glossolalic speech.<sup>315</sup> For example, 'my wife also nearly received hers. The Spirit moved her lips and whispering the words (sic)'<sup>316</sup> and 'one who had utterance in tongues before but not fully satisfied, has come out fully'.<sup>317</sup> E.N. Bell noted that he had multiple experiences before his SB.<sup>318</sup> After differentiating between the evidence and gift of tongues, Andrew L. Fraser wrote that tongues 'is not the least of the gifts, but it is the first of the gifts ... it is the steppingstone ... to higher things'.<sup>319</sup> Glossolalia was the entry point to 'greater responsibility'.<sup>320</sup> Also, 'unscriptural methods', such as having a candidate repeat a sound or phrase over and over until they spoke gibberish was condemned.<sup>321</sup> Likewise counterfeits were rejected.<sup>322</sup> The seeker was encouraged that yieldedness was critical to receiving their SB.<sup>323</sup>

Bell acknowledged that the terminology regarding glossolalia was affecting the theological discussion. For example,

the phraseology (of the evidence) is often woefully at fault ... to declare, without modification, that just tongues is always the certain evidence of the baptism with the Holy Ghost leaves the way open for every devil possessed or demon possessed person in the world to claim the baptism of the Holy Ghost ... we advocates of this

---

<sup>315</sup> W.H. Standley, 'Wortharrying For', *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3; W.P. Benefield, 'Midland City, Ala.', *COGE* 1.16 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 8; Mrs. Brinson-Rushire, 'Taiafu, Shantung, China', *COGE* 6.44 (Oct 30, 1915), p. 3; 'Another One Gone', *COGE* 8.4 (Jan 27, 1917), p. 3; Bartley L. Hicks, 'A Spiritual House', *COGE* 11.47 (Nov 27, 1920), p. 4; and Flower, 'The Apostolic Question Box', p. 9.

<sup>316</sup> J.G. Gray, 'His Wedding Garments', *WW* 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>317</sup> W.W. Simpson, 'W.W. Simpson', *WW* 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 6.

<sup>318</sup> 'Those who thus press on with God, walking in the Spirit of holiness, will have many blessed experiences ... the writer had fully half a dozen blessed experiences while seeking the baptism, and very many more since', Editor, 'A New Creation', p. 2; cf. 'Editorials – Avoid Extremes', *WW* 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>319</sup> Fraser, 'A Contrast In Values', p. 3. Bold original.

<sup>320</sup> Fraser, 'A Contrast In Values', p. 3.

<sup>321</sup> P.M. Stokely, 'Is It You?', *WW* 9.8 (Aug 20, 1913), pp. 2-3 (2).

<sup>322</sup> A.S. Worrell, 'Wonderful Times Coming', *WW* 10.7 (Jul 20, 1914), p. 1; Editor of *Baptist Watchman*, 'Speaking With Tongues', *WW* 9.10 (Oct 20, 1913), p. 4. Bell even called for healings to be verified before submitting them for publishing, as 'a single mistake of this kind in print discredits hundreds of genuine testimonies in the same paper', E.N. Bell, 'Revival News in Home Land', *WW* 9.10 (Oct 20, 1913), p. 2; cf. Editor, 'Exaggerations', *WW* 9.2 (Feb 20, 1912), p. 3.

<sup>323</sup> Brann, 'O.P. Brann Baptized', p. 4; E.N.B., 'A Statement', *WW* 12.6 (Jun, 1915), p. 4.

truth *must hedge about more carefully our statements* about tongues being the evidence of the baptism.<sup>324</sup>

Bell advised including the phrase, ‘as the Spirit of God gives utterance’ as a qualifying phrase. Further, such terminology must also be accompanied by a life of ‘love, joy, holiness, obedience to God … (to) show that they are true, clean children of God’.<sup>325</sup> Finally, the experience with God was only a beginning and was beyond words:

we thank God for the waves of power and glory that sweep over and envelop our being in this blessed experience … *when no longer words in our vocabulary can do justice* to the occasion, and we ‘begin to speak in other tongues as the spirit gives utterance’ … But this experience is not the end of Christian development. It is only the beginning of a life in which the Holy Ghost has undertaken to work out God’s purpose in us.<sup>326</sup>

### C. Critics and Intramural Theological Pressures.

Outside theological pressure caused Pentecostals to address cessation, while within Pentecostalism there was an intramural debate between the WH and FW positions of sanctification. In WW, one can see another intramural theological debate emerge that brought pressure on glossolalia: the ‘New Issue (Oneness)’.<sup>327</sup>

#### 1. Cessationism.

Though cessationism was addressed occasionally in articles only one editorial by Bell responded directly to cessationism.<sup>328</sup> W.T. Gaston added that tongues were scriptural and that cessationists ‘err greatly, NOT KNOWING THE SCRIPTURES’.<sup>329</sup> Gaston and Bell explained that Paul in 1 Cor. 13.8-12, compared the coming ‘perfection’ as seeing Jesus face to face in contrast to today’s imperfect mirror or childlike-ignorance.<sup>330</sup> Bell parsed 1 Cor. 13.8 to mean that tongues

---

<sup>324</sup> E.N.B., ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Spirit’, p. 7. Italics mine.

<sup>325</sup> Bell, ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Spirit’, p. 7.

<sup>326</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘The Ministry Of The Spirit’, WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 6. Italics mine.

<sup>327</sup> Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, pp. 936-44; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 191-210; Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 111-21.

<sup>328</sup> Editor, ‘Editorials: Tongues Cease’, WW 10.10 (Oct, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>329</sup> He refers to: Isa. 28.11; 1 Cor. 14.21; Mk 16.17; Acts 2.4; 10.45-46; 19.6. W.T. Gaston, ‘The Unknown Tongues’, WW 9.3 (Mar 20, 1913), p. 4.

<sup>330</sup> Gaston, ‘The Unknown Tongues’, p. 4; Editor, ‘Editorials: Tongues Cease’, p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

and all the other gifts of the Spirit belong to this present age of imperfection, and are given for the building up and perfecting of the saints. When the saints get out of the present world TRAINING CAMP, are graduated into perfection, light and knowledge of Christ's presence on earth again, they will no longer need the tongues, and they shall cease, just as the word says. Not NOW, Paul says, but THEN!<sup>331</sup>

Other arguments to counter the claims of cessationists were: 1) one cannot ignore the testimony of present-day tongues-speakers;<sup>332</sup> 2) nor their godly character;<sup>333</sup> and 3):

there has been a growing tendency not only among critics, but also among Bible expositors generally, to eliminate the supernatural from the Bible as far as possible ... (and to) deny the miracles of Christ and the apostles ... how will they account for those who speak so as to be understood in languages which they had never learned?<sup>334</sup>

### 2. Sanctification.

WW followed other Pentecostal periodicals by distinguishing SB from sanctification. Pinson confessed his evolution of thought: 'yea, nearly all of us called it (sanctification) the baptism with the Holy Ghost; but when we found out we never had the baptism, we confessed our mistake like all honest people ought to do'.<sup>335</sup> The WH position of a second, instantaneous work of grace was not believed to be scriptural;<sup>336</sup> nevertheless, there were numerous calls for holy living after glossolalia. These calls sometimes blurred the distinction between the two camps. For example, Bell wrote:

hundreds are getting saved, baptized with the Spirit and talking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance ... so far so good, but what is next? ... CONTINUED CONSECRATION ... it is one thing to have an *instantaneous cleansing* of the heart and quite another thing to get wrought into the practice in everyday life and walk the truth implied in such heart cleansing.<sup>337</sup>

---

<sup>331</sup> Editor, 'Editorials: Tongues Cease', p. 2.

<sup>332</sup> Gaston, 'The Unknown Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>333</sup> Editor of *Baptist Watchman*, 'Speaking With Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>334</sup> Editor of *Baptist Watchman*, 'Speaking With Tongues', p. 4; cf. Editor, 'The Good Of Speaking With Tongues', WW 8.6 (Aug 20, 1912), p. 4.

<sup>335</sup> Pinson, 'Sanctified In Christ', p. 4; cf. 'Editorials – Avoid Extremes', WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>336</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Editorial – Cleansing And Holiness', WW 8.6 (Aug 20, 1912), p. 2; Pinson, 'Sanctified In Christ', p. 4.

<sup>337</sup> E.N.B. 'The Baptism, What Next', WW 9.5 (May 20, 1913), p. 2. Italics mine; cf. E.N.B. 'The Second Blessing', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Despite disagreement, there were several calls for unity despite disagreement. For example, Flower wrote that ‘unity of spirit was absolutely necessary in the realization of Pentecost, and it is absolutely necessary in the continuation of Pentecost. No unity – no Pentecost. Unity – Pentecost’.<sup>338</sup> H.M. Savage stated that because both sides ‘heal the sick, speak with tongues, and cast out demons … then they surely must have something from God … let us be careful how we speak of one of God’s children … the divisions and strifes (sic) are not of God’.<sup>339</sup>

### 3. The ‘New Issue (Oneness)’.<sup>340</sup>

The ‘new issue’, rooted in the Acts 2.38 baptismal formula, insisted that baptism was to be ‘in the name of Jesus’ to be salvific, thereby flouting the orthodox view of the Trinity.<sup>341</sup> Many articles in WW addressed the new issue and glossolalia became a secondary, but logical, part of the controversy.<sup>342</sup> WH Pentecostals viewed Durham’s FW theology as collapsing justification and sanctification into one event. Birthed by FW proponents<sup>343</sup> the new issue further collapsed Spirit-baptism into one event, making

---

<sup>338</sup> J.R.F., ‘Wiser Than Children Of Light’, WW 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 1; cf. Arch P. Collins, ‘To the Saints’, WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 2.

<sup>339</sup> H.M. Savage, ‘An Honest Inquiry’, WW 10.4 (Apr 20, 1914), p. 2. Bell published Savage’s article immediately after his own article on the FW. Bell then encourages his readers to ‘note’ Savage’s moderating tone and call for mutual respect, Editor, ‘The Finished Work’, WW 10.4 (Apr 29, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>340</sup> It was ‘originally called the “New Issue” or “Jesus Only,” by 1930 the movement’s self-designation was “Jesus Name,” “Apostolic,” or Oneness” Pentecostalism’, Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 936.

<sup>341</sup> ‘The name Jesus was the object of devotion. For many, the name itself became a source of spiritual power’, Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 936.

<sup>342</sup> J.R.F., ‘Wiser Than Children Of Light’, p. 1; E.N. Bell, ‘To Act In The Name Of Another’, WW 12.5 (May, 1915), pp. 2-3; The Executive Presbytery, ‘Preliminary Statement’, WW 12.6 (Jun, 1915), p. 1; E.N. Bell, ‘The Sad New Issue’, WW 12.6 (Jun, 1915), pp. 2-3; E.N. Bell, ‘The Great Outlook’, WW 12.6 (Jun, 1915), p. 4; E.N. Bell, ‘The “Acts” On Baptism In Christ’s Name Only’, WW 12.7 (Jul, 1915), pp. 1-2; E.N.B., ‘Scriptural Varieties On Baptismal Formula’, WW 12.7 (Jul, 1915), pp. 3, 6; E.N. Bell, ‘There Is Safety In Counsel’, WW 12.10 (Oct, 1915), p. 1. Brumback believes the first response to the new issue came from Bell in WE 83 (Mar 27, 1915), Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 191-210 (193-94). There is an untimely gap of extant issues of WW between November, 1914 and April, 1915.

<sup>343</sup> ‘The New Issue pioneers had been disciples of Durham’ and though he tried to draw attention to Christ’s atoning work, he ‘also sowed the seeds of a radical Christocentric alternative that reasoned that, if there is only one name (Jesus) to be used in baptism, that name must be given by God in biblical revelation, and it must reflect the radical unity of God’s being’, Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, pp. 936-37.

justification, sanctification and SB a single event that was evidenced by glossolalia. For example, ‘some want us to teach a man is not a child of God until he gets the baptism of the Holy Ghost. This is clearly unscriptural.’<sup>344</sup> Even before the AG was formed, many determined that ‘there is not one hint of tongues being the evidence of regeneration or the new birth’.<sup>345</sup> Further, even though the disciples waited in Jerusalem following Jesus’ command,

it is never once necessary *in a special formula* to invoke the name of Jesus Christ in order for one filled with and under the power the Spirit to speak in there (sic) supernatural tongues … a little prayer to the Father or a little praise to Jesus serving just as well to make them break forth to speaking with other tongues, as any special invoking of any particular name ever could do.<sup>346</sup>

#### D. Purposes for Glossolalia.

Like other Pentecostal periodicals listed above, glossolalia enhanced prayer<sup>347</sup> and was a sign that the believer had spiritual power to ‘vanquish all the forces of hell and possess the land’.<sup>348</sup> However, there was only one article that addressed the purpose of tongues directly. In that article, it was significant that Bell began with tongues as ‘one of the Christian “signs” … a sign of faith *not the only sign*, but one of them … they are a sign that the gift of the Holy Spirit has been poured out upon the speaker’.<sup>349</sup> Clearly, in his mind, the evidence was one of the primary purposes for tongues. He then restated what many other Pentecostals have written before, that tongues play a role in bringing the lost to Christ:

---

<sup>344</sup> Editor, ‘Sonship and the Baptism’ WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 4; cf. Presbyters, ‘Personal Statement’, WW 12.10 (Oct, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>345</sup> Editor, ‘The New Birth And The Baptism With The Spirit’, WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 2; cf. Seely D. Kinne, ‘The New Birth And The Baptism’, WW 10.1 (Jan 20, 1914), p. 3; Fraser, ‘A Contrast In Values’, p. 3. The Holy Spirit was resident in the disciples before the Day of Pentecost in some fashion, but the Spirit came ‘in a *new way* on that day’, Editor, ‘The New Birth And The Baptism With The Spirit’, p. 2. Italics mine. This premise begs the question, just how does the Holy Spirit indwell before and after SB? Especially when Bell writes, ‘without this baptism in the Spirit one is left in an ABNORMAL condition what Jesus calls in John 14:18 “comfortless” or “orphans”’, Editor, ‘Sonship and the Baptism’, p. 4.

<sup>346</sup> Bell, ‘To Act In The Name Of Another’, p. 3.

<sup>347</sup> D.C.O.O. ‘Revival In Houston’, WW 9.3 (Mar 20, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>348</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘Onward, Yet Tested’, WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 6; cf. E.N.B., ‘A Statement’, p. 4.

<sup>349</sup> Editor, ‘The Good Of Speaking With Tongues’, p. 4.

tongues are for **sign** ... to them that **believe not** ... tongues are one of God's signs whereby he miraculously speaks to unbelievers. Many have, to the knowledge of the writer by this means, been turned to God and saved ... Reader, are you one that ... despite all God's miraculous talking to you through 'other tongues and lips' ye will not still believe?<sup>350</sup>

## E. The Nature of Glossolalia.

According to WW, tongues 'do not originate in our minds, but are indited (sic) by the Holy Ghost'.<sup>351</sup> They were 'ecstatic utterances, utterances which were probably unintelligible to the person himself, and which generally – not always – he was unable to interpret it to others'.<sup>352</sup> In other words, the person of the Holy Spirit enters into humankind and 'gives (them) power to speak in tongues or languages never learned'.<sup>353</sup>

### 1. Xenolalia and Language Study.

Many testified that they heard glossolalia in a known language. Once Bell added this note following a testimony: 'this Bro. is himself a Scandinavian and understands the Swedish himself, and ought certainly to know whether this woman was speaking in the Swedish or not'.<sup>354</sup> But at the same time there was no hint of MT.<sup>355</sup> In fact, Bell was relentless in his call for missionaries to 'settle down to learn the language'<sup>356</sup> and missionaries openly spoke of their need for learning the local language, their struggle

---

<sup>350</sup> Editor, 'The Good Of Speaking With Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>351</sup> Gaston, 'The Unknown Tongues', p. 4.

<sup>352</sup> Fraser, 'A Contrast In Values', p. 3.

<sup>353</sup> Geo. G Brinkman, WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), pp. 1-2 (1).

<sup>354</sup> Carl Carlson, 'Language Recognized', WW 9.9 (Sep 20, 1913), p. 1

<sup>355</sup> 'John and Dora Crouch', WW 9.2 (Feb 20, 1912), p. 2; R.L. Holmes, 'His Works in Arizona', WW 9.8 (Aug 20, 1913), p. 4; 'Lee Floyd, Texas', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 3; J.E. Simmons, 'Factoria, Kan.', WW 10.1 (Jan 20, 1914), p. 1; Samuel G. Garner, 'Samson, Ala.', WW 10.7 (Jul 20, 1914), p. 2; A.H. Argue, 'Great Blessings In Western Canada', WW 10.8 (Aug 1914), p. 3; Will C. Trotter, 'God Mightily Works In Portland', WW 12.6 (Jun, 1915), p. 3; Z.W. Bullock, 'Victory In Revival', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 5; W.M. Harrison, 'Understood In French', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 5.

<sup>356</sup> Editor, 'A Word to Foreign Missionaries', WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 3; cf. E.N.B., 'Too Much Returning. Why Is It? The Remedy', WW 9.9 (Sep 20, 1913), p. 2; E.N. Bell, 'God's Work in Foreign Lands', WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 4. Two other of Bell's guidelines for missionaries are reflected in standard AG practice today: 1) no privately owned property in foreign lands, E.N. Bell, 'Editor's Note', WW 9.7 (Jul 20, 1913), p. 1, and 2) 'it is more and more evident that some sort of system and testing missionaries according to the word of God shall prevail and only those should be approved for the foreign fields who first make good at home', E.N.B., 'Note', WW 10.4 (Apr 29, 1914), p. 4.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

with language study, and their admiration for those who knew the local language.<sup>357</sup> He noted that 'much harm is done and much false teaching given out by the interpreter misrepresenting to the people what the missionary has really said'.<sup>358</sup>

### 2. Heavenly Anthem.

Glossolalia could also be sung. Bosworth described the HA as 'beautiful poetry' sung 'extemporaneously under the inspiration and power of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>359</sup> Similar to other Pentecostal periodicals, the HA was readily accepted as divine song. For some, it was heaven come to earth. For example, 'last night the heavenly choir sang in a wonderful way',<sup>360</sup> or 'God ... let down the heavenly host to play and sing for us. Many of the saints and many sinners heard the heavenly choir'.<sup>361</sup> Others testified that the Holy Spirit enabled the singer to do things she could not do without a special anointing.<sup>362</sup> For example, 1) three testimonies noted that the HA was xenolalia;<sup>363</sup> 2) one

---

<sup>357</sup> WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 4; Hugh Cadwalader, 'The Staying Kind Needed in Egypt', WW 8.10 (Dec 20, 1912), p. 2; Elmer B. Hammond, 'God In Other Lands', WW 8.10 (Dec 20, 1912), p. 4; Hugh Cadwalader, 'Minieh, Egypt', WW 8.10 (Dec 20, 1912), p. 4; Sis. Harrison, 'Foreign Lands Feel His Presence', WW 9.1 (Jan 20, 1913), p. 2; Sister Aston, 'Foreign Lands Feel His Presence', WW 9.1 (Jan 20, 1913), p. 2; 'Bro. Faulkner', WW 9.2 (Feb 20, 1912), p. 2; Almyra Aston, 'From Sis. Aston', WW 9.3 (Mar 20, 1913), p. 1; Sarah A. Smith, 'Jerusalem, Palestine', WW 9.8 (Aug 20, 1913), p. 1; Almira Aston, 'Nowaganj, India', WW 9.9 (Sep 20, 1913), p. 4; Bro. Bass, 'From Bro. Bass', WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 3; Florence Bush, 'From Florence Bush', WW 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 3; H.A. Goss, 'On The Way', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 3; E.N. Bell, 'En Route To Persia', WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 4; 'John D. James', WW 10.4 (Apr 29, 1914), p. 4; 'W.F. Dugmore', WW 10.7 (Jul 20, 1914), p. 4; 'B.A. And Mrs. Schoeneich', WW 12.6 (Jun, 1915), p. 7; 'Paul D. Van Valen', WW 12.8 (Aug 1915), p. 3; 'W.D. Grier', WW 12.9 (Sep 1915), p. 6; 'Tommy F. Anderson', WW 12.9 (Sep 1915), p. 6; 'Mr. and Mrs. F.H. Gray', WW 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 6; 'Willa B. Lowther, China', WW 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 6.

<sup>358</sup> Editor, WW 10.4 (Apr 29, 1914), p. 4.

<sup>359</sup> F.F. Bosworth, 'The God Of All The Earth Working At Dallas', WW 8.10 (Dec 20, 1912), p. 1.

<sup>360</sup> Will C. Trotter, 'Manifestation Of glory In Portland, Ore.', WW 12.9 (Sep 1915), p. 7.

<sup>361</sup> A.B. Robinson and Wife, 'Opp, Alabama', WW 12.10 (Oct 1915), p. 5; cf. Maude M. Delany, 'God's Mighty Power', WW 8.8 (Oct 20, 1912), p. 3; A. Blackburn, 'Whitsuntide Convention At Sunderland, England', WW 10.7 (Jul 20, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>362</sup> D.G. Dailey, 'Baptist Minister's Experience', WW 10.1 (Jan 20, 1914), p. 3; Mrs. A.R. Flower, 'Indianapolis Tent Meeting', WW 10.7 (Jul 20, 1914), p. 2; A.W. Orwig, 'Program Versus The Holy Ghost And Vice Versa', WW 10.8 (Aug 1914), p. 2; Wm. H. Merrin, 'The City Stirred', WW 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 7; Pastor Geo. H. Hicks, 'Revival Now On', WW 12.10 (Oct 1915), p. 5.

<sup>363</sup> John A. Preston, 'Brookshire, Tex.', WW 9.10 (Oct 20, 1913), p. 3; cf. Josephine Planter, 'Tunis, N. Africa', WW 9.8 (Aug 20, 1913), p. 1; W.L. Wood, 'Bro. Wood In Los Angeles', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 5.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
'young girl' played the organ and sang in the Spirit under the power of God,<sup>364</sup> and 3) and one 'old war horse ... (who) can't sing a tune, not even a campfire tune, but oh the heavenly music that rolls from him in other tongues, verse after verse, while on his knees before the Lord'.<sup>365</sup> Finally, only the redeemed could join in singing the HA.<sup>366</sup>

## F. Testimonies.

In addition to testimonies that revealed a unique shorthand to explain the biblical rootedness of the evidence (noted above), two additional thoughts emerged from testimonies. First, two testimonies hinted at a rudimentary sacramentalism. For example, L.V. Roberts noted that 'several have also been healed through laying on of hands as in Mark 16:17–18 and handkerchiefs as in Acts 19:12'.<sup>367</sup> Roberts connected the sacred handkerchiefs and tongues speech in Acts and Mark as signs of God's 'fresh blaze'. Second, there was one testimony of deathbed glossolalia: 'as the end drew on heaven came so near that he saw the Golden city and heard the angels singing ... he passed on sweetly praising God in other tongues'.<sup>368</sup>

## V. The Assemblies of God – *The Pentecostal Evangel*.<sup>369</sup>

### A. History of the Assemblies of God.

'The Assemblies of God did not come into existence as a "pentecostalized" Holiness group';<sup>370</sup> rather, as early as 1909, there were loosely-affiliated clusters of independent

---

<sup>364</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Good Dothan Camp', WW 12.11 (Nov 1915), p. 3.

<sup>365</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Falfurrias, Tex.', WW 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 5.

<sup>366</sup> D.C.O. Opperman, 'God Stretching Out His Hand To Heal', WW 9.10 (Oct 20, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>367</sup> L.V. Roberts, 'Fresh Blaze In Indianapolis', WW 9.2 (Feb 20, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>368</sup> Chlora P. Johnson, 'Senath, MO', WW 9.8 (Aug 20, 1913), p. 2; cf. J.H. James, 'Asleep In Jesus', WW 10.4 (Apr 29, 1914), p. 1. Publication of death notifications was limited to 'well known' missionaries or minister after July, 1915, Editor, 'Pertaining To Death Notices', WW 12.7 (Jul 1915), p. 4.

<sup>369</sup> Because this periodical had several names during the period of this study, the abbreviation of *PE* will be used throughout the primary text and formal citations will be used in the footnotes.

<sup>370</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 160. It was 'neither locally defined nor organized around a Wesleyan view of holiness', E.L. Blumhofer and C.R. Armstrong, 'Assemblies of God', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 333-40 (333).

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Pentecostals all across the country<sup>371</sup> ‘who had come from Baptist backgrounds’<sup>372</sup> and would later embrace Durham’s FW theology. Their stated reasons for organizing in 1913 were: 1) a ‘better understanding’ of doctrine, 2) to ‘conserve the work’, 3) cooperation in foreign missions work, 4) to obey ‘*the laws of the land*’, and 5) ‘a general Bible Training School’.<sup>373</sup> Many believe that left unstated was the theological divergence from the WH view of sanctification and racial issues.<sup>374</sup> Their informal relationships were developed through camp meetings, short-term bible schools, and Pentecostal periodicals.<sup>375</sup>

---

<sup>371</sup> ‘By 1909 there were at least four regional associations of independent Pentecostal ministers and churches. Three of these employed the name “Apostolic Faith.” Parham’s original group in Kansas; the Crawford Fellowship in the Northwest; and the Texas-Arkansas group headed by E.N. Bell and H.A. Goss’, Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 90. The fourth group was named the ‘Church of God in Christ, but issued credentials separately from Mason’s group’, p. 91; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 152-56. Blumhofer and Armstrong added to these four the Elim Fellowship and CMA groups from New York, and Dowie’s Christian Catholic Church from Chicago, Blumhofer and Armstrong, ‘Assemblies of God’, p. 333. Blumhofer also includes Piper’s Stone Church and Durham’s North Avenue Mission, Chicago, IL as having significant regional followings, Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 199-200.

<sup>372</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 160; cf. p. 161. Perhaps, the explanation is as simple as those who ‘did not hold to a belief in a second work of grace after conversion … those who had been Baptists or Presbyterians’, Riss, ‘Finished Work Controversy’, p. 639.

<sup>373</sup> ‘General Convention Of Pentecostal Saints And Churches Of God In Christ’, WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 1. Italics original.

<sup>374</sup> On the one hand, though ‘many of these white ministers had been ordained by African-American Charles H. Mason of the Church of God in Christ, in reality, they were already having fellowship along racial lines. These two distinctions, one racial and one theological, led these Pentecostals to call for an organizational meeting’, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 160, cf. Alexander, *Black Fire*, pp. 177, 269-77; Howard N. Kenyon, ‘Black Ministers in the Assemblies of God’, *AG Heritage* (Spring, 1987), pp. 10-13, 20. On the other hand, history may never resolve the reason why Mason would even attend the founding council of the AG, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 35; cf. Willie T. Millsaps, ‘Willie T. Millsaps Remembers C.H. Mason at Hot Springs’, *AG Heritage* 4:2 (Summer 1984), p. 8. For example, it is curious that the *PE* quoted awkwardly Mason: Mason is ‘a real prophet of God … (who) blessed the council in its actions for God. So I repent. I have never seen anything *more manifestly approved* of God. Whatever the future may have in store for us none present doubted but that God was in our midst thus far, guiding, approving, and leading His people on’, ‘Hot Springs Assembly; God’s Glory Present’, WW 10.4 (Apr 20, 1914), p. 1; ‘General Council Special’, WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), p. 1. Italics and change of person original. The worst example of racial insensitivity in the early *PE* is: W.F. Carothers, ‘Attitude Of Pentecostal Whites To The Colored Brethren In The South’, *WE* 103 (Aug 14, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>375</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 87-92. Italics original.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The call for organization was first made by five men on Dec. 20, 1913 in WW,<sup>376</sup> but within three months, twenty-nine other ‘recognized Pentecostal leaders’ added their support.<sup>377</sup> Though Bell and Flower would remain influential, an egalitarian attitude prevailed at the beginning of the AG until a series of theological crises would cause the rise and fall of some of these early leaders.<sup>378</sup> These crises progressively shaped how the AG would codify glossolalia as SB’s IE, thus a brief review of these crises and the first, third, fourth, and sixth General Councils is necessary.<sup>379</sup>

First, there was a decidedly anti-organizational attitude<sup>380</sup> and it was feared that ‘reliance upon the might and power of ecclesiastical machinery would replace reliance upon the Spirit of God’.<sup>381</sup> Independent-minded ecclesiology could have scuttled

---

<sup>376</sup> ‘This call is for all the churches of God in Christ, to all Pentecostal or Apostolic Faith Assemblies who desire with united purpose to co-operate in love and peace to push the interest of the kingdom of God everywhere ... only for those saints who believe in the baptism with the Holy Ghost with sings (sic) following, Acts 2:4; 10:46; 19:6; Mark 16:16-1 (sic); 1 Cor. 12:8-11. Neither is this meeting for any captious, contrary, divisive or contentious person’, ‘General Convention Of Pentecostal Saints And Churches Of God In Christ’, WW 9.12 (Dec 20, 1913), p. 1. The five original signers were: Pinson, A.P. Collins, Goss, D.C.O. Opperman, and E.N. Bell.

<sup>377</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 200; cf. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 93.

<sup>378</sup> Blumhofer notes that with each theological crisis, leadership trended away from ‘Parham’s earlier colleagues’ to ‘men with backgrounds in the Christian Missionary Alliance ... a higher percentage of northern and Eastern men’, Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 236-37. This in turn ‘attracted new adherents who were pleased with the council’s trend toward doctrinal stability’, p. 238. The emerging leadership ‘began to distance itself from ... Pentecostals, like Ewart, Cook, or Frank Bartleman, who were essentially restless, unstable, and visionary, always pursuing more revelations’, p. 237. In the first four years, ten executive presbyters withdrew or had been dismissed from the AG, p. 243. cf. Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, p. 302.

<sup>379</sup> The second and fifth General Council were historically minor. The second General Council (November 15-29, 1914 at the Stone Church, Chicago, IL) notes significant growth and authorizes moving the publishing house to St. Louis from Findlay, OH. Cf. *Combined Minutes of the General Council* (St. Louis, MO: The Gospel Publishing House, 1914); Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 107; Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 211-13. The fifth General Council (September 9-14, 1917, St. Louis, MO) authorizes Bell to move the publishing from St. Louis, MO to Springfield, MO, Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 239.

<sup>380</sup> ‘We ... do not believe in identifying ourselves as, or establishing ourselves into, a sect, that is a human organization that legislates of forms laws and articles of faith and has jurisdiction over its members and creates unscriptural lines of fellowship and disfellowship’, *Minutes of the General Council* (Findlay, OH: The Gospel Publishing House, 1914), p. 4; cf. Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 199-200.

<sup>381</sup> Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 156-61.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia cooperation at the founding General Council;<sup>382</sup> however, ‘fear of hierarchical authority was dispelled by articulating the principle of local church autonomy’,<sup>383</sup> and the principle of being a ‘voluntary, cooperative fellowship’.<sup>384</sup> They ‘adopted neither a constitution nor a doctrinal statement’<sup>385</sup> and sought to use the bible alone as the sole authority.<sup>386</sup>

The new issue<sup>387</sup> presented itself as the second crisis. That issue was a West Coast ‘novelty until January, 1915, when Glen Cook undertook an evangelistic tour eastward’.<sup>388</sup> Then there were ‘wholesale defections’ with ‘nearly all the leaders of the Assemblies of God falling prey to the new enthusiasm in whole or in part’.<sup>389</sup> Bell and

---

<sup>382</sup> The first General Council was April 2-12, 1914, at the Grand Opera House in Hot Springs, AK, *Minutes of the General Council of the Assemblies of God* (Findlay, OH: The Gospel Publishing House, 1914); Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 97-105; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 156-57; Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 198-211.

<sup>383</sup> The AG’s purpose ‘is neither to legislate laws of government, nor usurp authority over said various Assemblies of God, nor deprive them of their Scriptural and local rights and privileges’, *Minutes of the General Council* (Findlay, OH: The Gospel Publishing House, 1914), p. 4; cf. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 95; Blumhofer and Armstrong, ‘Assemblies of God’, p. 334.

<sup>384</sup> Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 163.

<sup>385</sup> Blumhofer and Armstrong, ‘Assemblies of God’, p. 334; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 176-77. Though technically true, they did adopt a ‘Preamble and Resolution of Constitution’ that included a recognition of Jesus’ divinity and work of salvation, ‘Scriptures … as the all-sufficient rule for faith and practice’, and a call for unity, *Minutes of the General Council* (Findlay, OH: The Gospel Publishing House, 1914), p. 4.

<sup>386</sup> ‘In typical restorationist fashion, it (the AG) had refused to bind by creed, affirming simply that the Bible was its sufficient rule of faith and practice … (however interpretation was) not necessarily static. In a statement on doctrine, Bell articulated a view of Scripture that allowed “new light”: “We must keep our skylights open so as not to reject any new light God may throw upon the old Word. We must not fail to keep pace in life or teaching with the light from heaven,”’ Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 209; cf. ‘In Doctrines’, *CE* (Aug 1, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>387</sup> McAlister at the April, 1913 camp at Arroyo Seco observed that baptism was in the name of Jesus alone in the book of Acts, Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 221-23. This was picked up by John G. Scheppe and soon ‘led rapidly to the virtual denial of the Trinity, a type of Modal Monarchianism’, Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 111-12. Durham’s assistant Ewart, ‘spent nearly a year brooding over the implications of the new doctrine … (before he) preached his first “Jesus Only” sermon’, p. 112. Oneness proponents ‘gradually came to posit a three stage conversion experience’: repentance, ‘baptism in Jesus’ name, and SB were three elements of one experience. They further came to reject Orthodox language about the Trinity’, Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 225

<sup>388</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 113.

<sup>389</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 115; cf. Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 225.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Flower tried many things to bring unity. He carefully constructed articles in WW and the WE on baptism and doctrinal history.<sup>390</sup> The executive presbytery urged prayer<sup>391</sup> and offered an ‘official presbytery statement’ on rebaptism.<sup>392</sup> But, in the summer of 1915,<sup>393</sup> when Bell himself was rebaptized in Jesus’ name, Flower influenced the executive presbytery to call for a third Council.<sup>394</sup> The third General Council<sup>395</sup> decided to ‘wait patiently for another year before arriving at a definite conclusion, allowing time for prayerful study of the word of God’<sup>396</sup> and it ended on an ‘irenic note’.<sup>397</sup> Though this decision ‘staved off decisive action … it was not a permanent solution’.<sup>398</sup> However,

---

<sup>390</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 229-30. Cf. E.N. Bell, ‘Baptized Once For All’, WE 83 (Mar 27, 1915), pp. 1, 3; D.W. Kerr, ‘Spontaneous Theology’, WE 86 (Apr 17, 1915) p. 3; E.N. Bell, ‘To Act In The Name Of Another’, WE 88 (May 1, 1915), pp. 1-2; E.N. Bell, ‘To Act In The Name Of Another’, WE 89 (May 8, 1915), p. 1; E.N. Bell, ‘The Great Outlook’, WE 92 (May 29, 1915), pp. 3-4; E.N. Bell, ‘The Sad New Issue’, 93 (Jun 5, 1915), pp. 1, 3; E.N. Bell, ‘The “Acts” On Baptism In Christ’s Name Only’, WE 94 (Jun 12, 1915), pp. 1, 3; E.N. Bell, ‘Scriptural Varieties On Baptismal Formula’, WE 97 (Jul 3, 1915), pp. 1, 3.

<sup>391</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 230. They encouraged the constituency to ‘work these problems out on their knees before God and with the Bible in their hands’, E.N. Bell, ‘Editorial Statement’, WW 12.6 (Jun 1915), pp. 2-3.

<sup>392</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 231. Cf. The Executive Presbytery, ‘Preliminary Statement’, WE 91 (May 22, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>393</sup> The camp ran July 23 to August 1, 1915, H.G. Rogers, ‘The Third Interstate Encampment Of The Assemblies Of God, Jackson, Tenn’, WW 12.7 (Jul, 1915), p. 8.

<sup>394</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 115; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 197-98.

<sup>395</sup> October 1-10, 1915, Turner Hall, St. Louis, MO, ‘Minutes of the General Council’, (St. Louis, MO, 1915); cf. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 115-16; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 200-203.

<sup>396</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 234.

<sup>397</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, pp. 116, 117. They agreed that: 1) baptism was required of all Christians and that ‘slight variations’ in formula were inconsequential, 2) there was no scriptural example of ‘re-baptism’, 3) ‘re-baptizing should not be pressed upon the saints by the preacher’ except for the individual’s conscience and not the baptismal formula, itself, 4) division and strife would result from ‘requiring any fixed and invariable formula’, 5) guest ministers must respect the will of the local pastor in this matter, and 6) ‘this Council refuses to attempt to bind the consciences of men on this matter, refuses to draw any line of Christian fellowship or of ministerial fellowship on either side of the question over the matter of a baptismal formula, so long as the person concerned on either side keeps in a sweet Christian spirit, is not factious, does not tear up assemblies or does not disregard the Scriptural officers in charge of local assemblies. We extend to both sides a welcome hand of fellowship so long as they are Christian in spirit and in conduct, but if either side depart from such spirit and conduct we cannot fellowship such conduct or spirit’ ‘The Discussion of the Formula to be Used in Water Baptism’, *Minutes Of The General Council*, pp. 5-6.

<sup>398</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 116; cf. Blumhofer and Armstrong, ‘Assemblies of God’, p. 334.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

'Oneness proponents became more aggressive'<sup>399</sup> and a fourth General Council<sup>400</sup> was called. At this Council, 'in spite of a solemn vow expressed at Hot Springs that the Assemblies of God would never adopt a formal creed', they nevertheless drew up a statement of fundamental truths.<sup>401</sup> 'The doctrinal statement as adopted militated against the Oneness views', which resulted in 156 Oneness ministers withdrawing.<sup>402</sup>

The sixth General Council<sup>403</sup> in 1918, addressed SB's evidential glossolalia. In addition to being questioned and challenged in nearly every periodical reviewed above,<sup>404</sup> Fred F. Bosworth<sup>405</sup> published a tract that caused the issue to be formally addressed. This tract laid out practical<sup>406</sup> and two theological arguments against a

---

<sup>399</sup> Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 234. Blumhofer wrote, 'oneness people tended to regard themselves as more spiritual than those who failed to embrace their teaching', p. 235. Menzies wrote, 'appeared to be troublemakers, causes of dissension and discord', Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 117; cf. Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 203.

<sup>400</sup> October, 1916, at Bethel Chapel, St. Louis, MO, 'Minutes of the General Council' (St. Louis, MO, 1916); cf. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 118; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 204; Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 235-38.

<sup>401</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 118. It also sought to 'satisfy those with holiness sympathies as well' Blumhofer and Armstrong, 'Assemblies of God', p. 334.

<sup>402</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 120; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, p. 209; Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 236.

<sup>403</sup> Springfield, MO, September 4-11, 1918, 'Minutes of the General Council' (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1918); cf. Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 124; Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, pp. 239-43.

<sup>404</sup> Synan notes that Pentecostalism's antecedent, the FBHC 'did not claim it (tongues) as the only evidence', Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, p. 116; cf. Blumhofer and Armstrong, 'Assemblies of God', p. 335. There was a 'test case' in 1907 and 'A.G. Canada suggested that any of the gifts could be the immediate, empirical evidence', Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 125. So, in February, 1907, no mention was made of tongues as 'the crowning biblical evidence' yet when they preached in San Antonio, TX, 'they all likewise spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance', Goss, *The Winds of God*, p. 10; cf. pp. 101-104; Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 216-17. Menzies cites that his own mother was a part of a similar test case in Pittsburgh, PA, cf. p. 126, fn, #9.

<sup>405</sup> Bosworth was filled with the Spirit under Parham's ministry at Dowie's Zion City, IL. Later, he pioneered a church at the epicenter of a 1912 revival in Texas. He attended the first General Council and served as an executive presbyter from November, 1914 until his resignation in 1918, Richard M. Riss, 'Fred Francis Bosworth', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 439-40 (439).

<sup>406</sup> Non-theological arguments included: 1) 'I am absolutely certain that many who receive the most powerful baptism for service do not receive the manifestation of speaking in tongues. And I am just as certain ... that many who SEEMINGLY speak in tongues, are not, nor have ever been, baptized in the Spirit', Fred F. Bosworth, *'Do All Speak With Tongues?'* (New York, NY: The Christian Alliance Publishing

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

dogmatic glossolalic evidence: 1) ‘there is not a solitary passage of Scripture upon which to base this doctrine’,<sup>407</sup> because: a) the glossolalia at Pentecost and Corinth were identical in essence,<sup>408</sup> and b) tongues as a sign was not taught in any of the Epistles.<sup>409</sup> 2) Tongues are a sign for unbelievers and ‘FAITH is the evidence’ for believers.<sup>410</sup> There was ‘vigorous debate’ as the sixth General Council took up Bosworth’s challenge, but in the end, Bosworth ‘was gracious enough to not seek to press his views on the Council’.<sup>411</sup> The Council formally resolved that ‘we consider it inconsistent and unscriptural for any minister to hold credentials with us who thus attacks as error our distinctive testimony’.<sup>412</sup>

---

Company, n.d.), p. 3. cf. p. 4; 2) there are hundreds of great soul-winners throughout history ‘without the gift of tongues’, p. 5; 3) there are Spirit-baptized people who lack an ‘assuring faith’, p. 13; 4) mechanical methods are used to twist known language into glossolalia, pp. 15-16; 5) some people received ‘the gift of interpretation when they were baptized’, p. 19; and 6), the ‘shallowness and instability of many of the converts who profess the baptism’, p. 20.

<sup>407</sup> Bosworth, *‘Do All Speak With Tongues?’*, pp. 4, 8-14, 16-17. He believes it was ‘assumed from the fact that in three instances recorded in the Acts they spoke in tongues’ but this is not a ‘conclusive proof’, p. 9. Clearly, Bosworth reads Luke through a Pauline lens, and takes up the cessationist hermeneutic that God used tongues as a sign in Acts solely to show the advance of the gospel beyond the Jews and were not normative for the church, pp. 9-12.

<sup>408</sup> Bosworth, *‘Do All Speak With Tongues?’*, pp. 5-8. The xenolalia on the Day of Pentecost was ‘the real gift of tongues’ (6), and yet, ‘the greatest phase’ of speaking in tongues was ‘the spontaneous life of intercession … groanings that cannot be uttered’, pp. 20-21.

<sup>409</sup> Bosworth, *‘Do All Speak With Tongues?’*, p. 9; cf. pp. 8-13.

<sup>410</sup> Bosworth, *‘Do All Speak With Tongues?’*, pp. 10, 12-14. Bosworth does address Mk 16.17, which most Pentecostals used for Jesus’ endorsement of tongues. He writes that ‘Jesus … never taught the doctrine that all would speak in tongues’, p. 17. Because there is only one reception of the Holy Spirit, p. 14. Bosworth addresses Jn 15.26-27, but with a weak argument, p. 12.

<sup>411</sup> Menzies, *Anointed To Serve*, p. 129; cf. Blumhofer, *The Assemblies Of God*, p. 241.

<sup>412</sup> The full resolution reads, be it ‘resolved, That this Council considers it a serious disagreement with the Fundamentals for any minister among us to teach contrary to our distinctive testimony that the baptism of the Holy Spirit is regularly accompanied by the initial physical sign of speaking in other tongues, as the spirit of God gives the utterance, and that we consider it inconsistent and unscriptural for any minister to hold credentials with us who thus attack as error our distinctive testimony’, Minutes of the Sixth Annual Meeting of the General Council, ‘Saturday Afternoon, Sept. 7<sup>th</sup>, 1918’, pp. 7-8 (8).

## B. 'The Sign', and 'The Evidence'.

In the *PE*,<sup>413</sup> a vast amount of ink was used to promote, defend, and answer questions about evidential glossolalia; it was the 'great essential doctrine' of the AG:<sup>414</sup> 'if ... we are wrong in our position', wrote Flower, 'the denominational bodies would possibly take us in if we would drop this one point of contention ... the very life of the Pentecostal movement hinges on this point'.<sup>415</sup> The following paragraphs attempt to systematize the arguments about the sign from numerous articles within the *PE*.

### 1. The Nature and Limitations of Tongues as a Sign.

First, there was consideration about the nature and limitations of tongues as a symbol. Salib Boulos concluded that biblically, 'speaking in tongues has an interconnection with the baptism of the Holy Spirit'.<sup>416</sup> That interconnection was 'the Holy Ghost, coming upon us, and into us ... He announced his arrival and His presence by speaking through these disciples in other tongues as He gave them utterance. (*Acts 2:4.*)'.<sup>417</sup> Or, as

---

<sup>413</sup> 'Evidence' was the most common scientific term used. However, there are examples like W.H. Pope who noted that tongues were 'the **immediate result**' of SB, W.H. Pope, 'Why I Believe All Who Receive The Full Baptism Will Speak In Other Tongues', *CE* 244 & 245 (Jun 15, 1918), pp. 6-7 (7). Bold original. W.T. Gaston noted that when the Ephesian disciples in Acts 19 spoke in tongues, it was 'as a direct first result of the SAME CAUSE', SB, W.T. Gaston, 'The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost', *CE* 296 & 297 (Jul 12, 1919), pp. 1-2, 9 (9). Note the scientific terminology even with human senses: 'it is not reason nor philosophy that makes you recognize rain is rain in the natural; it is the evidence of your senses', A.E.L., 'Pictures Of Pentecost In The Old Testament', *WE* 212 (Oct 27, 1917), pp. 6-7.

<sup>414</sup> L.C. Hall, 'The Great Crisis Near at Hand', *WW* 9.11 (Nov 20, 1913), p. 1. Durham called it the 'pivotal doctrine', Wm. H. Durham, 'What Is The Evidence Of the Baptism Of The Holy Ghost', *CE* 250 & 251 (Aug 10, 1918), pp. 2-3 (2). This article was later published as a tract: *Wm. H. Durham, What Is the Evidence?* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, nd). Sisson argued that the movement's growth 'with all this hedge of weirdness, mysticism, and unpopularity about them' in some way confirms its truthfulness, Elizabeth Sisson, 'A Sign People – What Meaneth This?', *CE* 270 & 271 (Jan 11, 1919), pp. 2-3, 9 (2).

<sup>415</sup> J.R. Flower, 'The Evidence Of The Baptism', *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), p. 4. The temptation to compromise on this point must have been tremendous. McPherson reportedly said, 'they will build me tabernacles from coast-to-coast if I will just shade my message a little and not insist on the speaking in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance as the accompanying outward evidence of the Spirit's invisible presence', S.H.F., 'From The Pentecostal Viewpoint', *PE* 350 & 51 (Jul 24, 1920), p. 8.

<sup>416</sup> Salib Boulos, 'In Defense Of The Truth', *PE* 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), pp. 10-11 (11).

<sup>417</sup> A.A. Boddy, 'The Holy Ghost For Us', *WE* 205 (Sep 1, 1917), pp. 1-2, 8 (2); cf. Durham, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 3; E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers', *PE* 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), p. 5; Mrs. Frank Hodges, 'The Enemies In The Land', *PE* 328 & 329 (Feb 21, 1920), pp. 6-7 (6).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia colloquially stated, ‘He spoke for Himself’.<sup>418</sup> Boulos added that ‘the sign is not the thing it signifies. So, tongues are not the baptism, but the evidence’.<sup>419</sup> Aimee Semple McPherson crafted two poignant illustrations to help readers understand this distinction: 1) a restaurant and its sign. Just as the restaurant’s sign does not satisfy hunger, ‘so (too) tongues are just an outward sign that indicate the presence within of the blessed Spirit of God … when you are filled with him, the signs will most certainly follow’.<sup>420</sup> 2) Just as a stamp on an envelope is not the letter itself, tongues ‘were a necessary appendage to the baptism’.<sup>421</sup> Therefore, one ‘must not seek the sign, but the divine person Himself; not the “Tongues,” but the Holy Comforter. The sign will follow’.<sup>422</sup>

## 2. Who is the Sign For?

Second, exactly who the sign was for became an issue because, 1) the cessationist argument limited its sign value to the early church, and 2) others insisted that because tongues were a ‘sign for unbelievers’ (or the Jews)<sup>423</sup> there was no need for any evidence because faith was the sole evidence for believers.<sup>424</sup> A minority opinion was that tongues were a sign of judgment for unbelievers;<sup>425</sup> however, most contributors to the

---

<sup>418</sup> ‘F.H. Gray and Wife’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 4; A.P. Collins, ‘A Baptized Baptist Preacher’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 1; Pastor Earl W. Clark, ‘Italians Receive The Spirit In Washington, D.C.’, *WE* 130 (Mar 11, 1916), p. 13; Alma, ‘And Your Daughters Shall Prophecy’, *WE* 142 (Jun 3, 1916), p. 11.

<sup>419</sup> Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, p. 11.

<sup>420</sup> S.H.F., ‘From The Pentecostal Viewpoint’, p. 8.

<sup>421</sup> Aimee Semple McPherson, ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost’, *PE* 312 & 313 (Nov 1, 1919), pp. 6-7 (7).

<sup>422</sup> Boddy, ‘The Holy Ghost For Us’, p. 2; cf. B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article VII(a) – The Gift of Tongues, and the Pentecostal Movement’, *WE* 142 (Jun 3, 1916), pp. 4-6 (5); David H. McDonnell, ‘The Pentecostal Baptism – Its Foundation’, *CE* 282 & 283 (Apr 5, 1919), pp. 2-3 (2); Stanley H. Frodsham, ‘Why We Know The Present Pentecostal Movement Is Of God’, *CE* 300 & 301 (Aug 9, 1919), p. 4-5 (5). C.E.R. believed that some people tended to ‘rely upon the gifts or emotions solely as evidence of equipment for service’; however, ‘the “gifts” are but a stimulus to the awakening and not an anchor to hold us in steady uniformity for real service’, C.E.R., ‘Spiritual Intoxication’, *CE* 76 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>423</sup> Kellner, ‘The One True Baptism’, p. 6.

<sup>424</sup> B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article VII(b) – The Gift of Tongues, and the Pentecostal Movement’, *WE* 143 (Jun 10, 1916), pp. 4-7 (4); W.W. Simpson, ‘The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense’, *WE* 198 (Jul 14, 1917), pp. 2-6 (5); A.E.L., ‘Pictures Of Pentecost In The Old Testament’, *WE* 212 (Oct 27, 1917), pp. 6-7 (7).

<sup>425</sup> R.W. Hudson, ‘The Personality of the Holy Spirit and Other Observations’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 3.

*PE* insisted that tongues were a sign for both unbelievers and believers.<sup>426</sup> For example, ‘not only will you know when the Holy Ghost comes in to abide, but the onlooker will see you shake under the power of God and hear you speak with tongues’.<sup>427</sup> Consider the urgency here: ‘if God’s people fail in these dark days to give the unbeliever this sign, who will give it to him?’<sup>428</sup> Boulos asked ‘when did they (the first Christians) know that the promise was fulfilled? The answer is plain from the book of Acts.’<sup>429</sup> The believer was assured that he received the same gift as the first Christians because he received the same sign.<sup>430</sup> The sign signified that ‘the blessed Spirit (was) in control’.<sup>431</sup>

### 3. Biblical Support

Third, a major discussion concerned the biblical support for signs. Glossolalia was frequently called the ‘bible sign’. For example, Bell wrote,

the baptism in the Holy Spirit, (is) accompanied now, as in Bible times, always with the speaking in tongues ... something miraculous will happen to cause you and all others present to know from the **Bible sign** that you have ‘**received the Holy Ghost**’.<sup>432</sup>

Though ‘no passage out and out says it is necessary for tongues to accompany the baptism in the Holy Ghost’, acknowledged W.H. Pope ‘yet we believe the Bible *incidentally teaches it* nevertheless’.<sup>433</sup> Primarily, most authors in the *PE* followed the pattern from the book of Acts for the defence of evidential tongues:<sup>434</sup> ‘in the 2<sup>nd</sup>, 10<sup>th</sup>

---

<sup>426</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘The Baptism According to Acts 2:4’, *CE* 302 & 303 (Aug 23, 1919), p. 3.

<sup>427</sup> John Kellner, ‘The One True Baptism With The Holy Ghost’, *CE* 300 & 301 (Aug 9, 1919), pp. 6-7 (6).

<sup>428</sup> A.H. Argue, ‘Is Speaking With New Tongues An Essential Sign?’, *PE* 358 & 359 (Sep 18, 1920), p. 2-3.

<sup>429</sup> Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, p. 10.

<sup>430</sup> Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 6; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #903’, *PE* 366 & 367 (Nov 19, 1920), p. 5.

<sup>431</sup> Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 7; Durham, ‘What Is The Evidence’, p. 2.

<sup>432</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues’, *WE* 84 (Apr 3, 1915), pp. 3-4 (3).

<sup>433</sup> Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 6. Italics mine.

<sup>434</sup> Bell, ‘Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues’, pp. 3-4; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #95 & 96’, *WE* 157 (Sep 16, 1916), p. 8; G.R. Polman, ‘As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance’, *WE* 178 (Feb 24, 1917), pp. 5-6 (5); Simpson, ‘The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense’, p. 4; Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 7; Durham, ‘What Is The Evidence’, p. 2; Gaston, ‘The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost’, p. 2; Frodsham, ‘Why We Know’, p. 5; Kellner, ‘The One True Baptism’, p. 6; Boulos, ‘In Defense

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

and 19<sup>th</sup> chapters of Acts it plainly states that all who received the baptism ... spoke in other tongues'.<sup>435</sup> 'Three times in this one letter of Acts,' wrote Pope, 'it describes how they acted or what they did when the Spirit comes, each time telling of the tongues'.<sup>436</sup> J. Tunmore called it 'the **divine pattern** of the baptism of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>437</sup> Bell and others claimed that

there is **not one case in the New Testament** where a believer ever spoke with tongues for the **first time**, except when the Spirit first came upon him ... the Bible points out as the sign that which is **always is** the sign – **not the gift of tongues**, but the speaking only as the Holy 'Spirit gives utterance'.<sup>438</sup>

McPherson noted that on the Day of Pentecost,<sup>439</sup>

the first evidence He gave of His indwelling was to speak through their lips (giving utterance Himself), in other tongues – languages they had never learned ... You will never find an instance where the Spirit spoke through a human being in tongues up to this time ... (and) it had been prophesied by Isaiah.<sup>440</sup>

To these early Pentecostals, the pattern from Acts proved that 'the outpouring which took place on the day of Pentecost can and shall be repeated'.<sup>441</sup>

After the pattern from Acts, Isa. 28.11-12 and 1 Cor. 14.21 were frequently cited to prove that God said '*He would speak to this people* by stammering lips and another tongue' as a sign.<sup>442</sup>

---

Of The Truth', p. 10; Arch P. Collins, 'Review Of Dr. W.B. Riley's Tract "Speaking With Tongues"', *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), pp. 8-9 (8); Argue, 'An Essential Sign?', p. 2.

<sup>435</sup> B.F. Lawrence, 'Article II – Modern Tongues in Bible Light', *WE* 122 (Jan 8, 1916), pp. 4-5 (4).

<sup>436</sup> Pope, 'Why I Believe', p. 7.

<sup>437</sup> J. Tunmore, 'Some Good Things Said At The Recent Council', *CE* 256 & 257 (Oct 5, 1918), p. 3. Bold original.

<sup>438</sup> Bell, 'Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues', p. 4; cf. Pope, 'Why I Believe', p. 7; Boulos, 'In Defense Of The Truth', p. 11.

<sup>439</sup> There is an interesting interpretation of the Day of Pentecost in the *PE*: glossolalia occurred in the upper room and then the apostles went outside and spoke xenolalia before the people, Pope, 'Why I Believe', p. 7; cf. Polman, 'As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance', p. 5; Simpson, 'The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense', p. 5.

<sup>440</sup> McPherson, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 6.

<sup>441</sup> Andrew D. Urshan, 'The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost', *WE* 205 (Sep 1, 1917), pp. 5-7 (5).

<sup>442</sup> Bell, 'Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues', p. 3. Italics mine. Cf. Burt McCafferty, 'The Time Of The Latter Rain', *WE* 187 (Apr 28, 1917), pp. 4-5 (5); Urshan, 'The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost', p. 6; A.E.L., 'Physical Manifestations Of The Spirit', *CE* 248 & 249 (Jul 27, 1918), pp. 2-3 (2); pp. 5-7; Gaston, 'The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost', p. 1; McPherson, 'What Is The Evidence', p.

Like their contemporaries, the *PE* looked for support of signs from Jesus himself.<sup>443</sup>

For example, they questioned if Jesus taught or spoke in tongues. Flower reported that Jesus ‘did not speak in tongues’ but in Aramaic,<sup>444</sup> and Bell added that Jesus ‘talked in several languages … he had the Spirit without measure, and could have used any language in earth or heaven … (but) *little is gained* over the purely theoretical problems of whether or not Jesus talked in supernatural tongues’.<sup>445</sup> An argument could be made that Isa. 28.11-12<sup>446</sup> was a more popular defence than Mk 16.16-17<sup>447</sup> of the ongoing nature of glossolalia. However, Mk 16.16-17 proved that Jesus prophesied that tongues were a sign that would follow the believer. Finally, Jesus’ baptism was paradigmatic for believers. As ‘a voice from heaven endorsed him and his message’ at the Jordan River, so too, ‘when the child of God is baptized in the Holy Ghost, and given the power to obey the commission to witness, he speaks in other tongues by heavenly inspiration’.<sup>448</sup>

#### 4. Glossolalia as the Singular Sign?

Fourth, some believed that any of the nine gifts of the Spirit could be an evidence of SB. Joseph Turnmore responded that, if the Holy Spirit could have chosen any of the nine gifts, ‘why was it that **all** the waiting company on the day of Pentecost **spoke in**

---

6; J.T.B., ‘The Gifts Of The Spirit’, *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), pp. 6-7 (6); Argue, ‘An Essential Sign?’, p. 2.

<sup>443</sup> Jesus’ teaching on SB was far more extensive than IE. For example, Jesus taught it is okay to ask for the Holy Spirit (Lk. 11.13) and that he will send the Spirit (Jn 4.10; 7.37-39), Simpson, ‘The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense’, pp. 2-6.

<sup>444</sup> J.R.F., ‘Did Jesus Speak In Tongues’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 2; cf. E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #254’, *WE* 203 (Aug 18, 1917), p. 9. Though Jesus’ mother was thought to have spoken in tongues, Alice Flower, ‘Growing Stronger’, *CE* 248 & 249 (Jul 27, 1918), p. 12.

<sup>445</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #693’, *CE* 292 & 293 (Jun 14, 1919), p. 5. Italics mine. Cf. Collins, ‘Review Of Dr. W.B. Riley’s Tract’, p. 9.

<sup>446</sup> W. Jethro Walthall, ‘Letter From A Brother Minister’, *WE* 133 (Apr 1, 1916), pp. 8-9; A.R. Wilson, *WE* 117 (Nov 27, 1916), p. 1; Pastor R.J. Craig, ‘Woodworth-Etter Meeting, Sidney, Iowa’, *WE* 153 (Sep 30, 1916), p. 15; E.N. Bell, ‘Question And Answers, #237’, *WE* 201 (Aug 4, 1917), p. 9; E.N. Bell, ‘Some Important Questions Answered’, *CE* 282 & 283 (Apr 5, 1919), p. 3; Paul C. Boucher, ‘Broken Arrow, Okla.’, *PE* 318 & 319 (Dec 13, 1919), p. 14;

<sup>447</sup> Lawrence, ‘Article II’, p. 4; Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 7; Thomas Atterberry, ‘They Shall Speak With New Tongues’, *PE* 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), pp. 2-3.

<sup>448</sup> ‘In The House Of God’, *WE* 157 (Sep 16, 1916), pp. 6-7, 9 (7).

**tongues** as the Spirit gave utterance'?<sup>449</sup> It would have been an excellent time to prove the point of diversity. J.T.B. reasoned that tongues carried 'more evidence of the divinely supernatural than does any one of the nine gifts of the Spirit' because 'the possessor of this gift ... is in no uncertainty about it, for he has the witness in himself'.<sup>450</sup> Lawrence wrote, 'we do not say that speaking in other tongues is the only evidence of the baptism, only the initial one, further we do not say that the gift of tongues is the evidence'.<sup>451</sup>

## 5. A Universal Sign?

Fifth, was glossolalia the sign for everyone, after all, Paul wrote, 'do all speak in tongues (1 Cor. 12.30)'? Usually, proponents of glossolalia as an evidence appealed to the context of First Corinthians, believing that Paul addressed the gifts of tongues and not tongues as a sign, which was for all believers.<sup>452</sup> As simple as it sounds, they noted that 'all' meant all:

the word says, 'THEY were ALL filled and began to speak with other tongues' ... Two things are positively asserted in this passage of 'they all,' namely the FILLING with the Holy Ghost and the speaking with other tongues ... It doesn't read in Acts 2:4 that 'they all were filled and SOME began to speak with tongues,' as many wrongly teach.<sup>453</sup>

Also, Kerr noted that Paul 'did not commit himself to a position on the question of speaking in tongues which would contradict the history of tongues in the book of Acts'.<sup>454</sup> After the 1918 General Council, W. Jethro Walthall and his Holiness Baptist

---

<sup>449</sup> 'Joseph Turnmore', *CE* 260 & 261 (Nov 2, 1918), p. 3. Gaston wryly asked, 'was he not giving what he wanted to (on the day of Pentecost) ... How shall we account for the strange fact, that they **all** again received this **one same gift**', Gaston, 'The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost', pp. 1-2.

<sup>450</sup> J.T.B., 'The Gifts Of The Spirit', *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), pp. 6-7 (6).

<sup>451</sup> Lawrence, 'Article II', pp. 4-5.

<sup>452</sup> J.T.B. 'Do All Speak With Tongues', *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), p. 4; Gaston, 'The Baptism According to Acts 2:4', p. 3.

<sup>453</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #94', *WE* 156 (Sep 9, 1916), p. 8; cf. E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #31 & 32' *WE* 128 (Feb 26, 1916), p. 8; Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #95 & 96', p. 8; Pope, 'Why I Believe', p. 7.

<sup>454</sup> D.W. Kerr, 'Do All Speak In Tongues', *CE* 270 & 271 (Jan 11, 1919), p. 7.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Association were used as examples of the reasonableness of the AG's position.<sup>455</sup> Even though he had a glossolalic experience upon his SB, Walthall disagreed with the AG's position

that speaking in tongues is the (singular) sign of the baptism of the Holy Spirit, while we have always maintained that all supernatural manifestations, including tongues, are confirmatory signs of the preached word in its fullness as in Mark 16:15 – 20.<sup>456</sup>

He thought 'the record of incidences were in favor', and that 'the preponderance of Bible evidence (was) in their favor'; however, it was 'based upon rather far-fetched conclusions drawn from proof texts'.<sup>457</sup> Upon reflection, Walthall found it significant that, when the Holy Spirit fell in his congregations, 'our people began to speak in other tongues, *without ever having come in contact* with others who spoke, or with the minister who taught it definitely'.<sup>458</sup> He changed his position and merged his fellowship with the AG, stating: 1) that after talking with his people and doing Spirit-led research, 'it became so simple and plain as the Spirit himself began to show me',<sup>459</sup> and 2) 'by following the (biblical) record I saw that the universality of speaking with tongues had a more weighty testimony supporting it than that of the testimony of the universality of (water) baptism'.<sup>460</sup>

### 6. Is a Delay or Partial, Non-Tongues Baptism Possible?

Sixth, some questioned if a delay of glossolalia or a partial, non-tongues SB was possible. To the question of a delay between SB and a delayed sign, Bell replied,

in the New Testament we have no such case mentioned ... each outpouring where tongues are mentioned clearly occurred that very day. But many honest brethren tell

---

<sup>455</sup> Brumback, *Suddenly From Heaven*, pp. 13, 220. In addition to Walthall's example, for three months following the Council, the *PE* broke with its normal format and includes a personal testimony of SB with IE on each front page. J.W. McIntyre, 'Muldrum, Okla.', *CE* 256 & 257 (Oct 5, 1918), p. 1; William W. Parks, 'Forrester, Okla.', *CE* 258 & 259 (Oct 19, 1918), p. 1; Josephine Ross, 'Howe, Okla.', *CE* 260 & 261 (Nov 2, 1918), p. 1. Normal formatting returned with the 268 & 269 (Dec 12, 1918) issue.

<sup>456</sup> Walthall, 'Letter From A Brother Minister', p. 9.

<sup>457</sup> W. Jethro Walthall, 'A New Chapter In My Experience', *WE* 152 (Aug 12, 1916), pp. 5-6, 9 (5).

<sup>458</sup> Walthall, 'Letter From A Brother Minister', p. 9. Italics mine. Cf. B.F. Lawrence, 'Article III – The Experiences of W. Jethro Walthall', *WE* 137 (May 6, 1916), pp. 4-5.

<sup>459</sup> Walthall, 'A New Chapter In My Experience', p. 5.

<sup>460</sup> W. Jethro Walthall, 'Do All Speak With Tongues Who Receive The Baptism?', *CE* 248 & 249 (Jul 27, 1918), p. 6.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

us the Spirit mightily fell on them and remained continually upon them for some weeks or months before they broke out in tongues ... I see no reason to doubt or dispute it ... I do not call it a *completed baptism*. Such an experience is abnormal, it is not up to the New Testament standard.<sup>461</sup>

As for fillings *sans* tongues, the phrases 'coming up to the bible standard'<sup>462</sup> and 'normal'<sup>463</sup> were common in the PE and indicated that a variety of experiences were possible, but they were not to be called the SB. These pre-tongues experiences were viewed in a positive light. For example, 'a dear fellow missionary received *a gracious anointing of the Spirit* ... she did not speak clearly in tongues, but had the beginning of utterance and songs and prayer in the Holy Ghost'.<sup>464</sup> Nevertheless, the sign of a full and complete SB was to speak clearly and 'not merely babble'.<sup>465</sup> One seeker was 'not fully satisfied, (but now) has come up full', another had 'stammering lips' for 10 days.<sup>466</sup> Alice Flower said that if her own mother had 'known how to yield she would have spoken forth his praise in other tongues then and there' but only 'had the beginning of utterance'.<sup>467</sup> Therefore, the term 'full consummation' occurred naturally in the first statement of fundamental truths:

the *full consummation* of the baptism of believers in the Holy Ghost and fire, is indicated by the initial sign of speaking in tongues, as the Spirit of God gives

---

<sup>461</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #647', *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5; cf. E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #648', *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5. Other references to 'abnormal' include: Lawrence, 'Article II', pp. 4-5; Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #95', p. 8; E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #96', *WE* 157 (Sep 16, 1916), p. 8.

<sup>462</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #95', *WE* 157 (Sep 16, 1916), p. 8; Pope, 'Why I Believe', p. 6; Durham, 'What Is The Evidence', pp. 2-3.

<sup>463</sup> Walthall, 'A New Chapter In My Experience', pp. 5-6; Pope, 'Why I Believe', pp. 6-7; 'A Statement Of Fundamental Truths Approved By The General Council Of The Assemblies Of God, October 2-7, 1916', *WE* 169 (Dec 16, 1916), p. 8; Kerr, 'Do All Speak In Tongues', p. 7; Gaston, 'The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost', pp. 1-2, 9; H.G., 'From The Pentecostal Viewpoint', *PE* 350 & 51 (Jul 24, 1920), p. 8.

<sup>464</sup> Violetta Schoonmaker, 'Missionary Gleanings', *PE* 316 & 317 (Nov 29, 1919), p. 12; cf. Collins, 'A Baptized Baptist Preacher', p. 1.

<sup>465</sup> Ernest L. Whitcomb, 'North Bergen, N.J.', *PE* 346 & 47 (Jun 26, 1920), p. 14.

<sup>466</sup> 'The Latter Rain In Atlantic City, N.J.', *WE* 166 (Nov 25, 1916), p. 14. Italics mine. Cf. B.F. Lawrence, 'Article V – Details From Various Sources', *WE* 140 (May 20, 1916), pp. 4-5; Walthall, 'A New Chapter In My Experience', p. 9.

<sup>467</sup> 'W.W. Simpson', *WE* 87 (Apr 24, 1915), p. 4; 'The Latter Rain In Atlantic City, N.J.', p. 14; Alice R. Flower, 'My Mother's Healing', *WE* 189 (May 12, 1917), p. 5.

utterance. Acts 2:4. This wonderful experience is distinct from and subsequent to the experience of the new birth. Acts 10:44-46; 11:14-16; 15:8, 9.<sup>468</sup>

Even after Bosworth challenged evidential tongues at the 1918 General Council, the term ‘full consummation’ was reaffirmed:<sup>469</sup> ‘we re-affirmed our position that the *full consummation* of the baptism in the Holy Ghost is invariably accompanied by the initial physical sign of speaking with other tongues as the Spirit of God gives the one baptized utterance’.<sup>470</sup>

## 7. Consummation of the Beginning.

Finally, ‘the baptism of the Holy Ghost is not the end, but the beginning of a blessed life. Always more to follow!’<sup>471</sup> Glossolalia was called ‘the infant sign of the baptism experience’.<sup>472</sup> But if we ‘continue to ask, to seek and to knock … He is going to lead us out into fullness, powers, glories, revelations of His unspeakable love … that we now hardly dare to dream of’.<sup>473</sup> One may experience further blessings but these should not be labelled. For example, Bell commented on Acts 4:31: ‘there is no warrant at all in this passage for calling this a baptism of fire nor for seeking this as a baptism of fire’.<sup>474</sup> ‘We need to be constantly filled with the Holy Ghost’, Flower noted because ‘we have

---

<sup>468</sup> ‘A Statement Of Fundamental Truths Approved By The General Council Of The Assemblies Of God, October 2-7, 1916’, WE 170 (Dec 23, 1916), p. 8. Italics mine. Cf. ‘The Missionary Conference’, WE 209 (Oct 6, 1917), pp. 10-11 (10); D.W. Kerr, ‘Paul’s Interpretation Of The Baptism In Holy Spirit’, CE 252 & 253 (Aug 24, 1918), p. 6.

<sup>469</sup> ‘We re-affirmed our position that the full consummation of the baptism in the Holy Ghost is invariably accompanied by the initial physical sign of speaking with other tongues as the Spirit of God gives the one baptized utterance’, ‘Minutes Of Last Council Now Ready’, CE 266 & 267 (Dec 14, 1918), p. 14; cf. S.H.F., ‘The 1918 General Council’, CE 256 & 257 (Oct 5, 1918), pp. 2-3 (3).

<sup>470</sup> ‘Minutes Of Last Council Now Ready’, p. 14. Italics mine.

<sup>471</sup> Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, pp. 10-11.

<sup>472</sup> Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 7.

<sup>473</sup> C.E. Simpson, ‘A Methodist Minister’s Personal Testimony’, CE 300 & 301 (Aug 9, 1919), pp. 2-3, 7 (7).

<sup>474</sup> E.N. Bell ‘Questions And Answers, #25’, WE 126 (Feb 12, 1916), p. 8.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia leaked out'.<sup>475</sup> Finally, 'the Scriptures do not teach that you have to continue talking in tongues the rest of your life ... leave this matter with the Lord'.<sup>476</sup>

## 8. The Terminology of the Evidence Doctrine.

A review of the evidential terminology used in the *PE* is in order. The most frequent monikers are simply 'sign' and 'evidence' followed by the 'bible evidence',<sup>477</sup> or simply 'the evidence'.<sup>478</sup> Other phrases in chronological order include: 'Pentecostal evidence',<sup>479</sup> 'outward evidence',<sup>480</sup> 'indisputable evidence',<sup>481</sup> 'full evidence',<sup>482</sup> 'initial physical evidence',<sup>483</sup> 'external physical sign',<sup>484</sup> 'first evidence',<sup>485</sup> 'conclusive evidence',<sup>486</sup> and the 'convincing evidence'.<sup>487</sup> Conspicuously absent in the *PE* is the term 'initial evidence'. Therefore, while evidentiary terminology was common at the time, the phrase 'initial physical evidence' occurs twelve years after the raw expressions of the ASM revival, and the phrase 'initial evidence' is beyond the window of this study.<sup>488</sup>

## C. Critics and Intramural Theological Pressures.

The early Pentecostal pioneers faced a lot of persecution. Consider this testimony: 'over fifteen are coming to the mission, and after a struggle against their old teaching that

---

<sup>475</sup> J.R.F., 'Be Filled With The Spirit', *WE* 197 (Jul 7, 1917), p. 8; cf. E.N. Bell 'Questions And Answers, #118', *WE* 172 (Jan 13, 1917), p. 9. G. Kirke claimed to be 'rebaptized' in the Holy Spirit, G. Kirke, 'Remarkable Revival At Thornton Heath, London', *CE* 262 & 263 (Nov 16, 1918), pp. 8-9 (8).

<sup>476</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #905', *PE* 366 & 367 (Nov 19, 1920), p. 5; Durham, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 2.

<sup>477</sup> E.g. M.T. Draper, 'The Gospel In A Nut Shell', *WE* 157 (Sep 16, 1916), p. 14;

<sup>478</sup> E.g. McPherson, 'What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost', p. 7.

<sup>479</sup> E.V. Jennison, 'Hutchinson, Kansas', *WE* 103 (Aug 14, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>480</sup> 'Rightly Dividing The Word Of Truth', *WE* 121 (Jan 1, 1916), p. 10.

<sup>481</sup> B.F. Lawrence, 'Article X – Apostolic Faith Restored: My First Visit to the Azusa Street Pentecostal Mission, Los Angles, California', *WE* 131 (Mar 18, 1916), pp. 4-5, 7 (4).

<sup>482</sup> Craig, 'Woodworth-Etter Meeting, Sidney, Iowa', p. 15.

<sup>483</sup> 'Essentials To Pentecost', *CE* 260 & 261 (Nov 2, 1918), pp. 2-3 (p. 3). The phrase, 'initial physical sign' occurs eleven months prior: E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers #305', *WE* 217 (Dec 1, 1917), p. 8.

<sup>484</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers #648', *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5.

<sup>485</sup> McPherson, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 6.

<sup>486</sup> McPherson, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 7.

<sup>487</sup> 'Some Simple Thoughts Concerning Pentecost', *PE* 370 & 371 (Dec 11, 1920), p. 3.

<sup>488</sup> The first occurrence of the term 'initial evidence' occurs on May 3<sup>rd</sup>, 1917 in the *PHA*: Taylor, 'Our Policy', p. 9.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
healing and especially “tongues” are heresy, they are now seeking the baptism.<sup>489</sup> This section will explore some of the theological arguments by critics.

### 1. Cessationism.

Contributors to the *PE* acknowledged the

tremendous storm of opposition from the scribes and high priests of our day ... that class of stiff-necked professors ... who regard the promises and references to the supernatural in the Bible, as belonging only to the early days of the church.<sup>490</sup>

Most Pentecostal polemicists, like Bell, noted that after the Apostles, glossolalia

gradually declined in power and frequency as the church backslid into error and sin and came under the control of the state. But all along, during the past centuries, wherever saints got warmed up in love and unity and close enough to God, the Lord has poured out his Spirit on some with signs following as on the day of Pentecost.<sup>491</sup>

This enabled them to counter the argument with occurrences from church history<sup>492</sup> and allowed them to reason that the decline or absence of tongues was caused by human ‘sin and unbelief’ or ‘lack of light on the Scriptures’.<sup>493</sup> Both Alice Flower and Bell interpreted Paul’s 1 Cor. 13.10, ‘when perfection comes’, to mean when ‘we shall see the king in all his beauty and perfection’ and when ‘we shall truly see him “face-to-face”’.<sup>494</sup> Further, neither prophecy nor knowledge has passed away yet.<sup>495</sup> McPherson simply

---

<sup>489</sup> Bro. Will Trotter, ‘Fellowship In Christ’, *WE* 184 (Apr 7, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>490</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost’, *CE* 298 & 299 (Aug 9, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>491</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #11’, *WE* 122 (Jan 8, 1916), p. 8.

<sup>492</sup> C.E.R., ‘Spiritual Intoxication’, p. 2; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #11’, p. 8; Lawrence, ‘Article VII(a)’, p. 6; Andrew Urshan, ‘Are The Days Of Miracles Passed?’, *WE* 180 (Mar 10, 1917), pp. 4-5 (5); E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #717’, *CE* 296 & 297 (Jul 12, 1919), p. 5; Atterberry, ‘They Shall Speak With New Tongues’, pp. 2-3; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers (*PE*)’, p. 5; Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, p. 10. Inadvertently they pass on incorrect quotes from Augustine and Chrysostom to support their polemic, Pope, ‘Why I Believe’, p. 7; S.H.F., ‘Sunday School Lesson’, *CE* 294 & 295 (Jun 28, 1919), pp. 12-13 (12).

<sup>493</sup> E.N. Bell, (Dec 27, 1919), p. 5; E.N. Bell Questions And Answers, #685’, *CE* 290 & 291 (May 31, 1919), p. 5; cf. B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article I – Back to Pentecost’, *WE* 121 (Jan 1, 1916), pp. 4-5; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #11’, p. 8; Elizabeth Sisson, ‘Acts–Two–Four–Past And Present’, *WE* 217 (Dec 1, 1917), pp. 2-3; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #717’, p. 5.

<sup>494</sup> Alice Reynolds Flower, ‘Rightly Dividing The Word Of Truth’, *WE* 150 (Jul 29, 1916), p. 10; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #317’, *WE* 219 (Dec 15, 1917), p. 9; cf. ‘The Manifestation Of Tongues’, *PE* 336 & 337 (Apr 17, 1920), p. 7.

<sup>495</sup> J.T.B., ‘A Divine Sandwich’, *PE* 350 & 51 (Jul 24, 1920), pp. 2-3 (2).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia called it ‘unscriptural’.<sup>496</sup> A.R. Wilson argued that, if the day of ‘tongues has passed’ then so has the ‘day for preaching the gospel’ and healing because according Mk 16.15-18, they are interconnected.<sup>497</sup>

## 2. Sanctification.

Thus far, the primary issue that connects sanctification and glossolalia has been to distinguish SB from the WH second work.<sup>498</sup> For example, ‘it has been made plain that what we had called the baptism of the Holy Spirit was not the baptism, for the reason that the scriptural sign ... did not follow’.<sup>499</sup> However, several articles in the *PE* promoted that tongues-speech could stimulate holiness. For example, one person reported that when ‘I heard, for the first time, (some) one speak in another tongue my heart was pierced in an instant ... (I believed) that the baptism in the Spirit would give me more satisfaction hour by hour around-the-clock than sin ever had’.<sup>500</sup> A.G. Ward theorized that the Spirit would speak to and through the glossolalic about ‘the fullness of the life of the glorified Christ ... as we yield through death and deep interior crucifixion of our fine parts to the indwelling of the Holy Ghost’.<sup>501</sup>

Another popular connection with sanctification was that the Spirit would clean up an individual’s speech much like the live coal that touched Isaiah’s lips:

a live coal of the Holy Spirit’s fire came down on that day of Pentecost, to cleanse and equipped for service the 120 waiting disciples ... Can a tongue that has been taken hold of by the Holy Ghost ever be used again to speak lying, angry, selfish or trifling words?<sup>502</sup>

---

<sup>496</sup> McPherson, ‘What Is The Evidence’, p. 7.

<sup>497</sup> A.R. Wilson, *WE* 117 (Nov 27, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>498</sup> Flower, ‘The Evidence Of The Baptism’, p. 4; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #786’, *PE* 318 & 319 (Dec 13, 1919), p. 5; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #799’, *PE* 326 & 327 (Feb 7, 1920), p. 5. More broadly, SB endued the beginner ‘to live a true life in Christ’, ‘As A Presbyterian Now Sees It’, *CE* 65 (Oct 31, 1914), pp. 1-2 (1).

<sup>499</sup> Atterberry, ‘They Shall Speak With New Tongues’, pp. 2-3.

<sup>500</sup> ‘The Works Of God: The Good Of Tongues’, *WE* 160 (Oct 7, 1916), pp. 4-5.

<sup>501</sup> A.G. Ward, ‘Soul Food For Hungry Saints’, *PE* 310 & 311 (Oct 18, 1919), p. 8.

<sup>502</sup> A.E.L., ‘Pictures Of Pentecost In The Old Testament’, pp. 6-7; cf. Alice E. Luce, ‘Lips Cleansed And Consecrated’, *PE* 346 & 47 (Jun 26, 1920), pp 1-2; S.H.F., ‘Sunday School Lesson’, p. 13; Alice Flower, ‘The Holy Spirit Our Helper’, *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 12; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #877’, *PE* 358 & 359 (Sep 18, 1920), p. 5.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Glossolalia recreated or renewed speech for the new dispensation: ‘Adam’s tongue was tainted ... but in this new era the tongue is being cleansed, is being sanctified, made new. The new tongue belongs to the new era the new creation, the redeemed world’.<sup>503</sup>

### 3. Counterfeit and Demonic Glossolalia.

The criticism of demonic tongues and counterfeits was dealt with in a manner common to other periodicals of its day. First, Boddy noted that, ‘there are not nearly so many counterfeits as some think ... (some people just) do strange things’.<sup>504</sup> Existence of counterfeits was acknowledged and called for discernment,<sup>505</sup> but at the same time, ‘only a *genuine* thing can be *counterfeited*’.<sup>506</sup> Studd noted that ‘when I suggested that, notwithstanding, “speaking in tongues” was surely a scriptural experience, I was told that this was all spurious. As I thought it over, I said that if there was spurious, there must be also the genuine’.<sup>507</sup> Fear of receiving a demonic spirit hindered people from receiving God’s Holy Spirit.<sup>508</sup> Second, there were only two articles that directly addressed tongues having a possible demonic source: 1) ‘it is presumed Satan knows all languages, and could cause one really already possessed with demons to talk in tongues through the demons in him, but such a person will always be lacking in all the genuine **fruits** of the Holy Spirit’.<sup>509</sup> 2) Further,

no person can be caused by Satan to speak with tongues except one who is already demon possessed ... every real spirit medium is a demon possessed person ... But all these things are only counterfeits of the real blessed work of the Holy Ghost ... there is a different ring to one speaking in tongues as the blessed spirit of God gives utterance.<sup>510</sup>

---

<sup>503</sup> ‘The Restoration Of All Things’, WE 202 (Aug 11, 1917), pp. 8-9 (8).

<sup>504</sup> Boddy, ‘The Holy Ghost For Us’, p. 8.

<sup>505</sup> ‘The Manifestation Of Tongues’, p. 7. Dr. Worrell, believes that godly character and the positive spiritual effects of SB, despite ‘the devil’s counterfeits’, presents non-Pentecostal Christianity with ‘a real crisis’. The article does not enumerate further, Lawrence, ‘Article VII(b)’, pp. 4-7.

<sup>506</sup> B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article VIII – Reminiscences Of An Eyewitness’, WE 128 (Feb 26, 1916), pp. 4-5.

<sup>507</sup> George B. Studd, ‘My Convictions’, WE 148 (Jul 15, 1916), pp. 4-6 (4).

<sup>508</sup> Hodges, ‘The Enemies In The Land’, p. 6.

<sup>509</sup> Bell, ‘Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues’, p. 4. Bold original.

<sup>510</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #856’, PE 348 & 49 (Jul 10, 1920), p. 6.

This charge of tongues having a demonic origin divided churches: ‘we formerly belonged to the Baptist gospel mission but our names have been cast out as evil because we received the baptism of the Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in tongues’.<sup>511</sup>

#### 4. The ‘New Issue’.

In addition to disagreement over the Trinity and baptismal formula,<sup>512</sup> the new issue forced a theological clarification of glossolalia. First, the *PE* affirmed that SB was subsequent from justification. Bell noted that Oneness proponents

have logically concluded from their false premise that the Birth of the Spirit and the Baptism by Christ with the Spirit are one and the same. Also, as they hold the Baptism is accompanied by speaking in other tongues, it necessarily follows in their teaching that if one never spoke in tongues, he is not born of the Spirit.<sup>513</sup>

According to Bell, ‘the normal order is repentance, faith and baptism in water, (and) then to receive the Spirit’,<sup>514</sup> while Sisson believed that ‘any other order than the God-given pattern is abnormal’.<sup>515</sup> Durham, whose work would be foundational to Oneness theology, rebuffed the idea that justification and SB were the same experience long before the new issue. He wrote that men

teach that the Holy Spirit is received when we are christened in infancy or confirmed in youth ... (or) received in conversion ... (or finally) in sanctification ... But not one of them (these) will stand a scriptural test ... Not one of them has any sign that distinguishes his experience from the rest. **The only difference is in their theory.** So

---

<sup>511</sup> ‘L.M. Anglin’, *WE* 117 (Nov 27, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>512</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #139’, *WE* 177 (Feb 17, 1917), p. 9; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #273’, *WE* 210 (Oct 13, 1917), p. 7.

<sup>513</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘The Baptism And The Rapture’, *PE* 316 & 317 (Nov 29, 1919), p. 8. The first mention of salvific glossolalia by Oneness Pentecostals in the *PE* occurs in July, 1917: Bell answers the question, ‘what do the “New Issue” folks believe? He responds that ‘they do not all believe alike ... some hold the Apostles had no life from God, were not born again until the Holy Ghost fell on the day of Pentecost and that no one now is born-again or begotten of God until baptized in the Holy Ghost and speaks with tongues ... others of them hold the above, except as to the tongues’, E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #235’, *WE* 200 (Jul 28, 1917), p. 9.

<sup>514</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Question And Answer Department’, *WE* 96 (Jun 26, 1915), p. 3. Bell does allow for God’s sovereignty: ‘but God has a right to baptize them with the Spirit at any time he sees fit, as he did at the house of Cornelius’. Cf. E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #144’, *WE* 178 (Feb 24, 1917), p. 11.

<sup>515</sup> Sisson, ‘Acts–Two–Four–Past And Present’, p. 3; cf. Simpson, ‘The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense’, p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

when God's true standard is lifted up, it reflects on all these so-called experiences where men are taught that they are to claim, but to really expect to receive nothing.<sup>516</sup>

Second, when and in what fashion does one receive the Holy Spirit? The *PE* clearly distinguished between an indwelling Spirit received at salvation and an empowering Spirit with the sign of tongues:

in conversion or the new birth, the Holy Spirit operates upon us ... We are quickened or made alive, the Spirit is present and works within us, but the New Testament never calls this **the receiving of the Holy Spirit as a gift** ... They (the disciples) later received the Holy Spirit as a separate experience ... In such an experience believers also get '**filled**' with the Holy Ghost' and speak with other tongues.<sup>517</sup>

Such a position raised a question. Exactly when did the disciples receive salvation? Boddy believed that

they received the resurrection life of the Lord Jesus, the Spirit of Christ as their new life ... on that Easter Eve were born of the Spirit – Christ's Spirit – but on that first Whit-Sunday they received a further blessing: they were filled with the Spirit, immersed in the Holy Ghost, endued with power from on high.<sup>518</sup>

According to Bell, the pre-Pentecost disciples had 'the promise for the Spirit to be IN them in the sense Jesus was speaking of was still future to them', but they did not have the Spirit as we do at salvation today; they lived 'in the lapping over the two ages'.<sup>519</sup> Further, Jesus' breathing on the disciples in Jn 20.21-23 'was *merely symbolic* of the mighty wind that came on the day of Pentecost'; however, it does reveal two receptions of the Holy Spirit.<sup>520</sup>

---

<sup>516</sup> Durham, 'What Is The Evidence', p. 2.

<sup>517</sup> Bell, 'Some Important Questions Answered', p. 3; cf. Sisson, 'Acts–Two–Four–Past And Present', p. 3; Kerr, 'Do All Speak In Tongues', p. 7; S.H.F., 'As On Us At The Beginning', *CE* 282 & 283 (Apr 5, 1919), p. 3; Gaston, 'The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost', p. 1; 'Some Simple Thoughts Concerning Pentecost', p. 3.

<sup>518</sup> Boddy, 'The Holy Ghost For Us', p. 1; cf. E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #90', *WE* 154 (Aug 26, 1916), pp. 8-9; Simpson, 'The Baptism In The Spirit – A Defense', pp. 2-6.

<sup>519</sup> Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #90', p. 8.

<sup>520</sup> Bell, 'Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues', p. 3. Italics mine. After renouncing his rebaptism in Jesus' name Bell believes John 20 was a 'parallel with the commission in Matt. 28:19 and Mark 16:15 ... there is no difference in meaning between these two sayings ... Jesus commissioned them in John 20:21 to 23, to receive the Spirit and to go; but they did not receive the Spirit at that moment', Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #90', pp. 8-9.

Given the salvific nature of water baptism and tongues in the Oneness paradigm, it was interesting to discover that testimonies of people who spoke in tongues as they came up out of the water were printed in the *PE* after the new issue divided the fellowship. For example, ‘one came out of the water speaking in tongues’.<sup>521</sup>

## 5. Divine Love.

Though not a major focus in the *PE*, the following two points were made regarding divine love and glossolalia: first, love was a necessary component of tongues-speech, in fact, ‘love is a mightier witness of the Spirit’s indwelling than the gift of speaking in tongues’.<sup>522</sup> ‘In the acme of true Pentecostal experience is the centering of that more excellent way’.<sup>523</sup> Because for us ‘to have a big outward show, speaking with other tongues … is no adequate substitute for the love of God’.<sup>524</sup> Second, unity will not come through doctrine, but by love.<sup>525</sup>

## 6. Rudimentary Sacramentalism.

There was an implied rudimentary sacramentalism in the *PE*. First, the action of tarrying for SB was a holy action. For example, Stanley Frodsham instructed that ‘when a seeker is tarrying for the power, the Spirit frequently convicts of many things that would hinder his incoming. This is “the way of holiness”’.<sup>526</sup> The individual would then seek to live a holy life by faith. Tarrying was another sacramental act of yieldedness: and to those who tarry for the baptism of the Holy Spirit the promise is abundantly fulfilled. When the comforter comes in to abide, when he has subdued the whole

---

<sup>521</sup> J.A. McPhail, ‘Coffeyville, Kans.’, *PE* 312 & 313 (Nov 1, 1919), p. 23; cf. W.M. Harrison, ‘Understood In French’ 96 (Jun 26, 1915), p. 1; E.N. Bell, ‘Davis City Camp-Meeting Report’, *WE* 105 (Aug 28, 1915), p. 2; Chas. Williamson, ‘Humphrey, Ark.’, *CE* 308 & 309 (Oct 4, 1919), p. 9; P.M. Joyner, ‘Union City, Tenn.’, *PE* 310 & 311 (Oct 18, 1919), p. 14; Mary Chapman, ‘Victory In Madras’, *PE* 366 & 367 (Nov 19, 1920), p. 10.

<sup>522</sup> ‘Hints From A Missionary Letter’, *WE* 98 (Jul 10, 1915), p. 2; cf. Boddy, ‘The Holy Ghost For Us’, p. 2.

<sup>523</sup> ‘Placing The Emphasis’, *WE* 109 (Sep 25, 1915), p. 4; cf. J.T.B., ‘A Divine Sandwich’, p. 2.

<sup>524</sup> Alice Flower, ‘Love’, *CE* 292 & 293 (Jun 14, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>525</sup> Will Trotter, ‘Revival Of Love Needed’, *WE* 84 (Apr 3, 1915), p. 1; cf. Wm. F.P. Burton, ‘A Great Pentecostal Outpouring In Central Africa’, *PE* 340 & 341 (May 15, 1920), pp. 1-3 (3).

<sup>526</sup> S.H.F., ‘Our Distinctive Testimony’, *PE* 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), pp. 8-9 (8); cf. Bell ‘Questions And Answers, #25’, p. 8; Bell, ‘Some Important Questions Answered’, p. 3; Kerr, ‘Do All Speak In Tongues’, p. 7; ‘Some Simple Thoughts Concerning Pentecost’, p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

being to his control, and he takes possession of the yielded lips, speaking through them in other tongues the praises and glories of Jesus ... it is joy unspeakable and full of glory.<sup>527</sup>

Second, in addition to the action of water baptism and participation in communion, objects could be sacramental items.<sup>528</sup> For example, handkerchiefs, when anointed, when prayed over, had the power to facilitate SB: 'I want your prayers in the anointing of his handkerchief, first that I may receive the divine anointing to speak with tongues, to lay hands on the sick and pray for them, or to do anything God has for me to do'.<sup>529</sup>

Frank Favacuia noted an anointed handshake in his testimony:

after tarrying for the baptism for a time, I felt it was no use and got up to go away. In departing a brother shook hands with me, and it seemed as if I had received a shock of electricity, and in two minutes I was speaking in an unknown tongue.<sup>530</sup>

The action of speaking in tongues was a sacred overlapping of two realities:

supernatural manifestations in the physical realm are no new phenomena ... when He has taken full possession He speaks through the yielded lips in other tongues, as promised in Isa. 28:11, 12 (see 1 Cor. 14:21) ... (and) the results even in the physical realm of His indwelling and enduement are more blessed than tongue can express, and only those who are wholly yielded to Him can taste their sweetness.<sup>531</sup>

Tongues overlapped between the phenomenal (sacred) and nominal (secular) realities.

Another example would be those who spoke in tongues upon their deathbed, heaven and earth overlapped to give the survivors hope:

she was speaking in tongues and interpreting up to the last, and had hardly been brought back (to life) when she began again in the Spirit. It was the most blessed deathbed I had ever witnessed. Heaven was so near and real.<sup>532</sup>

---

<sup>527</sup> A.E. Luce, 'Prayer For The Watersprings', *CE* 246 & 247 (Jun 29, 1918), pp. 4-5 (5).

<sup>528</sup> There is at least one mention of foot washing in the *PE* as an 'ordinance', P.A. Hill, 'A Testimony', *WE* 214 (Nov 10, 1917), p. 16.

<sup>529</sup> August Feick, 'Woodworth-Etter Meetings At Los Angeles, Cal.', *WE* 180 (Mar 10, 1917), p. 16; cf. Will C. Trotter, 'The Power Falling At Portland, Ore.', *WE* 219 (Dec 15, 1917), p. 14; J.L.L., 'Toronto's Most Joyous Sect Is the Pentecostal Assembly', *CE* 300 & 301 (Aug 9, 1919), p. 8.

<sup>530</sup> Frank Favacuia, 'From Miry Clay To Solid Rock', *PE* 338 & 339 (May 1, 1920), p. 8.

<sup>531</sup> A.E.L., 'Physical Manifestations Of The Spirit', pp. 2-3; cf. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #90', pp. 8-9.

<sup>532</sup> S.M. Ulyate, 'Brought Back To Life By Prayer', *PE* 318 & 319 (Dec 13, 1919), p. 8; cf. 'Bro. Moody At Rest', *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 7; 'Bro. C.G. Robinson With Christ', *PE* 330 & 331 (Mar 6, 1920), p. 12.

## D. Purpose.

Many writers attempted to give theological meaning to glossolalia in the *PE*.<sup>533</sup> By this time the theology of glossolalia had moved well beyond the somewhat naïve purpose of MT that was seen in the early *AF*.<sup>534</sup> In fact, one unnamed author observed that when tongues were viewed only

as a medium of communication with people of foreign languages ... (they) appear as of little practical value ... (but) with an understanding of the private use of the gift of tongues as a medium of expressing the heart's deepest emotions, a greater field of usefulness opens up before us'.<sup>535</sup>

The following purposes for tongues, both private and public, were observed in the *PE*.

### 1. Power.

Following the biblical promise of being 'clothed with power from on high', glossolalia was principally a sign of God's power for evangelism. For example, 'the object for which we are baptized is to "**endue us with power** from on high" to "**witness**" for Jesus (Luke 24:49; Acts 1:8)'.<sup>536</sup> Supernatural power was needed to reach the lost which in turn helps to 'hasten the return of the Lord'.<sup>537</sup> For example, 'may the blessed work continue, and this greater evangelism proceed with great power and demonstration of the Spirit, sweeping in the sinners by the thousand'.<sup>538</sup> However, the Holy Spirit's power was multi-purposed. SB was

---

<sup>533</sup> Elder R.B. Chamber's overall hermeneutical grid was eschatology, Elder R.B. Chambers, 'Wherfore The Tongues', *WE* 127 (Feb 19, 1916), pp. 5-6. The editor, noted a 'four-fold purpose': 1) sign to believer, 2) edification, 3) praise, 4) and a sign to unbelievers, Atterberry, 'They Shall Speak With New Tongues', pp. 2-3.

<sup>534</sup> McGee believes that the theology of 'missionary tongues' was debunked by late 1906 and early 1907, McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', p. 122.

<sup>535</sup> 'The Manifestation Of Tongues', p. 7.

<sup>536</sup> Bell, 'Baptism With The Spirit With Speaking In Tongues', p. 4; cf. Boddy, 'The Holy Ghost For Us', p. 2; Wm. J. Taylor, 'The Menace Of Spiritism', *PE* 338 & 339 (May 1, 1920), pp. 6-7 (7).

<sup>537</sup> Editor, 'The Time Of Thy Visitation', *WE* 82 (Mar 20, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>538</sup> Editor, 'Three Mighty Outpourings', *WE* 81 (Mar 13, 1915), p. 1; cf. B.F. Lawrence, 'Article XI – The Work Spreads to India', *WE* 132 (Mar 25, 1916), pp. 4-5, 8. The second General Council pledged that 'as a Council ... we commit ourselves and the movement for the greatest evangelism that the world is ever seen. We pledge our hearty co-operation, prayers and help to this end', J.R.F. 'A Greater Evangelism', *CE* 79 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 1. This spiritual power does not override human volition, E.N. Bell, 'Questions And

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

not only to speak in tongues as an evidence of His indwelling, but to fill us with God, power to resist temptation, power to lead clean, pure, holy lives, power to witness boldly for our Savior King and to overcome at all times and in all conditions.<sup>539</sup>

Flower noted that Pentecostal power unifies – ‘forming them into a body of men and women with one purpose, one hope, (and) one faith’ – so that they will be transformed into ‘an aggressive body (of) people with a message ... to all the earth’.<sup>540</sup>

### 2. Prayer.

Using one’s own vocabulary and intelligence to pray was a necessary practice for the Christian but at times public prayers could devolve into a ‘circus’, or ‘a big outward show’; whereas, ‘it is the prayer in secret ... (that) brings the great open reward Jesus promised. It may be a prayer in another tongue; but God understands, and the answer is certain and sure’.<sup>541</sup> Alice R. Flower believed that glossolalic-prayers were more effective:

so many of God’s children today have testified to the wonderful stimulus the outpouring of the Holy Spirit has given to their prayer life ... but it means cooperation with God on our part ... fluency in speaking (is not) essential to prayer. When words fail and we can only groan out our hearts to God perhaps our prayer is most big with meaning and will prove most efficacious. The greater and deeper the desire from God the less likely we will be to adequately express it. Someone has said, ‘We have two intercessors, one in heaven and one in the heart. Christ for us, the Spirit within us’.<sup>542</sup>

When interceding though tongues, there was a point when the intercessor could feel the full burden of the lost people’s perdition and experience what was called ‘soul travail’ and then began ‘pleading for souls’.<sup>543</sup> At this point ‘the English vocabulary was

---

Answers, #111’, WE 169 (Dec 16, 1916), p. 9; W.F. Carothers, ‘His Baptism Renewed’, WE 153 (Aug 19, 1916), p. 14.

<sup>539</sup> Mrs. John W. Ingham, ‘Glorious Convention at Pretoria, South Africa’, WE 149 (Jul 22, 1916), p. 9.

<sup>540</sup> J.R.F., ‘A Greater Evangelism’, p. 1.

<sup>541</sup> Alice Flower, ‘Prayer’, CE 290 & 291 (May 31, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>542</sup> Flower, ‘Rightly Dividing The Word Of Truth’, p. 10.

<sup>543</sup> Edward Armstrong, ‘the Newark Convention’, WE 88 (May 1, 1915), p. 4. Mrs. Priscilla Wilkes, ‘Healed And Baptized In The Spirit’, WE 153 (Sep 30, 1916), pp. 6-7. This is sometimes called the ‘Spirit of intercession’, Della Goodrich, ‘Stirring Word From Central America’, WE 152 (Aug 12, 1916), p. 13; cf. B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article XIII – Pastor Barrett and the Work in Europe’, WE 135 (Apr 15, 1916), pp. 4-5.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
altogether inadequate, so that groanings which cannot be uttered were brought forth'.<sup>544</sup>  
For example, 'the Holy Spirit is given to lead the baptized believer into deeper  
experiences, such as intercession and travail of the soul for the lost and dying souls'.<sup>545</sup>

### 3. Praise and Revelation.

Similar to the above periodicals, glossolalia was concomitant with a recognition of God's presence that often resulted in praise or revelation. Haywood reported, 'so great was the manifestation of God's presence that all the assembly joined in the welcome chorus ... a young man ... threw up both hands and fell backwards on the floor speaking in other tongues'.<sup>546</sup> Frodsham noted that,

God has given them utterance in languages supernatural and supernal, and that they have at last found an adequate way of expressing their love and praise to God ... there is something more blessed than words can express in speaking in other tongues.<sup>547</sup>

One 'bright young woman ... was so filled with a sense of the presence of God that ... she found herself voicing them in another tongue, on the street, in subdued tones, yet freely, clearly and without effort, all the way home'.<sup>548</sup> Sission wrote that 'with tongues, He is making ready a worshiping, adoring people, whose prayers fall so quickly into praises that while they are yet praying ... they are caught away in the worship and praise and adoration in tongues'.<sup>549</sup> Many testimonies noted the purpose of glossolalia was praise. For example, 'twenty-three were filled with the Holy Ghost and spake in tongues and glorified God',<sup>550</sup> or 'the power of God fell on the saints and they were standing all over the hall with her hands in the air *praising and magnifying the Lord* in

---

<sup>544</sup> Edward Armstrong, 'The Newark Convention', WE 88 (May 1, 1915), p. 4; cf. B.F. Lawrence, 'Article IX – The Pentecostal or "Latter Rain" Outpouring in Los Angeles', WE 130 (Mar 11, 1916), pp. 4-5, 8; Lawrence, 'Article XI – The Work Spreads to India', pp. 4-5, 8.

<sup>545</sup> Urshan, 'The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost', p. 6.

<sup>546</sup> Eld. G.T. Haywood, 'Pentecost At Apostolic Faith Assembly', CE 79 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>547</sup> S.H.F., 'Our Distinctive Testimony', p. 8.

<sup>548</sup> B.D. Landon, 'Youngstown, Ohio', CE 290 & 291 (May 31, 1919), p. 9; cf. Leonard W. Coote, 'The Testimony Of An English Business Man In Japan' CE 296 & 297 (Jul 12, 1919), pp. 6-7 (7).

<sup>549</sup> Elizabeth Sisson, 'Much Incense', WE 151 (Aug 5, 1916), p. 6.

<sup>550</sup> J.H. Lane, 'Earle, Ark.', PE 324 & 325 (Jan 24, 1920), p. 9. Italics mine.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia tongues'.<sup>551</sup> One author noted that the very nature of tongues was an idiolect of praise and thanksgiving: 'as the soul of a loving mother grows hungry and longs to hear an expression of love from the thoughtless child who is ever receiving but never giving ... so our Father in heaven loves to have wafted to Him ... a real note of praise and thanksgiving'.<sup>552</sup> Glossolalia may lead to further revelations from God: 'the Spirit ... leads (us) into a knowledge and deep experience of Him who is to come. The baptism is the forerunner of the deeper experience of the work of the Spirit'.<sup>553</sup>

#### 4. Tongues as a Gift of the Holy Spirit.

The gift of tongues and its companion gift, the gift of interpretation, were addressed in typical Pentecostal fashion. Bro. Rickard called the restoration of this prophetic voice of God to his people 'the supreme miracle of the age'.<sup>554</sup> Often the interpretation was reprinted for the common good: 'messages are being given in tongues with interpretation, calling sinners to come to God and declaring that Jesus is coming soon'.<sup>555</sup> Or, 'the power of God fell and the interpretation to a message given in tongues was "be not afraid. It is I (sic)"'.<sup>556</sup>

---

<sup>551</sup> Will C. Trotter, 'The Pentecostal Work In Portland, Ore.', WE 174 (Jan 27, 1917), p. 16. Italics mine. Cf. Bro. Andrew Urshan, 'Thirsting After God', WE 161 (Oct 21, 1916), p. 6; Brother Andrew Urshan, 'Word From The Missionaries', WE 161 (Oct 21, 1916), p. 12; J.H. Gray, 'Yokohama, Japan', CE 278 & 279 (Mar 8, 1919), p. 7; Homer G. Wilson, PE 316 & 317 (Nov 29, 1919), p. 14; 'Mrs. Mary W. Chapman', PE 346 & 47 (Jun 26, 1920), p. 13. Passim.

<sup>552</sup> Atterberry, 'They Shall Speak With New Tongues', p. 3.

<sup>553</sup> 'The Importance Of Receiving The Holy Spirit', CE 282 & 283 (Apr 5, 1919), p. 6.

<sup>554</sup> Bro. Rickard, 'Days Of Revelation', WE 112 (Oct 23, 1915), p. 3; cf. A. Blackburn, 'Report Of The Bradford Pentecostal Convention', WE 90 (May 15, 1915), p. 1; E.N. Bell, 'Question and Answers, #80', WE 149 (Jul 22, 1916), p. 8; L.E. Brown and T.O. Anderson, 'Stowers, North Dakota', WE 212 (Oct 27, 1917), p. 14. E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #185', WE 217 (Dec 1, 1917), p. 8.

<sup>555</sup> James Shurron, 'Koshkonong, Missouri', WE 124 (Jan 22, 1916), p. 14; cf. A.E. Wilson, 'Saints Of Benton, Ark. Melted', WE 123 (Jan 15, 1916), p. 15; 'Message In Tongues', WE 115 (Nov 13, 1915), p. 3; A.E.L., 'Pictures Of Pentecost In The Old Testament', p. 6; C.W. Doney, 'Prayer And Bible Conference', CE 276 & 277 (Feb 22, 1919), p. 5. Passim.

<sup>556</sup> Elder Daniel Lynn, 'Victory At Greenforest, Ark.', WE 135 (Apr 15, 1916), p. 16; cf. 'A Message Given In Tongues And Interpretation: Given At The Council', WE 111 (Oct 16, 1915), p. 2; Stanley H. Frodsham, 'The Renewed Mind', WE 158 (Sep 23, 1916), pp. 6-7 (6); 'A Little Cloud Out Of The Sea The Size Of A Man's Hand', CE 286 & 287 (May 3, 1919), p. 4. Passim.

1 Corinthians was the rulebook to be followed for this public gift.<sup>557</sup> Paul's unique theology of tongues: 1) 'classified and harmonized' these operations of the Spirit<sup>558</sup> 2) and was 'mostly corrective' providing the 'design and scope of the promise of the Father'.<sup>559</sup> Yet because 'the Spiritual condition of the Corinthians was not as it ought to be ... 1 Cor. 14 is not our basis, but this is written for our learning; it is an instruction for the right use of the tongues'.<sup>560</sup> From practical experience, contributors to the *PE* discerned that 1) SB opened one up to be used in any other of the spiritual gifts,<sup>561</sup> and 2) that personal prophesies were to be discouraged.<sup>562</sup>

### 5. Eschatological Sign.

Similar to other periodicals, testimonies of interpreted tongues often foretold Jesus' soon return:

for the first two or three years nearly all, if not all who came through speaking in tongues said in their first utterance, 'Jesus is coming soon. Get ready'. In (sic) a tongue they did not know, to themselves unawares, made known to them by bystanders, by someone present whose language they spoke, or by one who could interpret tongues.<sup>563</sup>

Occasionally these interpretations were apocalyptic in nature: 'stirring messages in tongues and interpretation are being given, warning the people about the terrible things that are soon coming upon the earth'.<sup>564</sup> Like other early Pentecostal periodicals, the *PE* attached a strong eschatological connection to glossolalia. First, tongues were a sign of

---

<sup>557</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Question and Answers, #80', p. 8.

<sup>558</sup> Kerr, 'Paul's Interpretation Of The Baptism', p. 6.

<sup>559</sup> Kerr, 'Paul's Interpretation Of The Baptism', p. 6.

<sup>560</sup> Polman, 'As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance', pp. 5-6.

<sup>561</sup> Arthur W. Frodsham, 'The Gifts Of The Spirit', *PE* 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), p. 1.

<sup>562</sup> E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #723', *CE* 298 & 299 (Jul 26, 1919), p. 5; cf. 'Mistaken Message In Tongues', *WE* 87 (Apr 24, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>563</sup> Sisson, 'A Sign People', p. 3; cf. Studd, 'My Convictions', p. 6; Mrs. Susie Woods, 'Further Report Of Mrs. Etter's Petoskey Meeting', *WE* 151 (Aug 5, 1916), p. 11; Mrs. J.W. Snyder, 'Four Years Ago Last January', *WE* 151 (Aug 5, 1916), p. 15; R.O. Miller, 'A Letter From Rolla, MO', *WE* 158 (Sep 23, 1916), p. 15; Robt. J. Craig, 'What The Pentecostal Saints Are Doing In San Francisco', *WE* 204 (Aug 25, 1917), p. 16; James O. Sharron, 'Fellowship In Christ', *WE* 207 (Sep 15, 1917), p. 14; Lewis Short, 'Lucky, Ark.', *CE* 244 & 245 (Jun 15, 1918), p. 13; Robt. Gillespie, 'Revival At Pentecostal Assembly Of God Mission, Vancouver', *PE* 344 & 35 (Jun 12, 1920), p. 14.

<sup>564</sup> Craig, 'Woodworth-Etter Meeting, Sidney, Iowa', p. 15.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the new dispensation.<sup>565</sup> Second, the rejection of tongues was a sign of the end times.<sup>566</sup>

Third, R.B. Chambers compared tongues to the bells on Aaron's robes, which signalled the priests going out and coming into the Temple, to an imminent return of Christ.

Tongues are

God's appointed sign, when Christ, our high priest ENTERED INTO heaven ... before the Lord, we may expect the SAME SIGN, the SAME SOUND, when He cometh out; this is why we have the tongues with us today, peeling forth the sound of His out coming, for He is nearing the door.<sup>567</sup>

Significantly, glossolalia's return signalled the end times:

if the baptism of the Holy Ghost accompanied with the sign of speaking in tongues constituted the early rain, why not the same accompany the Latter Rain? ... The coming of the Lord and the latter rain are inseparably connected.<sup>568</sup>

### E. The Nature of Glossolalia.

Ultimately, the nature of tongues was a mingling of the supernatural and natural.

Whether it was the sign or gift of tongues, xenolalia, or sign language for the deaf,<sup>569</sup> it was the 'Spirit giving utterance'.<sup>570</sup> The following categories examine various aspects of the nature of tongues.

---

<sup>565</sup> S.H.F., 'The Latter Rain', WE 178 (Feb 24, 1917), pp. 8-9; 'When Shall We Rise To Meet The Lord?', WE 184a (Apr 10, 1917), p. 2; McCafferty, 'The Time Of The Latter Rain', p. 5.

<sup>566</sup> 'The Personal Return Of Our Lord Jesus Christ', WE 190 (May 19, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>567</sup> Chambers, 'Wherefore The Tongues', p. 5. W.P. Robinson connected the signs Mk 16.17 with Mt. 24.29's eschatological signs, W.P. Robinson, 'Vera, Texas', CE 76 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 1. Chairman, J.W. Welch, wrote: 'to emphasize the cry, he has given the bride a new tongue to utter it, yea to whisper it, so the world shall not hear it, and the enemy cannot understand it', J.W. Welch, 'Just A Word From The General Office', WE 212 (Oct 27, 1917), pp. 9-10 (9); cf. Atterberry, 'They Shall Speak With New Tongues', p. 3.

<sup>568</sup> Argue, 'An Essential Sign?', p. 3.

<sup>569</sup> There was a fascinating discussion about whether sign-language for the deaf could be an IE if the one so anointed signed with their hands instead of using verbal-glossolalia. Bell's answer focused in on: 1) whether it was a genuine sign-language and 2) if the person knew sign-language. In Bell's estimation the value was in its *unknown quality* and not the status of the audience at all, E.N. Bell, 'Questions And Answers, #36', WE 129 (Mar 4, 1916), p. 8.

<sup>570</sup> D.R. Stover, 'Mansfield, IL', CE 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 3; cf. Wm. H. Merrin, 'An All-Day Service', CE 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 2; 'T.B. Smith and Wife', CE 78 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 4; Luis Standlee, 'God's Healing Power', CE 79 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 3; Pastor J. Rosselli, 'Broken Arrow, Okla.', WE 94 (Jun 12, 1915), p. 1; 'Geo. M. Kelly', WE 95 (Jun 19, 1915), p. 4; 'S. Smith', WE 112 (Oct 23, 1915), p. 4; Raymond May and J.C. Green, 'Good Meeting Near Crockett, Tex.', WE 131 (Mar 18, 1915), p. 15; Arthur S. Adams, 'Codell,

## 1. Mysteriously Human and Divine.

These early Pentecostals wrestled with describing the nature of their experience. On the one hand, they observed a human side. For example, they condemned those who ‘taught’ people how to speak in tongues, which confirmed the individual’s part in pushing air over their vocal cords.<sup>571</sup> On the other hand, they recognized a divine source to glossolalia. Flower noted that the human ‘mind can lie passive and listen and wonder as another force apart from itself uses and manipulates the tongue’.<sup>572</sup> However they were reluctant to go so far as to use the term ecstasy. In fact, there is only one possible use of ecstasy in the classic sense, indicating a loss of personal volition.<sup>573</sup> with tongues, ‘the believer rises above the natural into the realm of the supernatural in adoring and worshiping God … it is a state of ecstasy’.<sup>574</sup> Glossolalia was not ‘mere gibberish’ but was either a heavenly language or a known language that the Holy Spirit

---

Kansas’, WE 136 (Apr 22, 1916), p. 15; Bro. and Sister C.J. Studd, ‘A Blessed Work In Stormville, New York’, WE 139 (May 13, 1916), p. 14; W.H. Offiler, ‘Greetings From Seattle’, WE 140 (May 29, 1916), p. 14; W.G. Dunlap and Wife, ‘A Note Of Praise’, WE 143 (Jun 10, 1916), p. 14; S.A. Thorp, ‘The Lord Of Glory’, WE 145 (Jun 24, 1916), p. 14; Mrs. Sarah Storey, ‘Before They Call I Will Answer’, WE 129 (Mar 4, 1915), p. 15; Bro. Charles Henry, ‘Overlooked Reports’, WE 165 (Nov 18, 1916), p. 14; Edith Davis, ‘The Works Of God: A Testimony To Healing From Wales’, WE 166 (Nov 25, 1916), p. 2; Bro. W.B. Carelock, ‘Blessing At Three Creeks, Arkansas’, WE 167 (Dec 2, 1916), p. 17; Bro. W.B. Carelock, ‘Blessing At Three Creeks, Ark.’, WE 170 (Dec 23, 1916), p. 16; H.E. Hanson, ‘Dublin, Texas’, WE 208 (Sep 29, 1917), p. 14; R.H. Davis, ‘Davenport, IA’, WE 209 (Oct 6, 1917), p. 14; F.A. Hale, ‘A Word From San Antonio, Tex.’, WE 220 (Dec 22, 1917), p. 14; Carrie Pride, ‘Reports From The Field’, WE 234 & 235 (Apr 6, 1918), p. 14; J.B. Moody, ‘Reports From The Field’, WE 236 & 237 (Apr 20, 1918), p. 14; Frank Lindblad, ‘Reports From The Field’, CE 248 & 249 (Jul 27, 1918), p. 14; Frank Lindblad, ‘Reports From The Field’, CE 254 & 255 (Sep 7, 1918), p. 6; Paul M. Joyner, ‘Victory In Tennessee’, CE 256 & 257 (Oct 5, 1918), p. 14; E.R. Fitzgerald, ‘Reports From The Field’, CE 274 & 275 (Feb 8, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>571</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #202’, WE 187 (Apr 28, 1917), p. 9; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #612’, CE 274 & 275 (Feb 8, 1919), p. 5.

<sup>572</sup> Flower, ‘The Evidence Of The Baptism’, p. 4. In context, Flower notes that the ‘tongue … is in very close relationship to the mind’ and is encouraging yieldedness to the Spirit because it is difficult to ‘yield over the control of this member to another influence’. Cf. B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article IV – The Work of the Spirit in Rhode Island’, WE 124 (Jan 22, 1916), pp. 4-5.

<sup>573</sup> Gaston, ‘The New Birth And Baptism In The Holy Ghost’, pp. 1-2, 9. All other uses of ‘ecstasy’ are quotes by non-Pentecostals, Lawrence, ‘Article VII(a)’, pp. 4-6; B.F. Lawrence, ‘Article III – Tongues in History’, WE 123 (Jan 15, 1916), pp. 4-5 (5).

<sup>574</sup> Kerr, ‘Do All Speak In Tongues’, p. 7.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

spoke through or in cooperation with the individual:<sup>575</sup> ‘when He takes full possession of the yielded vessel. He will take the lips and speak through them in other tongues the praises and glories of Jesus.’<sup>576</sup> However, Sisson, who had studied several languages and ‘knew a little bit about the construction of languages’ thought tongues were a bit ‘wriggly’ and ‘without much construction’.<sup>577</sup> Given its indescribable nature, contributors defaulted to mystery when describing it.<sup>578</sup> Two profound metaphors attempted to unpack the mystery: 1) that of lovers who have a special idiolect,<sup>579</sup> and 2) that of a mother and child.<sup>580</sup>

### 2. Xenolalia and Language Study.

The practical theology of tongues in the *PE* included xenolalia but without any hint of MT.<sup>581</sup> In fact, the number of xenolaliac-testimonies were surprising given the absence of testimonies in Flower’s prior periodical (*TP*) after October, 1909.<sup>582</sup> However, by this time, Pentecostal missionaries were more culturally sophisticated and valued the study of the local language:<sup>583</sup> ‘I have gone to school to study this language, which is very

---

<sup>575</sup> Wm. C. Schell, *WE* 115 (Nov 13, 1915), p. 1; cf. W.W. Childers, ‘God blessing in Puxico, MO’, *CE* 74 (Jan 16, 1915), p. 4; Alva J. Walker, ‘A Testimony’, *WE* 176 (Feb 10, 1917), p. 14; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #727’, *CE* 298 & 299 (Aug 9, 1919), p. 5.

<sup>576</sup> Alice E. Luce, ‘What Does The World Demand’, *PE* 334 & 335 (Apr 3, 1920), p. 3; cf. A. Gregory Wilkinson, ‘Filled With The Holy Spirit’, *WE* 211 (Oct 20, 1917), p. 7.

<sup>577</sup> Elizabeth Sisson, ‘Pentecostal Light’, *WE* 205 (Sep 1, 1917), p. 7.

<sup>578</sup> Cf. ‘The Manifestation Of Tongues’, p. 7; Simpson, ‘A Methodist Minister’s Personal Testimony’, p. 3; Walhall, ‘Do All Speak With Tongues Who Receive The Baptism?’, p. 6.

<sup>579</sup> A.P. Collins, ‘Three More Points’, *CE* 272 & 273 (Jan 25, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>580</sup> Lawrence, ‘Article VII(a)’, p. 6.

<sup>581</sup> The one exception might be a missionary who prayed for understanding of the language and God answered her prayer: ‘right there the Lord gave her the Spanish-language so that she could speak it and understand their speech’, S.H.F., ‘Pisgah As I Have Seen It’, *WE* 181 (Mar 17, 1917), pp. 2-4 (4).

<sup>582</sup> Henry M. Oatrandor, ‘Visions’, *CE* 76 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 1; Mrs. Vivian Strickland, ‘From Five to Seventeen’, *CE* 77 (Feb 13, 1915), p. 1; W.M. Harrison, ‘Understood in French’, p. 1; W.J. Higgins and Wife, ‘Victory In Revival’, *WE* 96 (Jun 26, 1915), p. 1; Mary W. Chapman, ‘In Madras And Travancore, India’, *WE* 186 (Apr 21, 1917), p. 13; Mrs. Catherin Cragin, ‘Paul Cragin Of Bolivia’, *WE* 233 (Mar 23, 1918), p. 9; Mrs. H.J. Johns, ‘He Set The Captive Free’, *CE* 280 & 281 (Mar 22, 1919), p. 7; ‘Miss Jessie Wengler, ‘The Missionary Department’, *PE* 330 & 331 (Mar 6, 1920), p. 12.

<sup>583</sup> Geo. M and Margaret Kelly, ‘Days of Blessing’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 4; J.E. Osborn, ‘Brother and Sister Hansen’, *CE* 77 (Feb 13, 1915), p. 4; ‘Sarah A. Kugler’, *CE* 78 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 4; ‘Gideon Dahlstein’, *CE* 79 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 4; Almyra Aston, ‘Nanpara, India’, *CE* 79 (Feb 27, 1915), p. 4; ‘Flora A. Halland and Mother’, *WE* 86 (Apr 10, 1915), p. 4; Beatrice Bernauer, ‘Teaches A Sunday School Class In Japan’, *WE*

hard. Have gone for one year and we see the need of another, to speak the language correctly as interpreter in His work.<sup>584</sup> Second, these accounts seem to be recorded precisely because tongues in a known language were unusual or rare. For example, in the midst of his talk the power of God came on him and he felt the impulse to speak in tongues which he held back for a time. But finally it became so strong that he spoke. When he finished, a young man in the audience arose and said that Carl had spoken in French, and he could interpret it.<sup>585</sup>

Third, xenolalia was a sign to unbelievers:

he dated his conversion to the night before when he heard Bro. Bosworth speak in German. He, being a German, understood ... Bro. Bosworth told him that he did not know a sentence in German and this put such a conviction on this man that he could not throw it off ... tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe but to them that believe not.<sup>586</sup>

At times, it was also a sign for believers by confirming its divine origin 'in the mouth of two or three witnesses'.<sup>587</sup> Lawrence recorded an account from a non-believing, secular reporter who validated the xenolalia as 'impartially' as possible and declared it a 'wonder'.<sup>588</sup>

---

94 (Jun 12, 1915), p. 4; 'Tommy F. Anderson', WE 104 (Aug 21, 1915), p. 2; 'Willa B. Lowther', WE 112 (Oct 23, 1915), p. 4. Also, missionaries who spoke the language were seen as more effective: 'W.D. Grier', CE 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 4; 'Susan B. Chester's Girls', CE 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 4; Mrs. E.A. Bernauer, 'A Little Missionary In Japan', WE 83 (Mar 27, 1915), p. 4; B. Berntesen, 'The Work In North China', WE 93 (Jun 5, 1915), p. 4; 'Bertha Sutley', WE 95 (Jun 19, 1915), p. 4; J.D. Wells, 'The Chico Camp-Meeting', WE 104 (Aug 21, 1915), p. 1; 'W.D. Grier', WE 117 (Nov 27, 1915), p. 4; Edw. Armstrong, 'Duluth, Minn. Convention', WE 118 (Dec 4, 1915), p. 1; F.H. Gray, 'Always Abounding In The Work Of The Lord', WE 187 (Apr 28, 1917), p. 13.

<sup>584</sup> Marie Jurgensen, 'Marie Jurgensen', WE 118 (Dec 4, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>585</sup> 'A Visitation Of God In The Great Prisons', WE 192 (Jun 2, 1917), p. 11; cf. S.H.F. 'Sunday School Lesson', CE 276 & 277 (Feb 22, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>586</sup> R.P. Hines, 'Tongues Are For A Sign', WE 85 (Apr 10, 1915), p. 2; cf. Kelly Campbell, 'Green Forest, Ark.', WE 120 (Dec 18, 1915), p. 3; cf. 'Sister Etter Has Success In Los Angeles, Calif.', WE 116 (Nov 20, 1915), p. 1; 'The Works Of God: Speaking In Tongues Understood In South Africa And Other Places', WE 163 (Nov 4, 1916), pp. 4-5 (4); 'George H Hicks', WE 170 (Dec 23, 1916), p. 16.

<sup>587</sup> Will C. Trotter, 'God Mightily Works In Portland', WE 92 (May 29, 1915), p. 1; 'Remarkable Moving Of Spirit Of God At St. Paul Minn.', WE 172 (Jan 13, 1917), p. 15. Burton, 'A Great Pentecostal Outpouring In Central Africa', p. 2.

<sup>588</sup> 'The Works Of God: Christians in India Are Given "Gift of Tongues"', WE 145 (Jun 24, 1916), pp. 4-6 (6). Cf. J.L.L., 'Toronto's Most Joyous Sect', p. 8.

### 3. Heavenly Anthem.<sup>589</sup>

The HA was noted often in testimonies. These descriptions illustrated the difficulty participants had in describing their experience of singing the HA. Testimonies like, ‘she spoke and sang in tongues’,<sup>590</sup> nuanced the human side while testimonies like, ‘the heavenly anthem was sung … (and) the Spirit spoke through him in other languages’ nuanced the divine.<sup>591</sup> Significantly, Sisson described it as ‘the wordless heavenly anthem’ to indicate this unknown divine facet.<sup>592</sup> Some, like Priscilla Wilkes, commented on new abilities: ‘the power came upon me and I preached a sermon and prayed and sang in other tongues … *I never could sing in the natural*, but now the Spirit let me sing and the people said that it was grand’.<sup>593</sup> Singing the HA was the equivalent experience of tongues spoken upon IE.<sup>594</sup> At other times, it indicated the nearness of God and his kingdom: ‘such singing, such praying in the Spirit I never did hear before. As we sang, wave after wave of the Holy Spirit came down and swept through the church until it seemed the Angels were in our midst taking part in the singing’.<sup>595</sup>

<sup>589</sup> Other monikers used in the *PE* are: 1) ‘singing in the Spirit’, W.L. Wood, ‘Bro. Wood In Los Angeles’, *WE* 96 (Jun 26, 1915), p. 1; 2) ‘singing in other tongues’, Wilkes, ‘Healed And Baptized In The Spirit’, pp. 6-7; 3) ‘singing a new song’, Sarah Haggard Payne, ‘The Fulfillment Of A Life Dream’, *WE* 172 (Jan 13, 1917), pp. 4-5 (5); and 4) ‘heavenly music’, George Hansen, ‘The Porto Rican Revival’, *WE* 220 (Dec 22, 1917), p. 11.

<sup>590</sup> W.D. Smith, ‘Big Creek, Ark.’, *WE* 88 (May 1, 1915), p. 4.

<sup>591</sup> Mrs. J.F. Greer, ‘The Essex, Mo., Revival’, *WE* 133 (Apr 1, 1915), p. 15; cf. F.A. Denton, ‘Baptized And Rejoicing’, *WE* 84 (Apr 3, 1915), p. 2; Lawrence, ‘Article X – My First Visit to the Azusa Street Pentecostal Mission, Los Angles, California’, p. 4.

<sup>592</sup> Sisson, ‘A Sign People’, p. 2.

<sup>593</sup> Wilkes, ‘Healed And Baptized In The Spirit’, p. 7. Italics mine. Cf. Hansen, ‘The Porto Rican Revival’, p. 11.

<sup>594</sup> Agnes Shirlaw, ‘A Healing And A Revelation Of the Soon Coming Of Jesus’, *WE* 189 (May 12, 1917), p. 4. Italics mine. Cf. Will C. Trotter, ‘The Portland Camp Meeting’, *WE* 202 (Aug 11, 1917), p. 16; E.L. Bants, ‘Reports From The Field’, *CE* 280 & 281 (Mar 22, 1919), p. 14; B.S. Moore, ‘In The Regions Beyond’, *CE* 260 & 261 (Nov 2, 1918), p. 10; B.C. Williams, ‘Los Angeles, Calif.’, *PE* 314 & 315 (Nov 15, 1919), p. 14.

<sup>595</sup> J.H. James, ‘Torrents of Blessing’, *CE* 78 (Feb 20, 1915), p. 3; cf. Hansen, ‘The Porto Rican Revival’, p. 11.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

‘Beyond words to describe’<sup>596</sup> and ‘more beautiful than tongue can tell or words to express’,<sup>597</sup> indicated the limitation of human speech in the divine presence.

### F. Testimonies.

The numerous personal testimonies in the *PE* followed the general pattern of testimonies in the other early Pentecostal periodicals, and notable testimonies have been included in the summary above. The greatest number of testimonies in the *PE* affirmed that their experience matched the apostles in the book of Acts. Several types of shorthand developed to convey this scriptural rootedness: ‘bible evidence’,<sup>598</sup> ‘scriptural evidence’,<sup>599</sup> ‘received the baptism as in Acts 2:4’,<sup>600</sup> ‘spoke with other tongues as in Acts 10:44-46’,<sup>601</sup> ‘received the Holy Ghost according to Acts 19:6’,<sup>602</sup> and ‘with other tongues as they did on the day of Pentecost’.<sup>603</sup>

---

<sup>596</sup> Payne, ‘The Fulfillment Of A Life Dream’, p. 5.

<sup>597</sup> Shirlaw, ‘A Healing And A Revelation’, p. 4.

<sup>598</sup> Howard Prather, ‘A Testimony’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 1; Wm. H. Merrin, ‘The City Stirred’, *WE* 89 (May 8, 1915), p. 1; John A. Westman, ‘Revival Outpourings’, *WE* 98 (Jul 10, 1915), p. 3; Mrs. Ethel Peace, ‘A Few Testimonies’, *WE* 101 (Jul 31, 1915), p. 1; ‘baptizing one in the Spirit, with Pentecostal evidence’, Jennison, ‘Hutchinson, Kansas’, p. 1; Rev. E.J. Douglas, ‘Great Revival Spirit At Dyer, Tenn.’, *WE* 116 (Nov 20, 1915), p. 4; Daniel Berg, ‘Over 300 Baptized In The Spirit’, *WE* 136 (Apr 22, 1916), p. 12; W.S.P., ‘Healed And Baptized’, *WE* 143 (Jun 10, 1916), p. 14; August Feick, ‘Mrs. Etter In Petosky, Mich.’, *WE* 150 (Jul 29, 1916), p. 15; R.H. Young, ‘Reports From The Field’, *CE* 258 & 259 (Oct 19, 1918), p. 14; L.A. Coote, ‘Yokohama, Japan’, *CE* 294 & 295 (Jun 28, 1919), p. 11.

<sup>599</sup> Will Trotter, ‘Portland, Ore.’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 3; Mrs. J.C. Miller, ‘A Ten O’Clock Prayer Meeting’, *CE* 76 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 1.

<sup>600</sup> Here are just the references from January, 1915: M.D. Carelock, ‘Tubal, Ark’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 3. ‘To baptized in the Holy Ghost as in Acts 2:4’, Z.W. Bulloch and wife, ‘Bellwood, Alabama’, *CE* 73 (Jan 9, 1915), p. 3; W.R Carmichael and Winnie Clements, ‘Enterprise, Alabama’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 1; J.H. Dolby, ‘Pentecostal Home In Lebanon’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 1; D.K. Morris, ‘Maryville, LA’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 1; Van and Bob Merrill, ‘Thirty-Five Baptized’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 3; J.E. Langdoe, ‘Hoopston, ILL’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 3; H.E. Jackson, ‘The First in Two Years’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 4; W.H. Amiot, ‘Collinsville, Okla.’, *CE* 76 (Jan 30, 1915), p. 1

<sup>601</sup> Wm. A. Summers, ‘Sinners Deeply Convicted’, *WE* 86 (Apr 17, 1915), p. 1; L.W. Clark and Wife, ‘Gipsey And Vinson, MO’, *WE* 102 (Aug 7, 1915), p. 1; W.T. Robinson, ‘Prayers Answered’, *WE* 102 (Aug 7, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>602</sup> John T. Wilson, *WE* 143 (Jun 10, 1916), p. 14.

<sup>603</sup> F.P. Poole, ‘God Is Love’, *CE* 80 (Mar 6, 1915), p. 2; Dave Fisher, ‘Pentecost In Rasutoland’, *CE* 258 & 259 (Oct 19, 1918), pp. 8-9 (8). ‘As they did at the beginning’, C.A. Lasater, ‘Ft. Smith, Ark.’, *CE* 276 & 277 (Feb 22, 1919), p. 14.

## G. An Historical ‘Ground of Expectation’.

In a series of articles, Lawrence notes that because the Pentecostal movement did not want to become ‘slaves of customs and precedent … leaps the intervening years crying, “*Back to Pentecost*”'; thereby, being ‘indifferent’ to church history.<sup>604</sup> To counter such thinking, Lawrence solicited historical accounts of Pentecostal outpourings from the readers of the *PE*, which he then contributed to the *PE*.<sup>605</sup> The existence of Lawrence’s work is significant for two reasons: 1) tongues-speech was clearly the defining mark of Pentecostalism in all these articles, and 2) this was a significant attempt to use church history to normalize glossolalia. These articles sought to provide an historical ‘ground of expectation that such a work (SB & tongues) was permanent in the church’ because of God’s unchanging ‘attitude toward the church and the world’.<sup>606</sup> Lawrence reasoned that the absence of such activity was either because God lost ‘all affection for us’ or he is a ‘weakening, failing God’, or because ‘believers may not allow God to do these things’.<sup>607</sup> The content of these articles has been incorporated into the summary above.

---

<sup>604</sup> Lawrence, ‘Article I – Back to Pentecost’, p. 4. Italics original. Lawrence admires the richness of church tradition, calling it a ‘guide’ and an ‘inheritance’, but notes that we desire ‘a return to New Testament power and custom … (when) healing for the body, expulsion of demons, speaking in tongues, were in early times the result of an activity of the Holy Spirit’.

<sup>605</sup> The first thirteen articles titled ‘Apostolic Faith Restored’ are published in a booklet: Lawrence, *The Apostolic Faith Restored*. A second series of articles had the same purpose. They were titled ‘The Works Of God’, and ran regularly between Apr 22, 1916 and Oct 14, 1916 (roughly 25 issues), whereupon it morphed into reporting significant testimonies.

<sup>606</sup> Note the nuancing of his purpose: ‘we shall present a few reports of the work of God down through the ages, more for the purposes of *providing a ground of expectation* that such a work was permanent in the church than in an effort to trace any historical connection with the primitive believers’, Lawrence, ‘Article I – Back to Pentecost’, p. 4. Italics mine. ‘We shall endeavor to trace, where possible, the conditions that allowed the activity of the Spirit … (and) the characteristics and methods prevalent’, p. 5. Cf. W.H. Turner, ‘Pentecost In History’, *PE* 358 & 359 (Sep 18, 1920), p. 8-9.

<sup>607</sup> Lawrence, ‘Article I – Back to Pentecost’, p. 5.

## Chapter 5

### The Oneness Pentecostal Periodicals.

#### I. Pre-Oneness – *The Good Report*.

##### A. Robert E. McAlister and Frank J. Ewart.

Robert E. McAlister<sup>1</sup> was at the ASM revival in 1906 and experienced SB whereupon he returned to Canada to establish churches and publish the periodical, *The Good Report* (TGR).<sup>2</sup> McAlister provided the impetus for Oneness thought at a camp meeting in Arroyo Seco, CA, in April 1913. He

proposed that the reason the apostles baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ (variations in Acts) instead of the triune name commanded by Jesus (Matt. 28:19) was that they understood ‘Lord-Jesus-Christ’ to be the Christological equivalent of ‘Father-Son-Holy Spirit’.<sup>3</sup>

Frank J. Ewart received the Holy Spirit in 1908 and was dismissed by his Baptist organization. ‘In 1911 he became the assistant pastor to William H. Durham in Los Angeles’.<sup>4</sup> Ewart’s anticipation of ‘further revelation and a greater outpouring … to bring about the close of the age’ was fulfilled when he heard McAlister preach at Arroyo Seco.<sup>5</sup> Ewart was one of the first to preach the message of Oneness<sup>6</sup> and became

---

<sup>1</sup> In 1919, after hearing McPherson, McAlister returned to the Trinitarian camp but remained sympathetic to Oneness, Robin Johnston, ‘Howard Goss: A Pentecostal Life’ (PhD Dissertation, Regent University School of Divinity, 2010), p. 141. That same year, ‘he joined with several other ministers to charter the Pentecostal Assemblies of God of Canada … (and) served as secretary-treasurer of the new organization (1919-32)’, Everett A. Wilson, ‘Robert Edward McAlister’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 852. Reed believes that McAlister was rebaptized in Jesus’ name, Reed, ‘*In Jesus’ Name*’, p. 146.

<sup>2</sup> Wilson, ‘Robert Edward McAlister’, p. 852. McAlister had a Presbyterian background.

<sup>3</sup> Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 937; Reed, ‘*In Jesus’ Name*’, p. 146.

<sup>4</sup> J.L. Hall, ‘Frank J. Ewart’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 623-24 (623).

<sup>5</sup> D. William Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel: The Significance of Eschatology in the Development of Pentecostal Thought* (JPTSup 10; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996), p. 272; cf. pp. 275-81.

<sup>6</sup> Historians record that Ewart preached his first Oneness message on Acts 2.38 at Belvedere, CA in April 15, 1914, Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 937. This examination reveals that Ewart was quickly moving towards Oneness positions on baptism, glossolalia, and salvation as early as August, 1913, F.J.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
one of its leading voices.<sup>7</sup> McAlister moved *TGR* to Los Angeles in June or July, 1913<sup>8</sup> and added Ewart as its co-editor.<sup>9</sup>

Two diverging streams of theology are seen in *TGR*.<sup>10</sup> The first stream promoted the traditional Pentecostal theology of glossolalia, including: evidential glossolalia;<sup>11</sup> a distinction between tongues as the Spirit gives utterance and the gift of the Spirit;<sup>12</sup> the standard purposes for tongues-speech;<sup>13</sup> the distinction between genuine and

---

Ewart, 'False Teaching Regarding The Baptism In The Holy Ghost', *TGR* 2.3 (Aug 1, 1913), p. 4. Haywood can be seen moving towards Oneness positions by December, 1913, Eld. G.T. Haywood, 'Baptised Into One Body', *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>7</sup> Hall, 'Frank J. Ewart', p. 624. The fighting spirit of Durham lived on in Ewart who envisioned theology as constantly under construction. Two examples: 1) Luther's salvation by faith devolved into 'the heresy of consubstantiation', Calvin's reforms were reduced to 'infant sprinkling', and Wesley's 'crumbling unscriptural plank of a "second, definite work of grace"' has gratefully been dealt a death blow, F.J. Ewart, 'Defending Heresies', *TGR* 1.3 (1912), p. 12. 2) 'History again repeats itself ... God has graciously perpetuated His work by reconstructing "The Pentecostal platform" ... in conformity with the name ... the time will come ... when the system of theology that has been built around what is called "the finished work of Calvary," will have to go just the same as the theology of the second work of grace went', F.J. Ewart, 'The Unity Of The Faith', *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 4.

<sup>8</sup> 'It is now six months since the "Good Report and The Apostolic Faith" were amalgamated and sent forth under the first name', Ewart & McAlister, 'Letter To Our Readers and Correspondents', *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>9</sup> McAlister embraced Oneness thought because of a revelation: 'dear Brother Ewart: Greetings in the name of Jesus! Well, we are coming along the line somewhere. I have had a revelation to my soul of the one God in threefold manifestation. How my heart melted in His presence. I could only weep and cry. Greet all the saints for me and tell them I am coming. Love to all the family, *in Jesus' name.*' R.E. McAlister, 'From Bro. McAlister', *MDS* 1.9 (Dec 1915), p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>10</sup> *TGR* 'was indicative of the gradual transition occurring in the theological thought of its editors and their closest associates ... many of those involved with Ewart and The Good Report were among the first to embrace the Oneness position and champion its message', French, *Our God Is One*, p. 58.

<sup>11</sup> R.E. McAlister, 'Have Ye Received The Holy Ghost Since Ye Believed', *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 2; 'Confession of Faith', *TGR* 1.3 (1912), pp. 3-5 (5); W.E. Moody, 'Preach The Word', *TGR* 1.3 (1912), pp. 7-8; A.H. Argue, 'At Evening Time It Shall Be Light', *TGR* 1.3 (1912), pp 6-7 (7); L.V. Roberts, 'Report Of God's Working In Indianapolis', *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 2; Harvey McAlister, 'The Church – Spiritual Gifts – Other Tongues', *TGR* 2.3 (Aug 1, 1913), p. 3; F.J. Ewart, 'Our Answer To Dr. Torrey', *TGR* 1.8 (Jan 1, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>12</sup> R.E. McA., 'Difference Between Speaking In Tongues, and The Gift Of Tongues', *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4; McAlister, 'The Church – Spiritual Gifts – Other Tongues', p. 3; F.J.E., *TGR* 2.3 (Aug 1, 1913), p. 3; Ewart, 'Our Answer To Dr. Torrey', p. 3; E.A. Paul, 'The Difference Between The Gift Of Tongues And The Speaking In Tongues As The Spirit Giveth Utterance', *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 2

<sup>13</sup> Eld. G.T. Haywood, 'Mid-Summer Convention At Indianapolis, Ind.', *TGR* 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913), p. 3; Harvey McAlister, 'Toronto Convention', *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 2;

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia counterfeit tongues;<sup>14</sup> testimonies of xenolalia;<sup>15</sup> teaching and testimonies of spiritual gifts;<sup>16</sup> the nature of glossolalia consistent with other Pentecostal periodicals;<sup>17</sup> and a broad view of sanctification.<sup>18</sup> This stream fits comfortably with what preceded it and adds little to this thesis. The diverging second stream is what will be examined. This stream, revealed an emerging Oneness theology culminating in a significant revision of its theology of tongues. Hereafter, only the development of Oneness thought as it is related to the development of glossolalia will be addressed.

## B. The Development of Oneness Glossolalia.

In *TGR*, noteworthy articles and several testimonies point toward a significant change in the perception of glossolalia in what would become Oneness theology. First, just two months after the Arroyo Seco camp, Ewart wrote, ‘the church of Christ was formed by the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost … there never was a church until after Pentecost’.<sup>19</sup> This reinterpreted the Day of Pentecost outpouring to be salvific rather than empowering. Three defences were offered in *TGR*: 1) Ewart reasoned that not all of

---

<sup>14</sup> Andrew D. Urshan, “‘Come’ And ‘Go’”, *TGR* 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>15</sup> The Latter Rain Evangel, ‘Seven Phases Of The Revival In India’, *TGR* 1.6 (Nov 1, 1913), p. 3.

<sup>16</sup> H.E. Randall, ‘Report From Egypt’, *TGR* 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913), p. 1. (reprinted *TGR* 1.6 (Nov 1, 1913), p. 1; Albert Norton, ‘Dhond, Poona District, India’, *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 1.

<sup>17</sup> McA., ‘Difference Between’, p. 3; Albert V. Peever, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 2; Clara Hammerton, ‘Church of England Girl Finds Jesus’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 3; Mrs. J.A. Murphy, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4; Mrs. A.V. Peever, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4. H.E. Randall testified that he whistled along with tongues: ‘I spoke and sang in tongues, and whistled sweet heavenly music’, H.E. Randall, ‘The Comforter Has Come To Hebert E. Randall’, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 7. There is even a testimony of deathbed glossolalia, ‘Winnie Olde Thurmond Gone On Before’, *TGR* 2.1 (Jun 1, 1913), p. 4.

<sup>18</sup> At times sounding WH: ‘Jesus is our Savior, *sanctifier*, healer, baptizer, “glorious Lord and coming King.” “Everything in Jesus, and Jesus everything.”’ R.E. McA., ‘Apostolic Faith Movement’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 3. Italics mine. Cf. Hammerton, ‘Church of England Girl’, p. 3; Mabel Baker, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4; James E. Small, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4. At other times sounding FW: ‘it follows that if at conversion a soul received pardon ONLY, and does not get deliverance from the principle within that … the old man, or the Adamic nature, stands as a criminal condemned to death by the law of God’, ‘Confession of Faith’, p. 3. Cf. ‘A Good Report’, *TGR* 1.3 (1912), p. 1; ‘Sanctification Not A Second Work Of Grace’, *TGR* 1.3 (1912), p. 2; Moody, ‘Preach The Word’, pp. 7-8; ‘Gentile Pentecost’, *TGR* 1.3 (1912), pp. 3, 11; F.J. Ewart, ‘The Work On The Coast’, *TGR* 1.3 (1912), p. 6; Ewart, ‘Defending Heresies’, p. 12.

<sup>19</sup> F.J.E., ‘The Church – What Is It?’, *TGR* 2.1 (Jun 1, 1913), p. 3; cf. Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4; Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

the 120 on the Day of Pentecost ‘were called to preach or minister in a public way. *But they were baptized into the body*'.<sup>20</sup> 2) To support this claim, a distinction was made between being ‘born into the kingdom, and baptized into the church’;<sup>21</sup> he reasoned that on the Day of Pentecost, the disciples were baptized into the church. 3) A few months later, Garfield T. Haywood,<sup>22</sup> a highly respected and influential African American pastor, explained that the disciples were like a Jewish baby fully born, but not recognized before his circumcision on the eighth day.<sup>23</sup>

Second, though defending their SB experience from the book of Acts,<sup>24</sup> these developers of Oneness thinking reinterpreted it through the Pauline conversion texts.<sup>25</sup> For example, Paul’s use of ‘baptized by one Spirit into one body (1 Cor. 12.13)’ was given more hermeneutical importance than Luke’s power for ministry:<sup>26</sup> ‘we believe that the baptism in the Spirit is designed by God to be vastly more than an endowment of power … they were baptized into the body’, wrote Ewart.<sup>27</sup> Haywood reasoned that it had to be conversion otherwise, ‘this would be a direct contradiction of the word of God which says there is one baptism (Eph. 4:4)’.<sup>28</sup>

---

<sup>20</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4. Italics mine.

<sup>21</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4. A few months later, Haywood concurred: ‘now if we are brought into the body by the new birth, then we conclude that the new birth and the baptism of the Holy Ghost are synonymous’, Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

<sup>22</sup> Haywood was a gifted songwriter, artist and pastor in Indianapolis, IN who in January, 1915 was rebaptized in Jesus’ after hearing a message by Cook, Cecil M. Robeck, Jr., ‘Garfield Thomas Haywood’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 693-94 (694). Haywood was highly respected by Flower and many in the AG. He served as bishop of PAW, a major Oneness denomination, and was known for his ‘balanced, visionary, and progressive’ leadership.

<sup>23</sup> Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

<sup>24</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4; F.J. Ewart, ‘Union Of two Largest Pentecostal Missions In Los Angeles’, *TGR* 1.6 (Nov 1, 1913), p. 4; Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3; F.J. Ewart, ‘A Beautiful Type Of Redemption’, *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 3.

<sup>25</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4; Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

<sup>26</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4.

<sup>27</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4.

<sup>28</sup> Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

Third, rich word-pictures were employed to nuance their message.<sup>29</sup> SB as a metaphor emphasized being overwhelmed or bathed in the Spirit, but Ewart nuanced it to mean incorporation. For example, crossing the Jordan became a type for salvation and the Day of Pentecost its ‘anti-type’:

if we divest our minds of traditional teaching and study the anti-type in the book of Acts we will find that the thing is perfect. On the great day of Pentecost, the two baptisms (water and Spirit) are connected by the conjunction AND in Peter’s instructions.<sup>30</sup>

Significantly, two sign-value metaphors nuanced glossolalia away from SB as a sign of empowerment or intimacy to Oneness’ sign of salvation: 1) using the seal of circumcision, Haywood wrote:

circumcision was given as a seal of righteousness ... this being true we find it to correspond with the baptism of the Holy Spirit which is also spoken of as a ‘seal’ after believing. Eph. 1:13 ... See Col 3:11; Rom. 2:29. So the subject is not ‘circumcision’ but the ‘baptism in the Holy Ghost’ ... Now if the ‘type’ was entered into by the birth in the ‘flesh’ and the ‘seal of circumcision,’ why not the ‘antitype’ by the ‘birth of the Spirit’ and the ‘seal of the Holy Spirit of promise?’ John 3:3-7; Eph. 1:13.<sup>31</sup>

2) Sister King gave a poignant example of glossolalia being the sign of a full spiritual birth: ‘until it gives the essential cry, and we say, “it is born and has life and brain, because it has cried?” ... so (to) the *full-born spiritual babe, babbles its infantile notes else we are not satisfied*'.<sup>32</sup> Although evidentiary language was used in *TGR*,<sup>33</sup> the traditional

---

<sup>29</sup> Even the concept of ‘Oneness’ was in flux. In a fascinating pre-Oneness article, Kerr wrote extensively about the believers’ oneness with each other and with God. However, Kerr never embraced the doctrine of Oneness as it later developed, D.W. Kerr, ‘The Oneness Of Believers’, *TGR* 1.7 (Dec 1, 1913), p. 4.

<sup>30</sup> Ewart, ‘A Beautiful Type’, p. 3. ‘These two births, or baptisms, were always in evidence in the early church where God’s normal plan was carried out’, F.J. Ewart, ‘The Gospel Of The Kingdom’, *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 2.

<sup>31</sup> Haywood, ‘Baptised Into One Body’, p. 3.

<sup>32</sup> Sister King, ‘Abnormality’, *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 4. Italics mine.

<sup>33</sup> The preferred nomenclature was ‘bible evidence’, or simply ‘the evidence’, cf. McA., ‘Difference Between Speaking In Tongues, and The Gift Of Tongues’, p. 4, ‘Confession of Faith’, p. 5.

Pentecostal purposes for the sign were minimized.<sup>34</sup> Additionally, one can see the elevation of water baptism as an objective sign. For example:

we die with him by faith, the ‘old man’ is buried in a watery grave, and we now are fully and eternally saved to the uttermost, being a new creature, quickened by the Holy Ghost, which is freely given to us. This new creation should now speak in new tongues and do the other things Jesus said he would do.<sup>35</sup>

Finally, at this Pre-Oneness stage, there are two further observations on Oneness' development. First, the testimonies in *TGR* revealed that the ground-breaking ideas of Oneness would take a few more years to reach the average person.<sup>36</sup> Even Andrew D. Urshan, who would become a staunch supporter of Oneness, thanked God for ‘the blessed evidence of the baptism, “speaking in other tongues”’.<sup>37</sup> Second, though Ewart’s trajectory of thought would collapse the distinction between SB and salvation into one work, at this time he was reluctant to let go of his roots:

there are people who profess to believe in the ‘Finished work of Calvary,’ and yet are preaching the very thing this great truth destroys, namely, *that one is not saved until they are baptized in the Spirit*. No one can have the revelation of the Pauline gospel in their souls who hold to this theory.<sup>38</sup>

---

<sup>34</sup> Ewart specifically states that ‘the baptism in the Spirit is designed by God to be vastly more than an endurement of power’, Ewart, ‘False Teaching Regarding The Baptism In The Holy Ghost’, p. 4. Rather, it is a sign of baptism into the body: ‘the baptism of the Holy Spirit is called in the word “a sealed unto the day of redemption.” … the Scriptures plainly declare “that in one spirit we are all baptized into this body.” (1 Cor. 12:13)’.

<sup>35</sup> Glenn A. Cook, ‘Standards Of Justification’, *TGR* 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913), p. 2; cf. Ewart, ‘The Gospel Of The Kingdom’, p. 2; Ewart, ‘A Beautiful Type’, p. 3.

<sup>36</sup> Randall, ‘Report From Egypt’, p. 1.

<sup>37</sup> Andrew D. Urshan, ‘A Call For Prayer And Intercession For Chicago’, *TGR* 2.1 (Jun 1, 1913), p. 2. Cf. ‘The Lord’s Doings At KinBurn’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), pp. 1, 6. Italics mine. Cf. Harvey McAlister, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4; Mrs. T.H. Lewis, ‘Testimonies’, *TGR* 1 (May, 1911), p. 4; Randall, ‘The Comforter Has Come To Hebert E. Randall’, p. 7; Mrs. Lillian Garr, ‘Pentecost in India’, *TGR* 2.1 (Jun 1, 1913), p. 4; Harvey McAlister, ‘Philadelphia Revival’, *TGR* 2.4 (Sep 1, 1913), p. 4.

<sup>38</sup> Ewart, ‘False Teaching’, p. 4. Italics mine.

## II. Oneness Periodicals – *Meat In Due Season* and *The Blessed Truth*.<sup>39</sup>

### A. History of the Oneness Movement.<sup>40</sup>

Oneness thought developed within the FW stream of Pentecostalism,<sup>41</sup> especially the AG, until it overflowed the banks of the AG and developed its own unique theology. D. William Faupel suggests three latent tributaries were especially significant for its development:<sup>42</sup> 1) ‘a concern to harmonize the two (Mt. 28.19 and Acts 2.38) baptismal formulae’;<sup>43</sup> 2) a devotional emphasis on the name of Jesus,<sup>44</sup> and 3), a ‘reappraisal of the divine nature’.<sup>45</sup> The movement began to separate from classic Pentecostalism when it was observed by McAlister at the World-Wide Apostolic Camp Meeting at Arroyo Seco, CA, in April 1913, that ‘the words Father, Son, and Holy Ghost were never used in

---

<sup>39</sup> MDS was the new name for TGR. The first two extant issues of MDS occur between the 3<sup>rd</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> General Councils and provide a snapshot of the theology and raw emotions just prior to the formal schism. Consider Ewart’s note to a friend: ‘we published the above letter to do away with all misunderstanding ... we desire love and cherish the fellowship and co-operation of all the ministerial brethren and respect all their convictions *that are derived from the word of God*’, Editorial note to, Homer Faulkner, ‘From Brother Faulkner’, MDS 1.9 (Dec 1915), p. 2. Italics mine.

<sup>40</sup> For the earliest stage, please see TGR above.

<sup>41</sup> Some historians believe that ‘many key Pentecostal leaders were simply being consistent with their previous Reformed and Keswick backgrounds’, French, *Our God Is One*, p. 51; cf. Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 936. Others see ‘a fast and furious evangelization’ of the FW message among the WH people, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 182.

<sup>42</sup> Oneness has many theological roots. David K. Bernard notes, ‘the groundwork was laid in the teaching and terminology of John Wesley and other early Methodists and then by the earliest Pentecostals, including Charles Parham, William Seymour, and especially William Durham’, David K. Bernard, *A History of Christian Doctrine, Vol. 1: The Twentieth Century* (Weldon Spring, MO: Word Aflame, 1999), pp. 111-12. French believes that an eschatological impetus re-ignited Pentecostal’s early ‘restorationist fervor, with the incendiary elements of pietistic experiential perfectionism, dispensational fundamentalism, and Christocentric “name” theology’, French, *Our God Is One*, p. 53; cf. James L. Tyson, *The Early Pentecostal Revival* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame Press, 1992), p. 170.

<sup>43</sup> Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, p. 281. Faupel adds, as ‘proponents of the Scottish Realism ... they all accepted the principle that the scripture could not be self-contradictory’, pp. 281-82. Dayton believes that ‘the emphasis on the baptismal formula lifted the importance of baptism in this wing of Pentecostalism in such a way as to lead to a very high-powered initiatory experience that included not only conversion but also “water baptism” and “Spirit baptism” with speaking in tongues as essential elements’, Donald W. Dayton, *Seven ‘Jesus Only’ Tracts*, pp. vii-viii. Reed notes that Durham raised awareness of Acts 2.38, Reed, ‘In Jesus’ Name’, p. 92, 121-28, 144.

<sup>44</sup> Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 936. Cf. Reed, ‘In Jesus’ Name’, pp. 44-73, 98; Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 282-85.

<sup>45</sup> Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 285-88.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Christian baptism'.<sup>46</sup> Reflection upon these items led to a soteriological reformulation of SB, which, when fully developed, became the distinctive position of Oneness – that ‘God’s standard of full salvation’ includes glossolalia:<sup>47</sup>

the basic and fundamental doctrine of this organization shall be the *Bible standard of full salvation*, which is repentance, baptism in water by immersion in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and the baptism of the Holy Ghost *with the initial sign of speaking with other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance*.<sup>48</sup>

For a short time, the emerging Oneness scheme fit uncomfortably within the AG.<sup>49</sup> At the 3<sup>rd</sup> General Council, the AG formally sought to ‘appease the entire body’,<sup>50</sup> but one year later, in October of 1916, it adopted what Oneness proponents believed to be an ‘ultra-Trinitarian “Statement of Fundamental Truths”’.<sup>51</sup> As a result, one hundred and fifty six ministers resigned the AG and became the pioneers of Oneness organizations.<sup>52</sup> Though the theology of Oneness emerged rather quickly, it would take several years before stable organizations developed.<sup>53</sup>

---

<sup>46</sup> French, *Our God Is One*, p. 58. French reports that there was an ‘audible shudder’ when he said this and a missionary “mounted the platform in one bound” to censor McAlister. But, all too late’. Cf. Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 937.

<sup>47</sup> Bernard, *A History of Christian Doctrine*, p. 111; cf. Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 943.

<sup>48</sup> ‘Fundamental Doctrine’, *Articles of Faith of the United Pentecostal Church International* (UPCI Manual, 2018 edition), p. 31. Italics mine. Bernard wrote there is ‘some debate’ on this issue within Oneness and there are some ‘differences between groups … on the proper characterization of these three steps of faith’, these groups are minority voices within the tradition, Bernard, *A History of Christian Doctrine*, pp. 111-12. For contemporary survey of glossolalia in the Oneness tradition, see: David K. Bernard, *The New Birth* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame Press, 1989), pp. 220-56.

<sup>49</sup> French notes that it was just 3 days after the AG’s founding council, on April 15, 1914, and one year to the date of the Arroyo Seco camp meeting, that Ewart and Cook rebaptized each other in Jesus’ name, French, *Our God Is One*, p. 62. Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 291-94.

<sup>50</sup> Tyson, *The Early Pentecostal Revival*, p. 174. Cf. Reed, ‘In Jesus’ Name’, pp. 158-61; Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 938; Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 294-98.

<sup>51</sup> French, *Our God Is One*, p. 71. Cf. Reed, ‘In Jesus’ Name’, pp. 161-66; Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 938; Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 298-99.

<sup>52</sup> Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, p. 938; French, *Our God Is One*, p. 71.

<sup>53</sup> Reed, ‘Oneness Pentecostalism’, pp. 938-40; Tyson, *The Early Pentecostal Revival*, pp. 181-208; French, *Our God Is One*, pp. 77-83; Faupel, *The Everlasting Gospel*, pp. 299-300.

## B. The Glossolalic Witness to ‘God’s Standard Of Salvation’.<sup>54</sup>

In the early Oneness writings, glossolalia as an evidence of SB was affirmed. For example, she ‘received her baptism *because we heard her speak with tongues and magnify God’.*<sup>55</sup> Urshan wrote that

these anti-Holy-Ghost-Tongues people are misrepresenting and misinterpreting many Scriptures which plainly prove that *the baptism of the Holy Ghost must be accompanied by the speaking in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance* (see, please, Mark 16:17-18; 1 Cor. 14:22; Isa. 28:11-12; Acts 2:4, 10:45-46, 19:6, etc.).<sup>56</sup>

However, there was a modification of what was meant by SB. Urshan meant ‘oneness with Christ’, or a ‘full salvation’,<sup>57</sup> which was the final component of the *ordo salutis* and not empowerment or any other traditional Pentecostal purpose for SB:

you may get angry if someone tells you that unless you speak in other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance you lack the heavenly sign of your (sic) oneness with Christ or the Spiritual Christ’s presence within you, but ... our Lord said to His Disciples, in the day they receive the Holy Spirit Baptism they will know then that He was in the father and they were in Him ... ‘the Spirit of God bears witness with our Spirit that *we are children of God*’.<sup>58</sup>

William E. Booth-Clibborn called for a single salvific event and argued that breaking up the *ordo salutis* into theological categories was divisive and inefficient:

we have named, labeled, stamped, designated and numbered a series of different blessings that should arrive on the individual at different stages of his salvation in numerical sequence. It’s foolish, ridiculous in the extreme ... what if God would wrap up in one bundle repentance, salvation, justification, sanctification, healing,

---

<sup>54</sup> Ewart wrote, ‘repentance, water baptism in the name of Jesus Christ and the reception of the Holy Ghost are the three great acts of faith, by which a sinner is identified with Jesus Christ’, Ewart, ‘To Our Friends’, p. 4. Reed believes that Haywood and Urshan were important for this component of Oneness thought, Reed, ‘In Jesus’ Name’, pp. 198; cf. pp. 78, 197-206.

<sup>55</sup> Douglas, ‘Mt. Tabor, Tenn.’, p. 6. Italics mine.

<sup>56</sup> Andrew Urshan, ‘The Almighty God in The Lord Jesus Christ’, in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven ‘Jesus Only’ Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; U.P.C. of Portland, 1919), p. 67. Italics mine.

<sup>57</sup> This phrase is found only once in the early extant literature, G.T. Haywood, ‘The Birth of the Spirit in the Days of the Apostles’, in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven ‘Jesus Only’ Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Indianapolis, IN: Christ Temple Book Store, n.d.), pp. 2-3. It is the official phraseology for the doctrine, ‘Fundamental Doctrine’, *Articles of Faith of the United Pentecostal Church International* (UPCI Manual, 2018 edition), p. 31. Cf. Bernard, *A History of Christian Doctrine*, pp. 111-12.

<sup>58</sup> Andrew Urshan, ‘The Doctrine of the New Birth of The Perfect Way to Eternal Life’, in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven ‘Jesus Only’ Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Cochrane, WI: Witness of God, Publishers, 1921), pp. 46-47. Italics mine.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
cleansing, baptism in the Spirit and unknown tongues and any other favorite blessing?<sup>59</sup>

Booth-Clibborn wrote: 'I have seen very many cases in the early days of this outpouring when one could not distinguish between salvation and Pentecost they were one. They are one and the same thing'.<sup>60</sup> Haywood, simply stated that 'to be born of the Spirit is to be baptized with the Holy Ghost, is the conclusion drawn from the word of God,'<sup>61</sup> and that 'the birth of the Spirit and the baptism of the Spirit are synonymous'.<sup>62</sup> Tongues always accompanied a completed salvation: 'every man "speaks as the Spirit gives utterance" when he receives the "gift" of the Holy Ghost'.<sup>63</sup>

### C. Understanding the Oneness Interpretation of Glossolalia.

Oneness' glossolalic sign of a completed salvation applied the same polemics of an appeal to scripture, experience, and history that the early Pentecostals used to defend the bible sign of empowerment. First, in line with their Pentecostal heritage, Oneness' defence followed the pattern from the book of Acts.<sup>64</sup> The best example was Winifred Westfield, who wrote that Peter recounted, 'that he (God) had "granted repentance unto life" to the Gentiles. (Acts 11:18) We notice they did not call it the baptism of the Holy Ghost or power for service, but simply REPENTANCE UNTO LIFE'.<sup>65</sup> She continued with the pattern from Acts,

the Ephesians ... were baptized in the NAME of the LORD JESUS, and when Paul laid his hands on them the Holy Ghost came upon them and they spoke with tongues and prophesied. (Acts 19:5-6) DO YOU KNOW that the BAPTISM of the

---

<sup>59</sup> Booth-Clibborn, 'Suddenly', p. 4. He writes, 'I had moreover to get rid of the idea of two Spirits entering at two different times causing two different experiences which occurred after two tarryings and heart searching's preceded by two repentings', Booth-Clibborn, 'A Preacher's Testimony', p. 4.

<sup>60</sup> Booth-Clibborn, 'A Preacher's Testimony', p. 4. Italics mine.

<sup>61</sup> Haywood, 'The Birth of the Spirit', p. 14.

<sup>62</sup> Haywood, 'The Birth of the Spirit', p. 16.

<sup>63</sup> Haywood, 'The Birth of the Spirit', p. 19. Haywood believes the *gift* of the Spirit with tongues is distinct from *gifts* of the Spirit, the former is 'the life of Christ himself' while the latter are gifts 'given for edifying the Church', p. 18; cf. p. 20

<sup>64</sup> Urshan, 'The Doctrine of the New Birth', p. 24; Urshan, 'The Almighty God in The Lord Jesus Christ', p. 67; Haywood, 'The Birth of the Spirit', p. 18; H.E. Reed, 'The Birth of Water and Spirit', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), pp. 1-2 (1).

<sup>65</sup> Westfield, 'What Is Truth', p 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Holy Ghost (Acts 2:4), the GIFT of the Holy Ghost (Acts 10:45), and RECEIVING the Holy Ghost (Acts 19:2), *are one and the same thing*, and accompanied with speaking in TONGUES?<sup>66</sup>

Winfield concluded that,

the Scriptures thus record that the disciples *came into the church* (the body or into Christ) SPEAKING IN TONGUES; likewise the Ephesians; also the Gentiles; and the Samaritans too *came into the church* ‘baptized by one Spirit into the BODY.’ This is God’s scriptural way of adding to his church.<sup>67</sup>

Ewart pleaded from the lack of scripture: ‘will someone please find us a single Scripture where the reception of the Holy Ghost is called the baptism of the Holy Ghost this side of Pentecost?’<sup>68</sup> In addition to Acts, Haywood connected the stammering lips of Isa. 28.11-12 to salvation using this logic: the ‘rest’ of Isa. 11.12 was the salvation Jesus promised in Mt. 11.28, which was then given on the Day of Pentecost. Therefore, ‘it can be plainly seen that the “rest” and the baptism of the Holy Ghost are one and the same thing’.<sup>69</sup>

The Oneness paradigm required a particular hermeneutic of scripture and theology. For example, though Jesus’ teaching on salvation was carefully expounded upon, his promises of an equipping power for ministry (Lk. 24.49, Acts 1.8) were not addressed. Theologically, what about those who were ‘very near the blessing’ of tongues?<sup>70</sup> Was an incomplete state of salvation possible? Westfield believed so and construed two levels of salvation: ‘DO YOU KNOW that the disciples had their names written in heaven before Pentecost? (Lk. 10:20.) But it does not signify that they were BORN AGAIN’.<sup>71</sup> However, most just accepted this in-between state as a fact. For example, ‘ten were granted repentance and five were filled with the Holy Ghost as in

---

<sup>66</sup> Westfield, ‘What Is Truth’, p 2. Capitols original and italics mine.

<sup>67</sup> Westfield, ‘What Is Truth’, p 2. Capitols original and italics mine.

<sup>68</sup> Ewart, ‘To Our Friends’, p. 4; cf. John Schaepe, *MDS* 1.21 (Aug 1917), p. 3.

<sup>69</sup> Haywood, ‘The Birth of the Spirit’, pp. 2-3.

<sup>70</sup> E.J. Douglas, ‘Mt. Tabor, Tenn.’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun, 1, 1919), p. 6.

<sup>71</sup> Westfield, ‘What Is Truth’, p 2. Capitols original.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Acts 2:4', or '*two* have been converted and *one* filled with the Holy Ghost'.<sup>72</sup> Seekers were encouraged to get up to 'the standard, (and) down with our theories'.<sup>73</sup>

Second, Oneness proponents appealed to their personal experience and likened water baptism in Jesus' name to their prior glossolalic SB.<sup>74</sup> For example, Bartleman wrote that

the experience was an exact parallel of my speaking in 'tongues' nine years ago ... (When) I experienced this baptism in the name of Jesus in my spirit I seemed to get a connection of what water baptism meant that I had never had before ... I was melted with liquid love of God ... (later) the old anointing came upon me and the heavenly song flowed from my lips.<sup>75</sup>

Third, just as Pentecostals utilized occurrences of glossolalia in church history to prove its ongoing nature in the face of cessationism,<sup>76</sup> church history recorded changes in the baptismal formula

from the name of Jesus to Father, Son and Holy Spirit. It saw the light of its earliest form between the years of 150 and 160 A.D., and as it offered a means of defense extremely easy and sure, it passed rapidly from the Roman Church to the other Churches.<sup>77</sup>

Ewart's vision was to restore the apostolic norm to when 'they baptized their converts in that one name invariably'.<sup>78</sup> For Haywood, the historical record revealed that 'the

---

<sup>72</sup> Lawrence McFarland, 'Monteagle, Tenn', *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), p. 4; H.E. Jackson, 'Aquilla, Texas', *TBT* 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919), p. 7. Italics mine. Cf. William E. Booth-Clibborn, 'Great Victory At Lodi Cal.', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug, 1917), p. 1; 'Victory With Much Opposition At San Antonio, Tex.', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug, 1917), p. 1.

<sup>73</sup> Reed, 'The Birth of Water and Spirit', p. 1.

<sup>74</sup> Reed argues that 'like other Pentecostals ... the truth of a doctrine lay primarily in the spiritual effect it registered rather than in intellectual argumentation ... the deciding vote on a doctrine must be the manifestation of apostolic blessing and power', Reed, 'In Jesus' Name', p. 143.

<sup>75</sup> F. Bartleman, 'Why I Was Re-Baptized In The Name Of Jesus Christ', *MDS* 1.9 (Dec 1915), p. 1. Italics mine. Cf. Booth-Clibborn, 'A Preacher's Testimony', p. 4.

<sup>76</sup> Ewart also defended against cessationism with an appeal to experience: 'the haired critics are too late in their endeavor to cut the last part of Mark's gospel out of the Bible; for God has experimentally (sic.) written on his people's hearts ... All your efforts to make a man believe that the "gift of tongues" was only for a bygone age will be futile, if that man has the gift of tongues ... For they have the author of the Scriptures dwelling within them', F.J. Ewart, 'The Last Great Crisis', *MDS* 1.13 (Jun 1916), p. 2.

<sup>77</sup> F.J. Ewart, 'The Mark Of The Beast', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug 1917), p. 3 (Org. cite: Augusta Sabatier, *Religion of Authority* [unknown], p. 37).

<sup>78</sup> Ewart, 'The Mark Of The Beast', p. 3.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

doctrine of Sabellius was more scripturally based than that of the Athanasian Creed'.<sup>79</sup>

History gave Bartleman a pragmatic missiological defence: 'the christians of the second, and even of the third century, were far from having a clearly understood and recognized doctrine of the subject of the Trinity ... (even) the Jews and the Moslems (sic) think the Christians worship three Gods'.<sup>80</sup>

#### D. The Purpose and Nature of Glossolalia.

First, the clearest purpose of initial glossolalia in these early Oneness writings, was to bear witness of one's salvation:

one must have the Holy Spirit to have New Testament *salvation* ... It is a blessed thing to know without a doubt that you are *in this one body*, the Spirit itself also bearing witness with our spirit that we are the *children of God* – Rom. 8:16. 'He shall TESTIFY and ye shall bear WITNESS. – John 15:26-27. This was the way it was on the day of Pentecost ... they all began to speak in tongues.<sup>81</sup>

Several hymns highlighted this assurance for the believer: Jesus 'gives me His Spirit a witness within, Whisp'ring of pardon, and saving from sin'.<sup>82</sup> The only mention of an equipping from SB was by Thoro Harris who noted in a hymn that it 'equips the weak with pow'r, Giving boldness to deliver Heaven's message for the hour'.<sup>83</sup> A few testified of glossolalic praise, for example, 'let praise your tungs (sic) employ'.<sup>84</sup> After tongues as a sign of salvation and this single reference to equipping power, personal testimonies added little to a theology of glossolalia. Most simply stated they 'received the Holy

---

<sup>79</sup> G.T. Haywood, 'The Victim Of The Flaming Sword', in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Indianapolis, IN: Christ Temple Book Store, n.d.), p. 65.

<sup>80</sup> F. Bartleman, 'The One True God', *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), pp. 1, 4

<sup>81</sup> Reed, 'The Birth of Water and Spirit', pp. 1-2. Italics mine. Cf. J.B. Price, 'Hollywood, MO.', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>82</sup> Wm. J. Kirkpatrick, 'Saved to the Uttermost', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #205; Cf. Thoro Harris, 'The Pentecostal Presence', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #22; G.T. Haywood, 'These Signs Shall Follow Them', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #88.

<sup>83</sup> Harris, 'The Pentecostal Presence', #22.

<sup>84</sup> Thoro Harris, 'The Awakening', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #28; cf. James Rowe, 'Mine At Last', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #119; D.R. Aikenhead, 'Great Outpouring At Trossachs', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug, 1917), p. 1

Spirit',<sup>85</sup> or reported that 'fourteen have been baptized in Jesus Name, and ten received the Holy Ghost. They all spake in other tongues'.<sup>86</sup>

Second, the nature of glossolalia was identical to what was written in other Pentecostal periodicals. It was the Holy Spirit who spoke through the individual: 'I am praising God for baptising (sic) me with the Holy Ghost, speaking through me in other tongues'.<sup>87</sup> Tongues were either an 'unknown tongue'<sup>88</sup> or xenolalia.<sup>89</sup> For example, John Schaepe wrote, 'God baptized me with the Holy Spirit, and the Spirit spoke through me in Chinese, Korean and Japanese languages of which the Japanese was understood'.<sup>90</sup> Because glossolalia was not ecstatic or gibberish, 'a clear definite language' was desired.<sup>91</sup> The HA was mentioned both by Bartleman<sup>92</sup> and in a hymn by Harris: 'our lips repeat the word (Jesus), Glad to tell the strains that ne'er shall cease ... O my soul would join the seraph choir, Chanting His unchanging love'.<sup>93</sup>

## E. Testimonies.

These early Oneness periodicals included far fewer testimonies than other Pentecostal periodicals because the bulk of the space was used apologetically for baptism in The Name or the Oneness of God.<sup>94</sup> Also, testimonies from clergy greatly outnumbered those from the people, so the *voca populi* was somewhat muted.<sup>95</sup> As expected, many

---

<sup>85</sup> Arthur S. Davis, *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3; Mike Sullivan, *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), p. 4.

<sup>86</sup> S.R. Burrow, 'Troy City, Tenn', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>87</sup> Crissie Phillips, 'A Happy Family', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>88</sup> Haywood, 'The Birth of the Spirit', p. 20; Booth-Clibborn, 'Suddenly', p. 4; Booth-Clibborn, 'Great Victory At Lodi Cal.', p. 1.

<sup>89</sup> Booth-Clibborn, 'A Preacher's Testimony', p. 4; McFarland, 'Monteagle, Tenn', p. 4. Missionaries received language training and there was no evidence of 'missionary tongues', Sarah A. Kugler, 'New From the Mission Field', *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), pp. 1, 3 (3).

<sup>90</sup> John Schaepe, 'A Remarkable Testimony', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug, 1917), p. 3.

<sup>91</sup> 'From Winnipeg', *MDS* 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 2.

<sup>92</sup> Bartleman, 'Why I Was Re-Baptized', p. 1.

<sup>93</sup> Thoro Harris, 'His Name', Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #133. Italics mine. The verse of a song by James Rowe included, 'sweet is the song that my spirit sings', as another possible reference to the HA, Rowe, 'Mine At Last', #119.

<sup>94</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, p. 185.

<sup>95</sup> Of the testimonies that include glossolalia or SB in *MDS*, eleven are by ministers or those reporting on a revival and two are by lay people. There is only one first person testimony, Bartleman, 'Why I Was Re-Baptized', p. 1. Of the testimonies that include glossolalia or SB in *TBT*, thirty-three are by ministers

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

testimonies conformed to the Oneness polemic. For example, ‘nine have been baptized in Jesus’ name, and three have received the Holy Ghost as in Acts 2:4’,<sup>96</sup> and ‘about forty-five have been *added to the body of the Lord* through receiving the baptism in the Spirit according to Acts 2:4’.<sup>97</sup> However, two elements emerged in Oneness testimonies that were unique from prior Pentecostal testimonies. First, though tongues indicated when an individual was baptized with the Holy Spirit, slightly different terminology emerged. There were only two references to tongues as an ‘evidence’.<sup>98</sup> Overall, ‘sign’ was the preferred term: ‘we cannot believe that a man has received the Holy Ghost until we see *the signs* as were manifested in Apostolic days, therefore tongues were *for a sign*’.<sup>99</sup>

Second, whereas other Pentecostal periodicals highlighted glossolalia as the effect or culmination of the SB experience, Oneness testimonies included tongues but emphasized water baptism. Note T.B. Walker’s report: ‘some are being baptized with the Holy Ghost (but) ... fourteen have been baptized in water in Jesus’ name and more to be baptized (sic)’.<sup>100</sup> In fact, one can see an idealized connection between tongues and waters of baptism: Gertrude Randol wrote that ‘eight in one week have received the

---

or those reporting on a revival and two are by lay people. There is only one first person testimony, Phillips, ‘A Happy Family’, p. 3.

<sup>96</sup> G.B. Rowe and Wife, ‘South Bend, Ind.’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919), p. 6. ‘As in Acts 2.4’ was the most common way of delineating SB. Westfield, ‘What Is Truth’, p 2; Joe Barnett, ‘Carrollton, IL’, *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), p. 4; J.S. Jones, ‘Reeds Springs, MO’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919), p. 6; G.J. Finley, ‘Royalton, ILL’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919), p. 7; D.R. Aikenhead, ‘Great Outpouring At Trossachs’, *MDS* 1.21 (Aug 1917), p. 1; Schaepe, p. 3.

<sup>97</sup> Finley, ‘Royalton, ILL’, p. 7. Italics mine. ‘Pastor Frank Small Baptized’, *MDS* 1.9 (Dec, 1915), p 2; ‘From Winnipeg’, *MDS* 1.13 (Jun 1916), p. 2; E.J. Douglas, ‘Beacon, Tenn.’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun 1, 1919), p. 6.

<sup>98</sup> Aikenhead, ‘Great Outpouring At Trossachs’, p. 1; J.R. Beeler, ‘Joplin, MO’, *TBT* 4.11 (Jun, 1, 1919), p. 6. Twice ‘witness of the Holy Ghost’ was used, Price, ‘Hollywood, MO.’, p. 3. Cf. Reed, ‘The Birth of Water and Spirit’, pp. 1-2.

<sup>99</sup> Haywood, ‘The Birth of the Spirit’, p. 21; cf. Anthony Pellicotti, ‘Refreshing Showers Falling At Kelso’, *MDS* 1.21 (Aug, 1917), p. 1; Urshan, ‘The Doctrine of the New Birth’, pp. 46-47; R.E. Winsett, ‘Evening Light’, Mattie Crawford (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926), #52; Haywood, ‘These Signs Shall Follow Them’, #88.

<sup>100</sup> T.B. Walker, ‘Truman, Ark.’, *TBT* 4.2 (Jan 15, 1919), p. 2; cf. Floyd I. Douglass, ‘Louisville, KY’, *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), pp. 3-4 (3); Price, ‘Hollywood, MO.’, p. 3; Cora Huffington, *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia baptism of the Holy Ghost, and eight have been baptized in Jesus Name (sic). *Only one received the Holy Spirit in the water, but as they press on they do get it*'.<sup>101</sup> Several testimonies affirmed this connection between water baptism and SB.<sup>102</sup> For example, they 'received the Holy Ghost. I baptized six in Jesus Name. One came out of the water filled with the Spirit and speaking in tongues.'<sup>103</sup> Tongues were a sign, but water baptism was the objective, 'divinely appointed means of identifying the sinner with his Savior'.<sup>104</sup>

---

<sup>101</sup> Gertrude Randol, 'St. Louis, MO', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3. Italics mine. Bartleman, 'Why I Was Re-Baptized', p. 1.

<sup>102</sup> 'Pastor Frank Small Baptized', p 2; *MDS* 1.13 (Jun, 1916), p. 2; Barnett, 'Carrollton, ILL', p. 4; Beeler, 'Joplin, MO', p. 6.

<sup>103</sup> Arthur S. Davis, *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3

<sup>104</sup> F.J. Ewart, 'Baptism – Is It For The Remission Of Sins', *MDS* 1.21 (Aug 1917), p. 2.

Categories that Emerged from the Periodicals

	Evidences	Divine Love	Missionary Tongues	Xenolalia	Sanctification	Heavenly Anthem	Eschatology	Nature	Unique Nuances
Sign Terminology									
AF	Bible evidence	X	X		X	X		Passive	
BGM	Bible evidence	X	X		X		X	Passive & Ecstatic	
TWT	Bible evidence					X			
COGE	As the Spirit gives utterance	X	X		X	X			Signs & Wonders
THA / PHA	Initial evidence	X	X		X	X	X	Passive	
TOF	The evidence	X			X	X	X	Ecstatic & Mystery	Affect: Joy
TP	Full consummation		X					Inspired Speech	
PT	The evidence						X		Finished Work
WW	The evidence						X		
PE	The sign & the evidence	X			X	X	X	Human & Divine	Sacramental & Historical
TGR*	Sign of a completed salvation								
MDS / TBT	Standard of salvation							Divine	Water Baptism

\* Emerging Oneness was the only topic examined.

Categories that Emerged from the Periodicals

	Power	Prayer	Praise	Revelation	Gift	Edify	Signs & Wonders	Cessation	Counterfeits	New Issue	Response to Critics
<i>AF</i>	X	X	X	X	X	X					
<i>BGM</i>	X	X									
<i>TWT</i>											
<i>COGE</i>	X	X	X	X	X	X					
<i>THA / PHA</i>	X	X	X	X	X	X					
<i>TOF</i>	X	X	X	X	X	X					
<i>TP</i>	X	X	X								
<i>PT</i>											
<i>WW</i>											
<i>PE</i>	X	X	X	X	X	X					
<i>TGR*</i>											
<i>MDS / TBT</i>											

\* Emerging Oneness was the only topic examined.

## Chapter 6

# Revisioning<sup>1</sup> a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia.

### I. Metaphor as a Means of Revisioning a Theology of Glossolalia.

This study of glossolalia carefully examined the reception history of the earliest Pentecostals. Pentecostal theology ‘is not first and foremost a doctrinal or intellectual tradition; it is an affective constellation of practices and embodied “rituals”’;<sup>2</sup> therefore, it is best expressed in its spirituality<sup>3</sup> whereby – ‘if reduced to concepts and propositions – it loses its very essence’.<sup>4</sup> To give expression to their experience, the early Pentecostals co-opted the theological categories and explanations of the modern worldview. Nevertheless, it is clear that they struggled to put the totality of their experience into words.<sup>5</sup> Their testimonies and articles were ill-fit within many

---

<sup>1</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, pp. 190-92. Chan observes ‘a community that seeks consciously to preserve its own values and way of life is more likely to be open to change as it faces new challenges than one that has no *explicit* tradition ... traditioning by nature is a communal affair’, Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 17. Italics original.

<sup>2</sup> James K.A. Smith, *Thinking in Tongues: Pentecostal Contributions to Christian Philosophy* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 2010), p. xv, cf. p. 110. Luke T. Johnson observes that the altar area of most churches represents ‘institutional power’ because religion is ‘concerned with correctness: of doctrine, morality, authority, procedure’; whereas the bulletin / prayer boards in the foyer of most churches reveals the lived-faith that is ‘much more about the experience of transforming power’, Luke Timothy Johnson, *Religious Experience in Earliest Christianity: A Missing Dimension in New Testament Studies* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 1998), pp. 1-2.

<sup>3</sup> Christianity ‘did not begin as a book religion but as a lived religion’, Walter J. Hollenweger, ‘The Ecumenical Significance of Oral Christianity’, *Ecumenical Review* 41.2 (1989), pp. 259-65 (262). Gunkel, *The Influence of the Holy Spirit*, pp. 10, 13-14; Hollenweger, ‘After Twenty Years’, pp. 10-11; Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 33; Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 15; Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, pp. 2, 35.

<sup>4</sup> Hollenweger, ‘Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement’, p. 553.

<sup>5</sup> For example, Blumhofer writes, ‘the “Pentecostal experience” referred ... to an intense religious experience known as the baptism in the Holy Spirit that was marked by tongues speech ... (which) became known as the “uniform initial evidence” ... This dogmatic description, however, fails to capture (1) the process many early Pentecostals typically believed Spirit baptism was a part of, (2) the results they insisted authenticated such baptism, or (3) the dispensational significance they assigned it, which developed a climate of anticipation and intensity’, Edith L. Blumhofer, ‘*Pentecost in My Soul’ Explorations in the Meaning of the Pentecostal Experience of the Early Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1989), p. 17. Italics mine. Cf. Rybarczyk, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 90. C.S. Lewis’ observed that when a higher medium is reproduced in a lower medium, the lower medium cannot fully

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

theological categories because ‘glossolalia is *irrational by design ... It's not logical, was not meant to be and only suffers damage to its essence in trying to force it through Aristotelian linear Euclidian constructs*'.<sup>6</sup> Thus, the very task of this constructive chapter is at risk because glossolalia is a symbol that points to the very limitation of theological and linguistic categories. It ‘resists even the most exalted human language’.<sup>7</sup>

Therefore, rather than working within limiting and Modernistic theological categories, this chapter will use metaphor as a constructive tool for revisioning a Pentecostal theology of glossolalia. It is believed that a symbol can express what theological proposition cannot. As homage to the wonderful theological work done by these Pentecostal pioneers, this chapter will carefully analyse their testimonies, which liberally used biblically-inspired images to describe their experiences, and it will engage contemporary scholarship using the metaphor’s intended point of correspondence with glossolalia. In so doing, it is hoped that this modest methodology will provide an overture for today’s Pentecostals to give comprehension to what cannot be fully put into words. The motivation for revisioning is the challenge that Pentecostalism is in jeopardy of losing its most distinctive element – glossolalia:<sup>8</sup>

---

grasp or contain the higher medium. For example, a pencil sketch of a landscape is quite limited compared to seeing a real landscape, Lewis, ‘Transposition’, pp. 109-10.

<sup>6</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 6, 165. Italics and bold original.

<sup>7</sup> Baker, ‘Pentecostal Experience’, p. 263; cf. Lewis, ‘Transposition’, p. 99; Mills, *Understanding*, p. 38; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, pp. 69-70; Hollenweger, ‘Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement’, p. 553; Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, pp. 163, 96; Rybczynski, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 84; Smith, *Thinking in Tongues*, p. 123; Brandon Kertson, ‘Spirit Baptism in the Pentecostal Evangel’, *Pneuma* 37:5 (2015), pp. 244-61 (250); Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 128, 176.

<sup>8</sup> Margaret M. Poloma, *The Assemblies of God at the Crossroads: Charisma and Institutional Dilemmas* (Knoxville, TN: The University of Tennessee Press, 1989), pp. 83, 191; Blaine Charette, ‘Presidential Address – Reflective Speech: Glossolalia and the Image of God’, *Pneuma* 28.2 (Fall, 2006), pp. 189-201 (189-90); Paul Alexander, *Signs & Wonders: Why Pentecostalism is the World’s Fastest Growing Faith* (San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass, 2009), p. 39; Margaret M. Poloma, ‘Glossolalia, Liminality and Empowered Kingdom Building: A Sociological Perspective’, in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 147-73 (158); Margaret M. Poloma, in ‘North American Pentecostalism’ in Adam Stewart (ed.) *Handbook of Pentecostal Christianity* (DeKalb, IL: Northern Illinois University Press, 2012), p. 157. Alexander believes decline is due to ‘accommodation to dominant cultural norms regarding race, ethnicity, gender, class, and age: a move toward more individualism; and a hermeneutic incongruent with Pentecostal spirituality’, Kimberly Ervin Alexander, ‘Heavenly Choirs in

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Pentecostalism is fast developing into an evangelical middle-class religion. Many of the elements that were vital for its rise and expansion into the Third World are disappearing. They are being replaced by efficient fund-raising structures, a streamlined ecclesiastical bureaucracy, and a Pentecostal conceptual theology ... (that) follows the evangelical traditions, to which is added the belief in the baptism of the Spirit.<sup>9</sup>

Hollenweger's point is well made here: Pentecostalism must 're-oralize' its theology away from modernistic or 'literary theology'.<sup>10</sup> Therefore, this attempt to construct a thoroughly revised Pentecostal view of glossolalia will not be bound to traditional theological categories.<sup>11</sup>

Some guidelines for the use of symbols and metaphors are in order before theological construction: 1) metaphor is a legitimate means of theological construction: 'religious metaphors do permit theological inferences ... the better the metaphor is, the more pregnant it will be with possible implications'.<sup>12</sup> Images 'help us approach the incomprehensible mystery ... and mediate the sacred'.<sup>13</sup> 2) Both sides of the symbol

---

'Earthly Spaces: The Significance Of Corporate Singing In Early Pentecostal Experience', *JPT* 25 (2016), pp. 254-68 (268).

<sup>9</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 19.

<sup>10</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 39.

<sup>11</sup> The most notable theological discussion excluded is whether SB is a CI or a subsequent experience. If one extrapolates the point of correspondence between the biblical metaphor and its intended tenant, it reveals two completely separate tenants. Being born again (CI) corresponds to an either/or tenant: one is either born again (or adopted) or one is not. Whereas the SB metaphors correspondence to levels of intensity or fullness tenants. The Pentecostal pioneers did not confuse the natural tenants: 'water baptism is generally admitted to be the door into the church militant ... (but) Holy Ghost baptism is an entering into the *very closest relations and fellowship* with God', Webb, 'Baptized Into One Body', p. 2. Italics mine. Cf. Southern, 'The Baptism of the Holy Ghost, p. 3.

<sup>12</sup> George D. Chryssides, 'Meaning, Metaphor and Meta-Theology', *Scottish Journal of Theology* 38 (1985), pp. 145-53 (149). Metaphor enables 'the believer to filter out appropriate sets of connotations ... (by which they are) at least partially able to understand the meaning of concepts which defy definition at a literal level', p. 153. There are some things that can only be expressed in a non-literal fashion, because some things 'are momentarily beyond our grasp', p. 146. George B. Caird believes that metaphor comprises 'almost all the language of theology', George Bradford Caird, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible* (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1980), p. 144. Yong believes that some 'truth(s) can be accessed and communicated only via symbols which contrast the finite and the infinite', Amos Yong, '"Tongues of Fire" in the Pentecostal Imagination: The Truth of Glossolalia in Light of R.C. Neville's Theory of Religious Symbolism', *JPT* 12 (1998), pp. 39-65 (48).

<sup>13</sup> Clark Pinnock, *Flame of Love: A Theology of the Holy Spirit* (Downers Grove, IL: Intervarsity Press, 1996), p. 120.

need to be understood to be meaningful – ‘the subject which the metaphor is about and the metaphorical description’.<sup>14</sup> Meaning is therefore derived from an analogous correspondence or ‘an interconnection’<sup>15</sup> in one of four ways: ‘perceptual, synaesthetic, affective and pragmatic’.<sup>16</sup> 3) ‘A metaphor is seldom wholly descriptive: a metaphor is capable of adding *expressive* dimensions to purely descriptive ones’.<sup>17</sup> ‘We have to distinguish those respects in which analogy holds from those in which it does not’,<sup>18</sup> because it may have either a low or high degree of correspondence with the element symbolized.<sup>19</sup> 4) Metaphor expands our imagination. It allows the interpreter to break from old boundaries and create new possibilities. Such imagination is ‘the peculiarly distinguishing mark of the *imago Dei* ... it is world-making (or world-view-making)’.<sup>20</sup> Finally, 5) a metaphor ‘is not identical with the reality to which it points’.<sup>21</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup> Chryssides, ‘Meaning, Metaphor and Meta-Theology’, p. 151; cf. Lewis, ‘Transposition’, p. 100. Gordon T. Smith adds, ‘the whole point of a symbol is that it is a symbol ... (take Holy Communion for example) if it looks too much like every other meal, it loses its capacity as a symbol to link heaven and earth’, Gordon T. Smith, *Evangelical, Sacramental & Pentecostals: Why the Church Should be All of These* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2017), p. 76. These two sides are called the vehicle and tenant: ‘vehicle being the thing to which the word normally and naturally applies, the thing from which it is transferred, and tenant (is) the thing to which it is transferred’, Caird, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible*, p. 152.

<sup>15</sup> Salib Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, PE 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), pp. 10-11 (11); cf. Stanton, ‘The Effect of the Divine Indwelling’, TOF 34.7 (Jul 1914), pp. 160-61 (160); Irwin, ‘My Pentecostal Baptism – A Christmas Gift’, p. 114.

<sup>16</sup> Caird, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible*, p. 145; cf. pp. 145-48. Perceptual comparisons appeal to the five senses, pp. 145-46. Synaesthetic is an artificial and ridiculous comparison, like colour in music, p. 147. Affective comparisons are those in which feelings and emotions are valued, p. 147. Pragmatic comparisons are those that compare an ‘activity or result’, pp. 147-48.

<sup>17</sup> Chryssides, ‘Meaning, Metaphor and Meta-Theology’, p. 147. Italics original. Author notes the role of experience as a means to ‘check’ the metaphor with reality, pp. 150-51.

<sup>18</sup> Baker, ‘Pentecostal Experience’, p. 265.

<sup>19</sup> For example a low degree of correspondence would be between the oil running down Aaron’s beard. It is ‘restricted to the fragrance’, Caird, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible*, p. 153. A high degree of correspondence would be between the church and the human body in which ‘the variety of function in the members contribute to the organic unity of the whole’, p. 153.

<sup>20</sup> Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, p. 45; cf. p. 46.

<sup>21</sup> J. Rodman Williams, *Renewal Theology, Vol. Two: Systematic Theology from a Charismatic Perspective* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan 1996), p. 234; cf. S.H.F., ‘From The Pentecostal Viewpoint’, p. 8.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

The following theological construction will be organized thus: encounter metaphors, public metaphors, and personal metaphors, followed by a look at a metaphor for the nature of tongues and a poignant Oneness metaphor.

### **II. Encounter Metaphors.**

#### **A. Introduction.**

The Pentecostal doctrine of IE has used up more printer's ink than any other aspect of glossolalia. Before revisioning, several introductory points need to be made. First, though the term 'initial evidence' was once a great apologetic and polemic, it has become an example of musty Modernistic thinking, akin to Darwin's 'fossil proof'.<sup>22</sup> Nearly all theological explanations of IE have tried to squeeze it through these scientific and Modernistic categories.<sup>23</sup> Second, the theological and exegetical arguments within these categories have been fought to a standstill, and one's position largely depends on personal experience and presuppositions.<sup>24</sup> Third, despite these difficulties, the biblical sign-value of one's first glossolalic experience simply cannot be ignored<sup>25</sup> or

---

<sup>22</sup> Spittler, 'Suggested Areas for Further Research in Pentecostal Studies', p. 48; Walters, 'Why Tongues?', pp. 85-86. In a similar fashion, Evangelicals fell into the modernistic terminology trap with the terms 'inerrant and infallible' to describe the bible as a result of Darwin's influence, McDonald, *Theories of Revelation*, pp. 196-217; cf. Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 303.

<sup>23</sup> For example, Lederle notes that glossolalia cannot be proved as the 'first effect' of SB, Lederle, 'An Ecumenical Appraisal', p. 132. Consider Montgomery's quote of Evan Roberts: 'prayer force is a scientific force as truly as electricity, steam or any other force known to science, and has its laws embodied in God's word', Sisson, 'A Call To Prayer', p. 60.

<sup>24</sup> For example, Castelo deconstructs IE with: 1) 'the waning of revivalist culture on the American scene impacts this way of reflecting on religious experience', Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 146. 2) Exegetical issues: a) challenges to the pattern from the book of Acts, b) Paul's theology of glossolalia, and c) 'it is always a challenge to draw a normative pattern from historical occurrences', p. 147. 3) It commodifies Christian spirituality into the haves and the have nots.

<sup>25</sup> Here are two examples that ignore any sign-value: 1) '*it is essentially a prayer gift*', Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 30; cf. pp. 24-25, 30-31. Italics mine. 2) Cox devotes only two sentences to IE. His point is that Pentecostals have changed from tongues as the IE to it is 'one gift among many', Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 88. For the exegetical arguments surrounding Paul's statement that tongues are a sign (1 Cor. 14.20-22), see: J.P.M. Sweet, 'A Sign for Unbelievers: Paul's Attitude to Glossolalia', in Watson E. Mills (ed.) *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986 [org. pub. 1967]), pp. 141-64; Fee, *The First Epistle to the Corinthians*, pp. 677-83; David Lim, *Spiritual Gifts: A Fresh Look* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1999), pp. 155-62; Anthony C. Thiselton,

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia downplayed in favour of a more ecumenically acceptable ‘prayer language’.<sup>26</sup> Finally, Pentecostalism’s IE is an outflow of what John the Baptist, Jesus and the disciples all described with the metaphor of ‘Spirit Baptism’.<sup>27</sup> The point of correspondence between SB and the metaphor is that ‘the term baptism implies to be *immersed in, plunged under and even drenched or soaked*, suggesting that the whole being of a person is imbued with or enveloped in the Holy Spirit’.<sup>28</sup> Therefore, all descriptions of the glossolalic outflow of SB are, in a sense, secondary descriptions of this overarching image of being overwhelmed with the Spirit. The pioneers were careful to make the distinction between secondary and primary word pictures. For example, evidential glossolalia was compared to a stamp on an envelope and not the meaningful letter inside, or to an inedible restaurant sign that points to a nourishing meal inside.<sup>29</sup> Consequently, the following attempt at theological engagement with secondary metaphors should, in

---

New International Greek Commentary: *The First Epistle to the Corinthians* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 2000), pp. 1120-26; Roy E. Ciampa and Brian S. Rosner, ‘1 Corinthians’ in G.K. Beale and D.A. Carson (eds.) *Commentary on the New Testament Use of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Academic, 2007), pp. 740-42; Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 231; Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 107-23. Some Charismatic scholars who hold a classical Pentecostal view of IE are: Howard M. Ervin, *Conversion-Initiation and the Baptism in the Holy Spirit: An engaging critique of James D.G. Dunn’s ‘Baptism in the Holy Spirit’* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1984); Howard M. Ervin, *Spirit Baptism: A Biblical Investigation* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1987); Williams, *Renewal Theology, Vol. Two*, pp. 209-12.

<sup>26</sup> Baker, ‘Pentecostal Experience’, pp. 152-82, 200, 227, 236. Baker’s position is ‘that the infilling ... need not be attested to by glossolalia’, and one’s ‘personal Pentecost is only an expectation and a commencement of the conclusive theophany of God that will come in the Parousia for all believers’, pp. 234, 292. Cf. Hayford, *Beauty*, pp. 93, 98.

<sup>27</sup> Ivan Satyavrata points out that six of the seven references contrast John the Baptist’s baptism with Jesus’ (Mt. 3.11; Mk 1.8; Lk. 3.16; Jn 1.33; Acts 1.4-5; 11.16), Ivan Satyavrata, *The Holy Spirit: Lord and Live-Giver* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2009), p. 127. Significantly, Acts 1.4-5 records Jesus’ command to wait in Jerusalem and prophesies that the disciples will be baptized in Jerusalem in a few days. In Acts 11.16, Peter identifies the outpouring of the Holy Spirit on Cornelius’ household as the same one he had received, because of glossolalia (10.46). Paul’s single use in 1 Cor. 12.13 is an outlier, rotating the metaphor’s meaning to unity rather than encounter, Roger Stronstad, *The Charismatic Theology of St. Luke* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1984), p. 10; Fee, *First Corinthians*, p. 605.

<sup>28</sup> Satyavrata, *The Holy Spirit: Lord and Live-Giver*, p. 127. Italics mine.

<sup>29</sup> S.H.F., ‘From The Pentecostal Viewpoint’, p. 8; McPherson, ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost’, p. 7; cf. Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, p. 11.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia some way, define and support the primary metaphor of being overwhelmed in order for it to have integrity.

### B. A Crucifixion of Self – Hunger, Tarrying, and Yieldedness.

For the early Pentecostals, the crucifixion of self was an important metaphor of the evidence, comparable to Jesus' *kenosis*:<sup>30</sup> 'as we yield through death and deep interior crucifixion of our fine parts to the indwelling of the Holy Ghost', the Spirit 'communicate(s) to us the fullness of the life of the glorified Christ'.<sup>31</sup> Emptying and yielding oneself is still the common means to SB. Cashwell's quote is well-known: 'as soon as I reached Azusa Mission, a new crucifixion (sic) began in my life and I had to die to many things'.<sup>32</sup> The periodicals are replete with testimonies describing a hunger for more of God, tarrying for the Spirit, and ultimately, yielding one's tongue to the Spirit. For example, 'when we got to the place that we gave up everything and everybody, unloaded everything ... then we received the blessed baptism of the Holy Ghost and spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance'.<sup>33</sup>

Hungering, tarrying, and yielding were modest sacramental actions,<sup>34</sup> like the action of receiving Holy Communion:<sup>35</sup> these seeker-initiated activities placed the individual in a position to apprehend the immanent presence of the Holy Spirit;

---

<sup>30</sup> Romans 6.6; Gal. 2.19-20; 5.23; Phil. 2.7.

<sup>31</sup> A.G. Ward, 'Soul Food For Hungry Saints', *PE* 310 & 311 (Oct 18, 1919), p. 8.

<sup>32</sup> Cashwell, 'Came 3,000 Miles', p. 3.

<sup>33</sup> Hayes, 'Slack up in Pentecostal Saints', p. 3; cf. Ward, 'Soul Food For Hungry Saints', p. 8. This process often merges with sanctification because 'when a seeker is tarrying for the power, the Spirit frequently convicts of many things that would hinder his incoming. This is "the way of holiness"', S.H.F., 'Our Distinctive Testimony', p. 8.

<sup>34</sup> Killian McDonnell, 'The Function of Tongues in Pentecostalism', *One in Christ* 19:4 (1984), pp. 332-54; Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years' Research', p. 7; Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', pp. 61-76; Macchia, 'Initial Evidence', pp. 122, 125; Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 155; Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia', p. 211; Taves, *Fits, Trances & Visions*, p. 332; Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 78; Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 167-68; Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 37; Randal Ackland, 'Towards a Sacramental View of Glossolalia', unpublished paper presented at the Society for Vineyard Studies (New Haven: Yale Divinity School, 2017).

<sup>35</sup> 'It is as much of a command to receive the Holy Ghost and talk in other tongues as it is to be baptized with water or take the bread and wine to commemorate the Lord's death till he comes again', Tomlinson, 'We Would Not Know', p. 1. Cf. Polman, 'Speaking in Tongues (TBM)', pp. 236-37; Montgomery, 'The Promise Of The Father', pp. 4-5.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

nevertheless, this revelation was dependent upon divine initiative.<sup>36</sup> An individual could receive immediately or continue seeking for years. Further, this sacramental action of seeking God was not for incorporation into the body of Christ,<sup>37</sup> but was analogous to the disciples staying in Jerusalem for the promised power from on high.<sup>38</sup> Though one did not seek tongues, it was significant to the image of crucifixion that the yielding of one's tongue was yielding the most 'unruly member' of the body:<sup>39</sup>

glossolalia serves as a sign of submission to God. Anyone who yields his speech to the Spirit's linguistic control will find it possible to be available to the Spirit's control ... for the operation of other gifts of the Spirit ... it is an indication that the person has crossed the first hurdle of strangeness.<sup>40</sup>

Tongues 'became a sign of responsiveness and surrender to God'.<sup>41</sup> There is an analogous correspondence between this crucifixion of self and Jesus' *kenosis*: the 'practice of glossolalic prayer may be understood as emptying out of the self before God (*kenosis*) so that one might become full of the Holy Spirit and thereby participate in Christ's nature (*theosis*)'.<sup>42</sup>

---

<sup>36</sup> Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 70; Chan, 'Evidential Glossolalia', p. 211.

<sup>37</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', pp. 63, 69-70, 74; Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', pp. 61-76; Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 50.

<sup>38</sup> Contra Bruner in Frederick Dale Bruner, *A Theology of the Holy Spirit: The Pentecostal Experience and the New Testament Witness* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970). Cf. Ervin, *Conversion-Initiation*; Randal H. Ackland, 'Spirit Baptism: An Appraisal of Frederick Dale Bruner's Book, A Theology of the Holy Spirit: The Pentecostal Experience and the New Testament Witness, and an Examination of Possible Pentecostal Responses to Bruner's Criticisms' (MA Thesis, Wheaton College, Wheaton, IL, 1988), pp. 165-69.

<sup>39</sup> Luke 24.49.

<sup>40</sup> James 3.8; cf. Burk, 'Cliff View, Va.', p. 2; Throop, 'A Partial Experience', p. 131.

<sup>40</sup> William G. MacDonald, 'The Place of Glossolalia in Neo-Pentecostalism', in Watson E. Mills (ed.) *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 221-34 (227).

<sup>41</sup> Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 81-82; cf. Gordon Fee, 'Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia', in Wonsuk Ma and Robert P. Menzies (eds.) *Pentecostalism in Context: Essays in Honor of William W. Menzies* (JPTSup 11; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997), pp. 24-37 (25, 36). 'Pentecostal ascetics thus will sometimes speak in tongues quite deliberately as a means of cultivating intimacy with God through an act of *anamnesis* ... they simply pray and in the course of praying they will find themselves moving from activity to passivity', Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 81.

<sup>42</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience,' p. 253. Others use different terminology: Costelo prefers the term 'purgation', Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 77-79. Augustine prefers the term *askesis*, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 20.

### C. Bride and Groom or Mother and Child – Intimacy.

Two biblical metaphors used by the early Pentecostals highlight aspects of intimacy between the seeker and the Holy Spirit. The first image is that of a bride and groom who have a special idiolect between them, sometimes called ‘pillow-talk’ or ‘sweet-nothings’. Despite the lack of a linear word / symbol connection, an ‘impression’ is communicated between lovers.<sup>43</sup> In the same way,

the baptism in the Holy Spirit is to prepare the real, true, Spiritual church as a bride for Jesus, the bridegroom ... (Just as) lovers have a language that strangers do not understand ... Jesus understands and he is able to make us understand also ... he tells me I am his and my heart responds in whispers of love, ‘he is mine’.<sup>44</sup>

As the bride of Christ,<sup>45</sup> we, like the Shulamite bride who gave herself to Solomon, share an intimacy with the Spirit.<sup>46</sup>

When your body gets full of the oil of the Holy Spirit your lips and tongue get filled also, and the new tongues drop off your lips like honey; you will be distinctly conscious that it is the Heavenly Dove who is speaking through you in other tongues ... Do not be satisfied until you have the indwelling spirit HIMSELF.<sup>47</sup>

Chan is correct in noting that relationship is an excellent category for IE,<sup>48</sup> yet he still chooses to ‘ground’ evidential tongues ‘in the doctrine of conversion-initiation’.<sup>49</sup> That is like saying all intimacy or romance ends with the wedding ceremony, or merely looks back to the signing of the wedding license as its highpoint.<sup>50</sup> Rather, the

<sup>43</sup> For a fascinating discussion from the perspective of a missionary linguist, cf. Tarr’s work on ‘drum-talk’, Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 157-59; cf. Tarr, *Double Image*, pp. 151-55.

<sup>44</sup> Collins, ‘Three More Points’, p. 4; cf. Eckman, ‘Speaking In Tongues’, p. 4. Welch believes that glossolalia is coded for their own protection: ‘God has given the bride a new tongue to utter it, yea to whisper it, so the world shall not hear it, and the enemy cannot understand it’, J.W. Welch, ‘Just A Word From The General Office’, WE 212 (Oct 27, 1917), pp. 9-10 (9); cf. ‘They Shall Speak With New Tongues’, PE 320 & 321 (Dec 27, 1919), p. 3; Frodsham, ‘What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues’, p. 59.

<sup>45</sup> 2 Corinthians 11.2; Rev. 19.7; cf. Polman, ‘Speaking in Tongues (TOF)’, pp. 236-37; E.C. Caddell, ‘Kimberly, Ala.’, COGE 6.16 (Apr 17, 1915), p. 2.

<sup>46</sup> CJM, ‘The Promise of the Father’, TOF 37.1 (Jan 1917), pp. 1-6 (3). She references SOS 1.3; 4.11. It is so intimate ‘that even your lips and tongue are not your own anymore; and your tongue is made “glad”’:

<sup>47</sup> CJM, ‘The Promise of the Father’, TOF 37.1 (Jan 1917), pp. 1-6 (4).

<sup>48</sup> Chan, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia’, pp. 84-85.

<sup>49</sup> Chan, ‘Evidential Glossolalia’, p. 210; cf. 206.

<sup>50</sup> Contra Pinnock: ‘it may be best to speak of spiritual breakthroughs as actualizations of our initiation’, Pinnock, *Flame of Love*, p. 169.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

metaphor's strength is that there are non-formal,<sup>51</sup> completely spontaneous<sup>52</sup> moments of intimacy that are of such pure delight that one desires to 'express oneself and, concomitantly, the less one is able to find adequate expression'.<sup>53</sup> As emotional as the salvation experience may be, SB is not like the forensic prayer of repentance nor the public confession at water baptism; rather, it is the 'certitude' that God has made direct contact.<sup>54</sup> The bible sign is analogous to a spontaneous kiss between married lovers, a symbol of intimate relationship.<sup>55</sup> Glossolalia is intimate 'love talk';<sup>56</sup> it is an 'insider's language' shared only between two hearts;<sup>57</sup> it is a 'natural cry'<sup>58</sup> whose purpose is to adore the other. In other words, it is the selfless, whispered 'true worship' of the other.<sup>59</sup>

As the beloved adores their lover, self-awareness disappears and they are concurrently filled with the Holy Spirit; there is 'a participation in the divine nature';<sup>60</sup> a liminal overlap of the *a priori* / real world and the unseen / eternal worlds.<sup>61</sup> Perhaps repurposing the concept of '*theosis*' is the best theological explanation of this mingling of the divine with *imago Dei* in humankind:

---

<sup>51</sup> Macchia, 'Initial Evidence', pp. 119-20.

<sup>52</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 48. Randall Holm proposes that tongues are a verbal 'blush in the presence of God when ... we are left chasing words', Holm, 'New Frontiers in Tongues Research: A Symposium', p. 129.

<sup>53</sup> Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 62.

<sup>54</sup> Wacker, *Heaven Below*, p. 12; Grant Wacker, 'The Functions of Faith in Primitive Pentecostalism', *Harvard Theological Review* 77 (Jul 1, 1984), pp. 353-75 (360); cf. Morton T. Kelsey, *Tongue Speaking: An Experiment in Spiritual Experience* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1964), p. 229.

<sup>55</sup> Land, 'Be Filled With The Spirit', p. 116.

<sup>56</sup> MacDonald, 'The Place of Glossolalia in Neo-Pentecostalism', p. 225.

<sup>57</sup> Vessie D. Hargrave, 'Reformation to the Twentieth Century', in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 97-139 (119).

<sup>58</sup> Chan, 'The Language Game of Glossolalia', p. 90.

<sup>59</sup> Kimberly Ervin Alexander, 'Boundless Love Divine: A Re-evaluation of Early Understandings of the Experience of Spirit Baptism', in Steven Jack Land, Rickie D. Moore, and John Christopher Thomas, eds., *Passover, Pentecost and Parousia: Studies in Celebration of the Life and Ministry of R. Hollis Gause* (JPTSup 35; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2006), pp. 145-70 (168).

<sup>60</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 258. '*The filling of the Spirit is primarily an experience of the Spirit Himself for inhabitation and empowerment*', Joseph R. Flower, 'Holiness, the Spirit's Infilling, and Speaking with Tongues', *Paraclete* 2.2 (Summer 1968), pp. 7-9 (8). Italics original.

<sup>61</sup> Richard A. Hutch, 'The Personal Ritual of Glossolalia', in Watson E. Mills (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 381-95 (392); Poloma, 'Glossolalia, Liminality', pp. 147-73.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the Eastern Orthodox understanding of deification (*theosis*) as attaining the likeness of God in Christ-likeness is affirmed as the ultimate calling and purpose of all humanity ... it takes one will to create humanity, but two to sanctify it ... the synergistic collaboration between the divine and human will.<sup>62</sup>

Therefore, the glossolalic response 'is not to inform, but to participate in the divine nature':<sup>63</sup> 'what appealed to my spirit more than the miraculous gift of tongues was this sense of God's presence; this intimacy and fellowship with the Infinite'.<sup>64</sup>

The second image for intimacy that was used by the early Pentecostals is that of a mother and child. Just as at salvation, there is a revelation that causes the human heart to cry 'Abba.'<sup>65</sup> There is at SB a revelation that causes the human heart to cry out beyond its understanding:

just as the baby's cooing is perfectly intelligible to the mother so the unintelligible, Spirit-given, utterances of the believer are intelligible to His Father, and the child, unimpeded by the limits of human language, fully and freely communes with its God.<sup>66</sup>

Noteworthy in this word picture is the gap between the human and the divine.<sup>67</sup> It is precisely this understanding / not understanding that is the strength of the metaphor: tongues helps to restore awareness of supernatural mystery to Christian worship ... the two go together: revelation to the human spirit leads to praise from the human spirit. As revelation received goes deeper, so the praise in tongues become richer.<sup>68</sup>

When an infant plays with its parent, it is in fact learning about its potential adult world.<sup>69</sup> In the same way, glossolalia is a playful 'means which enables the speaker to

---

<sup>62</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 22, cf. p. 21; Timothy Ware, *The Orthodox Church* (New York, NY: Penguin Putnam Inc., 1997, reprint, 1963), pp. 231-33.

<sup>63</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 279-80.

<sup>64</sup> Lange, "The Glory That Excelleth", pp. 250-55.

<sup>65</sup> Romans 8.15; 1 Cor. 14.2.

<sup>66</sup> Lawrence, 'Article VII(a)', p. 6. Here Lawrence refers to 1 Cor. 14:2.

<sup>67</sup> 1 John 3.2. 'The reality of God utterly transcends our puny capacity to describe it', Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 96.

<sup>68</sup> Peter D. Hocken, 'Jesus Christ and the Gifts of the Spirit', *Pneuma* 5.1 (Spring 1983), pp. 1-16 (12-13).

<sup>69</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 139-40, 277. In 1 Cor. 13.11, 'Paul's point in context has to do not with "childishness" and "growing up," but with the difference between the present and the future', Gordon Fee, *God's Empowering Presence: The Holy Spirit in the Letters of Paul* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1994), p. 209. Wolf believes that glossolalia is a 'prototype' or 'marginal' language, Holm, 'New Frontiers in Tongues Research: A Symposium', pp. 133-34, 138.

open up to a new spiritual dimension'.<sup>70</sup> It is the 'restoration of the divine image' within humankind.<sup>71</sup> It is when the badly scarred *imago Dei* within receives 'mysteries' of what will be, because:<sup>72</sup>

human beings were created with the capacity to be mystically encountered by God ... an 'organ of vision' in our souls ... something in us that experientially-ontologically corresponds to God himself. This something is not simply our moral capacity, our rationale, or our aesthetic sense ... there is a spiritual *something* constitutive of mankind that was created in order to apprehend God.<sup>73</sup>

There is an apophatic component here, an understanding that one will not fully understand.<sup>74</sup> 'God, for his own loving and mysterious reasons, re-creates us to be vehicles for unintelligible and non-rational modes of communication'.<sup>75</sup> Glossolalia then 'becomes the language of divine mystery'.<sup>76</sup> This mystery is not a puzzle to be solved, but something that 'remains a mystery even after it (God) has been revealed'.<sup>77</sup> And the 'mystical sounds are "as sonorous forms of the divinity, as icons composed as sounds"'.<sup>78</sup>

---

<sup>70</sup> Chan, Pentecostal Theology, p. 56.

<sup>71</sup> Charette, 'Glossolalia and the Image of God', pp. 189-201 (198); cf. Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 48; cf. p. 153.

<sup>72</sup> Charette, 'Glossolalia and the Image of God', p. 198.

<sup>73</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 89.

<sup>74</sup> Apophatic theology is knowing by 'the way of unknowing, or the *via negativa*', that is, even though our human minds are limited to knowable categories, there is an understanding beyond what we know, Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 89. For example, 'just as the senses can neither grasp nor perceive the things of the mind ... the inscrutable One is out of the reach of every rational process. Nor can any words come up to the inexpressible Good, this One, this Source of all unity, this supra-existent Being', Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 173.

<sup>75</sup> Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues', p. 92; cf. Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 48; cf. 138.

<sup>76</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. 260-61. This 'subject could only be approached by means of the language of metaphor – the use of symbolism – and the context of prayer and wonder' because 'it is clear that the God of Orthodoxy and Pentecostalism is a living God, both transcendent and willingly immanent. He will not, therefore, fit into pre-possessed philosophical categories. The apophatic characteristic of the theological tradition of the East may also help us to perceive in some way the ongoing experience and practice of glossolalic prayer', pp. 261, 260.

<sup>77</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 48; cf. pp. 48-51.

<sup>78</sup> Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 274 (Org. cite: Carmen Blacker, in J. Bowman [ed.] *Comparative Religion* [Leiden: Brill, 1972], p. 89); cf. Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, p. 201.

## D. Bells and Trumpets – A Signal.

The early Pentecostals compared the bible sign to alarm bells or a signal trumpet.<sup>79</sup> This metaphor is the closest to what Pentecostals understand as IE and exists because ‘as long as man is subject to earthly frailties he is in need of at least a few outward symbols of truth’.<sup>80</sup> Such as, Peter’s observation on the Day of Pentecost that tongues were the sign ‘spoken by the prophet Joel’.<sup>81</sup> Glossolalia is a symbol of God’s immediate presence: ‘the tongues are like a bell, ringing the people up. They are waking up to the fact that God is in the land’.<sup>82</sup> Like the joyous bells of a wedding day, God’s presence brings great joy.<sup>83</sup> The emphasis of the image was not on the bells, but their significance – ‘The Comforter Has Come’!<sup>84</sup> The trumpets at the dedication of Solomon’s Temple offered another simile: ‘He will fill the room and you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost and with fire, and God will give you a new tongue as a trumpet in singing or speaking’.<sup>85</sup> This connection with bells continues in the Orthodox Christian tradition: ‘in

<sup>79</sup> Lawrence, *A.F. Restored*, p. 31.

<sup>80</sup> Brumback, ‘*What Meaneth This?*’, p. 236. Dunn’s work reveals the mixed exegetical opinions on IE: ‘in favor of the Pentecostalist thesis it must be said at once that their answer is more soundly rooted within the NT than is often recognized ... the fact is that *in every case* where Luke describes the giving of the Spirit it is accompanied and “evidenced” by glossolalia. The corollary is then not without force that Luke *intended* to portray “speaking in tongues” as “the initial physical evidence” of the outpouring of the Spirit’, Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, pp. 189-90. However, while ‘Luke certainly believes that the glossolalia was *a* manifestation of the Spirit’s coming ... he had no intention of presenting glossolalia as *the* manifestation of the Spirit’, p. 191. Italics original.

<sup>81</sup> Acts 2.16-21, especially when coupled with the stated sign value at Caesarea in Acts 10.44-46 and its retelling in Jerusalem, Acts 11.15-17. Cf. Mk 16.16-18; Acts 8.14-18; 19.1-6. Dunn writes that if Mark 16:9-10 is a second century addition, that means that ‘speaking in tongues was regarded as a typical sign of the gospel’s expansion in the first century and perhaps also in the second’, Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 304; cf. 302-07; Brumback, ‘*What Meaneth This?*’, p. 62; Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, p. 126.

<sup>82</sup> ‘Notice’, *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4; cf. Nina White, ‘A Song of the “Tongues”’, *Confidence* 4.7 (Jul 1911), p. 147; cf. Brumback, ‘*What Meaneth This?*’, p. 231; James L. Slay, ‘Glossolalia: Its Value to the Individual’, in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 217-43 (226); Mills, ‘Counterculture’, p. 950; Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, p. 197; Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 55; Smith, *Thinking in Tongues*, p. 133.

<sup>83</sup> Mrs. Annie Brott, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.37 (Jan 8, 1920), p. 15; Mason, ‘Tennessee Evangelist Witnesses’, p. 7.

<sup>84</sup> The most popular chorus at the ASM revival, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp. 145-46; Josh P.S. Samuel, *The Holy Spirit in Worship Music, Preaching, and the Altar* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2018), p. 34.

<sup>85</sup> ‘Type of Pentecost’, *AF* 1.7 (Apr 1907), p. 3; cf. ‘Work of the Holy Ghost in Switzerland’, *TBM* 1.15 (Jun 1, 1908), p. 1.

the Russian Orthodox faith, bells are widely considered to be “aural icons,” … “an icon of the voice of God”.<sup>86</sup>

Also, glossolalia signals for Pentecostals that ‘the last days (Acts 2.17)’ are here.<sup>87</sup> Tongues are like the bells on the high priest’s (Jesus’) robes. They are ‘peeling forth the sound of His out coming, for He is nearing the door’ of heaven.<sup>88</sup> It was believed that glossolalia would ‘increase in volume’ (become more widespread) as the second coming approaches.<sup>89</sup> Some even envisioned that tongues might possibly have some function at ‘the sounding of the trumpet, when the dead in Christ shall be brought forth from their graves singing’ in tongues with some purpose ‘scarcely thought of before’.<sup>90</sup> It is an eschatological sign of ‘the ultimate destiny of heaven and earth … being called together in one holy *koinonia*’.<sup>91</sup> Tongues are ‘a reminder that they (glossolalists) still await the final glory’;<sup>92</sup> it is ‘broken speech for the broken body of Christ until perfection arrives’.<sup>93</sup>

A telephone metaphor is similar to bells, but nuances the human / divine roles in IE: ‘He baptized us with the Holy Ghost and fire from heaven with the Bible evidence of speaking in other tongues … I began to prophesy through the Royal Telephone the mysteries of God’s eternal kingdom’.<sup>94</sup> Though some used Balaam’s donkey<sup>95</sup> to

<sup>86</sup> ‘Just as painted icons are not intended to be mimetic representations of a spiritual object, but magical windows into the world of the spiritual’ a Russian bell ‘must never be tuned to either a major or minor chord … (it) is prized for its individual, untuned voice, produced by an overlay of numerous partial frequencies’, Elif Batuman, ‘The Bells: Onward and Upward with the Arts’, *The New Yorker* 85.11 (Apr 27, 2009), p. 22.

<sup>87</sup> Glossolalic encounters ‘only make sense with … (an) eschatological framework’, Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 114. Cf. Fee, ‘Paul’s Glossolalia’, p. 35.

<sup>88</sup> Chambers, ‘Wherefore The Tongues’, p. 5. Sutphin’s word picture is of us entering into the holy place with bells on our robes, signalling purity, Z.A. Sutphin, ‘Our Weekly Sermon: The Holy of Holies’, *PHA* 4.10 (Jul 8, 1920), p. 3.

<sup>89</sup> Lawrence, *A.F. Restored*, p. 31.

<sup>90</sup> Tomlinson, ‘Tongues, Tithes, Knowledge’, p. 1; cf. Tomlinson, ‘Translation Power’, p. 1.

<sup>91</sup> Augustine, Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration, p. 36.

<sup>92</sup> Fee, *God’s Empowering Presence*, pp. 89, 199, 206.

<sup>93</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 381.

<sup>94</sup> Mrs. W.G. Fainter, ‘Testimonies’, *PHA* 3.27 (Oct 30, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>95</sup> ‘The Love Of Jesus’, *AF* 1.10 (Sep 1907), p. 1; E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #648’, *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5. ‘If Balaam’s mule could stop in the middle of the road and give the first preacher

highlight this Spirit speaking through the individual, a donkey can still bray and is well-known for its stubbornness; whereas a telephone is an inanimate and passive device through which others speak. On the one hand, divine speech passes through the individual and is a ‘manifestation of possession by the Spirit’.<sup>96</sup> The most popular phrases describing the initial encounter are ‘the Spirit spoke through me’ and ‘the Spirit spoke for himself’, both highlight this inner correspondence.<sup>97</sup> The Spirit announces his presence through the yielded tongue.<sup>98</sup> ‘Tongues are *not constitutive* of the gift of the Holy Spirit, that is comprising the gift, *but declarative*, namely, that the gift has been received’.<sup>99</sup> On the other hand, there is an inner connection between tongues as a symbol and the thing it signifies – relationship. Speech ‘lies on the borderline between oneself and the other’ and it is a sign of ‘accepting the other’.<sup>100</sup>

### **E. Reversal of Babel – Unity and Mission.**

Another metaphor adopted<sup>101</sup> by the early Pentecostals to define the bible sign was the reversal<sup>102</sup> of Babel’s curse at Pentecost:<sup>103</sup>

---

that went out for money a “Bawling out” in Arabic than anybody today ought to be able to preach in the language of the world if they had horse sense enough to let God use their tongue and throat’, Sarah E. Parham, ‘The Life of Charles F. Parham: Founder of the Apostolic Movement’, in ‘*The Higher Life Christian Life’ Sources For The Study Of The Holiness, Pentecostal, And Keswick Movements* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985), pp. 51-52.

<sup>96</sup> Martin, ‘Apostolic Church’, pp. 126-27; cf. MacDonald, *Glossolalia*, p. 5.

<sup>97</sup> John 15.26; 16.13. Though it sounds overly simplistic today, the point of the early Pentecostals is still valid: just how is the Holy Spirit going to ‘testify’ or ‘speak’ if not through the voice of God’s people, Taylor, *The Spirit And The Bride*, pp. 38-39?

<sup>98</sup> Henry Varley, ‘Fullness Of The Holy Ghost’, TOF 27.7 (Jul 1907), pp. 160-62 (160); Aaron A. Smith, Wimauma Camp Meeting Continued, COGE 5.24 (Jun 13, 1914), p. 4.

<sup>99</sup> Williams, *Renewal Theology*, Vol. Two, p. 223, n. 65. Italics Williams.

<sup>100</sup> Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 34; cf. Miroslav Volf, *Exclusion & Embrace* (Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1996), p. 228.

<sup>101</sup> This idea was not original to the early Pentecostals, Shumway believes it originated with Gregory of Nyssa and was picked up by Chrysostom, Cyril and Augustine, Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, p. 35.

<sup>102</sup> Macchia’s ‘positive reading’ stresses that these two narratives point towards God’s gracious fulfilment rather than a simple reversal, Macchia, ‘Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost’, p. 44.

<sup>103</sup> Genesis 11.1-9; Acts 2.1-13. Textually, Davies makes a strong case in favour of connecting the two accounts. He believes that Luke had the LXX’s account of Gen. 11.1-9 in mind when he wrote his account of Pentecost, Davies, ‘Pentecost and Glossolalia’, p. 228; cf. Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 51. Gundry believes Davies position ‘gives too much weight’ to the argument, Gundry, ‘Ecstatic Utterance’, p. 299, n.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

skeptics might think this (ASM revival) was Babel let loose; but it was the very opposite of Babel. Then the people ceased to understand each other ... When God touches wicked tongues, they can't understand each other ... At Pentecost saintly tongues were touched by the Holy Spirit, all understand each other in their 'own tongue'.<sup>104</sup>

The primary points of correspondence with the image are unity and mission:<sup>105</sup>

God recognized a mighty principle. This principle is *the power of united action* ... Unity of spirit was absolutely necessary in the realization of Pentecost, and it is absolutely necessary in the continuation of Pentecost. *No unity – no Pentecost. Unity – Pentecost.*<sup>106</sup>

First, an overwhelming encounter with the Holy Spirit unifies the tongues-speaker with others of similar experience. The strength of this aspect of the metaphor is divine involvement with speech: God acted to divide the languages and then united them through glossolalia.<sup>107</sup> Though the glossolalia of an encounter with the Holy Spirit is 'babbling' in an unknown language, the connection point is that they *all babel* – each experiences a 'personal Pentecost'.<sup>108</sup> This babbling is 'overcomprehensible', meaning that there was 'a common understanding that floods over cultural boundaries to include everyone',<sup>109</sup> making it 'the first ecumenical language of the church' because 'no single language or voice in the dialogue can unambiguously hold the truth'.<sup>110</sup> In this

---

2. Hovenden mildly disagrees with Davies, stating that at best Babel was a 'backcloth', Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 88.

<sup>104</sup> Simmons, 'Tongues', p. 1.

<sup>105</sup> Secondary correspondence with the metaphor include: 1) support for MTs, 'Chinese Want The Gospel Of The Bible', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3; Taylor, *The Spirit And The Bride*, pp. 33, 34; 2) the understanding of languages at Pentecost assures us of a universal heavenly language in the eschaton, Barth, 'The Things Of The Kingdom', p. 4; J.R.F., 'Wiser Than Children Of Light', *WW* 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 1; and 3) both Babel and Pentecost were God's design to 'baffle the Devil', John Reid, 'Concerning The Tongues', *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 3.

<sup>106</sup> J.R.F., 'Wiser Than Children Of Light', *WW* 12.5 (May, 1915), p. 1. Italics mine. Cf. John Reid, 'Concerning The Tongues', *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 3.

<sup>107</sup> Brumback, 'What Meaneth This?', pp. 40-41, 44; Mills, *Understanding*, p. 36; Mills, *Theological / Exegetical*, p. 66.

<sup>108</sup> Personal Pentecost was a common synonym for SB, e.g. Seymour, 'The Baptism With The Holy Ghost', p. 3; Atterberry, 'They Shall Speak With New Tongues', p. 2. Cf. Conn, *Pillars of Pentecost*, p. 53.

<sup>109</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 44.

<sup>110</sup> Macchia, 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost', p. 49. Unity obtained through human means would be idolatrous, p. 44. Cf. Suenens, 'Malines Document 1', p. 20; Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', p. 216.

way, glossolalia is the mark of a new community.<sup>111</sup> The Mt. Sinai story could be added to this metaphor because there, at Sinai, ‘God’s voice was heard in every language’ and the message of Pentecost went from incoherence to understanding for all nations.<sup>112</sup>

Second, ‘logically connected to the purpose of baptism in the Spirit was power to testify cross-culturally; what better sign to evidence this particular empowerment of the Spirit than inspiration to speak in the language of other cultures?’<sup>113</sup> Note again that there is an internal connection between the symbol, Babel’s reversal, and what it signifies, Spirit-inspired proclamation.<sup>114</sup> Though humanity’s plan at Babel was a rebellious ‘shortcut’ to heaven, God’s plan though Pentecost is accomplished through submissive obedience.<sup>115</sup> Submission to God’s plan is what connects the individual with power:

at Pentecost they were connected to the Great Power Plant ... cloven tongues (came) upon them like as a fire ... At Babel God sent tongues which scattered the people over the face of the earth. After Pentecost, God also sent them abroad, and ‘they went everywhere preaching the word, the Lord working with them and confirming the Word with signs following’.<sup>116</sup>

Tongues are not power in itself but is a symbol that God can use people to carry his message in a new and powerful way.<sup>117</sup> Perhaps revelation is a more accurate and broader category than power:<sup>118</sup> ‘the real wonder is the *new world of realities in which we live*, the new forces, the new possibilities that arise from our spirit being restored to its

---

<sup>111</sup> Powers, ‘Missionary Tongues’?, p. 51.

<sup>112</sup> Mills, Theological / Exegetical, pp. 51-52.

<sup>113</sup> Craig S. Keener, ‘Why Does Luke Use Tongues as a sign of The Spirit’s Empowerment?’, *Journal of Pentecostal Theology* 15-2 (April 1, 2007), p. 178. Cf. Taylor, ‘The Spirit and the Bride’, pp. 62-64; Culbreth, ‘Pentecost Foreshadowed’, p. 2; J. Rodman Williams, *The Pentecostal Reality* (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1972), p. 2; Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 186.

<sup>114</sup> Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 93-94.

<sup>115</sup> Both the Garden of Eden and the tower of Babel were ‘short-cuts’ to humanity’s ultimate calling of ‘deification (*theosis*)’, Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*, p. 22, cf. p. 21.

<sup>116</sup> R.W. Hudson, ‘The Personality of the Holy Spirit and Other Observations’, *CE* 75 (Jan 23, 1915), p. 3.

<sup>117</sup> Abrams, *Holy Ghost & Fire*, p. 38; Berkhof, *The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit*, p. 89.

<sup>118</sup> ‘Revelation is a more basic category than power. There is no power from the Spirit of God where there is no revelation from the Spirit of God. Power in the Spirit is a consequence of revelation’, Hocken, ‘The Meaning and Purpose of “Baptism in the Spirit”’, p. 128; cf. Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 91, cf. pp. 89-93.

proper place under the guidance of the Holy Spirit'.<sup>119</sup> Babel focused on the singular goal of building a tower through brute force, but Pentecost is God's anointed people going out with diverse languages into varied cultures to fulfil the mission of Jesus to heal, release, preach, and create 'a new heaven and a new earth where justice and compassion would reign' under the daily revelation of the Holy Spirit.<sup>120</sup> This new 'capacity' or vision of spiritual possibilities, is naturally joined with an eschatological passion to reach the lost, like two sides of the same coin.<sup>121</sup>

#### F. The Latter Rain – God's Metanarrative.

An important metaphor highlighting the sign-value of glossolalia is the latter rain.<sup>122</sup> This study has shown that the concept of a latter rain revival was popular and predates the ASM revival.<sup>123</sup> Because Peter connected SB and its accompanying glossolalia on the Day of Pentecost to the fulfilment of Joel's latter rain prophecy,<sup>124</sup> Pentecostals interpreted Peter's context as the 'former' or first rains of the prophecy and their current revival as its complete fulfilment:

He is pouring out his Spirit upon all flesh, all over the wide world, *causing the prophecy of Joel to be fulfilled* ... The glad news of this outpouring is sounded all over the world, amongst all kindred, tongues and nations, singing in natural and heavenly languages ... the sound of the latter rain upon us has been heard all over the world.<sup>125</sup>

---

<sup>119</sup> A.E. Street, 'To Our Readers', *Intercessory Missionary* 1.4 (Jan 1908), pp. 49-50 (50). Italics original. 'All human activities have their origin in the spiritual world, and *Pentecost merely introduces us to a new region of the heavenlies*', A.E. Street, 'Pentecost Cannot Satisfy', *Intercessory Missionary* 1.4 (Jan 1908), pp. 60-61 (60). Italics original.

<sup>120</sup> Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 316.

<sup>121</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 232.

<sup>122</sup> A parallel is drawn from the rainfall in Palestine: the early spring rains which accompanies the planting of the crops are compared to the Day of Pentecost and the latter fall rains which helps to ripen the crop for harvest are compared to the Pentecostal revival, Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 94.

<sup>123</sup> For example, E. Sission's article expounding on the principle of the latter rain calls Christians to prayer for a revival greater than the Day of Pentecost or the Welsh revival two months before the ASM revival, Sisson, 'A Call To Prayer', pp. 57-60; cf. McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', p. 122.

<sup>124</sup> Acts 2.16-21; cf. Joel 2.23, 28-29; Zech 10.1; Jas 5.7.

<sup>125</sup> Andrew Urshan, 'The Sound Of The Latter Rain', *TOF* 33.8 (Aug 1913), pp. 185-86. Italics mine. Cf. 'Rivers of Living Water', *TOF* 28.11 (Nov 1908), pp. 248-49.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

But it was also a metaphor with three points of correspondence with tongues. First the latter rain gave logic to glossolalia's reappearance in history. Second, and as Peter himself observed, SB and its glossolalia signalled 'the last days'. Third, it connected glossolalists with the apostolic church: they 'read the book of Acts as a model for their life'.<sup>126</sup>

First, the latter rain's logic: the fact of an eighteen hundred year drought of glossolalia in church history with only occasional 'showers' fits perfectly with the latter rain metaphor.<sup>127</sup> As for the showers, many attempted to trace a single stream of glossolalia through church history to counter cessationism<sup>128</sup> and to reclaim history:<sup>129</sup> 'many wonder why ... Pentecost all but disappeared from the Church for upwards of 1800 years, and that only an occasional shower fell ... (but) through these nineteen centuries Pentecost has fallen here and there'.<sup>130</sup> Despite the strengths<sup>131</sup> and

---

<sup>126</sup> Menzies, *This Story Is Our Story*, p. 17.

<sup>127</sup> Restoration and continuance were not seen in conflict with each other. For example, Taylor simply says, 'during the long drought of the Middle Ages a few saints received the baptism of the Holy Spirit, and spake with other tongues', Taylor, *The Spirit and the Bride*, p.92. 'To me there is only one Tongues movement: the one that had its beginning at the Upper Room', Boulos, 'In Defense Of The Truth', p. 10.

<sup>128</sup> Jon Ruthven believes that this method ultimately had limited success because cessationism collapsed due to 'internal inconsistencies with respect to its concept of miracle and its biblical hermeneutics ... (which were) far more dogmatically than scripturally based', Jon Ruthven, *On the Cessation of the Charismata: The Protestant Polemic on Postbiblical Miracles* (JPTSup 3; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993), pp. 189-90; cf. Mills, 'Counterculture', p. 950. Denying the possibility of tongues today 'cannot be defended exegetically or theologically', Suenens, 'Malines Document', p. 24.

<sup>129</sup> For example, 'the golden chain of truth that links together time; which has been smoked and cankered by the darkness of age, is being washed and garnished by the environment of the Holy Spirit till it is almost as bright as it was when Jesus was on earth', Marion T. Whidden 'The Latter Rain Revival', COGE 1.1 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 3.

<sup>130</sup> Turner, *Pentecost and Tongues*, pp. 126, 128.

<sup>131</sup> This historical hermeneutic proved that during a spiritual revival, glossolalia was a natural occurrence. There was a 'direct correlation, throughout history, between spirituality and the reappearance of spiritual gifts... (that) when spiritual life ran high, the Holy Spirit has been received just as at Pentecost', Edith Waldvogel, 'The "Overcoming Life" A Study In The Reformed Evangelical Origins of Pentecostalism' (PhD Dissertation, Harvard University, 1977), pp. 9, 10; cf. Frodsham, *With Signs Following*, p. 253.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

weaknesses<sup>132</sup> of the continuation theory, restorationism was a far more important image because ‘in Pentecostalism, every generation is the first generation’.<sup>133</sup>

The primary correspondence between glossolalia and the latter rain image is the restoration of God’s activity for an end-time revival after a spiritual drought.<sup>134</sup> God responded to the prayers of those living in a spiritual desert:

God heard the cry of His children and began to pour out His rain upon the earth ... Pentecostal gifts are being restored and the sign or seal of Pentecost – Mark 16:17 – power to speak with other tongues, is coming upon those thus baptized by the Spirit.<sup>135</sup>

The outpouring’s ‘scope is worldwide and not limited to (one) location’.<sup>136</sup> The latter rain was even used as a synonym for SB:<sup>137</sup>

---

<sup>132</sup> Weaknesses include: 1) historical interpretations ‘readily betray the perspectives (or should I say biases) of their authors’, E. Glenn Hinson, ‘The Significance of Glossolalia in the History of Christianity’, in Watson E. Mills (ed.), *Speaking In Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 181-203 (181); 2) tracing a continuous stream back may account for the phenomena of glossolalia, but it does not answer why it occurs or what theological claims support it, Dayton, *Theological Roots*, p. 17; 3) to be credible historically, the definition of glossolalia must be broadened to include ecstatic speech and spiritual gifts, Russell P. Spittler, ‘Glossolalia’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 670-76 (673); and 4) there is no way to know for sure if the phenomena is the same as the apostles, Currie, ‘Speaking in Tongues’, pp. 274-94; cf. Shumway, ‘The Gift of Tongues’, pp. 64, 65.

<sup>133</sup> Everett Wilson, ‘Pentecostal Historiography and Global Christianity: Rethinking the Questions of Origins’ *Pneuma* 27.1 (Spring, 2005), pp. 35-50 (45). Wilson notes that ‘the logic of the Pentecostal message ... led to an immediate globalization, and to the immediate localization ... rapid adoption and adaption of Pentecostal spirituality and practice’, p. 45.

<sup>134</sup> ‘The Promised Latter Rain Now Being Poured out on God’s Humble People’, p. 2; ‘Everything is Pointing Toward the Coming of the Lord’, p. 1. An early monograph on the subject is, Myland, ‘The Latter Rain’.

<sup>135</sup> Suzie A. Duncan, ‘What The Movement Is’, *TBM* 4.75 (Dec 1, 1910), p. 4; Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 61.

<sup>136</sup> E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorial, Some Interesting Facts About The Pentecostal Movement’, *TBM* 4.79 (Feb 1, 1911), p. 1.

<sup>137</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘Letter From Mrs. Montgomery’, *TOF* 29.5 (May 1909), p. 124; A.B. Simpson, ‘Rivers Of Living Water’, *TOF* 29.8 (Aug 1909), pp 174-75; Kathleen Miller, ‘A Testimony From Cuttack, India’, *TOF* 30.6 (Jun 1910), p. 128; A.L.H. ‘How Are We To Know God?’, (Omega) *TOF* 30.7 (Jul 1910), p. 161; G.F. Taylor, ‘Question Box #1335’, *PHA* 7.30 (Nov 22, 1923), p. 6.

it would be most natural to expect *the same Sign to accompany the out-pouring of the Latter Rain*, and thus it has been ... There has been the same wonderful Sign that accompanied Pentecost in early days, viz., the speaking with other tongues.<sup>138</sup>

The restoration meant that God was again equipping his Church with all the necessary spiritual gifts of Pentecost to prepare ‘for the imminent harvest and the return of Christ the king’:<sup>139</sup>

they enjoyed the outpouring of the ‘former rain’ and we are enjoying the outpouring of the ‘latter rain.’ The former rain was given to start the grain growing. The latter was to ripen the grain for harvesting ... Now we are in the end of the world and people are receiving the same experience that they did at the beginning. This is the time for the ripening of the grain (people) for the great harvest time.<sup>140</sup>

Second, the restoration of glossolalia signalled that the last ‘and perilous days’ were here,<sup>141</sup> that the coming of Jesus was imminent.<sup>142</sup> It was ‘a sign or token of a new era’, a dispensation in God’s dealings with humankind,<sup>143</sup> and many prophesied that ‘Jesus is coming soon’.<sup>144</sup> The return of glossolalia to the church meant that all the spiritual gifts were again restored, if not doubled.<sup>145</sup> The Spirit-baptized believer sensed an urgency, as if a storm were coming and a harvest of souls could be lost. Therefore ‘apocalyptic affections’ became the ‘integrating core’ of Pentecostalism’s spirituality.<sup>146</sup>

Third, the prophetic link between the former rain and a latter rain opened up an historical thread to connect contemporary glossolalia with its past on the Day of Pentecost: ‘we have the same evidence as the Disciples received on the Day of Pentecost

---

<sup>138</sup> Carrie Judd Montgomery, ‘The Latter Rain’, TOF 34.1 (Jan 1914), pp. 1-4 (2).

<sup>139</sup> Cartledge, Encountering the Spirit, p. 113.

<sup>140</sup> Tomlinson, ‘The Holy Ghost And Fire’, p. 1.

<sup>141</sup> Hayes, ‘Perilous Times’, p. 1; cf. Craig, ‘Woodworth-Etter Meeting, Sidney, Iowa’, p. 15.

<sup>142</sup> ‘The all absorbing theme of Pentecost and its significance regarding the early appearing of our Lord ... keep(s) us in a hopeful and expectant attitude, waiting our Lord’s appearing’, E.A. Sexton, ‘Editorials, Signs Of The Times’ TBM 3.53 (Jan 1, 1910), p. 1; cf. Boddy, ‘Pentecostal Outpouring’, pp. 234-35; Argue, ‘An Essential Sign?’, p. 2.

<sup>143</sup> Howell, ‘Windsor, Fla.’, p. 6; S.H.F., ‘The Latter Rain’, pp. 8-9; ‘When Shall We Rise To Meet The Lord?’, p. 2; McCafferty, ‘The Time Of The Latter Rain’, p. 5.

<sup>144</sup> Bowen, ‘Akron Visited With Pentecost’, p. 1; Sexton, ‘Editorials, Jesus Is Coming’, p. 1; Sisson, ‘A Sign People’, p. 3; Studd, ‘My Convictions’, p. 6.

<sup>145</sup> The ‘gifts of healing; gifts of prophecy; gifts of tongues, etc. were “former rain moderately.” What, then, shall the doubled ... latter rain be’, Sisson, ‘A Call To Prayer’, p. 59? Italics original.

<sup>146</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, pp. 23, 58-121.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

(Acts 2:3, 4), in speaking in new tongues'.<sup>147</sup> 'Tongues serve as a sign that "their experience" is "our experience" and that all the gifts of the Spirit (including the "sign gifts") are valid for the church today'.<sup>148</sup> This linkage enabled Pentecostals 'to experience life as part of the biblical drama of participation in God's history',<sup>149</sup> or God's 'metanarrative':<sup>150</sup> 'the ages overlap like links in a chain ... Pentecost itself really belongs to the next dispensation ... every sign is a foretaste of that coming age ... (let's) live in advance of our time'.<sup>151</sup> The historical gap between the apostolic church then and today disappears and is morphed into a single, ongoing story in which Pentecostals sees themselves as active participants. As such, there was confidence that God would act with power through the believer because it was a divine continuing drama. The Pentecostal claim is that an encounter with the Holy Spirit changes everything. That there is a 'Pentecostal reality'<sup>152</sup> or cosmology, 'to experience life as part of a biblical drama of participation in God's history'.<sup>153</sup>

Of the metaphors parsed above, rekindling the latter rain is critical for revitalizing the apostolic and early Pentecostal passion that flowed out of SB for post-modern Pentecostals. When the logic of SB is lost, it is likely that the restoration of equipping

---

<sup>147</sup> 'The Apostolic Faith Movement', p. 2; cf. Tomlinson, 'The Holy Ghost And Fire', p. 1; Poole, 'God Is Love', p. 2; Fisher, 'Pentecost In Rasutoland', p. 8. A similar phrase was: 'as they did at the beginning', Sutphin, 'Coming of the Son of Man', p. 2; Lasater, 'Ft. Smith, Ark.', p. 14; Pohill, 'The Pentecostal Movement In The Foreign Mission Field', p. 81. Myland encouraged Pentecostals to get their 'experiences and lives to harmonize' with the apostles, Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 17.

<sup>148</sup> R. Menzies, *This is Our Story*, p. 68. Menzies believes that Luke intended Luke-Acts to be a model for mission and ministry for his readers, and that a thorough examination reveals a model to be emulated today, p. 144, cf. pp. 21-39; cf. Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 339.

<sup>149</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, pp. 74, 75; Wacker, *Heaven Below*, p. 71.

<sup>150</sup> Cartledge writes that this connection 'is a form of contextualized hermeneutics whereby the communal story of the Church is understood in the light of the overarching story of Scripture', Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 129.

<sup>151</sup> Barth, 'The Things Of The Kingdom', p. 4. Cf. also, Alexander, *Pentecostal Healing*, pp. 91-93; McQueen, *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology*, pp. 91-92.

<sup>152</sup> By Pentecostal reality Williams means Pentecostals claim to have 'experienced a coming of the Holy Spirit wherein God's presence and power has pervaded their lives ... they know what it means to be "filled with the Holy Spirit." There has been a breakthrough of God's Spirit into their total existence – body, soul, and spirit – reaching into the conscious and subconscious depths, and setting loose powers hitherto unknown', Williams, *The Pentecostal Reality*, p. 2; cf. Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 53.

<sup>153</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, pp. 74-75.

power and the urgent motivation to reach the lost is forgotten as well.<sup>154</sup> When the purpose for the individual in God's larger plan, the glossolalist's worldview, could devolve to the point where they no longer see themselves as a bit actor in God's metanarrative, but rather the Spirit becomes a supporting actor in the story of me.

## G. A Way Forward.

Just as a land-surveyor will establish two points on a line and then flip his transit over to extend that line, our two fixed points are the biblical accounts and the testimonies of the early Pentecostals. Before we 'flip over' to look at the future, a brief look back will complete the picture of the doctrine of evidential glossolalia for the early Pentecostals. While it is clear that tongues were the undisputed evidence of SB for the early Pentecostals, this thesis revealed considerable variety and theological space surrounding the evidence doctrine, even in Durham's strongly worded *PT*.<sup>155</sup> In a sense, these outliers or variables functioned like a pressure release valve on the Modernistic worldview. There were three variables that revealed the 'outer boundaries' and 'framed' the accepted evidence doctrine: 1) many testimonies indicated a delay between SB and the bible sign:

the baptism of the Spirit is a gift of power on the sanctified life, and when people receive it, *sooner or later* they will speak in tongues as the Spirit gives utterance. A person *may not speak in tongues for a week after the baptism*, but as soon as he gets to praying or praising God *in the liberty of the Spirit*, the tongues will follow.<sup>156</sup>

---

<sup>154</sup> Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, pp. 87, 317; Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 231.

<sup>155</sup> For example, Durham's own testimony noted multiple experiences before the evidence, Durham, 'Personal Testimony of Pastor Durham', p. 7. Even subsequent Oneness papers noted that a delay between water baptism and evidential glossolalia was not unusual, e.g. Gertrude Randol, 'St. Louis, MO', *TBT* 3.11 (Aug 15, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>156</sup> 'Questions Answered', *AF* 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2. Italics mine.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

A lot of periodicals published testimonies of a delayed sign.<sup>157</sup> 2) Numerous testified to pre-glossolalic experiences which they defined as ‘stammering lips’,<sup>158</sup> a ‘pre-Pentecostal fullness’,<sup>159</sup> ‘whispering words’,<sup>160</sup> ‘not fully satisfied’,<sup>161</sup> or ‘gracious anointings’.<sup>162</sup> While any pre-glossolalic state was an ‘incomplete baptism’ and somewhat ‘abnormal’, it was just a part of the process.<sup>163</sup> With pastoral compassion, seekers were encouraged to come up to the ‘Azusa standard’<sup>164</sup> or the ‘New Testament standard’.<sup>165</sup> Thus, despite the strong statements on the evidence, scores testified that glossolalia was not a mechanical-like cause and effect – one can say that God, in his sovereignty, interacts individually with the seeker’s yieldedness and heart.<sup>166</sup> Further, and despite criticism,<sup>167</sup> some claimed their SB ‘by faith’ and then pressed on until they spoke in tongues.<sup>168</sup> The fully nuanced formal AG position of 1918 emphasized this concept with the terminology of ‘full consummation’.<sup>169</sup> 3) Significantly, Flower re-prioritized the evidence by pointing to what sequentially followed. He wrote that evidential tongues are just the ‘top layer of the foundation of such experiences’<sup>170</sup> because

---

<sup>157</sup> E.g. W.J. Harvey, ‘Key West, Fla’, *TBM* 2.38 (May 15, 1909), p. 4; Montgomery, “The Promise of the Father”, pp. 145-49; Mrs. Mary Lindley, ‘The Beginning of Days for Me’, *TP* 2.2 (Jan 1910), p. 3. Passim.

<sup>158</sup> W.H. Standley, ‘Worth Tarrying For’, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3; W.P Benefield, ‘Midland City, Ala.’, *COGE* 1.16 (Oct 15, 1910), p. 8; Ida A. Sackett, ‘Words From Johannesburg’, *TP* 2.4 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 8; ‘The Latter Rain In Atlantic City, N.J.’, *WE* 166 (Nov 25, 1916), p. 14.

<sup>159</sup> Copley, ‘The Threefold Standard’, p. 8; Ida A. Sackett, ‘Words From Johannesburg’, *TP* 2.4 (Mar 1, 1910), p. 8.

<sup>160</sup> J.G. Gray, ‘His Wedding Garments’, *WW* 12.5 (May 1915), p. 3.

<sup>161</sup> W.W. Simpson, ‘W.W. Simpson’, *WW* 12.5 (May 1915), p. 6.

<sup>162</sup> Violetta Schoonmaker, ‘Missionary Gleanings’, *PE* 316 & 317 (Nov 29, 1919), p. 12.

<sup>163</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #647’, *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5.

<sup>164</sup> W.J. Seymour, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, *AF* 2.13 (May 1908), p. 3.

<sup>165</sup> E.N. Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #647’, *CE* 284 & 285 (Apr 19, 1919), p. 5

<sup>166</sup> *TP* 2.5 (Apr 1, 1910), p. 4; Flower, ‘God Honors Faith’, p. 1.

<sup>167</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘The Baptism According to Acts 2:4’, *CE* 302 & 303 (Aug 23, 1919), p. 3.

<sup>168</sup> I. May Throop, ‘A Partial Experience’, *TOF* 29.6 (June 1909), pp. 129-131; Flower, ‘God Honors Faith’, p. 1.

<sup>169</sup> ‘A Statement Of Fundamental Truths Approved By The General Council Of The Assemblies Of God, October 2-7, 1916’, *WE* 170 (Dec 23, 1916), p. 8.

<sup>170</sup> Flower, ‘The Apostolic Question Box’, p. 9. Italics mine. The earliest conceptualization is found in A.E.S., ‘Pentecost is Not an Advanced Step in the Christian Life – A Warning’, *Intercessory Missionary* 1.3 (Jun 1907), pp. 39-42 (40). Flower seems to follow Durham’s phraseology of five months prior, Durham,

there is ‘always more to follow’.<sup>171</sup> In other words, ‘an encounter with God should serve as the *gateway* to life in the Spirit, rather than as the *goal* which can always be formally verified *once* it has been reached’!<sup>172</sup> There is always more, for example, ‘there are times when even tongues cease, when His presence is so all-pervading in the atmosphere so heavenly that I cannot talk at all in any language’.<sup>173</sup> This perspective on the backside of SB softened the hardness of the doctrine away from a ‘have and have not’ category to a continuum of yieldedness and multiple fillings that would never be fully satisfied. These three variables expose a certain fuzziness to the doctrine and opens up theological space regarding the bible sign.

Two further observations about evidential tongues from the early thinkers that need attention: first, these pioneers recognized the impossibility of theologically classifying glossolalia because it occurs ‘when no longer words in our vocabulary can do justice’ to explain the encounter with God.<sup>174</sup> Even AG leader Bell openly criticized evidence terminology as ‘woefully at fault’ for opening the door for ‘every devil possessed ... person in the world to claim the baptism’.<sup>175</sup> He recommended that ‘we advocates of this truth must hedge about more carefully our statements’. <sup>176</sup> Second,

---

‘A Word To Ministers, From A Minister’, p. 11; cf. Consider: ‘we do not teach that all who have been baptized in the Holy Ghost, even if they should speak in in tongues, have already received the fullness of the blessings of Christ implied in this Baptism. There may be, and in most cases will be, a progressive entering in of the believer into this fullness, according to the measure of faith, obedience, and knowledge of the recipient’, ‘International Pentecostal Council Issues Declaration’, *TBM* 6.126 (Feb 1, 1913), p. 1. ‘**I**t is the **f**irst of the gifts ... it is the steppingstone ... to higher things’, Fraser, ‘A Contrast in Values’, p. 3. Bold original. Taylor observed that tongues were not ‘the **g**reatest phase of the Baptism’ and that ‘*o*ther Bible evidences, or rather results’ should follow the believer, Taylor, ‘Editorial: Speaking In Tongues’, p. 8. ‘It is only the beginning’, wrote Tomlinson, Tomlinson, ‘Converted, Sanctified, and Baptized with the Holy Ghost’, p. 1.

<sup>171</sup> Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, p. 11; cf. C.E. Simpson, ‘A Methodist Minister’s Personal Testimony’, *CE* 300 & 301 (Aug 9, 1919), p. 7.

<sup>172</sup> Lederle, ‘An Ecumenical Appraisal’, p. 136.

<sup>173</sup> Montgomery, ‘The Life On Wings: The Possibility Of Pentecost’, pp. 175-6.

<sup>174</sup> W.T. Gaston, ‘The Ministry Of The Spirit’, *WW* 9.6 (Jun 20, 1913), p. 6.

<sup>175</sup> E.N.B., ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Spirit’, p. 7. Flower wrote, ‘too much stress on speaking in tongues as the Bible evidence weakens that argument’ because some glossolalia is of human origin and some Satanic, *TP* 2.1 & 12 (Nov / Dec 1910), p. 9.

<sup>176</sup> E.N.B., ‘What Is The Evidence Of The Baptism In The Spirit’, p. 7.

much of this thesis' construction interacts with concepts from Eastern Orthodox theology to explain Pentecostal glossolalia.<sup>177</sup> It was exciting to see the Eastern worldview represented in the early periodicals with an article by Boulos, who noted that there is a natural 'interconnection' between glossolalia as speech and the metaphor of SB.<sup>178</sup>

Now a look forward. In the light of the above, a Pentecostal theology of glossolalia would be well served to note the following: first, that one's first encounter with the Holy Spirit that results in glossolalia will never be mechanical-like nor an 'empirical proof' to anyone other than the glossolalist. Evidentiary language should be replaced with clear terms from the historic and broader church, such as sign, symbol and sacrament. Second, because tongues are symbolic of the liminal and unclassifiable encounter with God, simplified concepts of *kenosis*, apophaticism and mystery should be employed into any definition of what was IE. Such language will help point not only to what tongues are, but what they are not. Third, because a wide variety of experiences with the Holy Spirit are possible before and after one's first glossolalic encounter, emphasis should be given to a lifelong journey of *kenosis / theosis* rather than tongues. Then the Church as Jesus' body on earth might become the eschatological, Spirit-directed and empowered community that it was intended to be.<sup>179</sup> A simplified sample doctrinal statement could read: the passionate seeker of God, when completely surrendered and within God's sovereignty, will receive a revelation of God's glorious presence. That portion of the human soul created for relationship with God will at once cry out expressions of worship in an unknown language and, at the same time, recognize its inability to comprehend fully the Divine; this is called SB. Because the seeker has encountered God and has been filled with the same, they are forever

---

<sup>177</sup> These authors contributed to an eastern voice to this construction: Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*; Rybarczyk, 'Reframing Tongues'; Augustine, *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration*; Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*. A well-known work in German is, Johannes Reimer, 'Mission Des Frühen Mönchtums In Rubland' (DTh thesis, University of South Africa, 1994).

<sup>178</sup> Boulos, 'In Defense Of The Truth', p. 11; cf. Hayes, *Gift of Tongues*, p. 96.

<sup>179</sup> 'One gives up control ... so as to put one's whole self ... at God's disposal', Fee, 'Paul's Glossolalia', p. 36.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia changed, knowing God's power through personal yieldedness. Thereafter, the individual longs for more of the Holy Spirit and lives a life of daily sacrifice and obedience to the whispers of Spirit in bringing the lost to salvation in God's grand story before it is too late.

### **III. Public Metaphors.**

After the initial encounter in the above discussion, there are further stages or uses for glossolalia, some public and some private.<sup>180</sup> Encounter symbolism implies a public use for tongues, someone to witness the sign. Here are two additional metaphors for public glossolalia to be explored: singing in the Spirit and the gift of tongues.

#### **A. The Heavenly Anthem – Singing in the Spirit.**

The word-picture of HA was rooted in several scriptures for the early Pentecostals.<sup>181</sup> 'It is difficult to overstate the significance of the heavenly choir'<sup>182</sup> in the early Pentecostal revival and thankfully, there is a growing body of theological reflection.<sup>183</sup> This thesis has shown that singing in the Spirit is an essential component of Pentecostal spirituality

---

<sup>180</sup> Yong proposes three successive stages, each with an accompanying metaphors: 1) 'innocence' is his first stage when 'glossolalia functions primarily as a sign denoting the experience of the liberating Holy Spirit', Yong, 'Tongues of Fire', p. 52. 2) 'Growth stage': 'the dominant metaphor during growth shifts from the performative "speaking as the Spirit gives utterance" to that of "receiving power after the spirit comes upon you"', the purpose of which is 'Christian witness ... a symbol of the divine message and power', pp. 54, 56. 'Metaphors are less useful' at Yong's third stage: 3) 'adept ... an embodiment of the divine unity ... participation in the divine life through the divine language ... (bringing) his or her will into conformity with the divine's ... the reverse of Babel ... the re-gathering of the people of God', pp. 57-58, 60.

<sup>181</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.15, Eph. 5.19, Col. 3.16, and Revelation 4 & 5.

<sup>182</sup> Alexander, 'Heavenly Choirs', p. 256. The phrase 'heavenly choir' was a 'household phrase' among the Pentecostals, p. 263.

<sup>183</sup> Brumback, 'What Meaneth This?', pp. 294-95; William J. Samarin, *Tongues of Men and Angels* (New York, NY: Macmillan Company, 1972), pp. 174-82; Eddie Ensley, *Sounds of Wonder: A Popular History of Speaking in Tongues in the Catholic Tradition* (Ramsey: Paulist, 1977), pp. 72-104; Francis A. Sullivan, *Charisms and Charismatic Renewal: A Biblical and Theological Study* (Ann Arbor, MI: Servant Books, 1982), pp 144-48; Jon Michael Spencer, 'The Heavenly Anthem: Holy Ghost Singing in the Primal Pentecostal Revival', *The Journal of Black Sacred Music* 1.1 (Spring 1987) pp. 1-33; Robeck, *Azusa Street*, pp 149-53; Steven Dove, 'Hymnody and Liturgy in the Azusa Street Revival', *Pneuma* 31 (2009) pp. 242-63; Joel Hinck, 'Heavenly Harmony: An Audio Analysis of Corporate Singing in Tongues', *Pneuma* 40 (2018), pp. 167-91; Samuel, *The Holy Spirit in Worship Music*, pp. 31-37.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

because it: 1) is widely accepted by outsiders,<sup>184</sup> 2) creates a hunger and an environment for future glossolalists,<sup>185</sup> and 3) is often someone's first experience with glossolalia.<sup>186</sup> The metaphor of joining with the angels in singing praise is, in itself, theologically rich. Consider:

Pentecost is a baptism of praise coming over the balconies of heaven from the glorified presence of our Savior ... striking up cords of praise we never dreamed existed ... finding adequate expression only in the tongues, which come with it from the scenes of heavenly praise and adoration ... the preliminary notes of that 'new song'.<sup>187</sup>

There are three degrees of correspondence with the metaphor.

First, there is a new depth of worship. Recognition of God's immanent presence demands a response, like a hometown hero passing by in a parade – one just has to clap and shout.<sup>188</sup> The HA was 'one of the most indisputable evidences of the presence of God'.<sup>189</sup> Because God is outside of time, participants join with heavenly beings<sup>190</sup> and those in history who sang with their 'spirits' instead of their 'minds', those who voiced 'spiritual songs',<sup>191</sup> such as St. Augustine's congregation 'jubilating', or St. Hildegard of Bingen's 'concerts in the Spirit' or Ignatius of Loyola singing his 'loquela',<sup>192</sup> and the

---

<sup>184</sup> 'Perhaps nothing so greatly impressed people as the singing; at once inspiring a holy awe, or a feeling of indescribable wonder', Lawrence, 'Article X – Apostolic Faith Restored: My First Visit to the Azusa Street Pentecostal Mission, Los Angles, California', p. 4. Robeck notes that it was the singing in the Spirit that was recognized by Russian Molokans when passing by the ASM, Robeck, *Azusa Street*, p. 153.

<sup>185</sup> H.L. Blake, 'A Minnesota Preacher's Testimony', *AF* 1.6 (Feb / Mar 1907), p. 5; Sexton, 'Set Thine Heart To Understand', p. 1; Bartleman, *Azusa Street*, p. 63. Alexander writes, 'the fact that Sexton uses the heavenly choir manifestation as the pivotal event in turning the heart of the cynic is significant', Alexander, 'Heavenly Choirs', p. 258.

<sup>186</sup> Poloma writes that it 'creates an atmosphere where non-glossolalics may come to have this experience', Poloma, *The Assemblies of God at the Crossroads*, p. 191.

<sup>187</sup> Carothers, 'The Speaking In Tongues', p. 24.

<sup>188</sup> 'The participants are aware of such close presence of God's Spirit and nearness' Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 204.

<sup>189</sup> Lawrence, 'Article X – Apostolic Faith Restored: My First Visit to the Azusa Street Pentecostal Mission, Los Angles, California', p. 4.

<sup>190</sup> Alexander, 'Heavenly Choirs', p. 257.

<sup>191</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.15; Eph. 5.19; Col. 3.16; cf. Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, pp. 238-39; Hayford, *Beauty*, pp. 193-95.

<sup>192</sup> Cf. Augustine, 'Expositions of the Psalms: 99-120', Boniface Ramsey (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.19 (Hyde Park, NY: New City

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

ASM revival participants.<sup>193</sup> Proleptically, choir members added their voices to the yet-future heavenly scene with the four-living creatures, the twenty-four elders and innumerable people in singing a ‘new song’.<sup>194</sup> It is a revelation of God’s presence corporately that changes everything:

Pentecostals believe that they encounter deeply and transformatively the God of their confession and adoration. This theme is central to Pentecostal identity ... God presents Godself (or quaintly put, ‘God shows up’), and God goes on to establish a different kind of order, one in which God’s glory and holiness alter and renarrate all else that is.<sup>195</sup>

Singers of the HA sense an overlap of the unseen phenomenal world with the earthly nominal world, because it is ‘the singing by the lips of the Holy Ghost through human lips as he played upon the vocal cords’.<sup>196</sup>

Second, there is a new, creative means of corporate worship. The former rules of language and music seem dull and limiting.<sup>197</sup> It is as if the worshippers are accompanying a melody beyond the audible hearing range of others.<sup>198</sup> For this reason, many scholars have noted a parallel between glossolalia and jazz music.<sup>199</sup> Classic art forms adhere to rules and a strict realism, but like jazz, glossolalia breaks out of limiting forms to express the inexpressible and therefore is truly ‘creative’ rather than merely

---

Press, 2003), Psalm 99, p. 14. For Hildegard: George H. Williams and Edith Waldvogel, ‘A History of Speaking in Tongues and Related Gifts’ ‘A History of Speaking in Tongues and Related Gifts’ in Michael P. Hamilton (ed.) *The Charismatic Movement* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1975), p. 70. And for Ignatius: Harvey D. Egan, *Ignatius of Loyola* (Wilmington, DE: Michael Glazier, 1987), pp. 193-94.

<sup>193</sup> ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

<sup>194</sup> Cf. Revelation 4 & 5; Archer, ‘I Was in the Spirit on the Lord’s Day’, pp. 173-91.

<sup>195</sup> Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, pp. 180-81.

<sup>196</sup> A.J. Tomlinson, ‘Supernatural Occurrences’, COGE 1.5 (May 1, 1910), p. 1.

<sup>197</sup> Stephen J. Casmier and Donale H. Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues: Post-Modern Reflections On Jazz, Pentecostalism And “Africomysticism”’, *Literature & Theology* 13.2 (Jun 1999), pp. 166-76 (169); cf. McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, pp. 119-20.

<sup>198</sup> This is roughly the point Lewis makes with ‘transposition’, Lewis, ‘Transposition’, pp. 91-115; cf. Williams, *Renewal Theology, Vol. Two*, p. 227.

<sup>199</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 166; Cox, *Fire from Heaven*, pp. 139-157; Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 32; Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, p. 61; Alexander, *Signs & Wonders*, pp. 35-39. Casmier and Matthews note that the following jazz pioneers were exposed to Pentecostalism: Louis Armstrong, Edward ‘Kid’ Ory, John Coltrane, Albert Ayler, and Charles Mingus in Casmier and Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues’, pp. 167, 174-75. Paul Alexander notes that Elvis Presley had Pentecostal roots also, Alexander, *Signs & Wonders*, p. 35.

imitating reality, as with a photograph.<sup>200</sup> Further, there is a spontaneity to jazz, that ‘once you write it down, it is no longer jazz; it has to be improvised *on the spot*’.<sup>201</sup> The HA reveals ‘an attitude that nothing is inexpressible or unspeakable … (HA-singers) delight in their ability to lend their voice to the holy spirit … at the very moment of utterance’.<sup>202</sup> In this way, jazz helps explain why a new, creative, and spontaneous song occurs in response to God-encounters.<sup>203</sup> The heavenly choir sings more vividly and creatively than a ‘fixed liturgy’, if liturgy is defined as an inflexible ritual. The HA ‘was the quintessential expression of the *free* liturgy of Azusa Street’.<sup>204</sup>

Third, there is an audience. Clearly, God Almighty is the ‘Audience of One’,<sup>205</sup> for whom the praise is intended. However, the HA is a communal activity and there is an earth-bound audience as well. Seymour wrote, ‘no one but those who are baptized with the Holy Ghost are able to join in – or better, the Holy Ghost only sings through such in that manner’.<sup>206</sup> There is a public exposing of one’s private faith, ‘a literal crossing of the bridge from the private to the public’.<sup>207</sup> A sociologist or psychologist could view the

<sup>200</sup> Casmier and Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues’, pp. 168-69.

<sup>201</sup> Alexander, *Signs & Wonders*, p. 38. Italics original.

<sup>202</sup> Casmier and Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues’, p. 175-76. ‘Non-mimetic discourse usurps the power of creativity. It escapes the clutches of the known, dips its fingers into the unknown and molds into existence that which has never been before’, p. 170.

<sup>203</sup> Twice Casmier and Matthews note a connection between non-mimetic art and spirituality: ‘the non-mimetic (non-realistic) brings God closer’ and it is ‘profoundly spiritual’, Casmier and Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues’, pp. 168, 172.

<sup>204</sup> Dove, ‘Hymnody and Liturgy’, pp. 249, 252. Italics mine. Dove infers that we can trust the Holy Spirit to convey depth of meaning. He highlights that once, when the HA was interpreted, the Holy Spirit revealed both an OT and NT text in a perfect liturgical manner even though there was ‘no intentionally directed structure’, p. 251; cf. Seymour, ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, p. 3. Hollenweger calls the HA an ‘oral liturgy for which the whole congregation is responsible’ Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 112. Hollenweger believes that ‘when a whole congregation sings in tongues in many harmonies (without following a set piece of music), Pentecostals are building a “cathedral of sounds,” a “socio-acoustic sanctuary,” which is particularly important for Pentecostals who do not have cathedrals’, Walter J. Hollenweger, ‘After Twenty Years’, p. 7.

<sup>205</sup> Os Guinness, *The Call: Finding and Fulfilling the Central Purpose of Your Life* (Nashville, TN: Word Publishing, 1998), pp. 73-87.

<sup>206</sup> Seymour, ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3.

<sup>207</sup> Augustine, Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration, p. 25.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

HA as a ‘bridge-burning’ or as an ‘initiation-rite’.<sup>208</sup> The HA breaks out of ‘dominant cultural constructs based on race, gender, ethnicity, and age’; anyone could lead the choir if the Spirit moved them.<sup>209</sup> The noteworthy point of correspondence is not the joining of a choir because one needs something to do on a Thursday night, but the impulse to worship. Internally, something deep within the affections calls for one to join the song of praise. Perhaps, the badly scarred *imago Dei* within humankind longs for its created purpose to be restored.<sup>210</sup> Listeners evaluate at a spiritually-affective level and conclude that God is near.<sup>211</sup> ‘People are melted to tears in hearing this singing. It is the harmony of heaven and the Holy Ghost (that) puts music in the voices that are untrained’.<sup>212</sup> Significantly, these spiritual affections ‘exist in a reciprocally conditioning mode with the beliefs and practices’.<sup>213</sup> Belief and practice naturally reinforce each other. Therefore, because the HA was widely accepted, because it created a spiritual hunger, and because it was often someone’s first glossolalic experience, it is essential that Pentecostal leaders open up space<sup>214</sup> for singing in the Spirit so that another generation can be exposed and experience a new level of worship.

---

<sup>208</sup> McDonnell believes this bridge-burning cements an individual’s commitment to the groups ‘goals, ideology and organization’, McDonnell, ‘Function of Tongues’, p. 338, cf. pp. 337-39; cf. Sullivan, *Charisms and Charismatic Renewal*, p. 142. Williams believes it does three things: 1) ‘strengthen a believer’s confidence in the authority of the group’, 2) reorients an ‘individual’s image of himself’, and 3) ‘commits him to certain changes in attitudinal or behavioral patterns’, Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, pp. 159, 164.

<sup>209</sup> Alexander, ‘Heavenly Choirs’, pp. 264-67.

<sup>210</sup> Charette, ‘Glossolalia and the Image of God’, pp. 189-201.

<sup>211</sup> Chan observes that ‘among second-generation Pentecostals Spirit-baptism is received first as a doctrine before it is actualized in personal experience’, Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, p. 10.

<sup>212</sup> Seymour, ‘The Heavenly Anthem’, AF 1.5 (Jan 1907), p. 3; cf. Williams, *Renewal Theology*, Vol. Two, p. 400, n. 246.

<sup>213</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 56. Italics mine. ‘It is the belief and practice which shapes and evokes the affections, and is essential to discernment and every other gift’, p. 164. ‘Worship must precede service’ wrote Myland in Alexander, ‘Boundless Love Divine’, p. 157; cf. p. 163.

<sup>214</sup> Opening up space for the humble and spontaneous HA is not today. Up-to-date music requires playing by the rules of popular culture, which presently depends heavily on electronics. Also, Pentecostal churches have grown and now require amplification and have multiple services. These put pressure on the length of services. Yet, the very point of singing in Spirit is that it breaks out of the rules that culture creates, even Pentecostal cultures.

## B. Good Gifts – The Gift of Tongues.

The gift of tongues in 1 Corinthians 12-14 is itself a biblical metaphor that needed no further symbolization for the early Pentecostals.<sup>215</sup> The reception of the Holy Spirit at SB is the ‘promise of the Father’,<sup>216</sup> and subsequent glossolalia is a ‘good gift’.<sup>217</sup> The high level of correspondence between the metaphor of a gift and the gift of tongues highlights three facets of public tongues. First, the image reveals a loving father who desires to help his Church by ‘restoring all the gifts to His church’.<sup>218</sup> Contrary to this is the cessationists position, which implies a father taking back his gift:

the gifts *cannot have ceased or been entirely withdrawn*, although they have been suspended and temporarily withdrawn as a mark of displeasure for the apostasizing of the church from her first love ... *these gifts are perpetually there*, for they are inseparable from the presence of the Holy Spirit.<sup>219</sup>

In other words, the gift is an irrevocable gift. Second, it is not decorative but is practical. It ‘builds up’<sup>220</sup> the whole church through a prophetic voice:

we have before us not praise, not prayer and unanimous worship by the whole church at once, but a case were two or three are anointed by the Holy Ghost to speak messages for the Lord to the church and one, the interpreter, is to interpret the message spoken in tongues so the church and congregation can understand.<sup>221</sup>

It also can edify through vertical communication, such as gratitude, intercession, or worship.<sup>222</sup> In this sense, the gift’s utility is emphasized over one’s possession of the

---

<sup>215</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.10, 28; 14.2, 5, 13.

<sup>216</sup> Luke 24.49; Acts 1.4; 2.33.

<sup>217</sup> Luke 11.13; cf. Mt. 7.11.

<sup>218</sup> AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4; Rickard, ‘Days Of Revelation’, p. 3.

<sup>219</sup> Bertha B. Kahrs, ‘The Nine Gifts’, TBM 4.76 (Dec 15, 1910), p. 4; Tomlinson, ‘The Opposition Weakening’, p. 1; Webb, ‘Spiritual Gifts’, p. 7; Bushnell, ‘Reflected Light’, p. 243; Divine, ‘Spiritual Manifestations and the Churches’, p. 5; Durham, ‘Manifestations Number II’, pp. 7-8; Editor, ‘Editorials: Tongues Cease’, p. 2; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #11’, p. 8; Ewart, ‘The Last Great Crisis’, p. 2.

<sup>220</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.7; 14.12; cf. Montgomery, ‘Edifying The Body Of Christ’, p. 121; Wigglesworth, ‘Spiritual Gifts’, pp. 249-50.

<sup>221</sup> Bell, ‘Question and Answers, #80’, p. 8.

<sup>222</sup> Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 9; Taylor, ‘Question Box, #458’, p. 10.

gift.<sup>223</sup> As a supernatural gift<sup>224</sup> it is used only as the ‘Spirit wills’.<sup>225</sup> Third, it is for everyone.<sup>226</sup>

The Pentecostal periodicals elaborated about the gift of tongues. First, the initial euphoria over the restoration of glossolalia, along with a lack of understanding, resulted in the phrase ‘gift of tongues’ having multiple meanings.<sup>227</sup> Because there was no prior example to follow in the actual practice of public tongues, they were largely pioneering what is now standard Pentecostal praxis from their reading of scripture and experience.<sup>228</sup> Second, these pioneers quickly discerned that the gift of tongues was distinct from the glossolalia of IE:

the baptism with the Holy Spirit, with the speaking in tongues, is for all (Acts 2:39). But the gift of tongues is for those only to whom God give it, just as the other gifts are, with this distinction that the gift of tongues only follows and never precedes Pentecost’.<sup>229</sup>

Third, Paul offered specific guidance for the use<sup>230</sup> and evaluation<sup>231</sup> of public tongues in 1 Corinthians 12-14, and his view was complementary with Luke’s glossolalia.<sup>232</sup> As early as 1907, these pioneers discerned that reading Luke solely through a Pauline lens would lessen the richness of what they had experienced.<sup>233</sup> Their theology of glossolalia

---

<sup>223</sup> ‘Field Notes’, COGE 3.14 (Sep 15, 1912), p. 7.

<sup>224</sup> Cashwell, ‘Speaking in Other Tongues’, p. 2; Taylor ‘Question Box, #41’, p. 15.

<sup>225</sup> Cress, ‘Abilene, Kan.’, p. 6.

<sup>226</sup> Seymour, ‘Gifts Of The Spirit’, p. 2; J.T.B. ‘Do All Speak With Tongues’, p. 4; Gaston, ‘The Baptism According to Acts 2:4’, p. 3.

<sup>227</sup> Gift of tongues could refer to: 1) the tongues of IE, ‘The Promised Latter Rain Now Being Poured out on God’s Humble People’, p. 1; 2) missionary tongues, or 3) the Holy Spirit, AF 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1; or 4), Paul’s gift in 1 Corinthians 12-14, ‘Came From Alaska’, AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2.

<sup>228</sup> Seymour, ‘Gifts Of The Spirit’, p. 2.

<sup>229</sup> Carothers, ‘The Speaking In Tongues’, p. 20; cf. Cashwell, ‘Speaking In Other Tongues’, p. 2; Barrett, *Works*, p. 21; A.J. Tomlinson, ‘The Gift Of Tongues’, COGE 8.24 (Jun 23, 1917), p. 1; Taylor, ‘Question Box, #32’, p. 15. Goff notes that Parham did not waver from missionary tongues but did add the gift of interpretation, Goff, *Fields White Unto Harvest*, p. 78.

<sup>230</sup> ‘The True Pentecost’, p. 2; Cashwell, ‘Speaking In Other Tongues’, p. 2; Taylor, ‘Question Box, #732’, p. 10; Kerr, ‘Paul’s Interpretation Of The Baptism’, p. 6; Polman, ‘As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance’, pp. 5-6.

<sup>231</sup> Pinson, ‘Prove All Things’, p. 2.

<sup>232</sup> Cashwell, ‘Speaking in Other Tongues’, p. 2; Stark, ‘Paul’s Doctrine’, p. 3.

<sup>233</sup> Cashwell, ‘Speaking in Other Tongues’, p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

was at stake. Fourth, SB was the doorway to all the spiritual gifts.<sup>234</sup> Finally, the early Pentecostals also elaborated on 1) the uniqueness of tongues,<sup>235</sup> 2) the gift of interpretation,<sup>236</sup> and 3) tongues as the least important gift.<sup>237</sup>

Though this thesis is broader than just the gift of tongues and because it is a significant field of study in itself,<sup>238</sup> the following theological observations are offered as a starting point for further investigation. When there is a high degree of ‘correspondence’ between a metaphor and what it symbolizes, it is likely that the image will become a ‘stock or faded metaphor’.<sup>239</sup> It is like an adult who knows the contents of all the gifts under the Christmas tree and then loses the childlike wonder of Christmas. Perhaps this has happened with Pentecostal’s public ‘gifts of tongues’. There are a couple of related issues: first, does the gift have any value in today’s worship service? Many Pentecostals see the gift of tongues today as embarrassing or as a hindrance to the gospel, because it is ‘noisy, unintelligible, and has pagan counterparts’.<sup>240</sup> It runs counter to popular ‘missional’ or attractional approaches to ministry. Second, there has been a reaction to excessive public tongues,<sup>241</sup> going so far as to say there is ‘little Pauline evidence for the traditional Pentecostal phrase “a message in tongues”’.<sup>242</sup>

---

<sup>234</sup> Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 8; Webb, ‘Baptized Into One Body’, p. 2; Bell, ‘Questions And Answers, #723’, p. 5; ‘Mistaken Message In Tongues’, p. 4.

<sup>235</sup> ‘Tongues as a Sign’, p. 2; Jacobs, ‘The Spirit Before Pentecost’, pp. 213-14.

<sup>236</sup> Sexton, ‘Editorials – Interpretation Of Tongues’, p. 1; Tomlinson, ‘Hold Steady Now’, p. 1.

<sup>237</sup> Tomlinson ‘Covet The Best Gifts’, p. 1.

<sup>238</sup> E.g. Nils Ivar Johan Engelsen, ‘Glossolalia and Other Forms of Inspired Speech According to 1 Corinthians 12-14’ (PhD Dissertation, Yale University, 1970); Harold Horton, *The Gifts of the Spirit* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1975); Yongnan Jeon Ahn, *Interpretation of Tongues and Prophecy in 1 Corinthians 12-14* (JPTSup 41; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2013).

<sup>239</sup> Caird, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible*, p. 155. In the same way, a low degree of correspondence adds freshness and shock.

<sup>240</sup> R. Menzies, *This is Our Story*, p. 95.

<sup>241</sup> ‘I have often (wrongly) heard both clergy and laity bemoan the absence of such “messages” in the assembly ... as an absence of a lack of spiritual vigor in the church’, Fee, ‘Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia’, p. 24, n. 3. Cf. William Graham MacDonald, ‘Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Seven’, *Paraclete* 28.2 (Spring 1994), pp. 1-12 (7-8).

<sup>242</sup> Fee, ‘Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia’, p. 33; cf. Fee, *First Corinthians*, p. 656; Fee, *God’s Empowering Presence*, p. 218.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

However, Paul's mention of a 'gift of interpretation' seems to refute this position.<sup>243</sup>

Finally, there are some Pentecostals who believe that all public glossolalia should be vertical, directed to God as praise, intercession, or mysterious speech.<sup>244</sup> This interpretation 'misses the larger context'<sup>245</sup> and then elevates it to an ironclad hermeneutic for all glossolalia beyond what Luke,<sup>246</sup> John,<sup>247</sup> and even Paul reveal.<sup>248</sup>

The suburbanization / homogenization of Pentecostalism through Evangelical theology and missional methods lessens the heart and soul of what it means to be Pentecostal.<sup>249</sup> The voice of the people is muted. Hollenweger calls for Pentecostals to return to their black-oral-inclusive root as the very key to Pentecostalism should be heeded.<sup>250</sup> Yes, the public gift of tongues can be messy, embarrassing, and at times abused; however, it 'liberate(s) the people of God and free(s) them from dehumanizing cultural, economic and social forces', even from a tightly-controlled,

---

<sup>243</sup> Williams, *Renewal Theology*, Vol. Two, pp. 404-406; Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 125-51.

<sup>244</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.2. First proposed by Walker, *The Gift of Tongues*, pp. 30-31, 36; cf. Fee, 'Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia', p. 33; Fee, *First Corinthians*, p. 656; Fee, *God's Empowering Presence*, p. 218. There are two proponents: 1) MacDonald, who limits all glossolalia, both personal and public to vertical communication in 'praise or petition, thanksgiving or intercession', MacDonald, 'Thesis Seven', p. 1. 2) Even though Fee notes that Paul's answer is intended to be corrective, not instructional or informative', he holds to this position, Fee, *God's Empowering Presence*, p. 148. Which makes Fee's statement confusing: 'Paul will *not forbid* interpreted glossolalia in the assembly ... (as) evident by his explicit preference for prophecy ... (and) by the clear implication in 1 Cor. 14.18-19 ... and v. 28', Fee, 'Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia', p. 34. Italics mine. Further, the existence of a 'gift of interpretation' seems to imply horizontal speech similar to prophecy and not just interpretation of vertical praise or intercession. Fee's mere three sentence description of 'interpretation of tongues' seems rather thin, Fee, *First Corinthians*, pp. 598-99; Fee, *God's Empowering Presence*, p. 173.

<sup>245</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 149; cf. pp. 148-50. That is, it 'serves to highlight their unintelligibility (only God understands them) rather than define the specific nature of their content'.

<sup>246</sup> See Acts 2.4-13 and 19.6. 'Luke's account of Acts 2 highlights the missiological significance of the Pentecostal gift ... the result of this divine enabling should not be understood simply as praise directed to God. It is above all, proclamation', Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 149; cf. pp. 149-50.

<sup>247</sup> See Jn 16.13.

<sup>248</sup> Paul used a vertical ecstatic experience ('inexpressible things' [2 Cor. 12.4]) during his vision as a means to convey truth in a horizontal fashion, cf. Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 215. 'Col. 3.16 ... refers to singing in tongues, the singing of "spiritual songs" is pictured as one way that the Colossians might "teach and admonish one another"', Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 150. Italics mine.

<sup>249</sup> Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues: An Essay on Theological Method'.

<sup>250</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 18, cf. Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 6.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

platform-driven liturgy.<sup>251</sup> The gift of tongues closely resembles the inclusive voices of Pentecost with imperfect sentences and a ‘broken speech for a broken world’ declaring the wonders of God until perfection comes.<sup>252</sup> Such speech is not intended to inform linguistically but spiritually and mystically to ‘transform’ and ‘inspire celebration’.<sup>253</sup> Finally, when yielded to the Holy Spirit, not only can the most common of persons become a boundary-breaking prophetic voice,<sup>254</sup> he or she can become visionary and call ‘things that are not as though they were’.<sup>255</sup> Therefore, the existence of an irrevocable gift from God for all of God’s people calls for reflection and useful incorporation, rather than neglect or prohibition.

## IV. Personal Metaphors.

The early Pentecostals were quite taken with public glossolalia and some argued that public tongues overshadowed personal uses.<sup>256</sup> Yet personal or devotional glossolalia was greatly appreciated. Most were delighted by the discovery that they could speak in tongues ‘at will’.<sup>257</sup> Today, personal glossolalia is emphasized over public glossolalia by many<sup>258</sup> and draws little criticism other than from the most extreme quarters.<sup>259</sup> The early Pentecostal periodicals offer a rich supply of metaphors for personal glossolalia

---

<sup>251</sup> Hollenweger, ‘Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement’, p. 553.

<sup>252</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 381

<sup>253</sup> Hollenweger, ‘Significance of Oral Christianity’, p. 262. Cf. James Gorden King, ‘The Pentecostal View Of The Gift Of Tongues’ (MA Thesis, Wheaton College, Wheaton, IL, 1974), p. 122.

<sup>254</sup> Menzies, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 146-51.

<sup>255</sup> Rom. 4.14; cf. Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, pp. 64-65.

<sup>256</sup> An overemphasis on IE detracted ‘from the broader significance of glossolalic prayer’, Baker, ‘Pentecostal Experience’, p. 182. ‘Tongues-speech as a missio-linguistic tool drove the notoriety of the new movement, the concomitant role of prayer and worship was obscured’, McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, pp. 113-14.

<sup>257</sup> E.g. Boddy, ‘Personal Testimonies’, p. 8; McA., ‘Difference Between’, p. 4.

<sup>258</sup> Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 87; Hayford, *Beauty*; Cartledge, ‘Future of Glossolalia’, p. 239.

<sup>259</sup> John MacArthur, *Strange Fire: The Danger of Offending the Holy Spirit with Counterfeit Worship* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, 2013).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia and is worth exploring. There are four word-pictures for personal tongues that somehow edify or build up<sup>260</sup> the believer and advance God's purposes in the world.<sup>261</sup>

### A. Secret Prayer – Praying in Tongues.

Praying in tongues is thought by many to be 'the foremost reason for tongues',<sup>262</sup> and is rooted in the biblical metaphor of 'groaning'<sup>263</sup> or praying in a 'prayer closet'.<sup>264</sup> The early Pentecostals metaphor of 'secret prayer' implies several points of correspondence with glossolalic prayer.<sup>265</sup> First, the secret aspect implies intimate and coded communication between the Holy Spirit and God through a human intercessor.<sup>266</sup> Human participation with the divine is synergistically needed and welcomed.<sup>267</sup> It is 'God in the earth pleading with God in the heavens on behalf of God and man'.<sup>268</sup> It is

---

<sup>260</sup> 1 Corinthians 14.4. Theories of just how tongues build up the believer include: 1) a reintegration of a fractured psyche, Kelsey, *Speaking in Tongues*, p. 199. 2) It 'permit(s) the analytical mind to rest ... thus freeing other dimensions of the person ... (to) a deeper reality', Richard A. Baer, 'Quaker Silence, Catholic Liturgy, and Pentecostal Glossolalia – Some Functional Similarities', in Russell P. Spitter (ed.), *Perspectives on the New Pentecostalism* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans, 1976), pp. 150-64 (152). 3) Edification is drawn from the belief system, Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, pp. 152-53, 230. 4) It 'results in added faith', Gordon L. Anderson, 'Baptism in the Holy Spirit, Initial Evidence, and a New Model', *Enrichment Journal*, 10:1 (Winter, 2005), pp. 70-78 (76). 5) There is a restoration of the *imago Dei*, Charette, 'Glossolalia and the Image of God', p. 200. 6) Through the continual process of searching, encountering, transforming, Cartledge, *Encountering the Spirit*, pp. 25-32.

<sup>261</sup> The heretofore unaddressed works on psychology and glossolalia, perhaps might be helpful in explaining how tongues-speech builds up the glossolalist. Cf. Kelsey, *Tongue Speaking*; Arnold Bittlinger, *Gift and Graces: A Commentary of 1 Corinthians 12-14* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co, 1967), pp. 100-103; Samarin, *Tongues of Men and Angels*; Lewis J. Willis, 'Glossolalia in Perspective', in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 247-84; Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*; Hutch, 'The Personal Ritual of Glossolalia', pp. 381-95.

<sup>262</sup> Taylor, 'Question Box, #595', p. 10. Cf. Suenens, 'Malines Document 1', p. 30; Baker, 'Pentecostal Experience', pp. ii; cf. pp. 208-33.

<sup>263</sup> Romans 8:26; 1 Cor. 14.14.

<sup>264</sup> Matthew 6:6; 'Praying For The Holy Ghost', AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3; Mrs. Anna Hall, 'The Polishing Process', AF 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 3; 'Questions Answered', AF 1.11 (Oct 1907), p. 2; T.W. Weaver, 'My Experience', TBM 1.14 (May 15, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>265</sup> Murrah, 'Macon, GA., April, 27, 1908', p. 4; cf. 'Arrested for Jesus' Sake', p. 3; 'Prayer', p. 3; Flower, 'Prayer', p. 12.

<sup>266</sup> Doering, 'A Missionary's Testimony', p. 126; Copley, 'The Prayer Of The Righteous', p. 2.

<sup>267</sup> Mills, 'Counterculture', p. 950.

<sup>268</sup> Copley, 'The Prayer Of The Righteous', p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

prayer ‘according to the will of God’.<sup>269</sup> It is ‘prayer as you never experienced it before’;<sup>270</sup> it is ‘inarticulate (ness) on the very verge of eloquence’.<sup>271</sup> It is prayer unvarnished by human agenda. Simply stated, it is ‘superlative intercession’.<sup>272</sup> It was even speculated that glossolalia was God’s design to ‘baffle the Devil’.<sup>273</sup> Second, through glossolalic prayer, one admits their weakness and reliance on God’s strength. Imagine a child who, because of fear, suddenly cries out for their parent’s rescue: ‘fluency in speaking (is not) essential to prayer. When words fail and we can only groan out our hearts to God, perhaps our prayer is most big with meaning and will prove most efficacious’.<sup>274</sup> It occurs when ‘the intensity of the prayer (is) so great that it is impossible to express it with the understanding, and then is when (sic) the Spirit prays. (Rom. 8:26)’.<sup>275</sup> Overall, ‘the purpose of this form of prayer is not to inform, but to participate in the divine nature’, through *kenosis* and *theosis*.<sup>276</sup> Third, such prayer reaches beyond known boundaries and is new ‘world-view-making’;<sup>277</sup> it is Spirit-directed imagination. An established world-view would be like a daughter knowing that her earthly father is not in a position to lend her a \$1,000. She does not even need to ask. But a child playing make-believe can imagine a spaceship in a faraway galaxy or a ball at a grand palace. In the same way, the Holy Spirit in glossolalic prayer sparks this daughter to dream beyond her perceived boundaries, to ‘call into being that which does not exist’:<sup>278</sup> ‘glossolalic (prayer) is … the human prototype of the divine word … disclosure of the Spirit who speaks and empowers’.<sup>279</sup> Such creating and imaginary

---

<sup>269</sup> Hesson, ‘Seeking The Baptism’, p. 5.

<sup>270</sup> Hesson, ‘Seeking The Baptism’, p. 5.

<sup>271</sup> Harold Horton in Brumback, ‘What Meaneth This?’, p. 293.

<sup>272</sup> Copley, ‘Pentecost in Type’, p. 7.

<sup>273</sup> John Reid, ‘Concerning The Tongues’, *TBM* 1.3 (Dec 1, 1907), p. 3; cf. ‘Unlocked Prayer’, p. 3.

<sup>274</sup> Flower, ‘Rightly Dividing The Word Of Truth’, p. 10.

<sup>275</sup> Taylor, ‘Editorial: 1 Corinthians 14’, p. 9.

<sup>276</sup> Baker, ‘Pentecostal Experience’, pp. 279-80. The ‘practice of glossolalic prayer may be understood as emptying out of the self before God (kenosis) so that one might become full of the Holy Spirit and thereby participate in Christ’s nature (theosis)’, p. 253.

<sup>277</sup> Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, p. 45.

<sup>278</sup> Romans 4.17 NASB.

<sup>279</sup> Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, p. 54.

prayer originates with the Holy Spirit; it is selfless and missional. At times it is pleading for lost humanity and was called ‘soul travail’ by the Pentecostal pioneers.<sup>280</sup> It is prayer that ‘looks outward and ministry to the church and world … (and is) a catalyst or trigger which opens the soul up to new dimensions of life in Christ’.<sup>281</sup> It is God in heaven using his church on earth to ‘vanquish all the forces of hell and possess the land’,<sup>282</sup> ‘you are conscious of having a force within you’.<sup>283</sup>

## B. Satisfied Praise – Worship.

‘A new medium’ of worship is another personal function of glossolalia.<sup>284</sup> A metaphor that described this aspect is ‘satisfied’ praise: ‘praise and worship swelled up within and sought expression, but words cannot be found which satisfied until the Holy Spirit Himself gave utterance through other tongues’.<sup>285</sup> The word picture has two perspectives: on the one hand, like a meal that does not nourish, human categories of thought and speech are insufficient for worship and, only through glossolalic praise is there ‘sweetness’,<sup>286</sup> or an ‘adequacy’.<sup>287</sup> On the other hand,

as the soul of a loving mother grows hungry and longs to hear an expression of love from the thoughtless child who is ever receiving but never giving … so our Father in Heaven loves to have wafted to Him … a real note of praise and thanksgiving … from lips of clay praises that are wholly acceptable.<sup>288</sup>

Second, glossolalic praise is not just a consequence of God’s presence.

Sacramentally, it is something that facilitates entrance into God’s presence,<sup>289</sup> comparable to the singers and trumpeters at the dedication of Solomon’s Temple who

---

<sup>280</sup> Wilkes, ‘Healed And Baptized In The Spirit’, pp. 6-7; Tomlinson, ‘Soul Travail’, p. 1. Urshan, ‘The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost’, p. 6; Editor, ‘Pentecostal Outpouring And Beulah’, p. 195.

<sup>281</sup> Suenens, ‘Malines Document’, pp. 30, 25.

<sup>282</sup> Gaston, ‘Onward, Yet Tested’, p. 6.

<sup>283</sup> ‘The Imperative Mood’, p. 70.

<sup>284</sup> Acts 2.11; 10.46. Montgomery, ‘A Year With The Comforter’, p. 147.

<sup>285</sup> Dempster, ‘That I May Know Him’, p. 31. My praise was ‘beyond all expression, *finding vent* only in another “tongue”’, Boddy, ‘Reports from England’, p. 1. Italics mine.

<sup>286</sup> A.E.L., ‘Physical Manifestations Of The Spirit’, pp. 2-3.

<sup>287</sup> S.H.F., ‘Our Distinctive Testimony’, p. 8. ‘An increased spirit of praise … in the new tongues’, Montgomery, ‘A Year With The Comforter’, p. 146.

<sup>288</sup> Atterberry, ‘They Shall Speak With New Tongues’, p. 3.

<sup>289</sup> Powers, ‘A Wonderful Experience’, p. 8; Chan, *Pentecostal Theology*, pp. 77-81.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia ushered in God's presence and then worshiped.<sup>290</sup> Third, the glossolalic perceives when they are worshipping and when they are praying.<sup>291</sup> Many early Pentecostals saw this as one of the purposes for glossolalia.<sup>292</sup>

### C. Mysteries – Revelation.

The early Pentecostals did not consider their glossolalia as monologues to God.<sup>293</sup> Rather, the Holy Spirit could teach, reveal, and even grant visions during the mysterious conversation.<sup>294</sup> Mystery was a common metaphor for personal tongues: 'these are the mysteries the Holy Spirit speaks to us in tongues'.<sup>295</sup> At times, the content was 'things that we need to know',<sup>296</sup> such as 'a deeper sense of the realness of God, of the life of the Word, of the love of the Spirit and the supremacy of Christ',<sup>297</sup> a greater understanding of the bible,<sup>298</sup> or 'love, mercy, and power'.<sup>299</sup> However, comprehensible content was not essential to the revelation, even though 'the secrets have taken on sound ... the sense is concealed'.<sup>300</sup> Apophatically, what is revealed is untranslatable

---

<sup>290</sup> 2 Chronicles 5.13; 'Type of Pentecost. II Chron. 5', p. 3.

<sup>291</sup> Sisson, 'Much Incense', p. 6.

<sup>292</sup> Carothers, 'The Speaking in Tongues', pp. 21, 24; Barratt, *Works*, pp. 6, 45, 82, 149; Myland, 'The Latter Rain', p. 148.

<sup>293</sup> Contra MacDonald, William Graham MacDonald 'Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Four', *Paraclete* 27.3 (Summer 1993), pp. 32-43 (32); cf. MacDonald, 'Thesis Seven', pp. 1, 3, 6.

<sup>294</sup> Joh 14.26. God's people were the recipients of God's mysteries, 1 Cor. 4.1 (cf. Eph. 1.9; 3.3; Col. 1.6); 2 Cor. 12.1; prophecy in Acts 19.6. Tomlinson compare it one time to the Urim and Thummim, Tomlinson, 'More About the Gifts', pp. 2, 3.

<sup>295</sup> 'Bengali Lady's Pentecost', *TBM* 3.56 (Feb 15, 1910), p. 3. E.g. 'the Pentecostal outpouring of the Spirit, in these days of the Latter Rain is revealing the mysteries of the real Kingdom of God as never before', J.E. Sawders, 'The Mystery Of The Kingdom', *TBM* 5.107 (Apr 1, 1912), p. 4.

<sup>296</sup> Anderson, 'Baptized With The Holy Ghost', p. 3.

<sup>297</sup> Myland, 'A Personal Word', p. 2.

<sup>298</sup> Chi, 'Testimony of Mok Lai Chi', p. 4.

<sup>299</sup> Evans, 'Report', p. 3. McDonnell limits such knowledge to 'memory retrieval ... in which is brought forth that which is antecedent, which had already been bestowed', McDonnell, 'Function of Tongues', p. 344. MacDonald is most comfortable with revelations of Christ, MacDonald, 'Theses One and Two', p. 6.

<sup>300</sup> Mercer, 'Speaking In An Unknown Tongue', p. 6. 'When an individual speaks in tongues, he and God alone are communing. They deal in secrets (mysteries) ... its beauty stems from the intimacy of the love talk in the glory of God in transcending man's intellectually limited inventory of languages as a communicator', MacDonald 'The Place of Glossolalia in Neo-Pentecostalism', p. 225; Macchia, 'Towards a Theology of Initial Evidence', p. 163.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia into mortal categories of thought or language.<sup>301</sup> Glossolalia is ‘a symbol to the world of the possibility and fact of a divine access to the soul, and a divine operation in it’,<sup>302</sup> meaning that the ‘realities of Christianity are sometimes better simply beheld, simply encountered ... (because) words sometimes damage the mystery’.<sup>303</sup> ‘I beheld His majesty and beauty’,<sup>304</sup> or ‘I was alone with Christ in spirit. I spoke in other tongues as the Spirit gave utterance’.<sup>305</sup> A restoration of the *imago Dei* through glossolalia is possible.<sup>306</sup>

#### D. The Jordon River – Power.

There is a built-in correspondence between the Spirit that descended upon Jesus at his baptism and the equipping power of Pentecostal SB, hence Spirit ‘baptism’. All believers should ‘receive the baptism that Christ received on the banks of Jordan. He had the fullness of the Godhead, but He had to be baptized for His great work. Jesus was anointed with the Holy Ghost and power and went about doing good’.<sup>307</sup> Further, just as the Father spoke from heaven,<sup>308</sup> so now the Holy Spirit speaks through fully empowered believers about Jesus.<sup>309</sup> Devotional glossolalia provides no power per se, but is symbolic of God’s equipping power,<sup>310</sup> of God’s ‘empire’ within.<sup>311</sup> As the entryway into power, if one was not fully immersed in the Holy Spirit, there was a lack of power: the participants of the Keswick meeting ‘returned to their respective spheres without having received the gift of tongues, or the power to work miracles, or the gift of

---

<sup>301</sup> Rybczynski, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 88; Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, pp. 102-21; Castelo, *Christian Mystical Tradition*, p. 129; cf. pp. 22-23, 173.

<sup>302</sup> Bushnell, ‘Supernatural Manifestations’, p. 37.

<sup>303</sup> Rybczynski, ‘Reframing Tongues’, p. 103.

<sup>304</sup> Freeman, ‘Lithia, Fla.’, p. 6.

<sup>305</sup> Barnett, ‘Unicoi, Tenn.’, p. 4.

<sup>306</sup> Charette, ‘Glossolalia and the Image of God’, p. 200.

<sup>307</sup> ‘Pentecostal Notes’, p. 3; cf. Noble, ‘Sunday School Lesson: Baptism and Temptation of Jesus’, p. 4; ‘In The House Of God’, WE 157 (Sep 16, 1916), p. 7.

<sup>308</sup> Cf. Mt. 3.16-4.1; Mk 1.11-12; Lk. 3.22, 4.1-2; Jn 1.32-34.

<sup>309</sup> Menzies, *This is Our Story*, pp. 29-39.

<sup>310</sup> ‘I praise Him for the power in the sign He gave me of speaking in tongues’, Jeffries, ‘Another Witness’, p. 1; cf. Foster, ‘Modern Pentecostal Missionary Work’, p. 14; Slay, ‘Glossolalia: Its Value to the Individual’, p. 222.

<sup>311</sup> Seymour, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, p. 3.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

prophecy, or the gift of healing, or *the power to cast out devils*'.<sup>312</sup> Spirit baptism is a power for all the spiritual gifts;<sup>313</sup> it is 'power to meet the triune evil, the world, the flesh and the devil, as well as power for service'.<sup>314</sup> Significantly, glossolalia facilitates an anointing for spiritual speech, whether it be preaching, testimony, prophecy, or encouragement.<sup>315</sup> In this sense, glossolalia is intimately connected to 'the missionary spirit'.<sup>316</sup> 'We have the promise of the same power today' that the disciples received on the Day of Pentecost.<sup>317</sup> Conversely, that power is unlocked through humility and obedience; it is 'power in weakness':<sup>318</sup>

He does not give us power. We are still as weak as ever. He has the power, and it is He that continues to exercise it, but He gives us 'authority' to claim the exercise of His power, and as we do this in our helplessness, His strength is made perfect in our weaknesses. We have the faith and He has the power.<sup>319</sup>

Just as one puts on clothes each day, the believer is to be clothed with the Spirit each day.<sup>320</sup> Power as a theological category<sup>321</sup> moves beyond an introspective, and at times, selfish focus on whether I am a child of God or not, and focuses in on an actual life in

---

<sup>312</sup> Barratt noted of a 1905 a Keswick meeting, Barratt, *Works*, p. 209.

<sup>313</sup> 'Pentecost With Signs Following', p. 1; Street, 'What Is Pentecost', p. 6.

<sup>314</sup> Sexton, 'Editorial, Entering The Fifth Year Of Service', p. 1; cf. Ingham, 'Glorious Convention at Pretoria, South Africa', p. 9. It is power for 'every emergency', Wigglesworth, 'Spiritual Gifts', pp. 249-50. 'Is it possible that speaking in tongues is a sign of God's radical invasion of countless lives in preparation for the final outreach of the gospel ... to war against the powers of the darkness that increasingly are pressing upon us', Williams, *Renewal Theology, Vol. Two*, p. 235.

<sup>315</sup> Epps, 'Another Witness', p. 3; Hesson, 'Seeking The Baptism', p. 5.

<sup>316</sup> Flower, 'Editorial', p. 4. Cf. Macchia, 'Sighs Too Deep for Words', p. 68; Cox, *Fire From Heaven*, p. 316; Keener, 'Why Does Luke', p. 178; Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 230.

<sup>317</sup> 'The Promise Still Good', p. 3.

<sup>318</sup> Durham, 'A Chicago Evangelist's Pentecost', p. 4.

<sup>319</sup> 'Christ Has The Power', p. 1.

<sup>320</sup> Luke 24.49; Acts 1.8.

<sup>321</sup> Largely found in Luke's writings; cf. Mills, *Understanding*, p. 70; Hovenden, *Speaking in Tongues*, pp. 89-93; Keener, 'Why Does Luke', p. 180.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
the Spirit, one's missional purpose.<sup>322</sup> Tongues serves as a sign and somehow facilitates God's empowerment for living an obedient and yielded Spirit-filled life.<sup>323</sup>

## V. Two Final Metaphors.

Two final metaphors from the early Pentecostals address the nature of tongues and Oneness' unique salvific-glossolalia.

### A. MENE, MENE, TEKEL, PARSIN – The Nature of Glossolalia.

'Mysterious' is the best way to describe the nature of tongues. A fitting metaphor for this mysterious nature of glossolalia would be the handwriting on the Babylonian banquet hall, which Daniel understood through revelation.<sup>324</sup> However, among the early Pentecostals, the nature of tongues was fluid. At times it was MT, xenolalia, passive, and/or ecstatic,<sup>325</sup> and a mystery.

According to the earliest periodicals, glossolalia was a real, spoken language given for the purpose of cross-cultural evangelism, that is, MT:<sup>326</sup> 'God is solving the missionary problem, sending out new-tongued missionaries'.<sup>327</sup> Initially called 'the gift

---

<sup>322</sup> Land, *Pentecostal Spirituality*, p. 111; Macchia, 'Tongues as a Sign', p. 70; Alexander, 'Boundless Love Divine', p. 156. Chan's criticism, that power is only a result of SB and not its theological essence, is only a problem because he places SB into a CI category and thus arrives at a 'normal' but not the 'norm' dead-end, Chan 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', p. 197; cf. pp. 202, 208, 210. In other words, there is no borderless category that resembles an actual life lived in the Spirit; cf. Menzies, 'Evidential Tongues', p. 228.

<sup>323</sup> Abrams, *Holy Ghost & Fire*, p. 38. Barratt links SB with power, but also connects it with the entire being, talents, being 'energized in His service', implying a greater sanctification as well, Barrett, *Works*, pp. 39, 44, 196, 198.

<sup>324</sup> Daniel 5.25-26; cf. Noble, 'Questions Answered', p. 3.

<sup>325</sup> Barrett is comfortable with the term ecstatic and holds that MT are theoretically possible if the Holy Spirit gets 'perfect control over them' but such a possibility does not 'usurp the ordinary study of languages', Barrett, *Works*, pp. 44, 170-71. There is a cooperation between the human and divine, cf. pp. 90-93.

<sup>326</sup> TBM wrestled openly with the issue before stating, that tongues 'do not seem to be an enabling ... a continuous use of foreign language without study or practice', *The Value of Speaking in Tongues*, p. 4. TOF morphed from MTs to an 'ecstatic and worshipping voice', Pohill, 'This is That', pp. 101, 102. TP was at first excited about MTs and then ceased publishing testimonies of MTs in Oct, 1909.

<sup>327</sup> AF 1.3 (Nov 1906), p. 2.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
of language',<sup>328</sup> it was believed that missionaries could speak in any language using glossolalia.<sup>329</sup> Yieldedness<sup>330</sup> was the key to speaking fluently in any known language because the Holy Spirit spoke 'all the languages of the world'.<sup>331</sup> As early as fall of 1906 and as late as 1909,<sup>332</sup> three things made it clear they were wrong about these understandings:<sup>333</sup> 1) Spirit-filled missionaries were reporting that they needed to learn the local language<sup>334</sup> and 2) that they needed local interpreters.<sup>335</sup> Finally, 3) a careful investigation by the respected CMA concluded that tongues 'does not seem to be intended as a means of communication'.<sup>336</sup> Though they were wrong about MT they did not discredit what is now called xenolalia: the anecdotes containing, at times, parts of a known language were too numerous.<sup>337</sup> In later periodicals, xenolalia was reported simply because of its rarity<sup>338</sup> and is still reported today.<sup>339</sup>

A growing understanding of Paul's 'tongues of men *and of angel's*' slowly opened up theological room for an ecstatic understanding of glossolalia.<sup>340</sup> For some

---

<sup>328</sup> Only in the first two issues of *AF: AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 1; 'Missionaries To Jerusalem', *AF* 1.1 (Sep 1906), p. 4; 'Notice', *AF* 1.2 (Oct 1906), p. 4.

<sup>329</sup> *TBM*, Cashwell distinguished between the 'gift of tongues' as 'divers kinds of tongues of many languages', from 'speaking in tongues' or the 'manifestation' of tongues, Cashwell, 'Speaking in Other Tongues', p. 2.

<sup>330</sup> Standley 'Worth Tarrying For', p. 3; 'A Testimony', *TBM* 1.9 (Mar 1, 1908), p. 3.

<sup>331</sup> Seymour, 'The Precious Atonement', p. 2.

<sup>332</sup> McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', p. 122.

<sup>333</sup> Sexton, 'Editorials, Raised Us Up Together', p. 1; Pike 'A Plea For Charity And Forbearance', p. 2; Perry, 'What Is The Use Of Speaking In Tongues (#2)', p. 3.

<sup>334</sup> Garr, 'From Distant Lands, The Work in India', p. 1; Garr, 'News from China', p. 1; Editor, 'A Word to Foreign Missionaries', p. 3; Kelly, 'Days of Blessing', p. 4.

<sup>335</sup> Kelly, 'Work in a Chinese Village', p. 1.

<sup>336</sup> 'The Promise of the Father and Speaking with Tongues in Chicago', p. 3; cf. 'Pentecost in England', p. 1.

<sup>337</sup> McGee, 'Shortcut to Language Preparation', p. 122.

<sup>338</sup> Scott, 'What The Pentecost Did For One Family', p. 7; Agar, 'Life More Abundant', p. 28; Carlson, 'Language Recognized', p. 1; 'A Visitation Of God In The Great Prisons', p. 11.

<sup>339</sup> Ralph W. Harris, *Spoken by the Spirit: Documented Accounts of 'Other Tongues' From Arabic to Zulu* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1973).

<sup>340</sup> 1 Corinthians 13.1. 'Paul offers the first evidence of a separation of intelligible and unintelligible speech by his separation of prophecy and speaking in tongues', Engelsen, 'Glossolalia and Other Forms of Inspired Speech', p. ii; cf. p. 95.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

periodicals, this led them to nuance human passivity with glossolalia:<sup>341</sup> ‘there was at least a short period in which there was no consciousness of what was going on ... talking in tongues is not possible for man to do, it is God who talks’.<sup>342</sup> Other periodicals nuanced a synergistic human / divine role in glossolalia<sup>343</sup> and were comfortable using the term ‘ecstatic’ in a qualified manner.<sup>344</sup> Though both human and divine cooperated to produce glossolalia, many pioneers looked to mystery as the best way to describe this cooperation. For example,

the language of which the apostle is here speaking (1Co 14:2) seems to have been of a very peculiar sort – an unintelligible vocal utterance ... in my younger days I have heard such untranslatable sounds under the mighty sermons of grand old Welch (sic) preachers ... (these) *mysteries* are ‘things hidden from the hearers, and sometimes from the speaker himself’ ... The secrets have taken on sound, but the sense is concealed.<sup>345</sup>

The correspondence between the image of Daniel’s MENE, MENE, TEKEL, PARSIN and glossolalia is twofold. First, God’s words are now revealed to human recipients. The Holy Spirit now speaks through ordinary human tongues individually and through Christ’s world-wide body on earth, the church, collectively: ‘they (the apostles) were filled with the glorified Word. This glorified Word began to manifest itself through the vocal organ’.<sup>346</sup> Furthermore, glossolalia is ‘ecstatic only in the technical sense of being automatic speech in which the conscious mind played no part,

---

<sup>341</sup> Published accounts of MT were somewhat rare in the COGE and the PHA. COGE: Brawner, ‘Maitland, Fla (2).’, p. 6; Wilcox, ‘Mater, Ky.’, p. 2. PHA: Sawgalsky, ‘Testimony and Experience of Lewis Sawgalsky, Converted Jew’, p. 5; Noble, ‘Questions Answered’, p. 3; Anderson, ‘The Witness Stand’, p. 2. For passive accounts in COGE: Wood, ‘Nassau, N.P., Bahama Islands’, p. 6; Pirkle, ‘Chickamauga, Ga’, p. 7; Bowker, ‘Charlotte, Tenn.’, p. 3. Though at times it was viewed synergistically, both human and divine, Tomlinson, ‘Holy Ghost and Us’, p. 1. For passive accounts in PHA: Taylor, ‘Question Box, #1108’, p. 10; Taylor, ‘Question Box, #839’, p. 5; Branch, ‘The Baptism of the Holy Ghost’, p. 4.

<sup>342</sup> Anderson, ‘Baptized With The Holy Ghost’, p. 3.

<sup>343</sup> Specifically, the TOF and WW periodicals: Geo. G Brinkman, WW 10.5 (May 20, 1914), p. 1; Bosworth, ‘Power In The Holy Ghost’, (TOF) pp. 246-47; Berg, ‘My Pentecostal Baptism’, (TOF) pp. 251-53 (pp 252-53); cf. MacDonald, ‘Thesis Four’, p. 36.

<sup>344</sup> Conybeare and Howson, ‘The Gift Of Tongues’, p. 168; Fraser, ‘A Contrast In Values’, p. 3. Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 243; Powers, ‘Missionary Tongues?’, p. 51.

<sup>345</sup> Rev. John S. Mercer, ‘Speaking In An Unknown Tongue’, WE 136 (Apr 22, 1916), p. 6. Italics mine.

<sup>346</sup> G.F. Taylor, ‘Sunday School Lesson: The Holy Spirit Our Helper’, PHA 2.51 (Apr 17, 1919), pp. 2, 3; cf. R.B. Beall, ‘The Holy Spirit Is A Person’, PHA 1.3 (May 17, 1917), p. 2.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

but not ecstatic in the more common sense of “produced or accompanied by exalted states of feeling, rapture, or frenzy”.<sup>347</sup> Spirit-induced glossolalia<sup>348</sup> is

an unclassifiable, free speech in response to an unclassifiable, free God. It is the language of the *imago Dei* ... language as rational communication cannot follow one into the depths of the encounter between *the mystery of God and the mystery of self before God*.<sup>349</sup>

Therefore, the real significance is not that ‘God can manipulate’ one’s tongue, but that ‘God can use the whole person for His divine purpose’.<sup>350</sup>

Second, the mysterious content of the message can only be understood through revelation. Daniel was able to give an interpretation only because ‘there is a God ... who reveals mysteries’.<sup>351</sup> The logic is that ‘language can emanate only from an intelligence, and since the language does not exist in the mind of persons thus speaking, it must come from a superior mind’.<sup>352</sup> The argument that Pentecostal glossolalia cannot be proven to be the same as apostolic glossolalia<sup>353</sup> cuts both ways – for neither can it be disproved;<sup>354</sup> furthermore, there is the testimony of tens of millions who speak of its effect in their life.<sup>355</sup> Simply put, this mysterious nature is best understood by those who have experienced it.<sup>356</sup> Finally, though it ‘resist(s) all categories currently on hand in the

---

<sup>347</sup> Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 243.

<sup>348</sup> The Christian glossolalist believes that the spirit comes upon from without; whereas the mystic ‘realizes the beyond *within*’, Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, p. 197.

<sup>349</sup> Macchia, ‘Sighs Too Deep for Words’, p. 61. Italics mine. Poloma believes glossolalia begins as a learned behavior, but that one ‘moves into a mystical state of prayer where the divine is personally encountered’, Poloma, ‘Glossolalia, Liminality’, p. 155.

<sup>350</sup> Williams, *Tongues of the Spirit*, p. 164; cf. McDonnell, ‘Function of Tongues’, p. 346.

<sup>351</sup> Daniel 5.16; 2.28.

<sup>352</sup> Piper, ‘The Sovereignty of God’, p. 4.

<sup>353</sup> Willis, ‘Glossolalia in Perspective’, pp. 253-54.

<sup>354</sup> Williams notes that there would be serious exegetical ‘inconsistency if all the phenomenon was not the same’, Williams, *Renewal Theology, Vol. Two*, pp. 212-13, 215; cf. MacDonald, ‘Thesis Four’, p. 32.

<sup>355</sup> Pentecostalism is ‘a revolution comparable to ... the original apostolic church’, Ray H., Hughes, ‘Glossolalia in Contemporary Times’, in Wade H. Horton (ed.), *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 143-77 (153). ‘We must therefore not ignore the interpretation of those who experienced the phenomena’, Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 152. Synan, ‘The Role of Tongues as Initial Evidence’, pp. 67-82.

<sup>356</sup> ‘Music can only be interpreted by one who has a feeling for music, and as the inarticulate language of tears, or sighs, or groans can be comprehended by a sympathetic soul, so tongues could be interpreted by those whose spiritual state corresponded to that of the gifted person’, W. Robertson Nicoll in

philosophy of language',<sup>357</sup> 'glossolalia may still communicate effectively, despite being ideationally deficient', because the community of faith can infer meaning.<sup>358</sup>

## B. A 'Full-Born' Baby's Cry – Oneness Pentecostalism.

Perhaps the most affective metaphor of this entire study is located in Oneness Pentecostalism. Sister King witnessed 'half-born' babies in an incubator at the St. Louis fair and she perceived these babies to be stuck and not yet 'fully born'.<sup>359</sup> We are not satisfied, she wrote, that one is a 'full-born spiritual babe' until we hear the tongues.<sup>360</sup> Such a view seems to take Durham's FW theology of justification to its logical conclusion and make SB all about the start of life.<sup>361</sup> Such reasoning is akin to the Evangelical hermeneutic that sees SB only as CI<sup>362</sup> but with the addition of tongues as

---

Hargrave, 'Reformation to the Twentieth Century', p. 119; cf. MacDonald 'The Place of Glossolalia in Neo-Pentecostalism', p. 221; 'Popular Expositions', p. 129. McGee wrote, 'a person that has eaten an apple...is better qualified to speak on the question of the kind and quality of the apple', McGee, 'Popular Expositions', p. 129.

<sup>357</sup> Smith, Thinking in Tongues, p. 123.

<sup>358</sup> David Hilborn, 'Glossolalia as Communication', in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 111–46 (139, 141).

<sup>359</sup> Haywood had another striking metaphor: until the child was circumcised on the eighth day, a Jewish child was born but not fully recognized as being alive, Haywood, 'Baptized Into One Body', p. 3.

<sup>360</sup> King, Abnormality', p. 4. The full quote reads: 'all over the world are imperfectly born spiritual babes ... If a human baby is born into this world without a cry, is there not an alarm as to its (im)perfect state, and is it not gently shaped and padded until he gives the essential cry, and we say, "it is born and has life and brain, because it has cried?" So the full-born spiritual babe, babbles its infantile notes else we are not satisfied ... So let us get settled in the fact of what constitutes the being born again of the Spirit, and that the new-born spiritual babes are more quickly born and of faster growth than those of our previous experiences. And, understand, that an imperfectly born spiritual baby is not according to the pattern, and will not be able to stand before the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords, no more surely, than those who neglect the midnight oil though they be perfectly born into the spirit-life'.

<sup>361</sup> Ewart, 'False Teaching', p. 4; French, *Our God Is One*, p. 51; Bernard, *A History of Christian Doctrine*', pp. 111-12. We ultimately do not know what Durham thought as 'the Finished Work doctrine remained underdeveloped' at the time of Durham's death, Reed, 'In Jesus' Name', p. 106.

<sup>362</sup> Anthony A. Hoekema, *What About Tongue-Speaking?* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdman's Publishing Company, 1966), pp. 57-81, 119-20; *Report of the Special Committee on the Work of the Holy Spirit to the 182<sup>nd</sup> General Assembly*, pp. 43-47; Dunn, *The Baptism in the Holy Spirit*; Bruner, *A Theology of the Holy Spirit*.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

the finale – a cry of the new birth.<sup>363</sup> However, the very point of correspondence in King's metaphor with its theological inference reveals the problem with traditional *ordo salutis* categories. Exactly when is someone born-again? Upon justification (conception?), upon water baptism (out of the birth canal?), or when they speak in tongues (baby's first cry?)? Indeed, Paul's purpose for using the metaphor 'baptized by one Spirit into one body'<sup>364</sup> is his desire for unity based upon a common salvation, and not to parse out the *ordo salutis*. A parallel metaphor from a Oneness perspective is Jesus' baptism. The early Oneness periodicals consistently interpret Jesus' baptism at the Jordan River as paradigmatic of 'the manner in which we should come to be sons of God'.<sup>365</sup> However, 1) when did Jesus become God's son? After all, the Holy Spirit filled Elizabeth to recognize her 'Lord' while Jesus was still in Mary's womb.<sup>366</sup> 2) Did Jesus' Jordan River experience bring sonship or was it an anointing of the Holy Spirit that launched his ministry?<sup>367</sup> 3) What are we to make of Luke's explicit purpose for the Holy Spirit's coming on the Day of Pentecost?<sup>368</sup> Oneness Pentecostalism has much in common with its Pentecostal family and there appears to be a mixing of two metaphors: new birth and SB. As wonderful as spiritual birth is, there is a delight in the ongoing relationship with God that is signified in SB. Perhaps the metaphors of SB should be re-examined and emphasised for their points of correspondence over against the Modernistic categories of dogmatic theology.<sup>369</sup>

---

<sup>363</sup> 'Fundamental Doctrine', Articles of Faith of the United Pentecostal Church International (UPCI Manual, 2018 edition), p. 31.

<sup>364</sup> 1 Corinthians 12.13.

<sup>365</sup> Haywood, 'The One True God', *MDS* 1.9 (Dec 15, 1915), pp. 3-4 (3); cf. F.J. Ewart, 'A Beautiful Type of Redemption' *TGR* 1.10 (Mar 1, 1914), p. 3. Cf. Mt. 3.13-17; Mk 1.9-12; Lk. 3.21-22.

<sup>366</sup> Lk. 1.39-45.

<sup>367</sup> Mt. 4.1; Mk 1.12-13; Lk. 4.1.

<sup>368</sup> Acts 1.8.

<sup>369</sup> Stronstad points out that Paul used the metaphor one time and Luke three times, and Paul used a similar image of 'filled with the Spirit' one time compared with Luke's nine occurrences, Stronstad, *The Charismatic Theology of St. Luke*, p. 10; cf. Johns, 'New Directions in the Hermeneutics', p. 147.

## Chapter 7

### Conclusion

This thesis makes several contributions to the study of glossolalia. First, it reviews the major works on glossolalia. Though not every piece was able to be included in the survey, those surveyed: 1) chronologically reveal the main issues of glossolalia, 2) provide an understanding of the language and theology for reading the early Pentecostal periodicals, and 3) form a database of ideas for the constructive section. Finally, it shows the need for this thesis.

Second, this is the most significant reading and compilation of the theology of glossolalia by the early Pentecostals to date. It has carefully listened to the earliest Pentecostal voices (1906 to ca. 1920) about their distinctive doctrine. This thesis has revealed that there are no major difference between the WH and the FW branches of Pentecostalism regarding glossolalia. Neither the WH experience of sanctification as a second experience after justification nor the FW understanding of sanctification happening at justification affected their outlook of SB with the accompanying sign of tongues as a unique third or second experience. However, even though Oneness Pentecostalism embraces the experience and terminology of SB, it is connected to the theological category of justification. One is not fully saved until one speaks in tongues according to the record of these early pioneers. This bundling of Paul's soteriology (1 Cor. 12.13) with Luke's glossolalic sign is unique and is a natural outflow of reading Luke through Paul's lens. Evangelicals might be shocked at the logical conclusion of their CI theory of SB.

Third, and one of the more notable discoveries, is that the best and brightest theological reflections of today echo these pioneers! Every great theological nuance or concept from the numerous books and journal articles that were read for this thesis can be found in these periodicals; at times humbly stated but occasionally equally nuanced as today's best theological understanding. Also, the collective voice of the Pentecostal pioneers is quite remarkable. These men and women guided the theological discussions

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
about glossolalia through three theological controversies: 1) the FW, 2) the new issue  
(Oneness), and 3) evidential tongues.<sup>1</sup>

Fourth, though evidential glossolalia is thought to be an ironclad universal doctrine, this thesis has revealed three items that should trigger a reexamination of the IE doctrine. First, the terminology itself is quite late. ‘Initial evidence’ occurs eleven years after the ASM revival and ‘initial physical evidence’ occurs a year after that. In other words, these phrases are not organic to the ‘heart of pentecostal spirituality’, but are the offspring of a ‘Pentecostal church bureaucracy (that) soon tamed the revival’.<sup>2</sup> This thesis reveals that it is possible to revision out the Modernistic terminology of ‘initial evidence’ without losing the essence of the encounter and resulting glossolalia. Initial Evidence terminology appears to be too mechanical and scientific for today’s post-modern world to describe sufficiently the rich relational dynamic of an encounter with God. Homogenizing a rich and personal encounter with the Holy Spirit into a ‘one-size-fits-all’ description is ill-fitting today. Second, there was tolerance for theological variety. There was compassionate discussion when someone had a SB-like experience but glossolalia was delayed. Also, there was allowance for a variety of pre-glossolalic experiences before a full glossolalic SB.<sup>3</sup> Third, statements like the full consummation of SB ‘is not the end, but the beginning of a blessed life. There is always more to follow’,<sup>4</sup> put the emphasis on life in the Spirit instead of glossolalia as a sign. It also replaces the have / have not categories of IE with a continuum of spiritual experiences. As in any relationship, the ongoing life together is more important than its beginning. Further, the process of seeking, emptying and being filled and refilled should be emphasized. The resulting glossolalia of an encounter will naturally occur, but the ongoing relationship of a life in the Spirit is far more important than its inexpressible start.

---

<sup>1</sup> Synan, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition*, pp. 143-66.

<sup>2</sup> Hollenweger, ‘Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement’, p. 551.

<sup>3</sup> Phrases like ‘stammering lips’, ‘gracious anointings’, ‘stutterings’, ‘pre-Pentecostal fulness’, ‘whispering words’, and ‘not fully satisfied’ were used to describe pre-glossolalic experiences.

<sup>4</sup> Boulos, ‘In Defense Of The Truth’, pp. 10-11.

Fifth, glossolalia is a symbol of the unclassifiable speech of the mystery of God and the mystery of humankind before God. However, attempts to quantify this mystery dogmatically have reached their end, the theological discussion has become stale. Proponents and doubters have well-worn arguments and counter arguments. It is believed that these pioneers' first expressions help point us towards a more organic Pentecostal construction of glossolalia rather than a dogmatic Evangelicalism with tongues. Using metaphor for theological construction grew naturally out of the soil of these early Pentecostal periodicals themselves. Their attention to biblical metaphors and their subsequent homespun metaphors may help reorient and guide the theological conversation for a new post-modern generation. Perhaps theological metaphors can explain what words cannot.

Six, this thesis provides a rare look at the early Oneness materials at a scholarly level. Forgotten issues of *TGR*, *MDS*, and *TBT* were found to be extant and are now online through the *Consortium of Pentecostal Archives* as a result of this research. *TGR* is an especially rich find, as it reveals the development of Oneness thought as it diverged from Trinitarian Pentecostalism, and extended Durham's FW to its logical conclusion. It is hoped that Oneness scholars will pick up the challenge to revision their theology in light of this study, even as Trinitarian Pentecostalism must revision its theology of glossolalia away from Modernistic categories.

Seventh, philosophically, this thesis envisions glossolalia as a symbol of the liminal overlap between the unseen and seen realities. On the one hand, tongues are so thoroughly common to this earth that infants can babble without cognizance; but on the other hand, it symbolizes a deep mystery: the *imago Dei* within the human heart crying out in glossolalic awareness of its Creator's presence. This is why Pentecostalism is not dismissible through intellectual or exegetical argumentation alone. The experience of tongues is symbolic of a new worldview.<sup>5</sup> Old boundaries of reality are pushed aside,

---

<sup>5</sup> Pentecostals have 'experienced a coming of the Holy Spirit wherein God's presence and power has pervaded their lives ... they know what it means to be "filled with the Holy Spirit." There has been a breakthrough of God's Spirit into their total existence – body, soul, and spirit – reaching into the

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia and a Spirit-inspired imagination opens up a ‘new world of realities’.<sup>6</sup> Further, this worldview then ‘suffices as truth until it is demonstrated otherwise’.<sup>7</sup> In other words, if a worldview does not fit with the real-world lived realities it will be abandoned or replaced. However, the experience of Pentecostals worldwide informs and supports a worldview that is tested daily against the real world and so far has proved to be accurate.<sup>8</sup>

Eighth, though it was not the subject of this investigation, it is clear that ‘there are still certain ways of thinking and writing that are … gender-specific’.<sup>9</sup> In the periodicals women tended to express themselves with ‘emotive, descriptive, and visionary language’.<sup>10</sup> In the first issue of *AF*, Jennie Moore’s testified that she was a vessel that surged like a torrent, such beautiful and poetic expressions of glossolalia continued throughout the literature, while male testimonies tended to be ‘concise and accurate’.<sup>11</sup> Also, females seemed to be more likely to either have or express their experiences in mystical or ecstatic terms. For example, Myrtle K. Schideler spoke of being glued to the floor. A reading of the periodicals that specifically examines the language of gender would be a fascinating study. Finally, females were strong theologians in their own right and very well represented in these periodicals. Three periodicals were edited by women and some of the more significant theological insights were from women: Mrs. Polman’s sacramental glossolalia, Hattie Barth’s liminal eschatology, Elizabeth Sexton’s global vision, Carrie Montgomery’s divine love and steadfast refusal to disavow

---

conscious and subconscious depths, and setting loose powers hitherto unknown’, Williams, *The Pentecostal Reality*, p. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, pp. 45-46; cf. Street, ‘To Our Readers’, p. 50; McGee, ‘The New World of Realities’, p. 108.

<sup>7</sup> Yong, ‘Tongues of Fire’, pp. 64-65.

<sup>8</sup> Appeals to Pentecostalism’s growth seem quaint or braggadocios, until one realizes this is also a guardrail: people will abandon what does not fit with their lived reality and experience; cf. Hughes, ‘Contemporary Times’, pp. 153-76; Synan, ‘The Role of Tongues’, p. 79.

<sup>9</sup> Kimberly Ervin Alexander, ‘Girl Talk: A Feminist Re-Imagination of Pentecostal Theological Discourse and Experience’, in Jon Huntzinger and David Moore (eds.), *The Pastor and the Kingdom: Essays Honoring Jack W. Hayford* (Southlake, TX: Gateway Academic, 2017), pp. 135-56 (139).

<sup>10</sup> Alexander, ‘Girl Talk’, p. 145.

<sup>11</sup> Alexander, ‘Girl Talk’, p. 146.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
xenolalia, the rich metaphors of Aimee Semple McPherson and Sister King, and many others. We are richer for their writing, editing, and constructing theology.

Ninth, there is a practical outflow from this thesis. Because fewer Pentecostals identify as glossolalists, pastors and leaders are encouraged to: 1) give space in the worship service for singing in tongues and the gift of tongues. Though Pentecostal-like worship music has become popular, platform-driven worship and time constraints limit the opportunities for the next generation. The HA and the gift of tongues can introduce a new world of realities for a new generation, but it requires timely and thoughtful explanation. Hopefully this thesis will provide a foundation for such explanations. 2) The revitalization of a vibrant, unhurried, altar ministry is also necessary for providing opportunity for seeking and yielding. Though we now have multiple services, streaming services, and segments of television to fill, courting the Holy Spirit requires a sacrifice of time and distractions. The corporate altar, like the upper room, seems the logical place for such courting.

To sum up this thesis,

human attempts to explain glossolalia (mine included) will fall short of the majesty, the mystery, the power available to witness the gospel, and the self-edification properties – all which accompany this gift of the Holy Spirit that God has clothed with the aura of that which seems foolish and undesirable for the uninitiated.<sup>12</sup>

---

<sup>12</sup> Tarr, *The Foolishness of God*, p. 121

## Appendix

### Walter J. Hollenweger's Black-Oral-Inclusive Root.

Even though 'tongues remain for most Pentecostalists the decisive experience of the spirit centered life',<sup>1</sup> Hollenweger defined Pentecostalism as having a black-oral and inclusive root of which glossolalia is an integral component.<sup>2</sup> He calls Pentecostalism to return to this root, a 're-oralization', if Pentecostalism is to survive.<sup>3</sup>

#### I. Black Oral Root.

Hollenweger believes Pentecostalism's black oral root is a separate root from the holiness root of Wesley, and can be traced back through an Afro-American slave religion to a traditional African religion.<sup>4</sup> He believes that the key to Pentecostalism's growth 'lies in its black root' and not with its 'inconsistent doctrine':<sup>5</sup> 'there is hardly a Pentecostal movement in the world that is not built on Seymour's black oral modes of communication'.<sup>6</sup>

This black root adds both dynamic and inclusive components to Pentecostalism.

The ASM revival was

an outburst of enthusiastic religion of a kind well-known and frequent in the history of Negro churches in America which derived its specifically Pentecostal features

---

<sup>1</sup> Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 336.

<sup>2</sup> Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 6; Cf. Leonard Lovett, 'Perspective on the Black Origins of the Contemporary Pentecostal Movement', *The Journal of the Interdenominational Theological Center* 1.1 (Fall, 1973), pp. 36-49; Marne L. Campbell, '"The Newest Religious Sect Has Started In Los Angeles": Race, Class, Ethnicity, and the Origins of the Pentecostal Movement, 1906-1913' *The Journal of African American History* 95.1 (2010), pp. 1-25.

<sup>3</sup> He calls for 're-oralization' of Christianity: 'our theological specialization has a future only if we can re-oralize our insights, translate critical findings into parables, stories, songs and dramas ... learn again from the Bible – and in fact from a number of Third World theologians – to do real, critical and helpful theology in the oral language of our own people', Hollenweger, 'The Ecumenical Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 264.

<sup>4</sup> Wesley's Methodism included catholic, evangelical, critical and ecumenical stems. See chart, Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 2; cf. Lovett, 'Black Origins', pp. 123-41.

<sup>5</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 18, cf. Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 6.

<sup>6</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 23.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
from Parham's theory that speaking with tongues is a necessary concomitant of the baptism of the Spirit.<sup>7</sup>

However, it was also 'love in the face of hate'.<sup>8</sup> Seymour was an ecumenist who sought a theology which would 'provide a basis for mutual process of learning and recognition'.<sup>9</sup> Though the inclusiveness of Azusa Street quickly re-segregated,<sup>10</sup> Hollenweger believes that Pentecostalism 'offers the key to overcoming racism in the world today'.<sup>11</sup>

## II. Definition of Oral Theology.

Biographer, Lynne Price calculates that, 'all Hollenweger's knowledge, professional and personal experience pointed cumulatively in the direction of oral and narrative categories'.<sup>12</sup> At times writing about Pentecostalism and other times a broader Third World oral Christianity, Hollenweger officially defined oral theology as:

1. an emphasis on the oral aspect of liturgy; 2. theology and witness cast in narrative form; 3. maximum participation at the levels of reflection, prayer and decision-making ... ; 4. inclusion of dream and vision (sic) in personal and public forms of spirituality ... ; 5. an understanding of the body/mind relationship which is informed by experiences of correspondence between the body and mind.<sup>13</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup> Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 24.

<sup>8</sup> Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 5, cf. Hollenweger, 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', p. 550.

<sup>9</sup> Lynne Price, *Theology Out of Place: A Theological Biography of Walter J. Hollenweger* (JPTSup 23; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002), p. 82.

<sup>10</sup> However, Hollenweger contends that it would 'be unfair to blame the white Pentecostals alone for this development' because 1) the mainline churches tried to discredit Pentecostals by pointing to their lowly beginnings in a Negro church, and 2) there were the laws in the southern states which prohibited mixed meetings, Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 31, cf.. p. 30.

<sup>11</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 23. He finds it significant that "this interracial accord took place among the very groups that had traditionally been most at odds, the poor whites and the poor blacks." Even more astonishing, white Pentecostals received their ordination from the hands of black Pentecostal Bishops', p. 30.

<sup>12</sup> Price, *Theology out of Place*, p. 78.

<sup>13</sup> Hollenweger, 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', pp. 551-52, cf.. Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, pp. 2, 18-24; Price, *Theology out of Place*, pp. 79-89.

Additionally, 1) oral theology has a world view that includes 'kind and malignant spirits';<sup>14</sup> 2) the medium is the message whether celebrating at a banquet<sup>15</sup> or singing a song;<sup>16</sup> 3) it arises from experience and

is not based on books imprinted liturgies or on the personal study of the Bible, but on the experience of the presence of God in worship and everyday life. These experiences are expressed and described in songs, proverbs, stories, parables and dances.<sup>17</sup>

That does not mean, however, that it is simplistic or primitive. It is 'a prime and highly complex mode of communication ... function(ing) as a logistic system for passing on theological and social values and information in oral societies in a way that can be likened to a modern computer'.<sup>18</sup> In contrast to literary theology, oral theology is, 1. Easy to memorize. 2. Is not based on proposition but parables. 3. Can be put to music and song, as compared to literary forms which must be discussed. 4. It does not lead to clear concepts, 'but inspires ... celebration'.<sup>19</sup> In short, 'oral literature *transforms*, literary literature *informs*'.<sup>20</sup>

### III. The Case for Oral Theology.

Hollenweger gives two significant reasons for a re-oralization of theology. First, he believes that the contemporary historical-critical method is 'bankrupt':

Biblical studies increasingly fell prey to a form of technology which regards as legitimate only those questions which its methods can answer ... it has become a highly specialized academic discipline which no longer serves the community for which it was once intended.<sup>21</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 260.

<sup>15</sup> 'The medium of communication is, just as in biblical times, not the definition but the description, not the statement but the story, not the doctrine but the testimony, not the book but the parable, not a systematic theology but a song, not the treatise but the television programme, not the articulation of concepts but the celebration of banquets', Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 10.

<sup>16</sup> The 'Pentecostal movement began in the same milieu in which the spiritual, jazz, and blues emerged', and in a way can be compared with jazz', Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 30, cf. p. 32.

<sup>17</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 259.

<sup>18</sup> Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', pp. 10, 11.

<sup>19</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 262.

<sup>20</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 262. Cf. King, 'The Pentecostal View', p. 122.

<sup>21</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 263, cf. p. 262.

### Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Bluntly stated, 'Western exegetical biblical method bores them (Third-World theologians).'<sup>22</sup> Which is ironic because the oral segments of the church 'live with the Bible. (They are bibliists).'<sup>23</sup> Worldwide, many Third World pastors, 'hardly read any books apart from the Bible, since they often come from levels of society in which the practice of reading is uncommon'.<sup>24</sup> If a Third World student does learn the Majority World 'culturally conditioned' theology, we 'make them useless in their African context ... since then they only mirror our thinking'.<sup>25</sup> The situation is doubly ironic in that 'the biblical documents went through a long period of oral tradition ... (Christianity) did not begin as a book religion but as a lived religion'.<sup>26</sup>

The second reason to re-oralize theology follows what he saw in Seymour, unity and ecumenism: 'the ecumenical problem of the immediate future is not the relationship between Catholic and Protestant', he wrote, 'but between "oral" and "literary" theology'.<sup>27</sup> The Church is at conflict between the authority of 'speech, narrative and communication,' and 'the authority which is based on status, education, money and juridical power'.<sup>28</sup> He calls Pentecostals to 'a new appraisal of pre-Christian cultures and their own Third World sister churches, for ecumenical openness and dialogue'.<sup>29</sup> He admires<sup>30</sup> the ecumenical potential within Pentecostalism as

---

<sup>22</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 260.

<sup>23</sup> Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 321.

<sup>24</sup> Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 322.

<sup>25</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 260, cf. p. 262.

<sup>26</sup> Hollenweger, 'Significance of Oral Christianity', p. 262.

<sup>27</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 39. The dividing lines are 'racism (or European / American superiority complex) versus an intercultural and inter-racial understanding of Christianity; literacy versus orality; abstract concepts versus narrativity; the anonymity of bureaucratic organizations versus family and personal relationships; medical technology versus a holistic understanding of health and sickness; Western psycho-analytical techniques versus a group and family therapy that centers on the human touch, prayer and a daily informal education in dreams and visions', Hollenweger, 'After Twenty Years', p. 10.

<sup>28</sup> Hollenweger, 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', p. 552.

<sup>29</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 1.

<sup>30</sup> He also worries about Pentecostalism because of neo-Pentecostalism, 'it will become harder and harder to make a clear-cut distinction between American Pentecostals and American non-Pentecostals in the future, now that the experience and message of the baptism of the Spirit have found a way into all American denominations', Hollenweger, *The Pentecostals*, p. 15.

## Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

revolutionary because it offers alternatives to ‘literary’ theology and thus defrosts the ‘frozen thinking’ within literary forms of worship and committee-debate and gives the same chances to all – including the ‘oral’ people. It allows for a process of democratization of language through a dismantling of the privileges of abstract, rational and propositional systems.<sup>31</sup>

Pentecostal spirituality, he believes, is well positioned to bridge the literary and oral ‘cultural divide’,<sup>32</sup> if Pentecostals take up the challenge.<sup>33</sup>

---

<sup>31</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 35. ‘Oral categories were important, according to his (Hollenweger’s) understanding, because “the church of Jesus Christ is the place where cultural, academic, political and theological conflicts become organized in such a way that new insights emerge for all participants, and narrative forms enable the ‘ruling language’ to be brought into intercultural dialogue as one possible language next to other possible languages”’, Price, *Theology out of Place*, p. 79.

<sup>32</sup> Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 38.

<sup>33</sup> However he sees Pentecostalism going the other way. It is, ‘fast developing into an evangelical middle class religion. Many of the elements that were vital for its rise and expansion into the third world are disappearing. They are being replaced by efficient fund-raising structures, a streamlined ecclesiastical bureaucracy, and a Pentecostal conceptual theology’, Hollenweger, *Pentecostalism*, p. 19; cf. Hollenweger, ‘After Twenty Years’, p. 6.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Early Pentecostal Periodicals

*The Apostolic Faith* (Azusa Street Mission, Los Angeles, CA).

*The Blessed Truth* (Daniel C.O. Opperman, Eureka Springs, AR).

*The Bridegroom's Messenger* (The Pentecostal Mission, Atlanta, GA).

*The Christian Evangel* (Assemblies of God, Plainfield, NJ; Findley, OH).

*The Church of God Evangel* (Church of God, Cleveland, TN).

*The Good Report* (R.E. McAlister, Ottawa, Canada & Los Angeles, CA).

*Meat In Due Season* (Frank J. Ewart, Los Angeles, CA).

*The Pentecost* (J. Roswell Flower, Indianapolis, IN).

*The Pentecostal Evangel* (Assemblies of God, Springfield, MO).

*The Pentecostal Holiness Advocate* (The Pentecostal Holiness Church, Falcon, NC; Franklin Springs, GA).

*Pentecostal Testimony* (William H. Durham, Chicago, IL; Los Angeles, CA).

*Triumphs of Faith* (Carrie Judd Montgomery, Oakland, CA).

*The Weekly Evangel* (Assemblies of God, St. Louis, MO; Springfield, MO).

*The Whole Truth* (Argenta, AR).

*Word and Witness* (E.N. Bell, Malvern, AR; Findley, OH; St. Louis, MO).

### Other Works Cited

*A Summary View of the Millennial Church of United Society of Believers (Commonly Called Shakers)* (Albany: Packard & VanBenthuyzen, 1823).

Abrams, Minnie, *The Baptism of the Holy Ghost and Fire* (Kedgaon: Mukti Mission Press, 2<sup>nd</sup> edn, 1906).

Ackland, Randal H., 'Spirit Baptism: An Appraisal of Frederick Dale Bruner's Book, *A Theology of the Holy Spirit: The Pentecostal Experience and the New Testament Witness*, and an Examination of Possible Pentecostal Responses to Bruner's Criticisms' (MA Thesis, Wheaton College, Wheaton, IL, 1988).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- 'Towards a Sacramental View of Glossolalia', unpublished paper presented at the Society for Vineyard Studies (New Haven: Yale Divinity School, 2017).

*Acta Sanctorum* (Paris: V. Palme, 1863-1940).

*Acta Sanctorum* (Antwerp: apud Ioannem Meursium, 1643-1931).

Ahonen, L., 'Awakened', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 343.

Albrecht, Daniel, 'Carrie Judd Montgomery: Pioneering Contributor to Three Religious Movements', *Pneuma* 8.1 (1986), pp. 101-19.

Alexander, Estrelda Y., *Black Fire: One Hundred Years of African American Pentecostalism* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2011).

Alexander, Kimberly Ervin, *Pentecostal Healing: Models in Theology and Practice* (JPTSup, 29; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2006).

- 'Boundless Love Divine: A Re-evaluation of Early Understandings of the Experience of Spirit Baptism', in Steven Jack Land, Rickie D. Moore, and John Christopher Thomas (eds.), *Passover, Pentecost and Parousia: Studies in Celebration of the Life and Ministry of R. Hollis Gause* (JPTSup, 35; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2006), pp. 145-70.

- 'Heavenly Choirs in Earthly Spaces: The Significance Of Corporate Singing In Early Pentecostal Experience', *JPT* 25 (2016), pp. 254-68.

- 'Girl Talk: A Feminist Re-Imagination of Pentecostal Theological Discourse and Experience', in Jon Huntzinger and David Moore (eds.), *The Pastor and the Kingdom: Essays Honoring Jack W. Hayford* (Southlake, TX: Gateway Academic, 2017), pp. 135-56.

Alexander, Paul, *Signs & Wonders: Why Pentecostalism is the World's Fastest Growing Faith* (San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass, 2009).

Anderson, Allan, *An Introduction to Pentecostalism* (Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 2004).

- *Spreading Fires: The Missionary Nature of Early Pentecostalism* (Maryknoll, NY: Orbis Books, 2007).

- 'The Vision of the Apostolic Faith: Early Pentecostalism and World Mission', *Swedish Missiological Themes* 97.3 (2009), pp. 295-314.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Anderson, Gordon L., 'Baptism in the Holy Spirit, Initial Evidence, and a New Model', *Enrichment Journal* 10:1 (Winter, 2005), pp. 70-78.

Anderson, Robert Mapes, *Vision of the Disinherited* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1979).

Andrews, Edward Deming, *The People Called Shakers: A Search for the Perfect Society* (NY: Oxford University Press, 1953).

Archer, Kenneth J., *A Pentecostal Hermeneutic: Spirit, Scripture and Community* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2009).

- *The Gospel Revisited* (Eugene, OR: Pickwick Publications, 2011).

Archer, Melissa, 'I Was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day': A Pentecostal Engagement with Worship in the Apocalypse (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2015).

Ash, James, L., 'The Decline of Ecstatic Prophecy in the Early Church', *Theological Studies* 37:2 (June, 1976), pp. 227-52.

Augustine, in Marcus Dods (trans.) *City of God* (New York: The Modern Library, 1993).

- Augustine, 'Sermons', in John E. Rotelle (ed.) and Edmund Hill (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.7, Sermon 266 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 1993)

- 'On Baptism, Against the Donatists', in Philip Schaff (ed.) and J.R. King (trans.) NPF, *First Series: Augustin: Writings Against The Manicheans, And Against The Donatists*, Vol. 4 (New York: Charles Scribner and Sons, 1901).

- *St. Augustine: Tractates on the Gospel of John*, 28-54, in John W. Rettig (trans.) *The Fathers of the Church: A New Translation* (Washington, DC: The Catholic University Press of America, 1993).

- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 1-32', in John E. Rotelle (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, III/15 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2000).

- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 33-50', John E. Rotelle (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.16 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2000).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 51-72', John E. Rotelle (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.17 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2001).
- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 73-98', John E. Rotelle (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.18 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2002).
- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 99-120', Boniface Ramsey (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.19 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2003).
- 'Expositions of the Psalms: 121-150', Boniface Ramsey (ed.) and Maria Boulding (trans.), *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 3.20 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2004).
- 'Homilies on the First Epistle of John', in Boniface Ramsey (ed. and trans.) *The Works of Saint Augustine: A Translation for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, 1.14 (Hyde Park, NY: New City Press, 2008).
- *The Answer to the Letters of Petilian, the Donatist* in Philip Schaff NPF, First Series (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995).
- *On the Gospel of St. John*, in Philip Schaff NPF, First Series.

Augustine, Daniela C., *Pentecost, Hospitality, and Transfiguration* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012).

Aulén, Gustaf, *Christus Victor: An Historical Study of the Three Main Types of the Idea of the Atonement* (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., Inc., 1969).

Baer, Richard A., 'Quaker Silence, Catholic Liturgy, and Pentecostal Glossolalia – Some Functional Similarities', in Russell P. Spittler (ed.), *Perspectives on the New Pentecostalism* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans, 1976), pp. 150-64.

Bainton, Roland, *The Reformation of the Sixteenth Century* (Boston, MA: Beacon Press, 1952).

Baker, Heidi G., 'Pentecostal Experience: Towards A Reconstructive Theology Of Glossolalia' (PhD thesis, King's College, London, England, 1995).

Barclay, Robert, in Dean Freiday (ed.), *Barclay's Apology in Modern English* (Philadelphia, PA: Religious Society of Friends, 1967).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Barratt, Thomas Ball, *The Works of T.B. Barratt* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985 reprint; London: Elim Publishing Company, Ltd., 1928).

Bartleman, Frank, *Azusa Street: An Eyewitness Account, The Centennial Edition, 1906-2006* (Gainesville, FL: Bridge-Logos, 2006 reprint; 1925).

Basham, Don, *A Handbook on Holy Spirit Baptism* (Pittsburgh, PA: Whitaker House, 1969).

Batuman, Elif, 'The Bells: Onward and Upward with the Arts', *The New Yorker* 85.11 (Apr 27, 2009), p. 22.

Beadle, J.H., *Life In Utah; or, The Mysteries and Crimes of Mormonism* (Philadelphia, PA: National Publishing Co., 1870).

Beare, Frank W., 'Speaking With Tongues: A Critical Survey of the New Testament Evidence,' *JBL* 83 (September 1964), pp. 229-46.

Bellshaw, William G., 'The Confusion of Tongues', *BibSac* 120.478 (April 1963), pp. 145-53.

Bennett, Dennis J., *Nine O'clock in the Morning* (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1970).

Berkhof, Hendrikus, *The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit* (Richmond, VA: John Knox Press, 1964).

Bernard, David K., *The New Birth* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame, 1989).

- *A History of Christian Doctrine, Vol. 1: The Twentieth Century* (Weldon Spring, MO: Word Aflame, 1999).

Bittlinger, Arnold, *Gift and Graces: A Commentary of 1 Corinthians 12-14* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing, Co, 1967).

Blumhofer, Edith L., 'Pentecost in My Soul' *Explorations in the Meaning of the Pentecostal Experience of the Early Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1989).

- *The Assemblies Of God: A Chapter In The Story Of American Pentecostalism* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1989)

Bosworth, Fred F. 'Do All Speak With Tongues?' (New York, NY: The Christian Alliance Publishing Company, n.d.).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
Bouhours, Dominique, *The Life of St. Francis Xavier, of the Society of Jesus, Apostle of India*  
(James Dryden, trans., (Philadelphia: Eugene Cummiskey, 1841).

Brathwaite, Rena, ‘Tongues and Ethics: William J. Seymour and the “Bible Evidence”: A Response to Cecil M. Robeck, Jr.’, *Pneuma* 32.2 (2010), pp. 203-22.

Brumback, Carl, *‘What Meaneth This? - A Pentecostal Answer to a Pentecostal Question* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1947).

- *Suddenly ... From Heaven: A History of the Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1961).

- *A Sound from Heaven: The Dramatic Beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century Pentecostal Revival* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1961).

Bruner, Frederick Dale, *A Theology of the Holy Spirit: The Pentecostal Experience and the New Testament Witness* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1970).

Bryant, Herschel Odell, *Spirit Christology in the Christian Tradition: From the Patristic Period to the Rise of Pentecostalism in the Twentieth Century* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2014).

Bulgakov. S., ‘From a World of Religious Contemplation’, *Sobornost* 2 (Jun, 1935), pp. 4-7.

Bullinger, Heinrich, *Der Widertoufferen Vrsprung, fürgang, secten, wäsen, fürnemme vnd gemeine jrer leer artickel, ouch jre gründ und warumb sy sich absünderind, vnnd ein eigne kirchen anrichtind, mit widerlegung vnd antwort vff alle und yede jre gründ und artickel, sampt Christenlichem bericht vnd vermanen, dass sy jres irrthums und absünderens abstandind, und sich mit der kirchen Christi vereinigind, abgeteilt in VI Bücher, und beschriben durch Heynrichen Bullingern* (Zurich: Christoph Frochauer, 1560), in ‘Answer of Some Who Are Called (Ana) Baptists Why They Do Not Attend The Churches: A Swiss Brethren Tract’, Shem Peachey and Paul Peachey (ed. & trans.), Paul Peachey, *Mennonite Quarterly Review*, 45.1 (Jan 1971), pp. 5-32.

Bullock, Warren D., *When the Spirit Speaks: Making Sense of Tongues, Interpretation & Prophecy* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 2009).

Bundy, D.D., ‘Thomas Ball Barratt’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 365-66.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- 'Keswick Higher Life Movement,' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 820-21.
  - 'Edward Irving' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 803-804.
  - Burgess, Stanley M., 'Medieval Examples of Charismatic Piety in the Roman Catholic Church', in Russell P. Spittler (ed.), *Perspectives on the New Pentecostalism* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans, 1976), pp. 15-26.
  - *The Holy Spirit: Eastern Christian Traditions* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1989).
  - *The Holy Spirit: Ancient Christian Traditions* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 2002 reprint; *The Spirit and the Church: Antiquity*, 1984).
  - *The Holy Spirit: Medieval Roman Catholic and Reformation Traditions* (sixth-sixteenth centuries) (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1997).
  - 'Holy Spirit, Doctrine of: The Ancient Fathers' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 730-746.
  - 'Evidence of the Spirit: The Ancient and Eastern Churches', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 3-19.
  - 'Evidence of the Spirit: The Medieval and Modern Western Churches', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 20-40.
  - *Christian Peoples of the Spirit: A Documentary History of Pentecostal Spirituality from the Early Church to the Present* (New York: New York University Press, 2011).
- Burrough, Edward, 'Epistle to the Reader', in *The Great Mystery of the Great Whore Unfolded; and Antichrist's Kingdom Revealed Unto Destruction. The Works of George Fox*, Vol. 3 (New York: Isaac T. Hooper, 1831, reprint; 1659).
- Butler, Alban, *Butler's Lives of the Saints*, Vol. IV (Westminster, MD: Christian Classics, 1990).
- Byrd II, Charles H., 'Pentecostalism's Anabaptist Heritage: The Zofingen Disputation of 1532', *JEPTA* 28.1 (2008), pp. 49-61.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
Caird, George Bradford, *The Language and Imagery of the Bible* (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1980).

Campbell, Marne L., ““The Newest Religious Sect Has Started In Los Angeles”: Race, Class, Ethnicity, and the Origins of the Pentecostal Movement, 1906-1913’, *The Journal of African American History* 95.1 (2010), pp. 1-25.

Cantalamessa, Raniero, *Sober Intoxication of the Spirit: Filled with the Fullness of God* (Cincinnati, OH: Servant Books, 2005).

Carothers, W.F., ‘Notes and Paragraphs’ in *The Baptism With The Holy Ghost and The Speaking In Tongues* (Zion City, IL: Carothers, 1906).

Carroll, R. Leonard., ‘Glossolalia: Apostles to The Reformation’, in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 69-94.

Carson, D.A., *Showing the Spirit: A Theological Exposition of 1 Corinthians 12-14* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1989).

Cartledge, Mark J., ‘The Future of Glossolalia: Fundamentalist or Experientialist?’, *Religion* 28 (1998), pp. 233-44.

- ‘The Nature and Function of New Testament Glossolalia’, *The Evangelical Quarterly* 72.2 (2000), pp. 135–50.

- *Encountering the Spirit: The Charismatic Tradition* (Maryknoll, N.Y: Orbis Books, 2007).

Casmier, Stephen J. and Donale H. Matthews, ‘Why Scatting Is Like Speaking In Tongues: Post-Modern Reflections On Jazz, Pentecostalism And “Africomysticism”’, *Literature & Theology* 13.2 (Jun 1999), pp. 166-76.

Castelo, Daniel, *Pentecostalism As A Christian Mystical Tradition* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans, 2017).

Chambers, George B., *Folksong – Plainsong: A Study in Origins and Musical Relationships* (London: The Merlin Press, LTD, 1972).

Chan, Simon, ‘The Language Game of Glossolalia, or Making Sense of the “Initial Evidence”’, in Wonsuk Ma and Robert P. Menzies (eds.), *Pentecostalism in Context: Essays in Honor of William W. Menzies* (JPTSup 11; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997), pp. 80-95.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- *Pentecostal Theology and the Christian Spiritual Tradition* (JPTSup, 21; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000).
- 'Evidential Glossolalia and the Doctrine of Subsequence', *AJPS* 2.2 (Jl 1999), pp. 195–211.

Charette, Blaine, 'Presidential Address – Reflective Speech: Glossolalia and the Image of God', *Pneuma* 28.2 (Fall, 2006), pp. 189-201.

Christenson, Larry, 'Pentecostalism's Forgotten Forerunner, in *Aspects of Pentecostal – Charismatic Origins*, Vinson Synan (ed.), (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1975), pp. 15-37.

Chryssides, George D., 'Meaning, Metaphor and Meta-Theology', *Scottish Journal of Theology* 38 (1985), pp. 145-53.

Ciampa, Roy E. and Brian S. Rosner, '1 Corinthians' in G.K. Beale and D.A. Carson (eds.), *Commentary on the New Testament Use of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Academic, 2007), pp. 740-42.

Clark, Alan J., "'We believe in the gift of tongues": The 1906 Pentecostal Revolution and Its Effects on the LDS Use of the Gift of Tongues in the Twentieth Century', *Mormon Historical Studies* 14.1 (Spring 2013), pp. 67-80.

Clark, Steve, *Baptized in the Spirit and Spiritual Gifts* (Pecos, NM: Dove Publications, 1976).

Clemen, Carl, 'The Speaking with Tongues' of the Early Christians', *The Expository Times* 10.344 (1899), pp. 344-52.

Clement, 'The First Epistle of Clement', in Robert M. Grant and Holt H. Graham (eds.), *First and Second Clement: The Apostolic Fathers: A New Translation* (New York: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1965), vol. 2.

Clemonns, J.C., 'Charles Harrison Mason', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 865-67.

Conkin, Paul, *Cane Ridge: America's Pentecost* (Madison, WI: The University of Wisconsin Press, 1990).

Conn, Charles W., *Pillars of Pentecost* (Cleveland, TN: The Pathway Press, 1956).

- "Glossolalia and The Scriptures", in Wade H. Horton (ed.), *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 23-65.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- *Like a Mighty Army: A History of the Church of God* (Cleveland, TN: Pathway Press, 1977).

- 'Church of God (Cleveland, TN)', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 530-34

Conybeare, Frederick C., 'The Gift of Tongues', *Encyclopedia Britannica* 11th edition (New York, Cambridge University Press, 1911, vol. 27), pp. 9-10.

Conzelmann, Hans, *The Theology of St Luke* (Geoffrey Buswell, trans.: London: Faber and Faber, 1960).

Cooper-Rompato, Christine F., *The Gift of Tongues: Women's Xenoglossia in the Latter Middle Ages* (University Park, PA: Pennsylvania State University, 2010).

Cox, Harvey Gallagher, *Fire from Heaven: The Rise of Pentecostal Spirituality and the Reshaping of Religion in the Twenty-First Century* (Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley Pub, 1995).

Crawford, Mattie (ed.), *The Pentecostal Flame* (Los Angeles, CA: 1926).

Cree, John, (et. all), *Evils of the Work Now Prevailing in the United States of America, Under the Name of a Revival of Religion* (Washington: n.p., 1804).

Currie, Stuart D., 'Speaking in Tongues, Early Evidence Outside the New Testament Bearing on "Glossais Lalein"', *Interpretation* 19 (1965), pp. 274-94.

Cutten, George Barton, *Speaking with Tongues, Historically and Psychologically Considered* (New Haven, London: Yale University Press; Humphrey Milford, Oxford University Press, 1927).

Cyprian, 'The Epistles of Cyprian', ANF: *Hippolytus, Cyprian, Caius, Novatian, Appendix*, Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson (eds.) Vol. 5 (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995).

Dalton, Robert Chandler, *Tongues Like As of Fire* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1945).

Davies, John G., 'Pentecost and Glossolalia', *JTS* 3.2 (O 1952), p. 228-31.

Dayton. Donald W., *Theological Roots of Pentecostalism* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Pub, 1987).

– *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985).

- Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia
- de Voragine, Jacobus, *The Golden Legend: Readings on the Saints* (William Granger Ryan, trans.: Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1993).
- Dempster, Murray W., ‘The Church’s Moral Witness: A Study of Glossolalia in Luke’s Theology of Acts’, *Paraclete* 23.1 (1989), pp. 1-7.
- Dickson, W. & R., ‘Letter Published in Lancaster’ in *Increase of Piety, or the Revival of Religion in the United States of America* (Newburyport, CT: Angier March, 1802).
- Dollar, George W., ‘Church History and the Tongues Movement’, *BibSac* (120:480, October-December, 1963), pp. 316-21.
- Dorries, David W., ‘Edward Irving and the “Standing Sign” of Spirit Baptism’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 41-56.
- ‘Catholic Apostolic Church’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 459-60.
- Dove, Stephen, ‘Hymnody and Liturgy in the Azusa Street Revival, 1906-1908’, *Pneuma* 31.2 (2009), pp. 242-63.
- Dunlavy, John, *The Manifesto, or Declaration of the Doctrine and Practice of the Church of Christ* (NY: Edward O. Jenkins, 1847).
- Dunn, James D.G., *The Baptism in the Holy Spirit* (Philadelphia, PA: The Westminster Press , 1970).
- *Jesus and the Spirit* (Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1975).
- DuPlessis, David J., *The Spirit Bade Me Go* (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1970).
- Egan, Harvey D., *Ignatius Loyola the Mystic* (Wilmington, DE: Michael Glazier, 1987).
- Engelsen, Nils Ivar Johan, ‘Glossolalia and Other Forms of Inspired Speech According to 1 Corinthians 12-14’ (PhD Dissertation, Yale University, 1970).
- Ensley, Eddie, *Sounds of Wonder: A Popular History of Speaking in Tongues in the Catholic Tradition* (Ramsey: Paulist, 1977).
- Ervin, Howard M., *Conversion-Initiation and the Baptism in the Holy Spirit: An Engaging Critique of James D.G. Dunn’s ‘Baptism in the Holy Spirit’* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1984).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- *Spirit Baptism: A Biblical Investigation* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1987).

Eusebius, in G.A. Williamson (trans.), *Eusebius: The History Of The Church from Christ to Constantine* (Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg Publishing House, 1965).

- Eusebius Pamphilus *Ecclesiastical History*, Books 6-10, in Roy J. Deferrari (trans.), *The Fathers of the Church: A New Translation* (New York: Fathers of the Church, Inc., 1955).

- *Ecclesiastical History*, Volume 1: Books 1-5, (Kirsopp Lake, trans., Loeb Classical Library; Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1926).

Everts, Jenny, 'Tongues or Languages? Contextual Consistency in the Translation of Acts 2', *JPT* 4 (1994), pp. 71-80.

Fast, Heinold, *Quellen Zur Geschichte der Täufer in der Schweiz, 2 Band, Ostschweiz* (Zurich: Theologiischer Verlag, 1973), in C.A. Snyder and Linda A.H. Hecht (eds.), *Profiles of Anabaptist Women* (Waterloo, Ontario: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 1996).

Faupel, William D., *The Everlasting Gospel: The Significance of Eschatology in the Development of Pentecostal Thought* (JPTSup, 10; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996).

Fee, Gordon, 'Tongues – Least of the Gifts? Some Exegetical Observations on 1 Corinthians 12-14', *Pneuma* 2 (1980), pp. 3-14.

- *The First Epistle to the Corinthians* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1987).

- *God's Empowering Presence: The Holy Spirit in the Letters of Paul* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1994).

- 'Toward a Pauline Theology of Glossolalia', in Wonsuk Ma and Robert P. Menzies (eds.), *Pentecostalism in Context: Essays in Honor of William W. Menzies* (JPTSup 11; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997), pp. 24-37.

Fettke, Steven M., & Robby Waddell (eds.), *Pentecostals in the Academy: Testimonies of Call* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012).

Flower, Joseph R., 'Is it Necessary to Speak In An Unknown Tongue' (Toronto, Canada: Full Gospel Publishing House, 1954).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- ‘Speaking with Tongues – Sign or Stumbling Block’, *Paraclete* 2.2 (Spring 1968), pp. 16-19.
- ‘Holiness, the Spirit’s Infilling, and Speaking with Tongues’, *Paraclete* 2.3 (Summer 1968), pp. 7-9.
- ‘The Evangel’s Roots’, *PE* 4132 (Jul 18, 1993), pp. 7, 22.

Forbes, Christopher, *Prophecy and Inspired Speech in Early Christianity and its Hellenistic Environment* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1997).

Franklin, Lloyd D., ‘The Spiritual Gifts in Tertullian’ (PhD Thesis, Saint Louis University, 1989).

French, Talmadge L., *Our God Is One* (Indianapolis, IN: Voice & Vision Publications, 1999).

Frodsham, Arthur W., ‘What Is the Use Of Speaking In Tongues?’, in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 56-62.

- *With Signs Following* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1946).

Gee, Donald, ‘Immersed In The Fulness Of God’, in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 35-43.

Goff, James R., *Fields White Unto Harvest: Charles F. Parham and the Missionary Origins of Pentecostalism* (Fayetteville: University of Arkansas Press, 1988).

- ‘Charles Fox Parham’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 955-57.

Goodman, Felicitas D., *Speaking in Tongues: A Cross-Cultural Study of Glossolalia* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago, 1972).

Görres, J.J., *Die Christliche Mystik*, 5 vols. (Regensburg: G.J. Manz, 1836-41).

Gortner, J. Narver, ‘How To Receive The Baptism’, in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 44-6.

Goss, Ethel, *The Winds of God: The Story of the Early Pentecostal Movement (1901-1914) in the Life of Howard A. Goss* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame Press, 1977).

Grebel, Conrad, ‘Grebel to Müntzer, Zurich, 9/5/1524’, in Leland Harder (ed.) *The Sources of Swiss Anabaptism: The Grebel Letters and Related Documents* (Scottsdale, PA: Herald Press, 1985).

- Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia
- Green, Chris, E.W., *Toward a Pentecostal Theology of the Lord's Supper: Foretasting the Kingdom* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012).
- Green, William M., 'Glossolalia in the Second Century', *RQ* 16.3-4 (1973), pp. 231-39.
- Greenfield, John, *When The Spirit Came: The Story of the Moravian Revival of 1727* (Minneapolis, MN: Bethany Fellowship, Inc., 1967).
- Gregory, *The Teaching of Saint Gregory* (Robert W. Thomson, trans.: New Rochelle, NY: St Nersess Armenian Seminary, 2001).
- Gromacki, Robert Glenn, *The Modern Tongues Movement* (Philadelphia, PA: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing House, 1967).
- Gundry, Robert H., 'Ecstatic Utterance (NEB)', *JTS* 17.2 (O 1966), pp. 299-307.
- Guinness, Os, *The Call: Finding and Fulfilling the Central Purpose of Your Life* (Nashville, TN: Word Publishing, 1998).
- Gunkel, Hermann, *The Influence Of The Holy Spirit: The Popular View of the Apostolic Age and the Teaching of the Apostle Paul* (Roy A. Harrisville and Philip A Quanbeck II, trans.: Philadelphia, PA: Fortress Press, 1970).
- Hanson, C.M., *My Personal Experiences of the Graces of Salvation, Healing and Baptism in the Holy Spirit* (Dalton, MN: self-published tract, 1905).
- Hargrave, Vessie D., 'Glossolalia: Reformation to the Twentieth Century', in Wade H. Horton (ed.), *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1966), pp. 97-139.
- Harris, Ralph W., *Spoken by the Spirit: Documented Accounts of 'Other Tongues' From Arabic to Zulu* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1973).
- Haskett, William, *Shakerism Unmasked, or the History of the Shakers* (Pittsfield: N.H. Walkley, Printer, 1828).
- Hayes, D.A., *The Gift of Tongues* (New York: The Methodist Book Concern, 1914).
- Hayford, Jack W., *The Beauty of Spiritual Language* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1996).
- Haywood, G.T., 'The Birth of the Spirit in the Days of the Apostles', in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Indianapolis, IN: Christ Temple Book Store, n.d.).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- ‘The Victim Of The Flaming Sword’, in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven ‘Jesus Only’ Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Indianapolis, IN: Christ Temple Book Store, n.d.).

Higley, Sarah L., *Hildegard of Bingen’s Unknown Language: An Edition, Translation, and Discussion* (New York, NY: Palgrave MacMillian, 2007).

Hilary, ‘On The Trinity’, in Philip Schaff (ed.), *NPF, First Series: Homilies on the Gospel of John; Homilies on the First Epistle of John; Soliloquies*, Vol. 9 (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995, reprint; 1887).

Hilborn, David, ‘Glossolalia as Communication’, in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 111–46.

Hinck, Joel, ‘Heavenly Harmony: An Audio Analysis of Corporate Singing in Tongues’, *Pneuma* 40 (2018), pp. 167-91.

Hinson, E. Glenn, ‘The Significance of Glossolalia in the History of Christianity’, in Watson E. Mills (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 181-203.

Henke, Frederick G., ‘The Gift of Tongues and Related Phenomena at the Present Day’, *The American Journal of Theology* 13.2 (April 1909), pp. 193-206.

Ho, Melvin, ‘A Comparison of Glossolalia in Acts and Corinthians’, *Paraclete* (Spring, 1987), pp. 15-19.

Hocken, Peter D., ‘Jesus Christ and the Gifts of the Spirit’, *Pneuma* 5.1 (Spring 1983), pp. 1-16.

- ‘The Meaning and Purpose of “Baptism in the Spirit”’, *Pneuma* 7:2 (Fall 1985), pp. 125-33
- ‘Charismatic Movement’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 477-519.

Hoekema, Anthony A., *What About Tongue-Speaking?* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1966).

Holdcroft, L. Thomas, *The Holy Spirit: A Pentecostal Interpretation* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1979).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Hollenweger, Walter J., 'Handbuch der Pfingstbewegung' (PhD dissertation, University of Zurich, 1965).

- 'Pentecostals and the Charismatic Movement', in Cheslyn Jones, Geoffrey Wainwright, and Edward Yarnold (eds.), *The Study of Spirituality* (London: SPCK, 1986), pp. 549-54.
- 'After Twenty Years' Research on Pentecostalism', *International Review of Mission* 75.297 (1986), pp. 3-12.
- *The Pentecostals* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1988).
- 'The Ecumenical Significance of Oral Christianity', *Ecumenical Review* 41.2 (1989), pp. 259-65.
- *Pentecostalism: Origins and Developments Worldwide* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1997).

Holm, Randall, Matthew Wolf and James K.A. Smith, 'New Frontiers in Tongues Research: A Symposium', *JPT* 20 (2011), pp. 122-54.

Horton, Harold, *The Gifts of the Spirit* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1975).

- *What the Bible Says About the Holy Spirit* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1976).
- *The Book of Acts* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1981).

Horton, Wade H., *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, TN: Pathway Press, 1986).

Hovenden, Gerald, *Speaking in Tongues: The New Testament Evidence in Context* (JPTSup, 22; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002).

Hudson, Neil, 'Strange Words and Their Impact on Early Pentecostals – A Historical Perspective,' in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 52-80.

Hughes, Ray H., 'Glossolalia in Contemporary Times', in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 143-177.

Hunter, Harold D., 'Tongues Speech: A Patristic Analysis', *JETS* 23.2 (Jun, 1980), pp. 125-37.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- *Spirit-Baptism: A Pentecostal Alternative* (Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1983).
- ‘Ambrose Jessup Tomlinson’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 1143-45.
- ‘Church of God of Prophecy’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 539-42.

Hurtado, Larry W., ‘Normal, But Not A Norm: “Initial Evidence” and the New Testament’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.) *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 189-201.

Hurst, Dom David (trans.), *Gregory the Great Forty Gospel Homilies, Cistercian Series Studies: One-Hundred-Twenty-Three* (Kalamazoo, MI: Cistercian Publications, 1990).

Hutch, Richard A., ‘The Personal Ritual of Glossolalia’, in Watson E. Mills (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 381-95.

Ignatius, ‘Polycarp’, in Robert M. Grant (ed.) *Ignatius of Antioch: The Apostolic Fathers: A New Translation* (Camden, NJ: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1966).

Inch, Morris A., *Saga of the Spirit: A Biblical, Systematic, and Historical Theology of the Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1985).

Irenaeus, in Unger, Dominic J. (trans.), *St. Irenaeus of Lyons Against the Heresies*, Vol. 1, Book 1 (New York, NY: Paulist Press, 1992).

- ‘Against Heresies’, in Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson (eds.), *ANF, First Series: Translations of the Writings of the Fathers Down to A.D. 325* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995).

Irvin, Dale, ‘Pentecostal Historiography and Global Christianity: Rethinking the Questions of Origins’ *Pneuma* 27.1 (Spring, 2005), pp. 35-50.

Jacobsen, Douglas, *Thinking in the Spirit: Theologies of the Early Pentecostal Movement* (Indianapolis, IN: Indiana University Press, 2003).

Johns, Donald A., ‘Some New Directions in the Hermeneutics of Classic Pentecostalism’s Doctrine of Initial Evidence’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 145-67.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Johnson, David R., *Pneumatic Discernment In the Apocalypse: An Intertextual and Pentecostal Exploration* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2018).

Johnson, Guion Griffis, 'Revival Movements in Ante-Bellum North Carolina', *North Carolina Historical Review* 10.1 (Jan, 1933), pp. 21-44.

Johnson, Luke Timothy, *Religious Experience in Earliest Christianity: A Missing Dimension in New Testament Studies* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 1998).

Johnston, Robin, 'Howard Goss: A Pentecostal Life' (PhD Dissertation, Regent University School of Divinity, 2010).

Kardong, Terrence G., *Pillars of Community: Four Rules of Pre-Benedictine Monastic Life* (Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 2010).

Kay, William K., 'The Mind, Behaviour and Glossolalia: A Psychological Perspective', in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 174-205.

– *Pentecostalism: A Very Short Introduction* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2011).

Keener, Craig S., 'Why Does Luke Use Tongues as a sign of The Spirit's Empowerment?', *JPT* 15.2 (April 1, 2007), pp. 177-84.

Kelsey, Morton T., *Tongue Speaking: An Experiment In Spiritual Experience* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Company, 1964).

Kenyon, Howard N., 'Black Ministers in the Assemblies of God', *AG Heritage* (Spring, 1987), pp. 10-13, 20.

Kertson, Brandon, 'Spirit Baptism in the Pentecostal Evangel', *Pneuma* 37:5 (2015), pp. 244-61.

Kessler, Johannes, *Sabata: St. Galler Reformationschronik 1523-1539* (Traugott Schiess, ed.: Leipzig: Im Kommissionsverlag von Rudolf Haupt, 1911), pp. 51-52.

King, James Gorden, 'The Pentecostal View Of The Gift Of Tongues' (MA Thesis, Wheaton College, Wheaton, IL, 1974).

Klaassen, Walter, *Anabaptism: Neither Catholic nor Protestant* (Waterloo, On: Conrad Press, 1973).

Klubnikin, Efim Gerasimovich, 'Articles and Plans', 1.4, in Ivan Gureivich Shubin and Daniel H. Shubin (eds.) and John Wm. Volkov (trans.), *Spirit and Life – Book of the*

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

*Sun: Divine Discourses of The Preceptors and the Martyrs for the Word of God, the Faith of Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, of the Religion of the Spiritual Christian Molokan-Jumpers* (1983 repr; USA: Daniel H. Shubin, 1928).

Knox, Ronald A., *Enthusiasm: A Chapter in the History of Religion* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1950).

Kydd, Ronald Alfred Narfi, 'Charismata to 320 A.D. A Study of the Overt Pneumatic Experience of the Early Church' (PhD Thesis, University of St. Andrews, 1972).

– *Charismatic Gifts in the Early Church* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1984).

Land, Steven Jack, *Pentecostal Spirituality: A Passion for the Kingdom* (JPTSup 1; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993).

– 'Be Filled With The Spirit: The Nature And Evidence Of Spiritual Fullness', *Ex Auditu* 12 (January 1, 1996), pp. 108-20.

Lang, G.H., *The History and Diaries of an Indian Christian* (Suffolk: Walsham-Le-Willows, 1939).

Lawrence, Bennett Freeman, *The Apostolic Faith Restored: A History of the Present Latter Rain Outpouring of the Holy Spirit Known as the Apostolic Pentecostal Movement* (St. Louis, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1916).

Lederle, Henry I., 'Initial Evidence and the Charismatic Movement: An Ecumenical Appraisal', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 131-41.

Lewis, Clives Staples, 'Transposition' in *The Weight of Glory and Other Addresses* (San Francisco: HarperCollins Publishers, 2001), pp. 91-115.

Lewis, Howell Elvet, *With Christ Among The Miners: Incidents and Impressions of the Welsh Revival* in Tony Cauchi (ed.), *Welsh Revival Library* (Bishop's Waltham, UK: Revival Library, 2004 reprint; 1906).

Lietzmann, Hans, *The Founding of the Church Universal: A History of the Early Church* (B.L. Woolf, II, trans.: London: Lutterworth Press, 1961).

Lim, David, *Spiritual Gifts: A Fresh Look* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1999).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Littell, Franklin Hamlin, *The Origins of Sectarian Protestantism: A Study of the Anabaptist View of the Church* (New York: Macmillian, 1964).

Lovett, Leonard, 'Black Origins of the Pentecostal Movement' in Vinson Synan (ed.) *Aspects of Pentecostal – Charismatic Origins* (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1975), pp. 123-41.

MacArthur, John, *Strange Fire: The Danger of Offending the Holy Spirit with Counterfeit Worship* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, 2013).

Macchia, Frank D., 'Sighs Too Deep for Words: Toward a Theology of Glossolalia', *JPT* 1 (October 1992), pp. 47-73.

- 'Tongues as a sign: Towards a Sacramental Understanding of Pentecostal Experience', *Pneuma* 15.1 (March 1, 1993), pp. 61-76.
- 'The Question of Tongues as Initial Evidence: A Review of Initial Evidence, Edited by Gary B. McGee', *JPT* 2 (1993), pp. 117-27.
- 'Groans Too Deep For Words: Towards a Theology of Tongues as Initial Evidence', *AJPS* 1/2 (1998), pp. 149-73.
- 'Babel and the Tongues of Pentecost: Reversal or Fulfillment? – A Theological Perspective', in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 34-51.
- *Baptized in the Spirit: A Global Pentecostal Theology* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2006).
- 'Blessed Beyond Measure: An Autobiographical Reflection', *Pentecostals in the Academy* (Cleveland, TN: CPT press, 2012), pp. 129-47.

MacDonald, William G., *Glossolalia in the New Testament* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1964).

- 'The Place of Glossolalia in Neo-Pentecostalism', in Watson E. Mills (ed.) *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 221-34.

'Biblical Glossolalia: Theses One and Two', *Paraclete* 27.1 (Winter 1993), pp. 1-7.

'Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Three', *Paraclete* 27.2 (Spring 1993), pp. 7-14.

'Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Four', *Paraclete* 27.3 (Summer 1993), pp. 32-43.

- Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
 ‘Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Five’, *Paraclete* 27.4 (Fall 1993), pp. 15-21.
- ‘Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Six’, *Paraclete* 28.1 (Winter 1994), pp. 23-26.
- ‘Biblical Glossolalia: Thesis Seven’, *Paraclete* 28.2 (Spring 1994), pp. 1-12.
- Mackie, Alexander, *The Gift of Tongues: A Study in Pathological Aspects of Christianity* (New York: George H. Doran company, 1921).
- Martin, III, Ira Jay, ‘Glossolalia in the Apostolic Church’, *JBL* 63.2 (June 1944), pp. 123-30.
- Martyr, Justin, ‘Second Apology’, in Philip Schaff (ed.), *ANF, First Series: The Apostolic Fathers with Justin Martyr and Ireneaus* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers Inc., 1995).
- *Dialogue with Trypho* (Thomas B. Falls, trans.: Washington, DC: The Catholic University Press of America, 2003).
- Mathieu, Pierre François, *Histoire des Miraculés et Convulsionnaires de Saint-Médard* (Paris: Librairie Académique, 1864).
- Matthews, David, *I Saw The Welsh Revival* in Tony Cauchi (ed.), *Welsh Revival Library* (Bishop’s Waltham, UK: Revival Library, 2004 reprint).
- Mauchline, John, ‘Ecstasy’, *ExpT*, 49 (1938), pp. 295-99.
- McClymond, Michael J., ‘Charismatic Gifts: Healing, Tongue-Speaking, Prophecy, and Exorcism’, in Lamin Sanneh and Michael McClymond (ed.), *The Wiley Blackwell Companion to World Christianity* (Boston, MA: John Wiley & Sons, 2016), pp. 399-418.
- McDonald, H.D., *Theories of Revelation: An Historical Study 1700-1960* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1970).
- McDonnell, Killian, ‘The Function of Tongues in Pentecostalism’, *One in Christ* 19:4 (1984), pp. 332-54.
- *Christian Initiation and Baptism in the Holy Spirit: Evidence from the First Eight Centuries* (Collegeville MN: Liturgical Press, 1991).
- McGee, Gary B., ‘Joseph James Roswell Flower and Alice Reynolds’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 642-44.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- ‘Early Pentecostal Hermeneutics: Tongues as Evidence in the Book of Acts’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 96-188.
- ‘Popular Expositions of Initial Evidence’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 119-130.
- ‘Shortcut to Language Preparation? Radical Evangelicals, Missions, and the Gift of Tongues’, *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 25.3 (July 1, 2001), pp. 118-23.
- *People of the Spirit: The Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 2004).
- ““Brought into the Sphere of the Supernatural”: How Speaking in Tongues Empowered Early Pentecostals,’ *Encounter: Journal for Pentecostal Ministry* 4.1 (Fall 2007), pp. 1-17.
- ““The New World of Realities in Which We Live”: How Speaking in Tongues Empowered Early Pentecostals’, *Pneuma* 30.1 (January 1, 2008), pp. 108-35.

McGee, John, ‘Letter to the Rev. T.L. Douglass (1821)’, in *The Methodist Magazine* 4 (N. Bangs and T. Mason, for the Methodist Episcopal Church, 1821), pp. 189-91.

M’Nemar, Richard, *The Kentucky Revival* (Cincinnati, 1808).

McQueen, Larry R., *Toward a Pentecostal Eschatology: Discerning the Way Forward* (JPTSup 39; Dorset, U.K.: Deo Publishing, 2012).

McVicar, ‘Take Away the Serpents from Us: The Sign of Serpent Handling and the Development of Southern Pentecostalism’, *The Journal of Southern Religion* 15 (2013): <http://jsr.fsu.edu/issues/vol15/mcvicar.html>.

Menzies, Glen W, ‘Tongues as ‘The Initial Physical Sign’ of Spirit Baptism in the Thought of D. W. Kerr’, *Pneuma* 20.2 (1998), pp. 175-89.

Menzies, Robert P., *Empowered for Witness: The Spirit in Luke-Acts* (JPTSup 6; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1991).

- ‘Evidential Tongues: An Essay on Theological Method’, *AJPT* 1 (1998), pp. 111-23.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- ‘Evidential Tongues: An Essay on Theological Method’, in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007), pp. 220-33.
- ‘The Role of Glossolalia in Luke-Acts’, *AJPT* 15.1 (2012), pp. 47-72.
- *Pentecost: This Story is Our Story* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 2013).
- *Speaking in Tongues: Jesus and the Apostolic Church as Models for the Church Today* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2016).

Menzies, William, ‘Editorial’, *Pneuma* 1.1 (Spring 1979), pp. 3-5.

- *Anointed to Serve: The Story of the Assemblies of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1971).
- ‘The Initial Evidence Issue: A Pentecostal Response’, *AJPS* 2/2 (1999), pp. 261-78.

Menzies, William & Robert Menzies, *Spirit and Power: Foundations of Pentecostal Experience* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2000).

Milavec, Aaron, *The Didache: Text, Translation, Analysis, and Commentary* (Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 2003), p. 25.

Miller, B.C., ‘The Baptism In The Holy Spirit – What? When? Where?’, in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 15-34.

Mills, Watson E., ‘A Theological Interpretation of Tongues in Acts and 1 Corinthians’ (PhD dissertation, Southern Baptist Seminary, 1968).

- *Understanding Speaking in Tongues* (Grand Rapids: W. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1972).
- ‘Glossolalia: Christianity’s “Counterculture” Amidst a Silent Majority’, *The Christian Century* (Sep 27, 1972), pp. 949-51.
- *A Theological / Exegetical Approach to Glossolalia* (Lanham: University Press of America, 1985).
- *The Holy Spirit: A Bibliography* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 1988).

Millsaps, Willie T., ‘Willie T. Millsaps Remembers C.H. Mason at Hot Springs’, *AG Heritage* 4.2 (Summer 1984), p. 8.

Minns, Dennis and Paul Parvis, *Justin, Philosopher and Martyr: Apologies* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2009).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Miskov, Jennifer A., *Life on Wings: The Forgotten Life and Theology of Carrie Judd Montgomery (1858-1946)* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012).

Molenaar, William J., 'Christian Unity: A Founding Principle of the Assemblies of God', *Heritage* 34 (2014), pp. 57-65.

Montgomery, Carrie Judd, *Speaking in Tongues* (Framingham, MA: Christian Workers Union, Inc., n.d.).

Morgan, J. Vyrnwy, *The Welsh Religious Revival, 1904-05* in Tony Cauchi (ed.), *Welsh Revival Library* (Bishop's Waltham, UK: Revival Library, 2004 reprint, 1909).

Myland, D., 'The Latter Rain Covenant and Pentecostal Power: With Testimony of Healings and Baptism,' in Donald W. Dayton (ed.) *Three Early Pentecostal Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, 1985 reprint; Chicago: Evangel Publishing House, 1910).

Nelson, P.C., 'My Baptism In The Holy Spirit', in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 47-55.

Novatian, 'The Trinity', in Russell J. DeSimone (trans.), *Novatian: The Trinity, The Spectacles, Jewish Foods, In Praise of Purity, Letters* (Washington, DC: The Catholic University of America, 1972).

Origen, 'Against Celsus' in Philip Schaff (ed.), ANF, First Series: *Fathers of the Third Century: Tertullian, Part Fourth; Minucius Felix; Commodian; Origen, Parts First and Second*, Vol IV (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995, reprinting; 1885).

Oliver, Jeff, *Pentecost To The Present: Early Prophetic And Spiritual Gifts Movement* (Newbury, FL: Bridge Logos, 2017).

- *Pentecost To The Present: Reformations And Awakenings* (Newbury, FL: Bridge Logos, 2017).
- *Pentecost To The Present: Worldwide Revivals And Renewal* (Newbury, FL: Bridge Logos, 2017).

Orr, J. Edwin, 'The Welsh Revival Goes Worldwide', *Western Mail* (Dec. 9, 1974), in Tony Cauchi (ed.), *Welsh Revival Library* (Bishop's Waltham, UK: Revival Library, 2004).

Palmas, Gregory, in Nicholas Gendle (trans.) & John Meyendorff (ed.), *Gregory Palamas: The Triads* (New York: Paulist Press, 1983).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Parham, Charles F., 'The Baptism With The Holy Ghost' in W.F. Carothers, *The Baptism With The Holy Ghost and The Speaking In Tongues* (Zion City, IL: Carothers, 1906 reprint; January, 1902).

- *Kol Kare Bomidbar: A Voice Crying in the Wilderness* (Reprint, Joplin, MO: The Joplin Printing Co., 1944).

Parham, Sarah E., 'The Life of Charles F. Parham: Founder of the Apostolic Movement', in '*The Higher Life Christian Life Sources For The Study Of The Holiness, Pentecostal, And Keswick Movements*' (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., 1985).

Penn-Lewis, Jessie, 'Revival Dawn and the Baptism in the Holy Spirit': Chapter 12 of 'War on the Saints', in Tony Cauchi (ed.), *Welsh Revival Library* (Bishop's Waltham, UK: Revival Library, 2004).

Phillips, Wade H., *Quest to Restore God's House: A Theological History of the Church of God* (Cleveland, Tennessee), Volume I, 1886-1923 (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2014).

Pinnock, Clark, *Flame of Love: A Theology of the Holy Spirit* (Downers Grove, IL: Intervarsity Press, 1996).

Poloma, Margaret M., *The Assemblies of God at the Crossroads: Charisma and Institutional Dilemmas* (Knoxville, TN: The University of Tennessee Press, 1989).

- *Main Street Mystic: The Toronto Blessing & Reviving Pentecostalism* (Walnut Creek, CA: Altamira Press, 2003).
- 'Glossolalia, Liminality and Empowered Kingdom Building: A Sociological Perspective', in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 147-73.
- 'North American Pentecostalism' in Adam Stewart (ed.), *Handbook of Pentecostal Christianity* (DeKalb, IL: Northern Illinois University Press, 2012).

Powers, Janet Everts, 'Missionary Tongues'?, *JPT* 17 (October 1, 2000), pp. 39-55.

Price, Lynne, *Theology Out of Place: A Theological Biography of Walter J. Hollenweger* (JPTSup 23; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002).

Rankin, Adam, *A Review of the Noted Revival in Kentucky* (Lexington, KY: Bradford, 1802).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Reed, David A., 'Oneness Pentecostalism', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 936-44.

- 'In Jesus' Name', *The History and Beliefs of Oneness Pentecostals* (JPTSup 31; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2009).

Reimer Johannes, 'Mission Des Frühen Mönchtums In Rubland' (DTh thesis, University of South Africa, 1994).

Reinhart, Albert, 'St. Vincent Ferrer', *The Catholic Encyclopedia XV* (NY: The Encyclopedia Press, 1913).

Rice, David, *Sermon on the Present Revival of Religion* (Lexington, KY: Chapless, 1803).

Richardson, Cyril (ed.), *Early Christian Fathers* (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., Inc., 1970).

Riss, Richard M., 'Finished Work Conrtoversy', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 638-39.

- 'Fred Francis Bosworth', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 439-40.
- 'William H. Durham', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 594-95.
- 'The Latter Rain Movement' in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 830-33.

Robeck, Jr., Cecil M., 'Azusa Street Revival', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 344-50.

- 'Garfield Thomas Haywood', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 693-94.
- 'William Joseph Seymour', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 1053-58.
- 'An Emerging Magisterium? The Case of the Assemblies of God', *Pneuma* 25.2 (Fall 2003), pp. 164-215.
- *The Azusa Street Mission and Revival: The Birth of the Global Pentecostal Movement* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 2006).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- 'William J. Seymour and 'The Bible Evidence'', in Gary B. McGee (ed.), *Initial Evidence: Historical and Biblical Perspectives on the Pentecostal Doctrine of Spirit Baptism* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2007 reprint; Hendrickson Publishers, 1991), pp. 72– 95.
  - 'Montanism and Present Day "Prophets"', *Pneuma* 32 (2010), pp. 413-29.
- Roberts, Alexander and James Donaldson (eds.), 'Irenaeus', *ANF: Translations of the Writings of the Fathers Down to A.D. 325*, Vol. I, Book III, Chapter XVI (Grand Rapids: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1956).
- Roberts, Arthur O., 'George Fox and the Quakers', in *Eerdman's Handbook to the History of Christianity* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1977), pp. 480-83.
- Roberts, P., 'A Sign – Christian or Pagan', *Expt* 90:7 (April, 1979), pp. 199-203.
- Roche, John, *The Moravian Heresy* (Dublin, 1751).
- Rogers, Cleon L. Jr., 'The Gift of Tongues in the Post Apostolic Church (A.D. 100-400)', *BibSac* 122:486 (April-June, 1965), pp. 134-43.
- Report of the Special Committee on the Work of the Holy Spirit to the 182<sup>nd</sup> General Assembly* (Philadelphia, PA: The United Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, 1970).
- Rudometkin, Maxim Gavrilovich, 'Discourses', 5.4.3-4, in Ivan Gureivich Shubin and Daniel H. Shubin (eds.) and John Wm. Volkov (trans.), *Spirit and Life – Book of the Sun: Divine Discourses of The Preceptors and the Martyrs for the Word of God, the Faith of Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, of the Religion of the Spiritual Christian Molokan-Jumpers* (1983 repr; USA: Daniel H. Shubin, 1928), pp. 296-97.
- Ruohomäki, Jouko, 'The Call of Charisma: Charismatic Phenomena during the 18th and 19th Centuries in Finland', *JEPTA* 29.1 (2009), pp. 25-40.
- Ruthven, Jon, *On the Cessation of the Charismata: The Protestant Polemic on Postbiblical Miracles* (JPTSup 3; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993).
- Rybarczyk, Edmund J., 'Reframing Tongues: Apophaticism and Postmodernism', *Pneuma* 27:1 (Spring, 2005), pp. 83-104.
- Samarin, William J., *Tongues of Men and Angels* (New York, NY: The Macmillan Co., 1970).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
Samuel, Josh P.S., *The Holy Spirit in Worship Music, Preaching, and the Altar*  
(Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2018).

Satyavrata, Ivan, *The Holy Spirit: Lord and Life-Giver* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2009).

Schaff, Philip, *History of the Christian Church, Volume 1: Apostolic Christianity, From the Birth of Christ to the Death of St. John, A.D. 1-100* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 2011, reprint; 1890).

- *History of the Christian Church, Volume 2: Ante-Nicene Christianity, From the Death of John the Apostle to Constantine the Great, A.D. 100-325* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 2011, reprint; 1890).
- *History of the Christian Church, Volume 3: Nicene and Post-Nicene Christianity, From Constantine the Great to Gregory the Great, A.D. 311–590* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 2011, reprint; 1890).
- *The Ante-Nicene Fathers: The Apostolic Fathers With Justin Martyr and Ireneaus, Vol I* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995, reprint; 1885).

Schnapp, Jeffery T., 'Virgin Word: Hildegard of Bingen's Lingua Ignota and the Development of Imaginary Languages Ancient to Modern', *Exemplaria* 3.2 (Fall, 1991), pp. 267-69.

Shakarian, Demos, and John and Elizabeth Sherril, *The Happiest People on Earth* (Old Tappan, NJ: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1975).

Shults, F. LeRon & Andrea Hollingsworth, *Guides to Theology: The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2008).

Shubin, Ivan Gureivich and Daniel H. Shubin (eds.), and John Wm. Volkov (trans.), *Spirit and Life – Book of the Sun: Divine Discourses of The Preceptors and the Martyrs for the Word of God, the Faith of Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, of the Religion of the Spiritual Christian Molokan-Jumpers* (1983 repr; USA: Daniel H. Shubin, 1928)

- 'The Journey to Refuge', in Ivan Gureivich Shubin and Daniel H. Shubin (eds.) and John Wm. Volkov (trans.), *Spirit and Life – Book of the Sun: Divine Discourses of The Preceptors and the Martyrs for the Word of God, the Faith of Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, of the Religion of the Spiritual Christian Molokan-Jumpers* (1983 repr; USA: Daniel H. Shubin, 1928), pp. 747-58

- Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia
- Shumway, Charles, 'A Study of "The Gift of Tongues"' (AB Thesis, University of Southern California, 1914).
- 'A Critical History of Glossolalia' (PhD Dissertation, Boston University, 1919).
- Simmons, V.P., *History of Tongues* (n.d.).
- Slay, James L., 'Glossolalia: Its Value to the Individual', in Wade H. Horton (ed.) *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 217-43.
- Smith, Gordon T., *Evangelical, Sacramental & Pentecostal: Why the Church Should be All Three* (Downers Grove, IL: IVP Academic, 2017).
- Smith, James K.A., *Thinking In Tongues: Pentecostal Contributions to Christian Philosophy* (Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 2010).
- Smith, Joseph, *History of Joseph Smith, the Prophet*, Vol. 1 (Salt Lake City, 1902).
- 'The Wentworth Letter', *Times and Seasons* 3.9 (March 1, 1842).
  - *The Book of Mormon* (Salt Lake City, UT: The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 1950).
- Spencer, Jon Michael, 'The Heavenly Anthem: Holy Ghost Singing in the Primal Pentecostal Revival', *The Journal of Black Sacred Music* 1.1 (Spring 1987) pp. 1-33.
- Spittler, Russell P., 'Suggested Areas for Further Research in Pentecostal Studies', *Pneuma* 5.2 (Fall 1983), pp. 39-57.
- 'Are Pentecostals and Charismatics Fundamentalists? A Review of American Uses of These Categories', in Karla Poewe (ed.), *Charismatic Christianity as a Global Culture* (Colombia, SC: University of South Carolina Press, 1994), pp. 103-18.
  - 'Glossolalia', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 670-76.
- Staniforth (trans.), Maxwell, 'The Didache', in *The Apostolic Fathers: Early Christian Writings* (London: Penguin Books, Ltd., 1987).
- Stephens, Randall J., *The Fire Spreads: Holiness and Pentecostalism in the American South* (Cambridge, MA; London: Harvard University Press, 2008).
- Strayer, Brian E., *Suffering Saints: Jansenists and Convulsionnaires in France, 1640-1799* (Portland: Sussex Academic Press, 2008).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia  
Stronstad, Roger, *The Charismatic Theology of St. Luke* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1984).

Suenens, Leo Joseph, 'Malines Document 1, Theological and Pastoral Orientations on the Catholic Charismatic Renewal', in *The Holy Spirit, Life-Breath of the Church Book II*, 1<sup>st</sup> part (Belgium: FIAT Association, 1974), pp. 3-35.

Sullivan, Charles A., 'The Gift of Tongues Project', <https://charlesasullivan.com/gift-tongues-project/>

- 'Chrysostom on the Dogma of Tongues',  
<http://charlesasullivan.com/5347/chrysostom-on-the-dogma-of-tongues>.
- 'Augustine on the Tongues of Pentecost: Intro',  
<http://charlesasullivan.com/3668/augustine-on-the-tongues-of-pentecost-intro>.

<http://charlesasullivan.com/6166/late-medieval-peaking-in-tongues>.

- 'An Analysis of Augustine on Tongues and the Donatists',  
<http://charlesasullivan.com/3662/an-analysis-of-augustine-on-tongues-and-the-donatists>.

<http://charlesasullivan.com/6274/st-anthony-of-paduas-miraculous-speech>.

- <http://charlesasullivan.com/6199/pope-benedict-xiv-on-the-gift-of-tongues>.

Sullivan, Francis A., *Charisms and Charismatic Renewal: A Biblical and Theological Study* (Ann Arbor, MI: Servant Books, 1982).

Sweet, J.P.M., 'A Sign for Unbelievers: Paul's Attitude to Glossolalia', in Watson E. Mills (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: A Guide to Research on Glossolalia* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1986), pp. 141-64.

Symeon the New Theologian – in Patrick Thompson (trans.) 'A Prayer to God of St. Simon the New Theologian', *Sobornost* 6 (Jun, 1936), pp. 19-21.

- in Maloney, George A., (trans.), *Hymns of Divine Love by Symeon The New Theologian* (Denville, NJ: Dimension Books, 1976).
- 'Epistle 3', in H.J.M. Turner (ed. and trans.), *The Epistles of St. Symeon the New Theologian* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009).

Synan, H. Vinson, *The Holiness-Pentecostal Tradition: Charismatic Movements in the Twentieth Century* (Grand Rapids, MI: W.B. Eerdmans Pub. Co, 2<sup>nd</sup> edn, 1997).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

- ‘The Role of Tongues as Initial Evidence’, in Mark W. Wilson (ed.) *Spirit and Renewal* (JPTSup 5; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1994), pp. 67-82.
- *Old Time Power – A Centennial history of the International Pentecostal Holiness Church* (Franklin Springs, GA: LifeSprings Resources, 1998).
- *The Century of the Holy Spirit: 100 Years of Pentecostal and Charismatic Renewal* (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2001).
- ‘Gaston Barnabas Cashwell’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 457-58.
- ‘International Pentecostal Holiness Church’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 798-801.
- ‘Fire-Baptized Holiness Church’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 640.
- ‘Joseph Hillery King’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 822-23.
- ‘George Floyd Taylor’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 1115-16.
- ‘Ambrose Blackman Crumpler’, in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 566.
- ‘Nickels John Holmes’ in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 730.

Tabbernee, William, *Prophets and Gravestones: An Imaginative History of Montanists and Other Early Christians* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, 2009).

Tarr, Del, *Double Image: Biblical Insights from African Parables* (New York: Paulist Press, 1994).

- *The Foolishness of God: A Linguist Looks at the Mystery of Tongues* (Springfield, MO: Access Group, 2010).

Taves, Ann, *Fits, Trances, & Visions: Experiencing Religion and Explaining Experience from Wesley to James* (Princeton, N.J: Princeton University Press, 1999).

Taylor, G.F., *The Spirit and The Bride* (Dunn, NC, 1907).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Taylor, Malcolm John, 'Publish and Be Blessed: A Case Study in Early Pentecostal Publishing History' (PhD thesis, Birmingham, UK: University of Birmingham, 1994).

Tertullian, 'Against Marcion', in Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson (eds.) *ANF, First Series: Latin Christianity: Its Founder, Tertullian I. Apologetic; II. Anti-Marcion; III. Ethical*, Vol. 3 (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson Publishers, Inc., 1995).

Thiselton, Anthony C., *New International Greek Commentary: The First Epistle to the Corinthians* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 2000).

Thomas, John Christopher, *Footwashing in John 13 and the Johannine Community* (JSNTS 61; New York, NY: T & T Clark International, 2004).

- *A Pentecostal Reads The Book of Mormon: A Literary and Theological Introduction* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2016).

Thomas, John Christopher and Alexander, Kimberly, ““And The Signs Are Following”: Mark 16.9-20”, *JPT* 11-2 (April, 2003), pp. 147-70.

Turner, John G., *Brigham Young: Pioneer Prophet* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2012).

Turner, Max, *Power from on High: The Spirit in Israel's Restoration and Witness in Luke-Acts* (JPTSup 9; Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996).

- *The Holy Spirit and Spiritual Gifts* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1996).
- ‘Tongues: An Experience For All In The Pauline Churches?’, *AJPS* 1.2 (1998), pp. 231-53.
- ‘A Response To The Responses of Menzies And Chan’, *AJPS* 2.2 (1999), pp. 297-308.
- ‘Early Christian Experience and Theology of “Tongues” – A New Testament Perspective’, in Mark J. Cartledge (ed.), *Speaking in Tongues: Multi-Disciplinary Perspectives* (Studies in Pentecostal and Charismatic Issues, Bletchley, Milton Keynes, England: Paternoster Press, 2006), pp. 1-33.

Turner, W.H., *Pentecost and Tongues* (Shanghai: Shanghai Modern Publishing House, 1939).

Tyson, James L., *The Early Pentecostal Revival* (Hazelwood, MO: Word Aflame Press, 1992).

Unger, Merrill F., *New Testament Teaching on Tongues* (Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, 1972).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Urshan, Andrew, 'The Almighty God in The Lord Jesus Christ', in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; U.P.C. of Portland, 1919).

– 'The Doctrine of the New Birth of The Perfect Way to Eternal Life', in Donald W. Dayton, *Seven 'Jesus Only' Tracts* (New York: Garland Publishing, Inc., reprint; Cochrane, WI: Witness of God, Publishers, 1921).

Veilleux, Arnand (trans.), *Pachomian Koinonia*. Cistercian Studies: Number 46. Volume 1 (Kalamazoo, Michigan. Cistercian Publications Inc.).

Volf, Miroslav, *Exclusion & Embrace* (Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1996).

Waddell, Robby, 'Whence Pentecostal Scholarship? The Coming of Age of the Pentecostal Critical Tradition and a Forecast for its Future', in Steven M. Fettke and Robby Waddell (eds.), *Pentecostals in the Academy: Testimonies of Call* (Cleveland, TN: CPT Press, 2012), pp. 243-59.

Wacker, Grant, 'The Functions of Faith in Primitive Pentecostalism', *Harvard Theological Review* 77.3-4 (July 1, 1984), pp. 353-75.

– *Heaven Below: Early Pentecostals and American Culture* (Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 2001).

Waldvogel, Edith, 'The "Overcoming Life" A Study In The Reformed Evangelical Origins of Pentecostalism' (PhD Dissertation, Harvard University, 1977).

Walker, Dawson A., *The Gift of Tongues and Other Essays* (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1906).

Walters, Jr., Kenneth Richard, 'Why Tongues? The History and Philosophy Behind the Initial Evidence Doctrine in North American Pentecostal Churches' (PhD Dissertation; Fuller Theological Seminary, 2010).

– *Why Tongues? The Initial Evidence Doctrine in North American Pentecostal Churches* (JPTSup 42; Blandford Forum: Deo Publishing, 2016).

Wamble, Hugh, 'Glossolalia in Christian History', Luther B. Dyer (ed.), *Tongues* (Orlando, FL: Daniels Publisher, 1972), pp. 24-59.

Ware, Timothy, *The Orthodox Church* (New York, NY: Penguin Putnam Inc., 1997, reprint, 1963).

Warfield, Benjamin B., *Counterfeit Miracles* (Carlisle, PA: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1976).

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Warner, Wayne E., 'Eudorus N. Bell', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 369.

- 'International Pentecostal Church of Christ', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 797-98.
- 'Carrie Judd Montgomery', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 904-906.
- 'Periodicals', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), pp. 974-82.

Weinel, Heinrich, *Die Wirkungen des Geistes und der Geister im nachapostolischen Zeitalter bis auf Irenaus* (Freiburg: J.C.B. Mohr, 1899).

Welchel, Tom, *Azusa Street: They Told Me Their Stories* (Mustang, OK: Dare2Dream Books, 2008).

Wesley, John. *Wesley's Works* (New York: Harper, 1826-27) Vol. V.

Wigglesworth, Smith, 'A Transformation', in *Filled With the Fulness of God* (Springfield, MO: Gospel Publishing House, 1930), pp. 3-14.

Williams, Cyril Glyndwr, *Tongues of the Spirit: A Study of Pentecostal Glossolalia and Related Phenomena* (Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1981).

Williams, George Hunston, *The Radical Reformation* (Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1962).

Williams, George Hunston and Edith Waldvogel, 'A History of Speaking in Tongues and Related Gifts' in Michael P. Hamilton (ed.), *The Charismatic Movement* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1975).

Williams, J.D., 'The Modern Pentecostal Movement in America: A Brief Sketch of Its History and Thought', *Lexington Theological Quarterly*, 9.2 (1974), pp. 50-59.

Williams, J. Rodman, *The Pentecostal Reality* (Plainfield, NJ: Logos International, 1972)

- *Renewal Theology: Systematic Theology from a Charismatic Perspective* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1996).

Willis, Lewis J., 'Glossolalia in Perspective', in Wade H. Horton (ed.), *The Glossolalia Phenomenon* (Cleveland, Tennessee: Pathway Press, 1986), pp. 247-84.

Randal Ackland – Towards a Pentecostal Theology of Glossolalia

Wilson, Everett A., 'Robert Edward McAlister', in Stanley Burgess (ed.), *NIDPCM* (Rev. and expanded edn; Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2002), p. 852.

– 'Pentecostal Historiography and Global Christianity: Rethinking the Questions of Origins' *Pneuma* 27.1 (Spring, 2005), pp. 35-50.

Wilson, Samuel M., *John Lyle's Diary* (Kentucky Historical Society, 1922).

Wood, A. Skevington, 'John and Charles Wesley', in *Eerdmans Handbook to the History of Christianity* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1977), p. 447.

Wright, David F., 'The Donatists in North Africa', in *Eerdmans Handbook to the History of Christianity* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1977), pp. 202-203.

Yoder, John H. and Kreider, Alan, 'The Anabaptists', in *Eerdmans Handbook to the History of Christianity* (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1977), pp. 399-403.

Yong, Amos, "'Tongues of Fire' in the Pentecostal Imagination: The Truth of Glossolalia in Light of R.C. Neville's Theory of Religious Symbolism", *JPT* 12 (1998), pp. 39-65.

Young, Brigham, 'The History of Brigham Young,' *The Latter-Day Saints Millennial Star*, 25 (11 July, 1863).

Zander, Valentine, in Gabriel Anne (trans.), *St Seraphim of Sarov* (Crestwood, NY: St. Valdimir's Seminary Press, 1975).